This is a digital copy of a book that was preserved for generations on library shelves before it was carefully scanned by Google as part of a project to make the world's books discoverable online.

It has survived long enough for the copyright to expire and the book to enter the public domain. A public domain book is one that was never subject to copyright or whose legal copyright term has expired. Whether a book is in the public domain may vary country to country. Public domain books are our gateways to the past, representing a wealth of history, culture and knowledge that's often difficult to discover.

Marks, notations and other marginalia present in the original volume will appear in this file - a reminder of this book's long journey from the publisher to a library and finally to you.

Usage guidelines

Google is proud to partner with libraries to digitize public domain materials and make them widely accessible. Public domain books belong to the public and we are merely their custodians. Nevertheless, this work is expensive, so in order to keep providing this resource, we have taken steps to prevent abuse by commercial parties, including placing technical restrictions on automated querying.

We also ask that you:

+ *Make non-commercial use of the files* We designed Google Book Search for use by individuals, and we request that you use these files for personal, non-commercial purposes.
+ *Refrain from automated querying* Do not send automated queries of any sort to Google's system: If you are conducting research on machine translation, optical character recognition or other areas where access to a large amount of text is helpful, please contact us. We encourage the use of public domain materials for these purposes and may be able to help.
+ *Maintain attribution* The Google "watermark" you see on each file is essential for informing people about this project and helping them find additional materials through Google Book Search. Please do not remove it.
+ *Keep it legal* Whatever your use, remember that you are responsible for ensuring that what you are doing is legal. Do not assume that just because we believe a book is in the public domain for users in the United States, that the work is also in the public domain for users in other countries. Whether a book is still in copyright varies from country to country, and we can't offer guidance on whether any specific use of any specific book is allowed. Please do not assume that a book's appearance in Google Book Search means it can be used in any manner anywhere in the world. Copyright infringement liability can be quite severe.

About Google Book Search

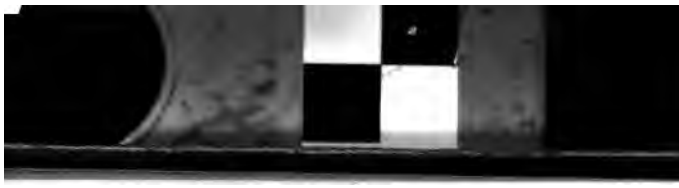
Google's mission is to organize the world's information and to make it universally accessible and useful. Google Book Search helps readers discover the world's books while helping authors and publishers reach new audiences. You can search through the full text of this book on the web at `http://books.google.com/`

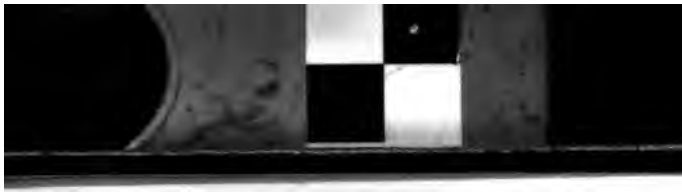
48516.23

The gift of

JOHN E. HUDSON

HARVARD COLLEGE LIBRARY





WORKS

J. C. F. von Schiller

vol. 2

translated from the German

Household ed.
1884
Boston

+8516. 23

HARVARD
UNIVERSITY
LIBRARY
DEC 27 1973

CONTENTS.

	PAGE
The Ghost-Seer; or, Apparitionist	5
The Sport of Destiny	119
The Robbers	131
Fiesco; or, The Genoese Conspiracy	279

THE GHOST-SEER; OR, APPARITIONIST.

FROM THE PAPERS OF COUNT O——

I AM about to relate an adventure which to many will appear incredible, but of which I was in great part an eye-witness. The few who are acquainted with a certain political event will, if indeed these pages should happen to find them alive, receive a welcome solution thereof. And, even to the rest of my readers, it will be, perhaps, important as a contribution to the history of the deception and aberrations of the human intellect. The boldness of the schemes which malice is able to contemplate and to carry out must excite astonishment, as must also the means of which it can avail itself to accomplish its aims. Clear, unvarnished truth shall guide my pen; for, when these pages come before the public, I shall be no more, and shall therefore never learn their fate.

On my return to Courland in the year 17—, about the time of the Carnival, I visited the Prince of —— at Venice. We had been acquainted in the —— service, and we here renewed an intimacy which, by the restoration of peace, had been interrupted. As I wished to see the curiosities of this city, and as the prince was waiting only for the arrival of remittances to return to his native country, he easily prevailed on me to tarry till his departure. We agreed not to separate during the time of our residence at Venice, and the prince was kind enough to accommodate me at his lodgings at the Moor Hotel.

As the prince wished to enjoy himself, and his small revenues did not permit him to maintain the dignity of his rank, he lived at Venice in the strictest *incognito*. Two noblemen, in whom he had entire confidence, and a few faithful servants, composed all his retinue. He shunned expenditure, more however from inclination

than economy. He avoided all kinds of dissipation, and up to the age of thirty-five years had resisted the numerous allurements of this voluptuous city. To the charms of the fair sex he was wholly indifferent. A settled gravity and an enthusiastic melancholy were the prominent features of his character. His affections were tranquil, but obstinate to excess. He formed his attachments with caution and timidity, but when once formed they were cordial and permanent. In the midst of a tumultuous crowd he walked in solitude. Wrapped in his own visionary ideas, he was often a stranger to the world about him; and, sensible of his own deficiency in the knowledge of mankind, he scarcely ever ventured an opinion of his own, and was apt to pay an unwarrantable deference to the judgment of others. Though far from being weak, no man was more liable to be governed; but, when conviction had once entered his mind, he became firm and decisive; equally courageous to combat an acknowledged prejudice or to die for a new one.

As he was the third prince of his house, he had no likely prospect of succeeding to the sovereignty. His ambition had never been awakened; his passions had taken another direction. Contented to find himself independent of the will of others, he never enforced his own as a law; his utmost wishes did not soar beyond the peaceful quietude of a private life, free from care. He read much, but without discrimination. As his education had been neglected, and, as he had early entered the career of arms, his understanding had never been fully matured. Hence the knowledge he afterwards acquired served but to increase the chaos of his ideas, because it was built on an unstable foundation.

He was a Protestant, as all his family had been, by birth, but not by investigation, which he had never attempted, although at one period of his life he had been an enthusiast in its cause. He had never, so far as came to my knowledge, been a freemason.

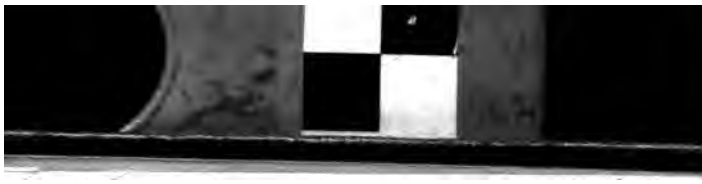
. . . . .

One evening we were, as usual, walking by ourselves, well masked in the square of St. Mark. It was growing late, and the crowd was dispersing, when the prince

observed a mask which followed us everywhere. This mask was an Armenian, and walked alone. We quickened our steps, and endeavored to baffle him by repeatedly altering our course. It was in vain, the mask was always close behind us. "You have had no intrigue here, I hope," said the prince at last, "the husbands of Venice are dangerous." "I do not know a single lady in the place," was my answer. "Let us sit down here, and speak German," said he; "I fancy we are mistaken for some other persons." We sat down upon a stone bench, and expected the mask would have passed by. He came directly up to us, and took his seat by the side of the prince. The latter took out his watch, and, rising at the same time, addressed me thus in a loud voice in French: "It is past nine. Come, we forget that we are waited for at the Louvre." This speech he only invented in order to deceive the mask as to our route. "Nine!" repeated the latter in the same language, in a slow and expressive voice, "Congratulate yourself, my prince" (calling him by his real name); "he died at nine." In saying this, he rose and went away.

We looked at each other in amazement. "Who is dead?" said the prince at length, after a long silence. "Let us follow him," replied I, "and demand an explanation." We searched every corner of the place; the mask was nowhere to be found. We returned to our hotel disappointed. The prince spoke not a word to me the whole way; he walked apart by himself, and appeared to be greatly agitated, which he afterwards confessed to me was the case. Having reached home, he began at length to speak: "Is it not laughable," said he, "that a madman should have the power thus to disturb a man's tranquillity by two or three words?" We wished each other a good-night; and, as soon as I was in my own apartment, I noted down in my pocket-book the day and the hour when this adventure happened. It was on a Thursday.

The next evening the prince said to me, "Suppose we go to the square of St. Mark, and seek for our mysterious Armenian. I long to see this comedy unravelled." I consented. We walked in the square till eleven. The Armenian was nowhere to be seen. We repeated our



walk the four following evenings, and each time with the same bad success.

On the sixth evening, as we went out of the hotel, it occurred to me, whether designedly or otherwise I cannot recollect, to tell the servants where we might be found in case we should be inquired for. The prince remarked my precaution, and approved of it with a smile. We found the square of St. Mark very much crowded. Scarcely had we advanced thirty steps when I perceived the Armenian, who was pressing rapidly through the crowd, and seemed to be in search of some one. We were just approaching him, when Baron F——, one of the prince's retinue, came up to us quite breathless, and delivered to the prince a letter. "It is sealed with black," said he, "and we supposed from this that it might contain matters of importance." I was struck as with a thunderbolt. The prince went near a torch, and began to read. "My cousin is dead!" exclaimed he. "When?" inquired I anxiously, interrupting him. He looked again into the letter. "Last Thursday night at nine."

We had not recovered from our surprise when the Armenian stood before us. "You are known here, my prince!" said he. "Hasten to your hotel. You will find there the deputies from the Senate. Do not hesitate to accept the honor they intend to offer you. Baron F—— forgot to tell you that your remittances are arrived." He disappeared among the crowd.

We hastened to our hotel, and found everything as the Armenian had told us. Three noblemen of the republic were waiting to pay their respects to the prince, and to escort him in state to the Assembly, where the first nobility of the city were ready to receive him. He had hardly time enough to give me a hint to sit up for him till his return.

About eleven o'clock at night he returned. On entering the room he appeared grave and thoughtful. Having dismissed the servants, he took me by the hand, and said, in the words of Hamlet, "Count——

> "'There are more things in heav'n and earth,
> Than are dreamt of in your philosophy.'"

"Gracious prince!" replied I, "you seem to forget that you are retiring to your pillow greatly enriched in prospect." The deceased was the hereditary prince.

"Do not remind me of it," said the prince; "for should I even have acquired a crown I am now too much engaged to occupy myself with such a trifle. If that Armenian has not merely guessed by chance"——

"How can that be, my prince?" interrupted I.

"Then will I resign to you all my hopes of royalty in exchange for a monk's cowl."

I have mentioned this purposely to show how far every ambitious idea was then distant from his thoughts.

The following evening we went earlier than usual to the square of St. Mark. A sudden shower of rain obliged us to take shelter in a coffee-house, where we found a party engaged at cards. The prince took his place behind the chair of a Spaniard to observe the game. I went into an adjacent chamber to read the newspapers. A short time afterwards I heard a noise in the card-room. Previously to the entrance of the prince the Spaniard had been constantly losing, but since then he had won upon every card. The fortune of the game was reversed in a striking manner, and the bank was in danger of being challenged by the pointeur, whom this lucky change of fortune had rendered more adventurous. A Venetian, who kept the bank, told the prince in a very rude manner that his presence interrupted the fortune of the game, and desired him to quit the table. The latter looked coldly at him, remained in his place, and preserved the same countenance, when the Venetian repeated his insulting demand in French. He thought the prince understood neither French nor Italian; and, addressing himself with a contemptuous laugh to the company, said "Pray, gentlemen, tell me how I must make myself understood to this fool." At the same time he rose and prepared to seize the prince by the arm. His patience forsook the latter; he grasped the Venetian with a strong hand, and threw him violently on the ground. The company rose up in confusion. Hearing the noise, I hastily entered the room, and unguardedly called the prince by his name. "Take care," said I, imprudently;

"we are in Venice." The name of the prince caused a general silence, which ended in a whispering which appeared to me to have a dangerous tendency. All the Italians present divided into parties, and kept aloof. One after the other left the room, so that we soon found ourselves alone with the Spaniard and a few Frenchmen. "You are lost, prince," said they, "if you do not leave the city immediately. The Venetian whom you have handled so roughly is rich enough to hire a *bravo*. It costs him but fifty zechins to be revenged by your death." The Spaniard offered, for the security of the prince, to go for the guards, and even to accompany us home himself. The Frenchmen proposed to do the same. We were still deliberating what to do when the doors suddenly opened, and some officers of the Inquisition entered the room. They produced an order of government, which charged us both to follow them immediately. They conducted us under a strong escort to the canal, where a gondola was waiting for us, in which we were ordered to embark. We were blindfolded before we landed. They led us up a large stone staircase, and through a long, winding passage, over vaults, as I judged from the echoes that resounded under our feet. At length we came to another staircase, and, having descended a flight of steps, we entered a hall, where the bandage was removed from our eyes. We found ourselves in a circle of venerable old men, all dressed in black; the hall was hung round with black and dimly lighted. A dead silence reigned in the assembly, which inspired us with a feeling of awe. One of the old men, who appeared to be the principal Inquisitor, approached the prince with a solemn countenance, and said, pointing to the Venetian, who was led forward: —

"Do you recognize this man as the same who offended you at the coffee-house?"

"I do," answered the prince.

Then addressing the prisoner: "Is this the same person whom you meant to have assassinated to-night?"

The prisoner replied, "Yes."

In the same instant the circle opened, and we saw with horror the head of the Venetian severed from his body.

"Are you content with this satisfaction?" said the Inquisitor. The prince had fainted in the arms of his attendants. "Go," added the Inquisitor, turning to me, with a terrible voice, "Go; and in future judge less hastily of the administration of justice in Venice."

Who the unknown friend was who had thus saved us from inevitable death, by interposing in our behalf the active arm of justice, we could not conjecture. Filled with terror we reached our hotel. It was past midnight. The chamberlain, Z——, was waiting anxiously for us at the door.

"How fortunate it was that you sent us a message," said he to the prince, as he lighted us up the staircase. "The news which Baron F—— soon after brought us respecting you from the square of St. Mark would otherwise have given us the greatest uneasiness."

"I sent you a message!" said the prince. "When? I know nothing of it."

"This evening, after eight, you sent us word that we must not be alarmed if you should come home later to-night than usual."

The prince looked at me. "Perhaps you have taken this precaution without mentioning it to me."

I knew nothing of it.

"It must be so, however," replied the chamberlain, "since here is your repeating-watch, which you sent me as a mark of authenticity."

The prince put his hand to his watch-pocket. It was empty, and he recognized the watch which the chamberlain held as his own.

"Who brought it?" said he, in amazement.

"An unknown mask, in an Armenian dress, who disappeared immediately."

We stood looking at each other. "What do you think of this?" said the prince at last, after a long silence. "I have a secret guardian here in Venice."

The frightful transaction of this night threw the prince into a fever, which confined him to his room for a week. During this time our hotel was crowded with Venetians and strangers, who visited the prince from a deference to his newly-discovered rank. They vied with each other

in offers of service, and it was not a little entertaining to observe that the last visitor seldom failed to hint some suspicion derogatory to the character of the preceding one. Billets-doux and nostrums poured in upon us from all quarters. Every one endeavored to recommend himself in his own way. Our adventure with the Inquisition was no more mentioned. The court of ——, wishing the prince to delay his departure from Venice for some time, orders were sent to several bankers to pay him considerable sums of money. He was thus, against his will, compelled to protract his residence in Italy; and at his request I also resolved to postpone my departure for some time longer.

As soon as the prince had recovered strength enough to quit his chamber he was advised by his physician to take an airing in a gondola upon the Brenta, for the benefit of the air, to which, as the weather was serene, he readily consented. Just as the prince was about to step into the boat he missed the key of a little chest in which some very valuable papers were enclosed. We immediately turned back to search for it. He very distinctly remembered that he had locked the chest the day before, and he had never left the room in the interval. As our endeavors to find it proved ineffectual, we were obliged to relinquish the search in order to avoid being too late. The prince, whose soul was above suspicion, gave up the key as lost, and desired that it might not be mentioned any more.

Our little voyage was exceedingly delightful. A picturesque country, which at every winding of the river seemed to increase in richness and beauty; the serenity of the sky, which formed a May day in the middle of February; the charming gardens and elegant country-seats which adorned the banks of the Brenta; the majestic city of Venice behind us, with its lofty spires, and a forest of masts, rising as it were out of the waves; all this afforded us one of the most splendid prospects in the world. We wholly abandoned ourselves to the enchantment of Nature's luxuriant scenery; our minds shared the hilarity of the day; even the prince himself lost his wonted gravity, and vied with us in merry jests

and diversions. On landing about two Italian miles from the city we heard the sound of sprightly music; it came from a small village at a little distance from the Brenta, where there was at that time a fair. The place was crowded with company of every description. A troop of young girls and boys, dressed in theatrical habits, welcomed us in a pantomimical dance. The invention was novel; animation and grace attended their every movement. Before the dance was quite concluded the principal actress, who represented a queen, stopped suddenly, as if arrested by an invisible arm. Herself and those around her were motionless. The music ceased. The assembly was silent. Not a breath was to be heard, and the queen stood with her eyes fixed on the ground in deep abstraction. On a sudden she started from her reverie with the fury of one inspired, and looked wildly around her. "A king is among us," she exclaimed, taking her crown from her head, and laying it at the feet of the prince. Every one present cast their eyes upon him, and doubted for some time whether there was any meaning in this farce; so much were they deceived by the impressive seriousness of the actress. This silence was at length broken by a general clapping of hands, as a mark of approbation. I looked at the prince. I noticed that he appeared not a little disconcerted, and endeavored to escape the inquisitive glances of the spectators. He threw money to the players, and hastened to extricate himself from the crowd.

We had advanced but a few steps when a venerable barefooted friar, pressing through the crowd, placed himself in the prince's path. "My lord," said he, "give the holy Virgin part of your gold. You will want her prayers." He uttered these words in a tone of voice which startled us extremely, and then disappeared in the throng.

In the meantime our company had increased. An English lord, whom the prince had seen before at Nice, some merchants of Leghorn, a German prebendary, a French abbé with some ladies, and a Russian officer, attached themselves to our party. The physiognomy of the latter had something so uncommon as to attract our

particular attention. Never in my life did I see such various features and so little expression; so much attractive benevolence and such forbidding coldness in the same face. Each passion seemed by turns to have exercised its ravages on it, and to have successively abandoned it. Nothing remained but the calm, piercing look of a person deeply skilled in the knowledge of mankind; but it was a look that abashed every one on whom it was directed. This extraordinary man followed us at a distance, and seemed apparently to take but little interest in what was passing.

We came to a booth where there was a lottery. The ladies bought shares. We followed their example, and the prince himself purchased a ticket. He won a snuff-box. As he opened it I saw him turn pale and start back. It contained his lost key.

"How is this?" said he to me, as we were left for a moment alone. "A superior power attends me, omniscience surrounds me. An invisible being, whom I cannot escape, watches over my steps. I must seek for the Armenian, and obtain an explanation from him."

The sun was setting when we arrived at the pleasure-house, where a supper had been prepared for us. The prince's name had augmented our company to sixteen. Besides the above-mentioned persons there was a virtuoso from Rome, several Swiss gentlemen, and an adventurer from Palermo in regimentals, who gave himself out for a captain. We resolved to spend the evening where we were, and to return home by torchlight. The conversation at table was lively. The prince could not forbear relating his adventure of the key, which excited general astonishment. A warm dispute on the subject presently took place. Most of the company positively maintained that the pretended occult sciences were nothing better than juggling tricks. The French abbé, who had drank rather too much wine, challenged the whole tribe of ghosts, the English lord uttered blasphemies, and the musician made a cross to exorcise the devil. Some few of the company, amongst whom was the prince, contended that opinions respecting such matters ought to be kept to oneself. In the meantime the Russian officer discoursed with the

ladies, and did not seem to pay attention to any part of conversation. In the heat of the dispute no one observed that the Sicilian had left the room. In less than half an hour he returned wrapped in a cloak, and placed himself behind the chair of the Frenchman. "A few moments ago," said he, "you had the temerity to challenge the whole tribe of ghosts. Would you wish to make a trial with one of them?"

"I will," answered the abbé, "if you will take upon yourself to introduce one."

"That I am ready to do," replied the Sicilian, turning to us, "as soon as these ladies and gentlemen have left us."

"Why only then?" exclaimed the Englishman. "A courageous ghost will surely not be afraid of a cheerful company."

"I would not answer for the consequences," said the Sicilian.

"For heaven's sake, no!" cried the ladies, starting affrighted from their chairs.

"Call your ghost," said the abbé, in a tone of defiance, "but warn him beforehand that there are sharp-pointed weapons here." At the same time he asked one of the company for a sword.

"If you preserve the same intention in his presence," answered the Sicilian, coolly, "you may then act as you please." He then turned towards the prince: "Your highness," said he, "asserts that your key has been in the hands of a stranger; can you conjecture in whose?"

"No."

"Have you no suspicion?"

"It certainly occurred to me that" ——

"Should you know the person if you saw him?"

"Undoubtedly."

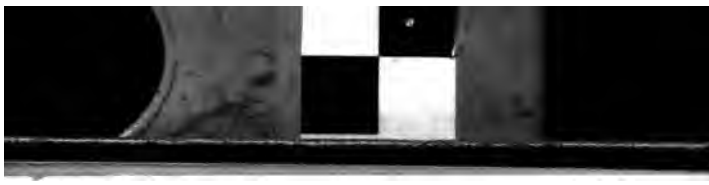
The Sicilian, throwing back his cloak, took out a looking-glass and held it before the prince. "Is this the man?"

The prince drew back with affright.

"Whom have you seen?" I inquired.

"The Armenian."

The Sicilian concealed his looking-glass under his cloak.



"Is it the person whom you thought of?" demanded the whole company.

"The same."

A sudden change manifested itself on every face; no more laughter was to be heard. All eyes were fixed with curiosity on the Sicilian.

"Monsieur l'Abbé! The matter grows serious," said the Englishman. "I advise you to think of beating a retreat."

"The fellow is in league with the devil," exclaimed the Frenchman, and rushed out of the house. The ladies ran shrieking from the room. The virtuoso followed them. The German prebendary was snoring in a chair. The Russian officer continued sitting in his place as before, perfectly indifferent to what was passing.

"Perhaps your attention was only to raise a laugh at the expense of that boaster," said the prince, after they were gone, "or would you indeed fulfil your promise to us?"

"It is true," replied the Sicilian; "I was but jesting with the abbé. I took him at his word, because I knew very well that the coward would not suffer me to proceed to extremities. The matter itself is, however, too serious to serve merely as a jest."

"You grant, then, that it is in your power?"

The sorcerer maintained a long silence, and kept his look fixed steadily on the prince, as if to examine him.

"It is!" answered he at last.

The prince's curiosity was now raised to the highest pitch. A fondness for the marvellous had ever been his prevailing weakness. His improved understanding and a proper course of reading had for some time dissipated every idea of this kind; but the appearance of the Armenian had revived them. He stepped aside with the Sicilian, and I heard them in very earnest conversation.

"You see in me," said the prince, "a man who burns with impatience to be convinced on this momentous subject. I would embrace as a benefactor, I would cherish as my best friend him who could dissipate my doubts

and remove the veil from my eyes. Would you render me this important service?"

"What is your request!" inquired the Sicilian, hesitating.

"For the present I only beg some proof of your art. Let me see an apparition."

"To what will this lead?"

"After a more intimate acquaintance with me you may be able to judge whether I deserve further instruction."

"I have the greatest esteem for your highness, gracious prince. A secret power in your countenance, of which you yourself are as yet ignorant, drew me at first sight irresistibly towards you. You are more powerful than you are yourself aware. You may command me to the utmost extent of my power, but" ——

"Then let me see an apparition."

"But I must first be certain that you do not require it from mere curiosity. Though the invisible powers are in some degree at my command, it is on the sacred condition that I do not abuse my authority."

"My intentions are most pure. I want truth."

They left their places, and removed to a distant window, where I could no longer hear them. The English lord, who had likewise overheard this conversation, took me aside. "Your prince has a noble mind. I am sorry for him. I will pledge my salvation that he has to do with a rascal."

"Everything depends on the manner in which the sorcerer will extricate himself from this business."

"Listen to me. The poor devil is now pretending to be scrupulous. He will not show his tricks unless he hears the sound of gold. There are nine of us. Let us make a collection. That will spoil his scheme, and perhaps open the eyes of the prince."

"I am content." The Englishman threw six guineas upon a plate, and went round gathering subscriptions. Each of us contributed some louis-d'ors. The Russian officer was particularly pleased with our proposal; he laid a bank-note of one hundred zechins on the plate, a piece of extravagance which startled the Englishman. We

brought the collection to the prince. "Be so kind," said the English lord, "as to entreat this gentleman in our names to let us see a specimen of his art, and to accept of this small token of our gratitude." The prince added a ring of value, and offered the whole to the Sicilian. He hesitated a few moments. "Gentlemen," answered he, "I am humbled by this generosity, but I yield to your request. Your wishes shall be gratified." At the same time he rang the bell. "As for this money," continued he, "to which I have no right myself, permit me to send it to the next monastery to be applied to pious uses. I shall only keep this ring as a precious memorial of the worthiest of princes."

Here the landlord entered; and the Sicilian handed him over the money. "He is a rascal notwithstanding," whispered the Englishman to me. "He refuses the money because at present his designs are chiefly on the prince."

"Whom do you wish to see?" asked the sorcerer.

The prince considered for a moment. "We may as well have a great man at once," said the Englishman. "Ask for Pope Ganganelli. It can make no difference to this gentleman."

The Sicilian bit his lips. "I dare not call one of the Lord's anointed."

"That is a pity!" replied the English lord; "perhaps we might have heard from him what disorder he died of."

"The Marquis de Lanoy," began the prince, "was a French brigadier in the late war, and my most intimate friend. Having received a mortal wound in the battle of Hastinbeck, he was carried to my tent, where he soon after died in my arms. In his last agony he made a sign for me to approach. "'Prince,' said he to me, 'I shall never again behold my native land. I must, therefore, acquaint you with a secret known to none but myself. In a convent on the frontiers of Flanders lives a —— .' He expired. Death cut short the thread of his discourse. I wish to see my friend to hear the remainder."

"You ask much," exclaimed the Englishman, with an oath. "I proclaim you the greatest sorcerer on earth if

you can solve this problem," continued he, turning to the Sicilian. We admired the wise choice of the prince, and unanimously gave our approval to the proposition. In the meantime the sorcerer paced up and down the room with hasty steps, apparently struggling with himself.

"This was all that the dying marquis communicated to you?"

"It is all."

"Did you make no further inquiries about the matter in his native country?"

"I did, but they all proved fruitless."

"Had the Marquis de Lanoy led an irreproachable life? I dare not call up every shade indiscriminately."

"He died, repenting the excesses of his youth."

"Do you carry with you any token of his!"

"I do." (The prince had really a snuff-box with the marquis' portrait enamelled in miniature on the lid, which he had placed upon the table near his plate during the time of supper.)

"I do not want to know what it is. If you will leave me you shall see the deceased."

He requested us to wait in the other pavilion until he should call us. At the same time he caused all the furniture to be removed from the room, the windows to be taken out, and the shutters to be bolted. He ordered the innkeeper, with whom he appeared to be intimately connected, to bring a vessel with burning coals, and carefully to extinguish every fire in the house. Previous to our leaving the room he obliged us separately to pledge our honor that we would maintain an everlasting silence respecting everything we should see and hear. All the doors of the pavilion we were in were bolted behind us when we left it.

It was past eleven, and a dead silence reigned throughout the whole house. As we were retiring from the saloon the Russian officer asked me whether we had loaded pistols. "For what purpose?" asked I. "They may possibly be of some use," replied he. "Wait a moment. I will provide some." He went away. The Baron F—— and I opened a window opposite the pavilion we had left. We fancied we heard two persons

whispering to each other, and a noise like that of a ladder applied to one of the windows. This was, however, a mere conjecture, and I did not dare affirm it as a fact. The Russian officer came back with a brace of pistols, after having been absent about half an hour. We saw him load them with powder and ball. It was almost two o'clock in the morning when the sorcerer came and announced that all was prepared. Before we entered the room he desired us to take off our shoes, and to appear in our shirts, stockings, and under-garments. He bolted the doors after us as before.

We found in the middle of the room a large, black circle, drawn with charcoal, the space within which was capable of containing us all very easily. The planks of the chamber floor next to the wall were taken up all round the room, so that we stood as it were upon an island. An altar covered with black cloth was placed in the centre upon a carpet of red satin. A Chaldee Bible was laid open, together with a skull; and a silver crucifix was fastened upon the altar. Instead of candles some spirits of wine were burning in a silver vessel. A thick smoke of frankincense darkened the room and almost extinguished the lights. The sorcerer was undressed like ourselves, but barefooted; about his bare neck he wore an amulet,* suspended by a chain of human hair; round his middle was a white apron marked with cabalistic characters and symbolical figures. He desired us to join hands and to observe profound silence; above all he ordered us not to ask the apparition any question. He desired the Englishman and myself, whom he seemed to distrust the most, constantly to hold two naked swords crossways an inch above his head as long as the conjura-

* Amulet is a charm or preservative against mischief, witchcraft, or diseases. Amulets were made of stone, metal, simples, animals, and everything which fancy or caprice suggested; and sometimes they consisted of words, characters, and sentences ranged in a particular order and engraved upon wood, and worn about the neck or some other part of the body. At other times they were neither written nor engraved, but prepared with many superstitious ceremonies, great regard being usually paid to the influence of the stars. The Arabians have given to this species of amulets the name of talismans. All nations have been fond of amulets. The Jews were extremely superstitious in the use of them to drive away diseases; and even amongst the Christians of the early times amulets were made of the wood of the cross or ribbons, with a text of Scripture written on them, as preservatives against diseases.

tion should last. We formed a half-moon round him; the Russian officer placed himself close to the English lord, and was the nearest to the altar. The sorcerer stood upon the satin carpet with his face turned to the east. He sprinkled holy water in the direction of the four cardinal points of the compass, and bowed three times before the Bible. The formula of the conjuration, of which we did not understand a word, lasted for the space of seven or eight minutes, at the end of which he made a sign to those who stood close behind to seize him firmly by the hair. Amid the most violent convulsions he called the deceased three times by his name, and the third time he stretched forth his hand towards the crucifix.

On a sudden we all felt at the same instant a stroke as of a flash of lightning, so powerful that it obliged us to quit each other's hands; a terrible thunder shook the house; the locks jarred; the doors creaked; the cover of the silver box fell down and extinguished the light; and on the opposite wall over the chimney-piece appeared a human figure in a bloody shirt, with the paleness of death on its countenance.

"Who calls me?" said a hollow, hardly intelligible voice.

"Thy friend," answered the sorcerer, "who respects thy memory, and prays for thy soul." He named the prince.

The answers of the apparition were always given at very long intervals.

"What does he want with me?" continued the voice.

"He wants to hear the remainder of the confession which thou hadst begun to impart to him in thy dying hour, but did not finish."

"In a convent on the frontiers of Flanders lives a ——."

The house again trembled; a dreadful thunder rolled; a flash of lightning illuminated the room; the doors flew open, and another human figure, bloody and pale as the first, but more terrible, appeared on the threshold. The spirit in the box began to burn again by itself, and the hall was light as before.

"Who is amongst us?" exclaimed the sorcerer, terrified, casting a look of horror on the assemblage; "I did

not want thee." The figure advanced with noiseless and majestic steps directly up to the altar, stood on the satin carpet over against us, and touched the crucifix. The first apparition was seen no more.

"Who calls me?" demanded the second apparition.

The sorcerer began to tremble. Terror and amazement kept us motionless for some time. I seized a pistol. The sorcerer snatched it out of my hand, and fired it at the apparition. The ball rolled slowly upon the altar, and the figure emerged unaltered from the smoke. The sorcerer fell senseless on the gronnd.

"What is this?" exclaimed the Englishman, in astonishment, aiming a blow at the ghost with a sword. The figure touched his arm, and the weapon fell to the ground. The perspiration stood on my brow with horror. Baron F—— afterwards confessed to me that he had prayed silently.

During all this time the prince stood fearless and tranquil, his eyes riveted on the second apparition. "Yes, I know thee," said he at length, with emotion; "thou art Lanoy; thou art my friend. Whence comest thou?"

"Eternity is mute. Ask me concerning my past life."

"Who is it that lives in the convent which thou mentionedst to me in thy last moments?"

"My daughter."

"How? Hast thou been a father?"

"Woe is me that I was not."

"Art thou not happy, Lanoy?"

"God has judged."

"Can I render thee any further service in this world?"

"None but to think of thyself."

"How must I do that?"

"Thou wilt learn at Rome."

The thunder again rolled; a black cloud of smoke filled the room; when it had dispersed the figure was no longer visible. I forced open one of the window shutters. It was daylight.

The sorcerer now recovered from his swoon. "Where are we?" asked he, seeing the daylight.

The Russian officer stood close beside him, and looked over his shoulder. "Juggler," said he to him, with a

terrible countenance, "thou shalt summon no more ghosts."

The Sicilian turned round, looked steadfastly in his face, uttered a loud shriek, and threw himself at his feet.

We looked all at once at the pretended Russian. The prince instantly recognized the features of the Armenian, and the words he was about to utter expired on his tongue. We were all as it were petrified with fear and amazement. Silent and motionless, our eyes were fixed on this mysterious being, who beheld us with a calm but penetrating look of grandeur and superiority. A minute elapsed in this awful silence; another succeeded; not a breath was to be heard.

A violent battering against the door roused us at last from this stupor. The door fell in pieces into the room, and several officers of justice, with a guard, rushed in. "Here they are, all together," said the leader to his followers. Then addressing himself to us, "In the name of the government," continued he, "I arrest you." We had no time to recollect ourselves; in a few moments we were surrounded. The Russian officer, whom I shall again call the Armenian, took the chief officer aside, and, as far as I in my confusion could notice, I observed him whisper a few words to the latter, and show him a written paper. The officer, bowing respectfully, immediately quitted him, turned to us, and taking off his hat, said: "Gentlemen, I humbly beg your pardon for having confounded you with this impostor. I shall not inquire who you are, as this gentleman assures me you are men of honor." At the same time he gave his companions a sign to leave us at liberty. He ordered the Sicilian to be bound and strictly guarded. "The fellow is ripe for punishment," added he; "we have been searching for him these seven months."

The wretched sorcerer was really an object of pity. The terror caused by the second apparition, and by this unexpected arrest, had together overpowered his senses. Helpless as a child, he suffered himself to be bound without resistance. His eyes were wide open and immovable; his face was pale as death; his lips quivered convulsively, but he was unable to utter a sound. Every

moment we expected he would fall into a fit. The prince was moved by the situation in which he saw him. He undertook to procure his discharge from the leader of the police, to whom he discovered his rank. "Do you know, gracious prince," said the officer, "for whom your highness is so generously interceding? The juggling tricks by which he endeavored to deceive you are the least of his crimes. We have secured his accomplices; they depose terrible facts against him. He may think himself fortunate if he is only punished with the galleys."

In the meantime we saw the innkeeper and his family led bound through the yard. "This man, too?" said the prince; "and what is his crime?"

"He was his comrade and accomplice," answered the officer. "He assisted him in his deceptions and robberies, and shared the booty with him. Your highness shall be convinced of it presently. Search the house," continued he, turning to his followers, "and bring me immediate notice of what you find."

The prince looked around for the Armenian, but he had disappeared. In the confusion occasioned by the arrival of the watch he had found means to steal away unperceived. The prince was inconsolable; he declared he would send all his servants, and would himself go in search of this mysterious man; and he wished me to go with him. I hastened to the window; the house was surrounded by a great number of idlers, whom the account of this event had attracted to the spot. It was impossible to get through the crowd. I represented this to the prince. "If," said I, "it is the Armenian's intention to conceal himself from us, he is doubtless better acquainted with the intricacies of the place than we, and all our inquiries would prove fruitless. Let us rather remain here a little longer, gracious prince," added I. "This officer, to whom, if I observed right, he discovered himself, may perhaps give us some information respecting him."

We now for the first time recollected that we were still undressed. We hastened to the other pavilion and put on our clothes as quickly as possible. When we returned they had finished searching the house.

On removing the altar and some of the boards of the floor a spacious vault was discovered. It was high enough, for a man might sit upright in it with ease, and was separated from the cellar by a door and a narrow staircase. In this vault they found an electrical machine, a clock, and a little silver bell, which, as well as the electrical machine, was in communication with the altar and the crucifix that was fastened upon it. A hole had been made in the window-shutter opposite the chimney, which opened and shut with a slide. In this hole, as we learnt afterwards, was fixed a magic lantern, from which the figure of the ghost had been reflected on the opposite wall, over the chimney. From the garret and the cellar they brought several drums, to which large leaden bullets were fastened by strings; these had probably been used to imitate the roaring of thunder which we had heard.

On searching the Sicilian's clothes they found, in a case, different powders, genuine mercury in vials and boxes, phosphorus in a glass bottle, and a ring, which we immediately knew to be magnetic, because it adhered to a steel button that by accident had been placed near it. In his coat-pockets were found a rosary, a Jew's beard, a dagger, and a brace of pocket-pistols. "Let us see whether they are loaded," said one of the watch, and fired up the chimney.

"Jesus Maria!" cried a hollow voice, which we knew to be that of the first apparition, and at the same instant a bleeding person came tumbling down the chimney. "What! not yet laid, poor ghost!" cried the Englishman, while we started back in affright. "Home to thy grave. Thou hast appeared what thou wert not; now thou wilt become what thou didst but seem."

"Jesus Maria! I am wounded," repeated the man in the chimney. The ball had fractured his right leg. Care was immediately taken to have the wound dressed.

"But who art thou?" said the English lord; "and what evil spirit brought thee here?"

"I am a poor mendicant friar," answered the wounded man; "a strange gentleman gave me a zechin to"——

"Repeat a speech. And why didst thou not withdraw as soon as thy task was finished?"

napped, or had voluntarily absented himself, was a secret to every one. The last supposition was extremely improbable, as his conduct had always been quiet and regular, and nobody had ever found fault with him. All that his companions could recollect was that he had been for some time very melancholy, and that, whenever he had a moment's leisure, he used to visit a certain monastery in the Giudecca, where he had formed an acquaintance with some monks. This induced us to suppose that he might have fallen into the hands of the priests and had been persuaded to turn Catholic; and as the prince was very tolerant, or rather indifferent about matters of this kind, and the few inquiries he caused to be made proved unsuccessful, he gave up the search. He, however, regretted the loss of this man, who had constantly attended him in his campaigns, had always been faithfully attached to him, and whom it was therefore difficult to replace in a foreign country. The very same day the prince's banker, whom he had commissioned to provide him with another servant, was announced at the moment we were going out. He presented to the prince a middle-aged man, well-dressed, and of good appearance, who had been for a long time secretary to a procurator, spoke French and a little German, and was besides furnished with the best recommendations. The prince was pleased with the man's physiognomy; and as he declared that he would be satisfied with such wages as his service should be found to merit, the prince engaged him immediately.

We found the Sicilian in a private prison where, as the officer assured us, he had been lodged for the present, to accommodate the prince, before being removed to the lead roofs, to which there is no access. These lead roofs are the most terrible prisons in Venice. They are situated on the top of the palace of St. Mark, and the miserable criminals suffer so dreadfully from the heat of the leads occasioned by the heat of the burning rays of the sun descending directly upon them that they frequently become delirious. The Sicilian had recovered from his yesterday's terror, and rose respectfully on seeing the prince enter. He had fetters on one hand and on one

leg, but was able to walk about the room at liberty. The sentinel at the door withdrew as soon as we had entered.

"I come," said the prince, "to request an explanation of you on two subjects. You owe me the one, and it shall not be to your disadvantage if you grant me the other."

"My part is now acted," replied the Sicilian, "my destiny is in your hands."

"Your sincerity alone can mitigate your punishment.

"Speak, honored prince, I am ready to answer you. I have nothing now to lose."

"You showed me the face of the Armenian in a looking-glass. How was this effected?"

"What you saw was no looking-glass. A portrait in crayons behind a glass, representing a man in an Armenian dress, deceived you. My quickness, the twilight, and your astonishment favored the deception. The picture itself must have been found among the other things seized at the inn."

"But how could you read my thoughts so accurately as to hit upon the Armenian?"

"This was not difficult, your highness. You must frequently have mentioned your adventure with the Armenian at table in the presence of your domestics. One of my accomplices accidentally got acquainted with one of your domestics in the Giudecca, and learned from him gradually as much as I wished to know."

"Where is the man?" asked the prince; "I have missed him, and doubtless you know of his desertion."

"I swear to your honor, sir, that I know not a syllable about it. I have never seen him myself, nor had any other concern with him than the one before mentioned."

"Proceed with your story," said the prince.

"By this means, also, I received the first information of your residence and of your adventures at Venice; and I resolved immediately to profit by them. You see, prince, I am sincere. I was apprised of your intended excursion on the Brenta. I prepared for it, and a key that dropped by chance from your pocket afforded me the first opportunity of trying my art upon you."

"How! Have I been mistaken? The adventure of the key was then a trick of yours, and not of the Armenian? You say this key fell from my pocket?"

"You accidentally dropped it in taking out your purse, and I seized an opportunity, when no one noticed me, to cover it with my foot. The person of whom you bought the lottery-ticket acted in concert with me. He caused you to draw it from a box where there was no blank, and the key had been in the snuff-box long before it came into your possession."

"I understand you. And the monk who stopped me in my way and addressed me in a manner so solemn"——

"Was the same who, as I hear, has been wounded in the chimney. He is one of my accomplices, and under that disguise has rendered me many important services."

"But what purpose was this intended to answer?"

"To render you thoughtful; to inspire you with such a train of ideas as should be favorable to the wonders I intended afterwards to show you."

"The pantomimical dance, which ended in a manner so extraordinary, was at least none of your contrivance?"

"I had taught the girl who represented the queen. Her performance was the result of my instructions. I supposed your highness would be not a little astonished to find yourself known in this place, and (I entreat your pardon, prince) your adventure with the Armenian gave me reason to hope that you were already disposed to reject natural interpretations, and to attribute so marvellous an occurrence to supernatural agency."

"Indeed," exclaimed the prince, at once angry and amazed, and casting upon me a significant look; "indeed, I did not expect this." *

* Neither did probably the greater number of my readers. The circumstance of the crown deposited at the feet of the prince, in a manner so solemn and unexpected, and the former prediction of the Armenian, seem so naturally and obviously to aim at the same object that at the first reading of these memoirs I immediately remembered the deceitful speech of the witches in Macbeth:—

"Hail to thee, Thane of Glamis!
All hail, Macbeth! that shall be king hereafter!"

and probably the same thing has occurred to many of my readers.

When a certain conviction has taken hold upon a man's mind in a solemn and extraordinary manner, it is sure to follow that all subsequent ideas which are in any way capable of being associated with this conviction should attach themselves to, and in some degree seem to be consequent upon it.

"But," continued he, after a long silence, "how did you produce the figure which appeared on the wall over the chimney?"

"By means of a magic lantern that was fixed in the opposite window-shutter, in which you have undoubtedly observed an opening."

"But how did it happen that not one of us perceived the lantern?" asked Lord Seymour.

"You remember, my lord, that on your re-entering the room it was darkened by a thick smoke of frankincense. I likewise took the precaution to place the boards which had been taken up from the floor upright against the wall near the window. By these means I prevented the shutter from immediately attracting observation. Moreover, the lantern remained covered by a slide until you had taken your places, and there was no further reason to apprehend that you would institute any examination of the saloon."

"As I looked out of the window in the other pavilion," said I, "I fancied I heard a noise like that of a person placing a ladder against the side of the house. Was I right?"

"Exactly; it was the ladder upon which my assistants stood to direct the magic-lantern."

"The apparition," continued the prince, "had really a superficial likeness to my deceased friend, and what was particularly striking, his hair, which was of a very light color, was exactly imitated. Was this mere chance, or how did you come by such a resemblance?"

"Your highness must recollect that you had at table a snuff-box by your plate, with an enamelled portrait of an officer in a —— uniform. I asked whether you had anything about you as a memento of your friend, and as your highness answered in the affirmative, I conjectured that it might be the box. I had attentively examined the

The Sicilian, who seems to have had no other motive for his whole scheme than to astonish the prince by showing him that his rank was discovered, played, without being himself aware of it, the very game which most furthered the view of the Armenian; but however much of its interest this adventure will lose if I take away the higher motive which at first seemed to influence these actions, I must by no means infringe upon historical truth, but must relate the facts exactly as they occurred.—*Note of the German Editor.*

picture during supper, and being very expert in drawing and not less happy in taking likenesses, I had no difficulty in giving to my shade the superficial resemblance you have perceived, the more so as the marquis' features are very marked."

"But the figure seemed to move?"

"It appeared so, yet it was not the figure that moved but the smoke on which the light was reflected."

"And the man who fell down in the chimney spoke for the apparition?"

"He did."

"But he could not hear your question distinctly."

"There was no occasion for it. Your highness will recollect that I cautioned you all very strictly not to propose any question to the apparition yourselves. My inquiries and his answers were preconcerted between us; and that no mistake might happen, I caused him to speak at long intervals, which he counted by the beating of a watch."

"You ordered the innkeeper carefully to extinguish every fire in the house with water; this was undoubtedly"——

"To save the man in the chimney from the danger of being suffocated; because the chimneys in the house communicate with each other, and I did not think myself very secure from your retinue."

"How did it happen," asked Lord Seymour, "that your ghost appeared neither sooner nor later than you wished him?"

"The ghost was in the room for some time before I called him, but while the room was lighted, the shade was too faint to be perceived. When the formula of the conjuration was finished, I caused the cover of the box, in which the spirit was buring, to drop down, the saloon was darkened, and it was not till then that the figure on the wall could be distinctly seen, although it had been reflected there a considerable time before."

"When the ghost appeared, we all felt an electric shock. How was that managed?"

"You have discovered the machine under the altar. You have also seen that I was standing upon a silk

carpet. I directed you to form a half-moon around me, and to take each other's hands. When the crisis approached, I gave a sign to one of you to seize me by the hair. The silver crucifix was the conductor, and you felt the electric shock when I touched it with my hand."

"You ordered Count O —— and myself," continued Lord Seymour, "to hold two naked swords crossways over your head, during the whole time of the conjuration; for what purpose?"

"For no other than to engage your attention during the operation; because I distrusted you two the most. You remember, that I expressly commanded you to hold the sword one inch above my head; by confining you exactly to this distance, I prevented you from looking where I did not wish you. I had not then perceived my principal enemy."

"I own," cried Lord Seymour, "you acted with due précaution — but why were we obliged to appear undressed?"

"Merely to give a greater solemnity to the scene, and to excite your imaginations by the strangeness of the proceeding."

"The second apparition prevented your ghost from speaking," said the prince. "What should we have learnt from him?"

"Nearly the same as what you heard afterwards. It was not without design that I asked your highness whether you had told me everything that the deceased communicated to you, and whether you had made any further inquiries on this subject in his country. I thought this was necessary, in order to prevent the deposition of the ghost from being contradicted by facts with which you were previously acquainted. Knowing likewise that every man in his youth is liable to error, I inquired whether the life of your friend had been irreproachable, and on your answer I founded that of the ghost."

"Your explanation of this matter is satisfactory," resumed the prince, after a short silence; "but there remains a principal circumstance which I must ask you to clear up."

"If it be in my power, and "——

"No conditions! Justice, in whose hands you now are, might perhaps not interrogate you with so much delicacy. Who was this unknown at whose feet we saw you fall? What do you know of him? How did you get acquainted with him? And in what way was he connected with the appearance of the second apparition?"

"Your highness" ——

"On looking at him more attentively, you gave a loud scream, and fell at his feet. What are we to understand by that?"

"This man, your highness" —— He stopped, grew visibly perplexed, and with an embarrassed countenance looked around him. "Yes, prince, by all that is sacred, this unknown is a terrible being."

"What do you know of him? What connection have you with him? Do not hope to conceal the truth from us."

"I shall take care not to do so,—for who will warrant that he is not among us at this very moment?"

"Where? Who?" exclaimed we altogether, "half-amused, half-startled, looking about the room. "That is impossible."

"Oh! to this man, or whatever he may be, things still more incomprehensible are possible."

"But who is he? Whence comes he? Is he an Armenian or a Russian? Of the characters he assumes, which is his real one?"

"He is nothing of what he appears to be. There are few conditions or countries of which he has not worn the mask. No person knows who he is, whence he comes, or whither he goes. That he has been for a long time in Egypt, as many pretend, and that he has brought from thence, out of a catacomb, his occult sciences, I will neither affirm nor deny. Here we only know him by the name of the Incomprehensible. How old, for instance, do you suppose he is?"

"To judge from his appearance he can scarcely have passed forty."

"And of what age do you suppose I am?"

"Not far from fifty."

"Quite right; and I must tell you that I was but a boy

of seventeen when my grandfather spoke to me of this marvellous man whom he had seen at Famagusta; at which time he appeared nearly of the same age as he does at present."

"This is exaggerated, ridiculous, and incredible."

"By no means. Were I not prevented by these fetters I could produce vouchers whose dignity and respectability should leave you no room for doubt. There are several credible persons who remember having seen him, each, at the same time, in different parts of the globe. No sword can wound, no poison can hurt, no fire can burn him; no vessel in which he embarks can be wrecked. Time itself seems to lose its power over him. Years do not affect his constitution, nor age whiten his hair. Never was he seen to take any food. Never did he approach a woman. No sleep closes his eyes. Of the twenty-four hours in the day there is only one which he cannot command; during which no person ever saw him, and during which he never was employed in any terrestrial occupation."

"And this hour is?"

"The twelfth in the night. When the clock strikes twelve at midnight he ceases to belong to the living. In whatever place he is he must immediately be gone; whatever business he is engaged in he must instantly leave it. The terrible sound of the hour of midnight tears him from the arms of friendship, wrests him from the altar, and would drag him away even in the agonies of death. Whither he then goes, or what he is then engaged in, is a secret to every one. No person ventures to interrogate, still less to follow him. His features, at this dreadful hour, assume a sternness of expression so gloomy and terrifying that no person has courage sufficient to look him in the face, or to speak a word to him. However lively the conversation may have been, a dead silence immediately succeeds it, and all around wait for his return in respectful silence without venturing to quit their seats, or to open the door through which he has passed."

"Does nothing extraordinary appear in his person when he returns?" inquired one of our party.

"Nothing, except that he seems pale and exhausted, like a man who has just suffered a painful operation, or received some disastrous intelligence. Some pretend to have seen drops of blood on his linen, but with what degree of veracity I cannot affirm."

"Did no person ever attempt to conceal the approach of this hour from him, or endeavor to preoccupy his mind in such a manner as to make him forget it?"

"Once only, it is said, he missed the appointed time. The company was numerous and remained together late in the night. All the clocks and watches were purposely set wrong, and the warmth of conversation carried him away. When the stated hour arrived he suddenly became silent and motionless; his limbs continued in the position in which this instant had arrested them; his eyes were fixed; his pulse ceased to beat. All the means employed to awake him proved fruitless, and this situation endured till the hour had elapsed. He then revived on a sudden without any assistance, opened his eyes, and resumed his speech at the very syllable which he was pronouncing at the moment of interruption. The general consternation discovered to him what had happened, and he declared, with an awful solemnity, that they ought to think themselves happy in having escaped with the fright alone. The same night he quitted forever the city where this circumstance had occurred. The common opinion is that during this mysterious hour he converses with his genius. Some even suppose him to be one of the departed who is allowed to pass twenty-three hours of the day among the living, and that in the twenty-fourth his soul is obliged to return to the infernal regions to suffer its punishment. Some believe him to be the famous Apollonius of Tyana; and others the disciple of John, of whom it is said, 'He shall remain until the last judgment.'"

"A character so wonderful," replied the prince, "cannot fail to give rise to whimsical conjectures. But all this you profess to know only by hearsay, and yet his behavior to you and yours to him seemed to indicate a more intimate acquaintance. Is it not founded upon some particular event in which you have yourself been concerned? Conceal nothing from us."

The Sicilian looked at us doubtingly and remained silent.

"If it concerns something," continued the prince, "that you do not wish to be made known, I promise you, in the name of these two gentlemen, the most inviolable secrecy. But speak candidly and without reserve."

"Could I hope," answered the prisoner, after a long silence, "that you would not make use of what I am going to relate as evidence against me, I would tell you a remarkable adventure of this Armenian, of which I myself was witness, and which will leave you no doubt of his supernatural powers. But I beg leave to conceal some of the names."

"Cannot you do it without this condition?"

"No, your highness. There is a family concerned in it whom I have reason to respect."

"Let us hear your story."

"It is about five years ago," began the Sicilian, "that at Naples, where I was practising my art with tolerable success, I became acquainted with a person of the name of Lorenzo del M——, chevalier of the Order of St. Stephen, a young and rich nobleman, of one of the first families in the kingdom, who loaded me with kindnesses, and seemed to have a great esteem for my occult knowledge. He told me that the Marquis del M—nte, his father, was a zealous admirer of the cabala, and would think himself happy in having a philosopher like myself (for such he was pleased to call me) under his roof. The marquis lived in one of his country seats on the sea-shore, about seven miles from Naples. There, almost entirely secluded from the world, he bewailed the loss of a beloved son, of whom he had been deprived by a terrible calamity. The chevalier gave me to understand that he and his family might perhaps have occasion to employ me on a matter of the most grave importance, in the hope of gaining through my secret science some information, to procure which all natural means had been tried in vain. He added, with a very significant look, that he himself might, perhaps at some future period, have reason to look upon me as the restorer of his tranquillity,

and of all his earthly happiness. The affair was as follows: —

"This Lorenzo was the younger son of the marquis, and for that reason had been destined for the church; the family estates were to descend to the eldest. Jeronymo, which was the name of the latter, had spent many years on his travels, and had returned to his country about seven years prior to the event which I am about to relate, in order to celebrate his marriage with the only daughter of the neighboring Count C—tti. This marriage had been determined on by the parents during the infancy of the children, in order to unite the large fortunes of the two houses. But though this agreement was made by the two families, without consulting the hearts of the parties concerned, the latter had mutually pledged their faith to each other in secret. Jeronymo del M—— and Antonia C—— had been brought up together, and the little restraint imposed on two children, whom their parents were already accustomed to regard as destined for each other, soon produced between them a connection of the tenderest kind; the congeniality of their tempers cemented this intimacy; and in later years it ripened insensibly into love. An absence of four years, far from cooling this passion, had only served to inflame it; and Jeronymo returned to the arms of his intended bride as faithful and as ardent as if they had never been separated.

"The raptures occasioned by his return had not yet subsided, and the preparations for the happy day were advancing with the utmost zeal and activity, when the bridegroom disappeared. He used frequently to pass whole afternoons in a summer-house which commanded a prospect of the sea, and was accustomed to take the diversion of sailing on the water. One day, on an evening spent in this manner, it was observed that he remained absent a much longer time than usual, and his friends began to be very uneasy on his account. Messengers were despatched after him, vessels were sent to sea in quest of him; no person had seen him. None of his servants were missed; he must, therefore, have gone alone. Night came on, and he did not appear. The

next morning dawned; the day passed, the evening succeeded; Jeronymo came not. Already they had begun to give themselves up to the most melancholy conjectures when the news arrived that an Algerine pirate had landed the preceeding day on that coast, and carried off several of the inhabitants. Two galleys which were ready for sea were immediately manned; the old marquis himself embarked in one of them, to attempt the deliverance of his son at the peril of his own life. On the third morning they perceived the corsair. They had the advantage of the wind; they were just about to overtake the pirate, and had even approached so near that Lorenzo, who was in one of the galleys, fancied that he saw upon the deck of the adversary's ship a signal made by his brother, when a sudden storm separated the vessels. Hardly could the damaged galleys sustain the fury of the tempest. The pirate in the meantime had disappeared, and the distressed state of the other vessels obliged them to land at Malta. The affliction of the family knew no bounds. The distracted old marquis tore his gray hairs in the utmost violence of grief; and fears were entertained for the life of the young countess. Five years were consumed in fruitless inquiries. Diligent search was made along all the coast of Barbary; immense sums were offered for the ransom of the poor marquis, but no person came forward to claim them. The only probable conjecture which remained for the family to form was, that the same storm which had separated the galleys from the pirate had destroyed the latter, and that the whole ship's company had perished in the waves.

"But, however this supposition might be, it did not by any means amount to a certainty, and could not authorize the family altogether to renounce the hope that the lost Jeronymo might again appear. In case, however, that he was really dead, either the family must become extinct, or the younger son must relinquish the church, and assume the rights of the elder. As justice, on the one hand, seemed to oppose the latter measure, so, on the other hand, the necessity of preserving the family from annihilation required that the scruple should not be carried too far. In the meantime, through grief and the

infirmities of age, the old marquis was fast sinking to his grave; every unsuccessful attempt diminished the hope of finding his lost son; he saw the danger of his family's becoming extinct, which might be obviated by a trifling injustice on his part, in consenting to favor his younger son at the expense of the elder. The consummation of his alliance with the house of Count C—tti required only that a name should be changed, for the object of the two families was equally accomplished, whether Antonia became the wife of Lorenzo or of Jeronymo. The faint probability of the latter's appearing again weighed but little against the certain and pressing danger of the total extinction of the family, and the old marquis, who felt the approach of death every day more and more, ardently wished at least to die free from this inquietude.

"Lorenzo, however, who was to be principally benefited by this measure, opposed it with the greatest obstinacy. Alike unmoved by the allurements of an immense fortune, and the attractions of the beautiful and accomplished being whom his family were about to deliver into his arms, he refused, on principles the most generous and conscientious, to invade the rights of a brother, who perhaps was still alive, and might some day return to claim his own. 'Is not the lot of my dear Jeronymo,' said he, 'made sufficiently miserable by the horrors of a long captivity, that I should yet add bitterness to his cup of grief by stealing from him all that he holds most dear? With what conscience could I supplicate heaven for his return when his wife is in my arms? With what countenance could I hasten to meet him should he at last be restored to us by some miracle? And even supposing that he is torn from us forever, how can we better honor his memory than by keeping constantly open the chasm which his death has caused in our circle? Can we better show our respect to him than by sacrificing our dearest hopes upon his tomb, and keeping untouched, as a sacred deposit, what was peculiarly his own?'

"But all the arguments which fraternal delicacy could adduce were insufficient to reconcile the old marquis to the idea of being obliged to witness the extinction of a pedigree which nine centuries had beheld flourishing. All

that Lorenzo could obtain was a respite of two years before leading the affianced bride of his brother to the altar. During this period they continued their inquiries with the utmost diligence. Lorenzo himself made several voyages, and exposed his person to many dangers. No trouble, no expense was spared to recover the lost Jeronymo. These two years, however, like those which preceded them, were in vain?"

"And the Countess Antonia?" said the prince, "You tell us nothing of her. Could she so calmly submit to her fate? I cannot suppose it."

"Antonia," answered the Sicilian, "experienced the most violent struggle between duty and inclination, between hate and admiration. The disinterested generosity of a brother's love affected her; she felt herself forced to esteem a person whom she could never love. Her heart was torn by conflicting sentiments. But her repugnance to the chevalier seemed to increase in the same degree as his claims upon her esteem augmented. Lorenzo perceived with heartfelt sorrow the grief that consumed her youth. A tender compassion insensibly assumed the place of that indifference with which, till then, he had been accustomed to regard her; but this treacherous sentiment quickly deceived him, and an ungovernable passion began by degrees to shake the steadiness of his virtue — a virtue which, till then, had been unequalled.

"He, however, still obeyed the dictates of generosity, though at the expense of his love. By his efforts alone was the unfortunate victim protected against the arbitrary proceedings of the rest of the family. But his endeavors were ineffectual. Every victory he gained over his passion rendered him more worthy of Antonia; and the disinterestedness with which he refused her left her no excuse for resistance.

"This was the state of affairs when the chevalier engaged me to visit him at his father's villa. The earnest recommendation of my patron procured me a reception which exceeded my most sanguine hopes. I must not forget to mention that by some remarkable operations I had previously rendered my name famous in different

lodges of Freemasons, which circumstance may, perhaps, have contributed to strengthen the old marquis' confidence in me, and to heighten his expectations. I beg you will excuse me from describing particularly the lengths I went with him, and the means which I employed; you may judge of them from what I have already confessed to you. Profiting by the mystic books which I found in his very extensive library, I was soon able to converse with him in his own language, and to adorn my system of the invisible world with the most extraordinary inventions. In a short time I could make him believe whatever I pleased, and he would have sworn as readily as upon an article in the canon. Morover, as he was very devout, and was by nature somewhat credulous, my fables received credence the more readily, and in a short time I had so completely surrounded and hemmed him in with mystery that he cared for nothing that was not supernatural. In short I became the patron saint of the house. The usual subject of my lectures was the exaltation of human nature, and the intercourse of men with superior beings; the infallible Count Gabalis* was my oracle. The young countess, whose mind since the loss of her lover had been more occupied in the world of spirits than in that of nature, and who had, moreover, a strong shade of melancholy in her composition, caught my hints with a fearful satisfaction. Even the servants contrived to have some business in the room when I was speaking, and seizing now and then one of my expressions, joined the fragments together in their own way.

"Two months were passed in this manner at the marquis' villa, when the chevalier one morning entered my apartment. A deep sorrow was painted on his countenance, his features were convulsed, he threw himself into a chair, with gestures of despair.

"'Captain,' said he, 'it is all over with me, I must begone; I can remain here no longer.'

"'What is the matter, chevalier? What ails you?'

* A mystical work of that title, written in French in 1670 by the Abbé de Villars, and translated into English in 1600. Pope is said to have borrowed from it the machinery of his Rape of the Lock.—*H. G. B.*

"'Oh! this fatal passion!' said he, starting frantically from his chair. 'I have combated it like a man; I can resist it no longer.'

"'And whose fault is it but yours, my dear chevalier? Are they not all in your favor? Your father, your relations.'

"'My father, my relations! What are they to me? I want not a forced union, but one of inclination, Have not I a rival? Alas! and what a rival! Perhaps among the dead! Oh! let me go! Let me go to the end of the world, — I must find my brother.'

"'What! after so many unsuccessful attempts can you still cherish hope?'

"'Hope!' replied the chevalier; 'alas! no. It has long since vanished from my heart, but it has not from hers. Of what consequence are my sentiments? Can I be happy while there remains a gleam of hope in Antonia's heart? Two words, my friend, would end my torments. But it is in vain. My destiny must continue to be miserable till eternity shall break its long silence, and the grave shall speak in my behalf.'

"'Is it then a state of certainty that would render you happy?'

"'Happy! Alas! I doubt whether I can ever again be happy. But uncertainty is of all others the most dreadful pain.'

"After a short interval of silence he suppressed his emotion, and continued mournfully, 'If he could but see my torments! Surely a constancy which renders his brother miserable cannot add to his happiness. Can it be just that the living should suffer so much for the sake of the dead, who can no longer enjoy earthly felicity? If he knew the pangs I suffer,' continued he, hiding his face on my shoulder, while the tears streamed from his eyes, 'yes, perhaps he himself would conduct her to my arms.'

"'But is there no possibility of gratifying your wishes?'

"He started. 'What do you say, my friend?'

"'Less important occasions than the present,' said I, 'have disturbed the repose of the dead for the sake of

the living. Is not the whole earthly happiness of a man, of a brother'——

"'The whole earthly happiness! Ah, my friend, I feel what you say is but too true; my entire felicity.'

"'And the tranquillity of a distressed family, are not these sufficient to justify such a measure? Undoubtedly. If any sublunary concern can authorize us to interrupt the peace of the blessed, to make use of a power'——

"'For God's sake, my friend,' said he, interrupting me, 'no more of this. Once, I avow it, I had such a thought; I think I mentioned it to you; but I have long since rejected it as horrid and abominable.'

"You will have conjectured already," continued the Sicilian, "to what this conversation led us. I endeavored to overcome the scruples of the chevalier, and at last succeeded. We resolved to summon the spirit of the deceased Jeronymo. I only stipulated for the delay of a fortnight, in order, as I pretended, to prepare myself in a suitable manner for so solemn an act. The time being expired, and my machinery in readiness, I took advantage of a very gloomy day, when we were all assembled as usual, to obtain the consent of the family, or rather, gradually to lead them to the subject, so that they themselves requested it of me. The most difficult part of the task was to obtain the approbation of Antonia, whose presence was most essential. My endeavors were, however, greatly assisted by the melancholy turn of her mind, and perhaps still more so by a faint hope that Jeronymo might still be living, and therefore would not appear. A want of confidence in the thing itself, or a doubt of my ability, was the only obstacle which I had not to contend with.

"Having obtained the consent of the family, the third day was fixed on for the operation. I prepared them for the solemn transaction by mystical instruction, by fasting, solitude, and prayers, which I ordered to be continued till late in the night. Much use was also made of a certain musical instrument, unknown till that time, and which, in such cases, has often been found very powerful. The effect of these artifices was so much beyond my expectation that the enthusiasm to which on this occasion

I was obliged to force myself was infinitely heightened by that of my audience. The anxiously-expected hour at last arrived."

"I guess," said the prince, "whom you are now going to introduce. But go on, go on."

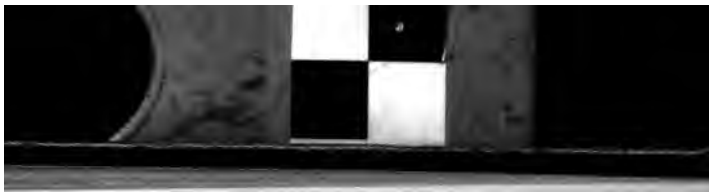
"No, your highness. The incantation succeeded according to my wishes."

"How? Where is the Armenian?"

"Do not fear, your highness. He will appear but too soon. I omit the description of the farce itself, as it would lead me to too great a length. Be it sufficient to say that it answered my utmost expectations. The old marquis, the young countess, her mother, Lorenzo, and a few others of the family, were present. You may imagine that during my long residence in this house I had not wanted opportunities of gathering information respecting everything that concerned the deceased. Several portraits of him enabled me to give the apparition the most striking likeness, and as I suffered the ghost to speak only by signs, the sound of his voice could excite no suspicion.

"The departed Jeronymo appeared in the dress of a Moorish slave, with a deep wound in his neck. You observe that in this respect I was counteracting the general supposition that he had perished in the waves, for I had reason to hope that the unexpectedness of this circumstance would heighten their belief in the apparition itself, while, on the other hand, nothing appeared to me more dangerous than to keep too strictly to what was natural."

"I think you judged rightly," said the prince. "In whatever respects apparitions the most probable is the least acceptable. If their communications are easily comprehended we undervalue the channel by which they are obtained. Nay, we even suspect the reality of the miracle if the discoveries which it brings to light are such as might easily have been imagined. Why should we disturb the repose of a spirit if it is to inform us of nothing more than the ordinary powers of the intellect are capable of teaching us? But, on the other hand, if the intelligence which we receive is extraordinary and



unexpected it confirms in some degree the miracle by which it is obtained; for who can doubt an operation to be supernatural when its effect could not be produced by natural means? I interrupt you," added the prince. "Proceed in your narrative."

"I asked the ghost whether there was anything in this world which he still considered as his own," continued the Sicilian, "and whether he had left anything behind that was particularly dear to him? The ghost shook his head three times, and lifted up his hand towards heaven. Previous to his retiring he dropped a ring from his finger, which was found on the floor after he had disappeared. Antonia took it, and, looking at it attentively, she knew it to be the ring she had given her intended husband on their betrothal."

"The ring!" exclaimed the prince, surprised. "How did you get it?"

"Who? I? It was not the true one, your highness; I got it. It was only a counterfeit."

"A counterfeit!" repeated the prince. "But in order to counterfeit you required the true one. How did you come by it? Surely the deceased never went without it."

"That is true," replied the Sicilian, with symptoms of confusion. "But from a description which was given me of the genuine ring"——

"A description which was given you! By whom?"

"Long before that time. It was a plain gold ring, and had, I believe, the name of the young countess engraved on it. But you made me lose the connection."

"What happened further?" said the prince, with a very dissatisfied countenance.

"The family felt convinced that Jeronymo was no more. From that day forward they publicly announced his death, and went into mourning. The circumstance of the ring left no doubt, even in the mind of Antonia, and added a considerable weight to the addresses of the chevalier.

"In the meantime the violent shock which the young countess had received from the sight of the apparition brought on her a disorder so dangerous that the hopes of Lorenzo were very near being destroyed forever. On

her recovery she insisted upon taking the veil; and it was only at the most serious remonstrances of her confessor, in whom she placed implicit confidence, that she was induced to abandon her project. At length the united solicitations of the family, and of the confessor, forced from her a reluctant consent. The last day of mourning was fixed on for the day of marriage, and the old marquis determined to add to the solemnity of the occasion by making over all his estates to his lawful heir.

"The day arrived, and Lorenzo received his trembling bride at the altar. In the evening a splendid banquet was prepared for the cheerful guests in a hall superbly illuminated, and the most lively and delightful music contributed to increase the general gladness. The happy old marquis wished all the world to participate in his joy. All the entrances of the palace were thrown open, and every one who sympathized in his happiness was joyfully welcomed. In the midst of the throng" ——

The Sicilian paused. A trembling expectation suspended our breath.

"In the midst of the throng," continued the prisoner, "appeared a Franciscan monk, to whom my attention was directed by the person who sat next to me at table. He was standing motionless like a marble pillar. His shape was tall and thin; his face pale and ghastly; his eyes were fixed with a grave and mournful expression on the new-married couple. The joy which beamed on the face of every one present appeared not on his. His countenance never once varied. He seemed like a statue among the living. Such an object, appearing amidst the general joy, struck me more forcibly from its contrast with everything around. It left on my mind so indelible an impression that from it alone I have been enabled (which would otherwise have been impossible) to recollect the features of the Franciscan monk in the Russian officer; for, without doubt, you must have already conceived that the person I have described was no other than your Armenian.

"I frequently attempted to withdraw my eyes from this terrible figure, but they wandered back involuntarily, and found his countenance unaltered. I pointed him out

to the person who sat nearest to me on the other side, and he did the same to the person next to him. In a few minutes a general curiosity and astonishment pervaded the whole company. The conversation languished; a general silence succeeded; the monk did not heed it. He continued motionless as before; his grave and mournful looks constantly fixed upon the new-married couple; his appearance struck every one with terror. The young countess alone, who found the transcript of her own sorrow in the face of the stranger, beheld with a melancholy satisfaction the only object that seemed to understand and sympathize in her sufferings. The crowd insensibly diminished. It was past midnight; the music became fainter and more languid; the tapers grew dim, and many of them went out. The conversation, declining by degrees, lost itself at last in secret murmurs, and the faintly illuminated hall was nearly deserted. The monk, in the meantime, continued motionless, with the same grave and mournful look still fixed on the new-married couple. The company at length rose from the table; the guests dispersed; the family assembled in a separate group, and the monk, though uninvited, continued near them. How it happened that no person spoke to him I cannot conceive.

"The female friends now surrounded the trembling bride, who cast a supplicating and distressed look on the venerable stranger; he did not answer it. The gentlemen assembled in the same manner around the bridegroom. A solemn and anxious silence prevailed among them. 'That we should be so happy here together,' began at length the old marquis, who alone seemed not to behold the stranger, or at least seemed to behold him without dismay. 'That we should be so happy here together, and my son Jeronymo cannot be with us!'

"'Have you invited him, and has he failed to come?' asked the monk. It was the first time he had spoken. We looked at him in alarm.

"'Alas! he is gone to a place from whence there is no return,' answered the old man. 'Reverend father! you misunderstood me. My son Jeronymo is dead.'

"'Perhaps he only fears to appear in this company,'

replied the monk. 'Who knows how your son Jeronymo may be situated? Let him now hear the voice which he heard the last. Desire your son Lorenzo to call him.'

"'What means he?' whispered the company to one another. Lorenzo changed color. I will not deny that my own hair began to stand on end.

"In the meantime the monk approached a sideboard; he took a glass of wine and carried to his lips. 'To the memory of our dear Jeronymo!' said he. 'Let every one who loved the deceased follow my example.'

"'Be you who you may, reverend father!' exclaimed the old marquis, 'you have pronounced a name dear to us all, and you are heartily welcome here;' then turning to us, he offered us full glasses. 'Come, my friends!' continued he, 'let us not be surpassed by a stranger. The memory of my son Jeronymo!

"Never, I believe, was any toast less heartily received.

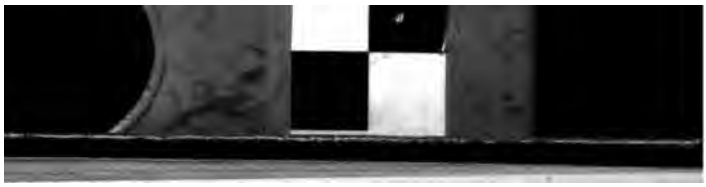
"'There is one glass still unemptied," said the marquis. 'Why does my son Lorenzo refuse to drink this friendly toast?'

"Lorenzo, trembling, received the glass from the hands of the monk; tremblingly he put it to his lips. 'To my dearly-beloved brother Jeronymo!' he stammered out, and replaced the glass with a shudder.

"'That was my murderer's voice!' exclaimed a terrible figure, which appeared suddenly in the midst of us, covered with blood, and disfigured with horrible wounds.

"Do not ask me the rest," added the Sicilian, with every symptom of horror in his countenance. "I lost my senses the moment I looked at this apparition. The same happened to every one present. When we recovered the monk and the ghost had disappeared; Lorenzo was writhing in the agonies of death. He was carried to bed in the most dreadful convulsions. No person attended him but his confessor and the sorrowful old marquis, in whose presence he expired. The marquis died a few weeks after him. Lorenzo's secret is locked in the bosom of the priest who received his last confession; no person ever learnt what it was.

"Soon after this event a well was cleaned in the farmyard of the marquis' villa. It had been disused for



many years, and was almost closed up by shrubs and old trees. On digging among the rubbish a human skeleton was found. The house where this happened is now no more; the family del M—nte is extinct, and Antonia's tomb may be seen in a convent not far from Salerno.

"You see," continued the Sicilian, seeing us all stand silent and thoughtful, "you see how my acquaintance with this Russian officer, Armenian, or Franciscan friar originated. Judge now whether I had not good cause to tremble at the sight of a being who has twice placed himself in my way in a manner so terrible."

"I beg you will answer me one question more," said the prince, rising from his seat. "Have you been always sincere in your account of everything relating to the chevalier?"

"To the best of my knowledge I have," replied the Sicilian.

"You really believed him to be an honest man?"

"I did; by heaven! I did," answered he again.

"Even at the time he gave you the ring?"

"How! He gave me no ring. I did not say that he gave me the ring."

"Very well!" said the prince, pulling the bell, and preparing to depart. "And you believe" (going back to the prisoner) "that the ghost of the Marquis de Lanoy, which the Russian officer introduced after your apparition, was a true and real ghost?"

"I cannot think otherwise."

"Let us go!" said the prince, addressing himself to us. The gaoler came in. "We have done," said the prince to him. "You, sir," turning to the prisoner, "you shall hear further from me."

"I am tempted to ask your highness the last question you proposed to the sorcerer," said I to the prince, when we were alone. "Do you believe the second ghost to have been a real and true one?"

"I believe it! No, not now, most assuredly."

"Not now? Then you did once believe it?"

"I confess I was tempted for a moment to believe it *something* more than the contrivance of a juggler."

"And I could wish to see the man who under similar circumstances would not have had the same impression. But what reasons have you for retracting your opinion? What the prisoner has related of the Armenian ought to increase rather than diminish your belief in his supernatural powers."

"What this wretch has related of him," said the prince, interrupting me very gravely. "I hope," continued he, "you have now no doubt but that we have had to do with a villain."

"No; but must his evidence on that account" ——

"The evidence of a villain, even supposing I had no other reason for doubt, can have no weight against common sense and established truth. Does a man who has already deceived me several times, and whose trade it is to deceive, does he deserve to be heard in a cause in which the unsupported testimony of even the most sincere adherent to truth could not be received? Ought we to believe a man who perhaps never once spoke truth for its own sake? Does such a man deserve credit, when he appears as evidence against human reason and the eternal laws of nature? Would it not be as absurd as to admit the accusation of a person notoriously infamous against unblemished and irreproachable innocence?"

"But what motives could he have for giving so great a character to a man whom he has so many reasons to hate?"

"I am not to conclude that he can have no motives for doing this because I am unable to comprehend them. Do I know who has bribed him to deceive me? I confess I cannot penetrate the whole contexture of his plan; but he has certainly done a material injury to the cause he advocates by proving himself to be at least an impostor, and perhaps something worse."

"The circumstance of the ring, I allow, appears somewhat suspicious."

"It is more than suspicious," answered the prince; "it is decisive. He received this ring from the murderer, and at the moment he received it he must have been certain that it was from the murderer. Who but the assassin could have taken from the finger of the deceased

a ring which he undoubtedly never took off himself? Throughout the whole of his narration the Sicilian has labored to persuade us that while he was endeavoring to deceive Lorenzo, Lorenzo was in reality deceiving him. Would he have had recourse to this subterfuge if he had not been sensible how much he should lose in our estimation by confessing himself an accomplice with the assassin? The whole story is visibly nothing but a series of impostures, invented merely to connect the few truths he has thought proper to give us. Ought I then to hesitate in disbelieving the eleventh assertion of a person who has already deceived me ten times, rather than admit a violation of the fundamental laws of nature, which I have ever found in the most perfect harmony?"

"I have nothing to reply to all this, but the apparition we saw yesterday is to me not the less incomprehensible."

"It is also incomprehensible to me, although I have been tempted to believe that I have found a key to it."

"How so?" asked I.

"Do not you recollect that the second apparition, as soon as he entered, walked directly up to the altar, took the crucifix in his hand, and placed himself upon the carpet?"

"It appeared so to me."

"And this crucifix, according to the Sicilian's confession, was a conductor. You see that the apparition hastened to make himself electrical. Thus the blow which Lord Seymour struck him with a sword was of course ineffectual; the electric stroke disabled his arm."

"This is true with respect to the sword. But the pistol fired by the Sicilian, the ball of which we heard roll slowly upon the altar?"

"Are you convinced that this was the same ball which was fired from the pistol?" replied the prince. "Not to mention that the puppet, or the man who represented the ghost, may have been so well accoutred as to be invulnerable by sword or bullet; but consider who it was that loaded the pistols."

"True," said I, and a sudden light broke upon my mind; "the Russian officer had loaded them, but it was in our presence. How could he have deceived us?"

"Why should he not have deceived us? Did you suspect him sufficiently to observe him? Did you examine the ball before it was put into the pistol? May it not have been one of quicksilver or clay? Did you take notice whether the Russian officer really put it into the barrel, or dropped it into his other hand? But supposing that he actually loaded the pistols, what is to convince you that he really took the loaded ones into the room where the ghost appeared, and did not change them for another pair, which he might have done the more easily as nobody ever thought of noticing him, and we were besides occupied in undressing? And could not the figure, at the moment when we were prevented from seeing it by the smoke of the pistol, have dropped another ball, with which it had been beforehand provided, on the the altar? Which of these conjectures is impossible?"

"You are right. But that striking resemblance to your deceased friend! I have often seen him with you, and I immediately recognized him in the apparition."

"I did the same, and I must confess the illusion was complete. But if the juggler from a few stolen glances at my snuff-box was able to give to his apparition a resemblance, what was to prevent the Russian officer, who had used the box during the whole time of supper, who had had liberty to observe the picture unnoticed, and to whom I had discovered in confidence whom it represented, what was to prevent him from doing the same? Add to this what has been before observed by the Sicilian, that the prominent features of the marquis were so striking as to be easily imitated; what is there so inexplicable in this second ghost?"

"But the words he uttered? The information he gave you about your friend?"

"What?" said the prince, "Did not the Sicilian assure us, that from the little which he had learnt from me he had composed a similar story? Does not this prove that the invention was obvious and natural? Besides, the answers of the ghost, like those of an oracle, were so obscure that he was in no danger of being detected in a falsehood. If the man who personated the ghost possessed sagacity and presence of mind, and knew ever so

little of the affair on which he was consulted, to what length might not he have carried the deception?"

"Pray consider, your highness, how much preparation such a complicated artifice would have required from the Armenian; how much time it takes to paint a face with sufficient exactness; how much time would have been requisite to instruct the pretended ghost, so as to guard him against gross errors; what a degree of minute attention to regulate every minor attendant or adventitious circumstance, which must be answered in some manner, lest they should prove detrimental! And remember that the Russian officer was absent but half an hour. Was that short space of time sufficient to make even such arrangements as were most indispensable? Surely, my prince, not even a dramatic writer, who has the least desire to preserve the three terrible unities of Aristotle, durst venture to load the interval between one act and another with such a variety of action, or to presume upon such a facility of belief in his audience."

"What! You think it absolutely impossible that every necessary preparation should have been made in the space of half an hour?"

"Indeed, I look upon it as almost impossible."

"I do not understand this expression. Does it militate against the physical laws of time and space, or of matter and motion, that a man so ingenious and so expert as this Armenian must undoubtedly be, assisted by agents whose dexterity and acuteness are probably not inferior to his own; favored by the time of night, and watched by no one, provided with such means and instruments as a man of this profession is never without — is it impossible that such a man, favored by such circumstances, should be able to effect so much in so short a time? Is it ridiculous or absurd to suppose, that by a very small number of words or signs he can convey to his assistants very extensive commissions, and direct very complex operations? Nothing ought to be admitted that is contrary to the established laws of nature, unless it is something with which these laws are absolutely incompatible. Would you rather give credit to a miracle than admit an improbability? Would you solve a difficulty rather by over-

turning the powers of nature than by believing an artful and uncommon combination of them?"

"Though the fact will not justify a conclusion such as you have condemned, you must, however, grant that it is far beyond our conception."

"I am almost tempted to dispute even this," said the prince, with a quiet smile. "What would you say, my dear count, if it should be proved, for instance, that the operations of the Armenian were prepared and carried on, not only during the half-hour that he was absent from us, not only in haste and incidentally, but during the whole evening and the whole night? You recollect that the Sicilian employed nearly three hours in preparation."

"The Sicilian? Yes, my prince."

"And how will you convince me that this juggler had not as much concern in the second apparition as in the first?"

"How so, your highness?"

"That he was not the principal assistant of the Armenian? In a word, how will you convince me that they did not co-operate?"

"It would be a difficult task to prove that," exclaimed I, with no little surprise.

"Not so difficult, my dear count, as you imagine. What! Could it have happened by mere chance that these two men should form a design so extraordinary and so complicated upon the same person, at the same time, and in the same place? Could mere chance have produced such an exact harmony between their operations, that one of them should play so exactly the game of the other? Suppose for a moment that the Armenian intended to heighten the effect of his deception, by introducing it after a less refined one — that he created a Hector to make himself his Achilles. Suppose that he has done all this to discover what degree of credulity he could expect to find in me, to examine the readiest way to gain my confidence, to familiarize himself with his subject by an attempt that might have miscarried without any prejudice to his plan; in a word, to tune the instrument on which he intended to play. Suppose he did this with the view of exciting my suspicions on one subject in order to

divert my attention from another more important to his design. Lastly, suppose he wishes to have some indirect methods of information, which he had himself occasion to practise, imputed to the sorcerer, in order to divert suspicion from the true channel."

"How do you mean?" said I.

"Suppose, for instance, that he may have bribed some of my servants to give him secret intelligence, or, perhaps, even some papers which may serve his purpose. I have missed one of my domestics. What reason have I to think that the Armenian is not concerned in his leaving me? Such a connection, however, if it existed, may be accidently discovered; a letter may be intercepted; a servant, who is in the secret, may betray his trust. Now all the consequence of the Armenian is destroyed if I detect the source of his omniscience. He therefore introduces this sorcerer, who must be supposed to have some design upon me. He takes care to give me early notice of him and his intentions, so that whatever I may hereafter discover my suspicions must necessarily rest upon the Sicilian. This is the puppet with which he amuses me, whilst he himself, unobserved and unsuspected, is entangling me in invisible snares."

"We will allow this. But is it consistent with the Armenian's plan that he himself should destroy the illusion which he has created, and disclose the mysteries of his science to the eyes of the uninitiated?"

"What mysteries does he disclose? None, surely, which he intends to practise on me. He therefore loses nothing by the discovery. But, on the other hand, what an advantage will he gain, if this pretended victory over juggling and deception should render me secure and unsuspecting; if he succeeds in diverting my attention from the right quarter, and in fixing my wavering suspicions on an object the most remote from the real one! He could naturally expect that, sooner or later, either from my own doubts, or at the suggestion of another, I should be tempted to seek a key to his mysterious wonders, in the mere art of a juggler; how could he better provide against such an inquiry than by contrasting his prodigies with juggling tricks. By confining the latter within

artificial limits, and by delivering, as it were, into my hands a scale by which to appreciate them, he naturally exalts and perplexes my ideas of the former. How many suspicions he precludes by this single contrivance! How many methods of accounting for his miracles, which afterwards have occurred to me, does he refute beforehand!"

"But in exposing such a finished deception he has acted very much against his own interest, both by quickening the penetration of those whom he meant to impose upon, and by staggering their belief in miracles in general. Your highness' self is the best proof of the insufficiency of his plan, if indeed he ever had one."

"Perhaps he has been mistaken in respect to myself," said the prince; "but his conclusions have nevertheless been well founded. Could he foresee that I should exactly notice the very circumstance which threatens to become the key to the whole artifice? Was it in his plan that the creature he employed should render himself thus vulnerable? Are we certain that the Sicilian has not far exceeded his commission? He has undoubtedly done so with respect to the ring, and yet it is chiefly this single circumstance which determined my distrust in him. How easily may a plan, whose contexture is most artful and refined, be spoiled in the execution by an awkward instrument. It certainly was not the Armenian's intention that the sorcerer should trumpet his fame to us in the style of a mountebank, that he should endeavor to impose upon us such fables as are too gross to bear the least reflection. For instance, with what countenance could this impostor affirm that the miraculous being he spoke of must renounce all commerce with mankind at twelve in the night? Did we not see him among us at that very hour?"

"That is true," cried I. "He must have forgotten it."

"It often happens, to people of this description, that they overact their parts; and, by aiming at too much, mar the effects which a well-managed deception is calculated to produce."

"I cannot, however, yet prevail on myself to look upon the whole as a mere preconcerted scheme. What! the

Sicilian's terror, his convulsive fits, his swoon, the deplorable situation in which we saw him, and which was even such as to move our pity, were all these nothing more than a studied part? I allow that a skilful performer may carry imitation to a very high pitch, but he certainly has no power over the organs of life."

"As for that, my friend," replied the prince, "I have seen Richard III. performed by Garrick. But were we at that moment sufficiently cool to be capable of observing dispassionately? Could we judge of the emotion of the Sicilian when we were almost overcome by our own? Besides, the decisive crisis even of a deception is so momentous to the deceiver himself that excessive anxiety may produce in him symptoms as violent as those which surprise excites in the deceived. Add to this the unexpected entrance of the watch."

"I am glad you remind me of that, prince. Would the Armenian have ventured to discover such a dangerous scheme to the eye of justice; to expose the fidelity of his creature to so severe a test? And for what purpose?"

"Leave that matter to him; he is no doubt acquainted with the people he employs. Do we know what secret crimes may have secured him the silence of this man? You have been informed of the office he holds in Venice; what difficulty will he find in saving a man of whom he himself is the only accuser?"

[This suggestion of the prince was but too well justified by the event. For, some days after, on inquiring after the prisoner, we were told that he had escaped, and had not since been heard of.]

"You ask what could be his motives for delivering this man into the hands of justice?" continued the prince. "By what other method, except this violent one, could he have wrested from the Sicilian such an infamous and improbable confession, which, however, was so material to the success of his plan? Who but a man whose case is desperate, and who has nothing to lose, would consent to give so humiliating an account of himself? Under what other circumstances could we have believed such a confession?"

"I grant all this, my prince. That the two apparitions were mere contrivances of art; that the Sicilian has imposed upon us a tale which the Armenian, his master, had previously taught him; that the efforts of both have been directed to the same end, and, from this mutual intelligence all the wonderful incidents which have astonished us in this adventure may be easily explained. But the prophecy in the square of St. Mark, that first miracle, which, as it were, opened the door to all the rest, still remains unexplained; and of what use is the key to all his other wonders if we despair of resolving this single one?"

"Rather invert the proposition, my dear count," answered the prince, "and say what do all these wonders prove if I can demonstrate that a single one among them is a juggling trick? The prediction, I own, is totally beyond my conception. If it stood alone; if the Armenian had closed the scene with it, instead of beginning it, I confess I do not know how far I might have been carried. But in the base alloy with which it is mixed it is certainly rather suspicious. Time may explain, or not explain it; but believe me, my friend!" added the prince, taking my hand, with a grave countenance, — "a man who can command supernatural powers has no occasion to employ the arts of a juggler; he despises them."

"Thus," says Count O——, "ended a conversation which I have related word for word, because it shows the difficulties which were to be overcome before the prince could be effectually imposed upon; and I hope it may free his memory from the imputation of having blindly and inconsiderately thrown himself into a snare, which was spread for his destruction by the most unexampled and diabolical wickedness. Not all," continues Count O——, "who, at the moment I am writing, smile contemptuously at the prince's credulity, and, in the fancied superiority of their own yet untempted understanding, unconditionally condemn him; not all of these, I apprehend, would have stood his first trial so courageously. If afterwards, notwithstanding this providential warning, we witness his downfall; if we see that the black design against which, at the very outset, he

was thus cautioned, is finally successful, we shall be less inclined to ridicule his weakness than to be astonished at the infamous ingenuity of a plot which could seduce an understanding so fully prepared. Considerations of worldly interest can have no influence upon my testimony; he, who alone would be thankful for it, is now no more. His dreadful destiny is accomplished; his soul has long since been purified before the throne of truth, where mine will likewise have appeared before these passages meet the eyes of the world. Pardon the involuntary tears which now flow at the remembrance of my dearest friend. But for the sake of justice I must write this. His was a noble character, and would have adorned a throne which, seduced by the most atrocious artifice, he attempted to ascend by the commission of a crime.

BOOK II.

"Not long after these events," continues Count O——, in his narrative, "I began to observe an extraordinary altèration in the disposition of the prince, which was partly the immediate consequence of the last event and partly produced by the concurrence of many adventitious circumstances. Hitherto he had avoided every severe trial of his faith, and contented himself with purifying the rude and abstract notions of religion, in which he had been educated, by those more rational ideas upon this subject which forced themselves upon his attention, or comparing the many discordant opinions with each other, without inquiring into the foundations of his faith. Religious subjects, he has many times confessed to me, always appeared to him like an enchanted castle, into which one does not set one's foot without horror, and that they act therefore much the wiser part who pass it in respectful silence, without exposing themselves to the danger of being bewildered in its labyrinths. A servile and bigoted education was the source of this dread; this had impressed frightful images upon his tender brain, which, during the remainder of his life, he was never

able wholly to obliterate. Religious melancholy was an hereditary disorder in his family. The education which he and his brothers had received was calculated to produce it; and the men to whose care they were entrusted, selected with this object, were also either enthusiasts or hypocrites.

"To stifle all the sprightliness of the boy, by a gloomy restraint of his mental faculties, was the only method of securing to themselves the highest approbation of his royal parents. The whole of our prince's childhood wore a dark and gloomy aspect; mirth was banished even from his amusements. All his ideas of religion were accompanied by some frightful image; and the representations of terror and severity were those which first took hold of his lively imagination, and which the longest retained their empire over it. His God was an object of terror, a being whose occupation is to chastise; and the adoration he paid him was either slavish fear, or a blind submission which stifled all his energies. In all his youthful propensities, which a vigorous growth and a fine constitution naturally excited to break out with the greater violence, religion stood in his way; it opposed everything upon which his young heart was bent; he learned to consider it not as a friend, but as the scourge of his passions; so that a silent indignation was gradually kindled against it in his heart, which, together with a bigoted faith and a blind fear, produced an incongruous mixture of feelings, and an abhorrence of a ruler before whom he trembled.

"It is no wonder, therefore, that he took the first opportunity of escaping from so galling a yoke — but he fled from it as a bond-slave who, escaping from his rigorous master, drags along with him a sense of his servitude, even in the midst of freedom; for, as he did not renounce the faith of his earlier years from a deliberate conviction, and did not wait till the maturity and improvement of his reasoning had weaned him from it, but escaped from it like a fugitive, upon whose person the rights of his master are still in force, so was he obliged, even after his widest separation, to return to it at last. He had escaped with his chain, and for that reason must necessarily

become the prey of any one who should discover it, and know how to make use of the discovery. That such a one presented himself, the sequel of this history will prove; most likely the reader has already surmised it.

"The confessions of the Sicilian left a deeper impression upon his mind than they ought, considering the circumstances; and the small victory which his reason had thence gained over this weak imposture, remarkably increased his reliance upon his own powers. The facility with which he had been able to unravel this deception appeared to have surprised him. Truth and error were not yet so accurately distinguished from each other in his mind but that he often mistook the arguments which were in favor of the one for those in favor of the other. Thence it arose that the same blow which destroyed his faith in wonders made the whole edifice of it totter. In this instance, he fell into the same error as an inexperienced man who has been deceived in love or friendship, because he happened to make a bad choice, and who denies the existence of these sensations, because he takes the occasional exceptions for distinguishing features. The unmasking of a deception made even truth suspicious to him, because he had unfortunately discovered truth by false reasoning.

"This imaginary triumph pleased him in proportion to the magnitude of the oppression from which it seemed to deliver him. From this instant there arose in his mind a scepticism which did not spare even the most sacred objects.

"Many circumstances concurred to encourage, and still more to confirm, him in this turn of mind. He now quitted the retirement in which he had hitherto lived, and gave way to a more dissipated mode of life. His rank was discovered; attentions which he was obliged to return, etiquettes for which he was indebted to his rank, drew him imperceptibly within the vortex of the great world. His rank, as well as his personal attractions, opened to him the circles of all the *beaux esprits* in Venice, and he soon found himself on terms of intimacy with the most enlightened persons in the republic, men of learning as well as politicians. This obliged him to en-

large the monotonous and limited circle to which his understanding had hitherto been confined. He began to perceive the poverty and feebleness of his ideas, and to feel the want of more elevated impressions. The old-fashioned turn of his understanding, in spite of the many advantages with which it was accompanied, formed an unpleasing contrast with the current ideas of society; his ignorance of the commonest things frequently exposed him to ridicule, than which he dreaded nothing more. The unfortunate prejudice which attached to his native country appeared to him a challenge to overcome it in his own person. Besides this, there was a peculiarity in his character; he was offended with every attention that he thought was paid him on account of his rank rather than his personal qualities. He felt this humiliation principally in the company of persons who shone by their abilities, and triumphed, as it were, over their birth by their merit. To perceive himself distinguished as a prince, in such a society, was always a deep humiliation to him, because he unfortunately fancied himself excluded by his rank from all competition. These circumstances convinced him of the necessity of cultivating his mind, in order to raise it to a level with the thinking part of the world, from which he had hitherto been so separated; and for that purpose he chose the most modern books, and applied himself to them with all the ardor with which he was accustomed to pursue every object to which he devoted himself. But the unskilful hand that directed his choice always prompted him to select such as were little calculated to improve either his heart or his reason; besides that, he was influenced by a propensity which rendered everything irresistible which was incomprehensible. He had neither attention nor memory for anything that was not of that character, and both his reason and his heart remained untouched, while he was filling the vacuities of his brain with confused ideas. The dazzling style of some writers captivated his imagination, while the subtlety of others ensnared his reason. Together, they easily took possession of a mind which became the prey of whatever was obtruded upon it with a certain degree of dogmatism. A course of reading, which had been continued with

ardor for more than a year, had scarcely enriched him with one benevolent idea, but had filled his head with doubts, which, as a natural consequence with such a character, had almost found an unfortunate road to his heart. In a word, he had entered this labyrinth as a credulous enthusiast, had left it as a sceptic, and at length became a perfect free-thinker.

"Among the circles into which he had been introduced there was a private society called the Bucentauro, which, under the mask of a noble and rational liberality of sentiment, encouraged the most unbridled licentiousness of manners and opinion. As it enumerated many of the clergy among its members, and could even boast of some cardinals at its head, the prince was the more easily induced to join it. He thought that certain dangerous truths, which reason discovers, could be nowhere better preserved than in the hands of such persons, whose rank compelled them to moderation, and who had the advantage of hearing and examining the other side of the question. The prince did not recollect that licentiousness of sentiment and manners takes so much the stronger hold among persons of this rank, inasmuch as they for that reason feel one curb less; and this was the case with the Bucentauro, most of whose members, through an execrable philosophy, and manners worthy of such a guide, were not only a disgrace to their own rank, but even to human nature itself. The society had its secret degrees; and I will believe, for the credit of the prince, that they never thought him worthy of admission into the inmost sanctuary. Every one who entered this society was obliged, at least so long as he continued to be a member of it, to lay aside all distinctions arising from rank, nation, or religion, in short, every general mark or distinction whatever, and to submit himself to the condition of universal equality. To be elected a member was indeed a difficult matter, as superiority of understanding alone paved the way to it. The society boasted of the highest *ton* and the most cultivated taste, and such indeed was its fame throughout all Venice. This, as well as the appearance of equality which predominated in it, attracted the prince irresistibly. Sen-

sible conversations, set off by the most admirable humor, instructive amusements, and the flower of the learned and political world, which were all attracted to this point as to their common centre, concealed from him for a long time the danger of this connection. As he by degrees discovered through its mask the spirit of the institution, as they grew tired of being any longer on their guard before him, to recede was dangerous, and false shame and anxiety for his safety obliged him to conceal the displeasure he felt. But he already began, merely from familiarity with men of this class and their sentiments, though they did not excite him to imitation, to lose the pure and charming simplicity of his character, and the delicacy of his moral feelings. His understanding, supported by real knowledge, could not without foreign assistance solve the fallacious sophisms with which he had been here ensnared; and this fatal poison had already destroyed all, or nearly all, the basis on which his morality rested. He surrendered the natural and indispensable safeguards of his happiness for sophisms which deserted him at the critical moment, and he was consequently left to the operation of any specious argument which came in his way.

"Perhaps the hand of a friend might yet have been in time to extricate him from this abyss; but, besides that I did not become acquainted with the real character of the Bucentauro till long after the evil had taken place, an urgent circumstance called me away from Venice just at the beginning of this period. Lord Seymour, too, a valuable acquaintance of the prince, whose cool understanding was proof against every species of deception, and who would have infallibly been a secure support to him, left us at this time in order to return to his native country. Those in whose hands I left the prince were indeed worthy men, but inexperienced, excessively narrow in their religious opinions, deficient in their perception of the evil, and wanting in credit with the prince. They had nothing to oppose to his captious sophisms except the maxims of a blind and uninquiring faith, which either irritated him or excited his ridicule. He saw through them too easily, and his superior reason soon

silenced those weak defenders of the good cause, as will be clearly evinced from an instance which I shall introduce in the sequel. Those who, subsequent to this, possessed themselves of his confidence, were much more interested in plunging him deeper into error. When I returned to Venice in the following year how great a change had already taken place in everything!

"The influence of this new philosophy soon showed itself in the prince's conduct. The more openly he pursued pleasure, and acquired new friends, the more did he lose in the estimation of his old ones. He pleased me less and less every day; we saw each other more seldom, and indeed he was seldom accessible. He had launched out into the torrent of the great world. His threshold was eternally thronged when he was at home. Amusements, banquets, and galas followed each other in rapid succession. He was the idol whom every one courted, the great attraction of every circle. In proportion as he, in his secluded life, had fancied living in society to be difficult, did he to his astonishment find it easy. Everything met his wishes. Whatever he uttered was admirable, and when he remained silent it was like committing a robbery upon the company. They understood the art of drawing his thoughts insensibly from his soul, and then with a little delicate management to surprise him with them. This happiness, which accompanied him everywhere, and this universal success, raised him indeed too much in his own ideas, because it gave him too much confidence and too much reliance upon himself.

"The heightened opinion which he thus acquired of his own worth made him credit the excessive and almost idolatrous adoration that was paid to his understanding; which but for this increased self-complacency, must have necessarily recalled him from his aberrations. For the present, however, this universal voice was only a confirmation of what his complacent vanity whispered in his ear; a tribute which he felt entitled to by right. He would have infallibly disengaged himself from this snare had they allowed him to take breath; had they granted him a moment of uninterrupted leisure to compare his real merit with the picture that was exhibited to him in

this seducing mirror; but his existence was a continued state of intoxication, a whirl of excitement. The higher he had been elevated the more difficulty had he to support himself in his elevation. This incessant exertion slowly undermined him; rest had forsaken even his slumbers. His weakness had been discovered, and the passion kindled in his breast turned to good account.

"His worthy attendants soon found to their cost that their lord had become a wit. That anxious sensibility, those glorious truths which his heart once embraced with the greatest enthusiasm, now began to be the objects of his ridicule. He revenged himself on the great truths of religion for the oppression which he had so long suffered from misconception. But, since from too true a voice his heart combated the intoxication of his head, there was more of acrimony than of humor in his jests. His disposition began to alter, and caprice to exhibit itself. The most beautiful ornament of his character, his modesty, vanished; parasites had poisoned his excellent heart. That tender delicacy of address which frequently made his attendants forget that he was their lord, now gave place to a decisive and despotic tone, which made the more sensible impression, because it was not founded upon distinction of rank, for the want of which they could have consoled themselves, but upon an arrogant estimation of his own superior merit. When at home he was attacked by reflections that seldom made their appearance in the bustle of company; his own people scarcely ever saw him otherwise than gloomy, peevish, and unhappy, whilst elsewhere a forced vivacity made him the soul of every circle. With the sincerest sorrow did we behold him treading this dangerous path, but in the vortex in which he was involved the feeble voice of friendship was no longer heard, and he was too much intoxicated to understand it.

"Just at the beginning of this epoch an affair of the greatest consequence required my presence in the court of my sovereign, which I dared not postpone even for the dearest interests of friendship. An invisible hand, the agency of which I did not discover till long afterwards, had contrived to derange my affairs, and to spread

reports concerning me which I was obliged to contradict by my presence. The parting from the prince was painful to me, but did not affect him. The ties which united us had been severed for some time, but his fate had awakened all my anxiety. I, on that account, prevailed on Baron von F—— to inform me by letter of every event, which he has done in the most conscientious manner. As I was for a considerable time no longer an eye-witness of these events, it will be allowable for me to introduce the Baron von F—— in my stead, and to fill up the gap in my narrative by the contents of his letters. Notwithstanding that the representation of my friend F —— is not always what I should have given, I would not alter any of his expressions, so that the reader will be enabled to discover the truth with very little trouble."

LETTER I.

BARON VON F—— TO COUNT VON O——.

May 17.

I THANK you, my most honored friend, for the permission you have given me to continue in your absence that confidential intercourse with you, which during your stay here formed my great pleasure. You must be aware that there is no one here with whom I can venture to open my heart on certain private matters. Whatever you may urge to the contrary, I detest the people here. Since the prince has become one of them, and since we have lost your society, I feel solitary in the midst of this populous city. Z—— takes it less to heart, and the fair ones of Venice manage to make him forget the mortifications he is compelled to share with me at home. And why should he make himself unhappy? He desires nothing more in the prince than a master, whom he could also find elsewhere. But I! — you know how deep an interest I feel in our prince's weal and woe, and how much cause I have for doing so; I have now lived with him sixteen years, and seem to exist only for his sake. As a

boy of nine years old I first entered his service, and since that time we have never been separated. I have grown up under his eye — a long intercourse has insensibly attached me more and more to him — I have borne a part in all his adventures, great and small. Until this last unhappy year I had been accustomed to look upon him in the light of a friend, or of an elder brother — I have basked in his smile as in the sunshine of a summer's day — no cloud hung over my happiness! — and all this must now go to ruin in this unlucky Venice!

Since your departure several changes have taken place in our establishment. The Prince of — d — arrived here last week, with a numerous and brilliant retinue, and has caused a new and tumultuous life in our circle. As he is so nearly related to our prince, and as they are moreover at present upon pretty good terms, they will be very little apart during his sojourn, which I hear is to last until after the feast of the Ascension. A good beginning has already been made; for the last ten days our prince has hardly had time to breathe. The Prince of — d — has all along been living in a very expensive way, which was excusable in him, as he will soon take his departure; but the worst of the business is that he has inoculated our prince with his extravagance, because he could not well withdraw himself from his company, and, in the peculiar relation which exists between the two houses, thought it incumbent upon himself to assert the dignity of his own. We shall, moreover, depart from Venice in a few weeks, which will relieve the prince from the necessity of continuing for any length of time this extraordinary expenditure.

The Prince of — d —, it is reported, is here on business of the —— Order, in which he imagines that he plays an important part. That he has taken advantage of all the acquaintances of our prince you may readily imagine. He has been introduced with distinguished honor into the society of the Bucentauro, as he is pleased to consider himself a wit, and a man of great genius, and allows himself to be styled in his correspondences, which he keeps up throughout all parts of the world, the "*prince philosophique.*" I do not know whether you have ever

had the pleasure of meeting him. He displays a promising exterior, piercing eyes, a countenance full of expression, much show of reading, much acquired naturalness (if I may be allowed the expression), joined to a princely condescension towards the human race, a large amount of confidence in himself, and an eloquence which talks down all opposition. Who could refuse to pay homage to such splendid qualities in a "Royal Highness?" But to what advantage the quiet and sterling worth of our prince will appear, when contrasted with these dazzling accomplishments, the event must show.

In the arrangement of our establishment, various and important changes have taken place. We have rented a new and magnificent house opposite the new Procuracy, because the lodging at the Moor Hotel became too confined for the prince. Our suite has been augmented by twelve persons, pages, Moors, guards, etc. During your stay here you complained of unnecessary expense — you should see us now!

Our internal arrangements remain the same as of old, except that the prince, no longer held in check by your presence, is, if possible, more reserved and distant towards us than ever; we see very little of him, except while dressing or undressing him. Under the pretext that we speak the French language very badly, and the Italian not at all, he has found means to exclude us from most of his entertainments, which to me personally is not a very great grievance; but I believe I know the true reason of it — he is ashamed of us; and this hurts me, for we have not deserved it of him.

As you wish to know all our minor affairs, I must tell you, that of all his attendants, the prince almost exclusively employs Biondello, whom he took into his service, as you will recollect, on the disappearance of his huntsman, and who, in his new mode of life, has become quite indispensable to him. This man knows Venice thoroughly, and turns everything to some account. It is as though he had a thousand eyes, and could set a thousand hands in motion at once. This he accomplishes, as he says, by the help of the gondoliers. To the prince he renders himself very useful by making him acquainted

with all the strange faces that present themselves at his assemblies, and the private information he gives his highness has always proved to be correct. Besides this, he speaks and writes both Italian and French excellently, and has in consequence already risen to be the prince's secretary. I must, however, relate to you an instance of fidelity in him which is rarely found among people of his station. The other day a merchant of good standing from Rimini requested an audience of the prince. The object of his visit was an extraordinary complaint concerning Biondello. The procurator, his former master, who must have been rather an odd fellow, had lived in irreconcilable enmity with his relations; this enmity he wished if possible to continue even after his death. Biondello possessed his entire confidence, and was the repository of all his secrets; while on his deathbed he obliged him to swear that he would keep them inviolably, and would never disclose them for the benefit of his relations; a handsome legacy was to be the reward of his silence. When the deceased procurator's will was opened and his papers inspected, many blanks and irregularities were found to which Biondello alone could furnish a key. He persisted in denying that he knew anything about it, gave up his very handsome legacy to the heirs, and kept his secrets to himself. Large offers were made to him by the relations, but all in vain; at length, in order to escape from their importunities and their threats of legally prosecuting him he entered the service of the prince. The merchant, who was the chief heir, now applied to the prince, and made larger offers than before if Biondello would alter his determination. But even the persuasions of the prince were fruitless. He admitted that secrets of consequence had really been confided to him; he did not deny that the deceased had perhaps carried his enmity towards his relations too far; but, added he, he was my dear master and benefactor, and died with a firm belief in my integrity. I was the only friend he had left in the world, and will therefore never prove myself unworthy of his confidence. At the same time he hinted that the avowals they wished him to make would not tend to the honor of the deceased. Was

not that acting nobly and delicately? You may easily imagine that the prince did not renew his endeavors to shake so praiseworthy a determination. The extraordinary fidelity which he has shown towards his deceased master has procured him the unlimited confidence of his present one!

Farewell, my dear friend. How I sigh for the quiet life we led when first you came amongst us, for the stillness of which your society so agreeably indemnified us. I fear my happy days in Venice are over, and shall be glad if the same remark does not also apply to the prince. The element in which he now lives is not calculated to render him permanently happy, or my sixteen years' experience has deceived me.

LETTER II.

BARON VON F—— TO COUNT VON O——.

June 4.

I should never have thought that our stay at Venice would have been productive of any good consequences. It has been the means of saving a man's life, and I am reconciled to it.

Some few evenings ago the prince was being carried home late at night from the Bucentauro; two domestics, of whom Biondello was one, accompanied him. By some accident it happened that the sedan, which had been hired in haste, broke down, and the prince was obliged to proceed the remainder of the way on foot. Biondello walked in front; their course lay through several dark, retired streets, and, as daybreak was at hand, the lamps were either burning dimly or had gone out altogether. They had proceeded about a quarter of an hour when Biondello discovered that he had lost his way. The similarity of the bridges had deceived him, and, instead of crossing that of St. Mark, they found themselves in Sestière di Castello. It was in a by-street, and not a *soul was* stirring; they were obliged to turn back in

order to gain a main street by which to set themselves right. They had proceeded but a few paces when they heard cries of "murder" in a neighboring street. With his usual determined courage, the prince, unarmed as he was, snatched a stick from one of his attendants, and rushed forward in the direction whence the sound came. Three ruffianly-looking fellows were just about to assassinate a man, who with his companion was feebly defending himself; the prince appeared just in time to arrest the fatal blow. The voices of the prince and his followers alarmed the murderers, who did not expect any interruption in so lonely a place; after inflicting a few slight wounds with their daggers, they abandoned their victim and took to their heels. Exhausted with the unequal combat, the wounded man sunk half fainting into the arms of the prince; his companion informed my master that the man whose life he had saved was the Marquis Civitella, a nephew of the Cardinal A—i. As the marquis' wounds bled freely, Biondello acted as surgeon to the best of his ability, and the prince took care to have him conveyed to the palace of his uncle, which was near at hand, and whither he himself accompanied him. This done, he left the house without revealing his name.

This, however, was discovered by a servant who had recognized Biondello. Already on the following morning the cardinal, an old acquaintance from the Bucentauro, waited upon the prince. The interview lasted an hour; the cardinal was much moved; tears stood in his eyes when they parted; the prince, too, was affected. The same evening a visit was paid to the sick man, of whose case the surgeon gives a very favorable report; the mantle in which he was wrapped had rendered the thrusts unsteady, and weakened their force. Since this event not a day has passed without the prince's paying a visit at the cardinal's, or receiving one from him, and a close intimacy has begun to exist between him and the cardinal's family.

The cardinal is a venerable man of sixty, with a majestic aspect, but full of gayety and good health. He is said to be the richest prelate throughout all the dominions of the republic. He is reported to manage his

immense fortune in a very liberal manner, and, although prudently economical, to despise none of the joys of this life. This nephew, who is his sole heir, is not always on the best of terms with his uncle. For, although the cardinal is anything but an enemy to youthful pleasures, the conduct of the nephew must exhaust the utmost tolerance. His loose principles and dissipated manner of living, aided unhappily by all the attractions which can make vice tempting and excite sensuality, have rendered him the terror of all fathers and the bane of all husbands; this last attack also was said to have been caused by an intrigue he had begun with the wife of the —— ambassador, without speaking of other serious broils from which the power and the money of the cardinal could scarcely extricate him. But for this the cardinal would be the happiest man in Italy, for he possesses everything that can make life agreeable; but by this one domestic misfortune all the gifts of fortune are annulled, and the enjoyment of his wealth is embittered to the cardinal by the continual fear of finding nobody to inherit it.

The whole of this information I have obtained from Biondello. The prince has found in this man a real treasure. Every day he becomes more indispensable, and we are continually discovering in him some new talent. Some days ago the prince felt feverish and could not sleep; the night-lamp was extinguished, and all his ringing failed to arouse the valet-de-chambre, who had gone to sleep out of the house with an opera-dancer. At length the prince determined to rise himself, and to rouse one of his people. He had not proceeded far when a strain of delicious melody met his ear. Like one enchanted, he followed the sound, and found Biondello in his room playing upon the flute, with his fellow-servants assembled around him. The prince could hardly believe his senses, and commanded him to proceed. With a surprising degree of facility he began to vary a touching adagio air with some fine extempore variations, which he executed with all the taste of a virtuoso. The prince, who, as you know, is a judge of music, says that he might play with confidence in the finest choir in Italy.

"I must dismiss this man," said he to me next morn-

ing, "for I am unable to reward him according to his merits." Biondello, who had overheard these words, came forward, "If you dismiss me, gracious prince," said he, "you deprive me of my best reward."

"You are born to something better than to serve," answered my master. "I must not stand in the way of your fortune."

"Do not press upon me any better fortune, gracious sir, than that which I have chosen for myself."

"To neglect talent like yours — No! I can never permit it."

"Then permit me, gracious sir, sometimes to exercise it in your presence."

Preparations were immediately made for carrying this proposition into effect. Biondello had a room assigned to him next the apartment of the prince, so that he can lull him to sleep with his strains, and wake him in the same manner. The prince wished to double his salary, but Biondello declined, requesting that this intended boon should be retained in his master's hands as a capital of which he might some day wish to avail himself. The prince expects that he will soon come to ask a favor at his hands; and whatever it may be it is granted beforehand. Farewell, dearest friend. I am waiting with impatience for tidings from K—n.

LETTER III.

BARON VON F—— TO COUNT VON O——

June 4.

The Marquis of Civitella, who is now entirely recovered from his wounds, was last week introduced to the prince by his uncle, the cardinal, and since then he has followed him like his shadow. Biondello cannot have told me the truth respecting this marquis, or at any rate his account must be greatly exaggerated. His mien is highly engaging, and his manners irresistibly winning.

It is impossible to be out of humor with him; the first sight of him has disarmed me. Imagine a man of the most enchanting figure, with corresponding grace and dignity, a countenance full of thought and genius, an expression frank and inviting; a persuasive tone of voice, the most flowing eloquence, and a glow of youthful beauty, joined to all the advantages of a most liberal education. He has none of that contemptuous pride, none of that solemn starchness, which we disliked so much in all the other nobles. His whole being is redolent of youthful joyousness, benevolence, and warmth of feeling. His excesses must have been much exaggerated; I never saw a more perfect picture of health. If he is really so wholly abandoned as Biondello represents him he is a syren whom none can resist.

Towards me he behaved with much frankness. He confessed with the most pleasing sincerity that he was by no means on the best of terms with his uncle, the cardinal, and that it was his own fault. But he was seriously resolved to amend his life, and the merit would be entirely the prince's. At the same time he hoped through his instrumentality to be reconciled to his uncle, as the prince's influence with the cardinal was unbounded. The only thing he had wanted till now was a friend and a guide, and he trusted he should find both in the person of the prince.

The prince has now assumed the authority of a preceptor towards him, and treats him with all the watchfulness and strictness of a Mentor. But this intimacy also gives the marquis a certain degree of influence, of which he well knows how to avail himself. He hardly stirs from his side; he is present at all parties where the prince is one of the guests; for the Bucentauro alone he is fortunately as yet too young. Wherever he appears in public with the prince he manages to draw him away from the rest of the company by the pleasing manner in which he engages him in conversation and arrests his attention. Nobody, they say, has yet been able to reclaim him, and the prince will deserve to be immortalized in an epic should he accomplish such an Herculean task. I am much afraid, however, that the tables may be turned, and

the guide be led away by the pupil, of which, in fact, there seems to be every prospect.

The Prince of —d— has taken his departure, much to the satisfaction of us all, my master not excepted. What I predicted, my dear O——, has come to pass. Two characters so widely opposed must inevitably clash together, and cannot maintain a good understanding for any length of time. The Prince of —d— had not been long in Venice before a terrible schism took place in the intellectual world, which threatened to deprive our prince of one-half of his admirers. Wherever he went he was crossed by this rival, who possessed exactly the requisite amount of small cunning to avail himself of every little advantage he gained. As he besides never scrupled to make use of any petty manœuvres to increase his consequence, he in a short time drew all the weak-minded of the community on his side, and shone at the head of a company of parasites worthy of such a leader.* The wiser course would certainly have been not to enter into competition at all with an adversary of this description, and a few months back this is the part which the prince would have taken. But now he has launched too far into the stream easily to regain the shore. These trifles have, perhaps by the circumstances in which he is placed, acquired a certain degree of importance in his eyes, and had he even despised them his pride would not have allowed him to retire at a moment when his yielding would have been looked upon less as a voluntary act than as a confession of inferiority. Added to this, an unlucky revival of forgotten satirical speeches had taken place, and the spirit of rivalry which took possession of his followers had affected the prince himself. In order, therefore, to maintain that position in society which public opinion had now assigned him, he deemed it advisable to seize every possible opportunity of display, and of increasing the number of his admirers; but this could only be effected by the most princely expenditure;

* The harsh judgment which Baron F—— (both here and in some passages of his first letter) pronounces upon this talented prince will be found exaggerated by every one who has the good fortune to be acquainted with him, and must be attributed to the prejudiced views of the young observer.—*Note of the Count von O——.*

he was therefore eternally giving feasts, entertainments, and expensive concerts, making costly presents, and playing high. As this strange madness, moreover, had also infected the prince's retinue, who are generally much more punctilious in respect to what they deem "the honor of the family" than their masters, the prince was obliged to assist the zeal of his followers by his liberality. Here, then, is a whole catalogue of ills, all irremediable consequences of a sufficiently excusable weakness to which the prince in an unguarded moment gave way.

We have, it is true, got rid of our rival, but the harm he has done will not so soon be remedied. The finances of the prince are exhausted; all that he had saved by the wise economy of years is spent; and he must hasten from Venice if he would escape plunging into debt, which till now he has most scrupulously avoided. It is decisively settled that we leave as soon as fresh remittances arrive.

I should not have minded all this splendor if the prince had but reaped the least real satisfaction from it. But he was never less happy than at present. He feels that he is not what he formerly was; he seeks to regain his self-respect; he is dissatisfied with himself, and launches into fresh dissipation in order to drown the recollection of the last. One new acquaintance follows another, and each involves him more deeply. I know not where this will end. We must away — there is no other chance of safety — we must away from Venice.

But, my dear friend, I have not yet received a single line from you. How am I to interpret this long and obstinate silence?

LETTER IV.

BARON VON F—— TO COUNT VON O——.

June 12.

I thank you, my dear friend, for the token of your remembrance which young B—hl brought me. But

what is it you say about letters I ought to have received? I have received no letter from you; not a single one. What a circuitous route must they have taken. In future, dear O——, when you honor me with an epistle despatch it *viâ* Trent, under cover to the prince, my master.

We have at length been compelled, my dear friend, to resort to a measure which till now we had so happily avoided. Our remittances have failed to arrive — failed, for the first time, in this pressing emergency, and we have been obliged to have recourse to a usurer, as the prince is willing to pay handsomely to keep the affair secret. The worst of this disagreeable occurrence is, that it retards our departure. On this affair the prince and I have had an explanation. The whole transaction had been arranged by Biondello, and the son of Israel was there before I had any suspicion of the fact. It grieved me to the heart to see the prince reduced to such an extremity, and revived all my recollections of the past, and fears for the future; and I suppose I may have looked rather sorrowful and gloomy when the usurer left the room. The prince, whom the foregoing scene had left in not the happiest frame of mind, was pacing angrily up and down the room; the rouleaus of gold were still lying on the table; I stood at the window, counting the panes of glass in the procurator's house opposite. There was a long pause. At length the prince broke silence. "F——!" he began, "I cannot bear to see dismal faces about me."

I remained silent.

"Why do you not answer me? Do I not perceive that your heart is almost bursting to vent some of its vexation? I insist on your speaking, otherwise you will begin to fancy that you are keeping some terribly momentous secret."

"If I am gloomy, gracious sir," replied I, "it is only because I do not see you cheerful."

"I know," continued he, "that you have been dissatisfied with me for some time past — that you disapprove of every step I take — that — what does Count O—— say in his letters?"

"Count O—— has not written to me."

"Not written? Why do you deny it? You keep up a confidential correspondence together, you and the count; I am quite aware of that. Come, you may confess it, for I have no wish to pry into your secrets."

"Count O——," replied I, "has not yet answered any of the three letters which I have written to him."

"I have done wrong," continued he; "don't you think so?" (taking up one of the rouleaus) "I should not have done this?"

"I see that it was necessary."

"I ought not to have reduced myself to such a necessity?"

I did not answer.

"Oh, of course! I ought never to have indulged my wishes, but have grown gray in the same dull manner in which I was brought up! Because I once venture a step beyond the drear monotony of my past life, and look around me to see whether there be not some new source of enjoyment in store for me — because I" ——

"If it was but a trial, gracious sir, I have no more to say; for the experience you have gained would not be dearly bought at three times the price it has cost. It grieves me, I confess, to think that the opinion of the world should be concerned in determining the question — how are you to choose your own happiness."

"It is well for you that you can afford to despise the world's opinion," replied he, "I am its creature, I must be its slave. What are we princes but opinion? With us it is everything. Public opinion is our nurse and preceptor in infancy, our oracle and idol in riper years, our staff in old age. Take from us what we derive from the opinion of the world, and the poorest of the humblest class is in a better position than we, for his fate has taught him a lesson of philosophy which enables him to bear it. But a prince who laughs at the world's opinion destroys himself, like the priest who denies the existence of a God."

"And yet, gracious prince" ——

"I see what you would say; I can break through the circle which my birth has drawn around me. But can I also eradicate from my memory all the false impressions

which education and early habit have implanted, and which a hundred thousand fools have been continually laboring to impress more and more firmly? Everybody naturally wishes to be what he is in perfection; in short, the whole aim of a prince's existence is to appear happy. If we cannot be happy after your fashion, is that any reason why we should discard all other means of happiness, and not be happy at all? If we cannot drink of joy pure from the fountain-head, can there be any reason why we should not beguile ourselves with artificial pleasure—nay, even be content to accept a sorry substitute from the very hand that robs us of the higher boon?"

"You were wont to look for this compensation in your own heart."

"But if I no longer find it there? Oh, how came we to fall on this subject? Why did you revive these recollections in me? I had recourse to this tumult of the senses in order to stifle an inward voice which embitters my whole life; in order to lull to rest this inquisitive reason, which, like a sharp sickle, moves to and fro in my brain, at each new research lopping off another branch of my happiness."

"My dearest prince"—— He had risen, and was pacing up and down the room in unusual agitation.*

"When everything gives way before me and behind me; when the past lies in the distance in dreary monotony, like a city of the dead; when the future offers me naught; when I see my whole being enclosed within the narrow circle of the present, who can blame me if I clasp this niggardly present of time in my arms with fiery eagerness, as though it were a friend whom I was embracing for the last time? Oh, I have learnt to value the present moment. The present moment is our mother; let us love it as such."

* I have endeavored, dearest O——, to relate to you this remarkable conversation exactly as it occurred; but this I found impossible, although I sat down to write it the evening of the day it took place. In order to assist my memory I was obliged to transpose the observation of the prince, and thus this compound of a conversation and a philosophical lecture, which is in some respects better and in others worse than the source from which I took it, arose; but I assure you that I have rather omitted some of the prince's words than ascribed to him any of my own; all that is mine is the arrangement, and a few observations, whose ownership you will easily recognize by their stupidity.—*Note of the Baron von F——.*

"Gracious sir, you were wont to believe in a more lasting good."

"Do but make the enchantment last and fervently will I embrace it. But what pleasure can it give to me to render beings happy who to-morrow will have passed away like myself? Is not everything passing away around me? Each one bustles and pushes his neighbor aside hastily to catch a few drops from the fountain of life, and then departs thirsting. At this very moment, while I am rejoicing in my strength, some being is waiting to start into life at my dissolution. Show me one being who will endure, and I will become a virtuous man."

"But what, then, has become of those benevolent sentiments which used to be the joy and the rule of your life? To sow seeds for the future, to assist in carrying out the designs of a high and eternal Providence"——

"Future! Eternal Providence! If you take away from man all that he derives from his own heart, all that he associates with the idea of a godhead, and all that belongs to the law of nature, what, then, do you leave him?

"What has already happened to me, and what may still follow, I look upon as two black, impenetrable curtains hanging over the two extremities of human life, and which no mortal has ever yet drawn aside. Many hundred generations have stood before the second of these curtains, casting the light of their torches upon its folds, speculating and guessing as to what it may conceal. Many have beheld themselves, in the magnified image of their passions, reflected upon the curtain which hides futurity from their gaze, and have turned away shuddering from their own shadows. Poets, philosophers, and statesmen have painted their fancies on the curtain in brighter or more sombre colors, according as their own prospects were bright or gloomy. Many a juggler has also taken advantage of the universal curiosity, and by well-managed deceptions led astray the excited imagination. A deep silence reigns behind this curtain; no one who passes beyond it answers any questions; all the reply is an empty echo, like the sound yielded by a vault.

Sooner or later all must go behind this curtain, and they approach it with fear and trembling, in doubt who may be waiting there behind to receive them; *quid sit id, quod tantum morituri vident.* There have been infidels who asserted that this curtain only deluded mankind, and that we saw nothing behind it, because there was nothing there to see; but, to convince them, they were quickly sent behind it themselves."

"It was indeed a rash conclusion," said I, "if they had no better ground for it than that they saw nothing themselves."

"You see, my dear friend, I am modest enough not to wish to look behind this curtain, and the wisest course will doubtless be to abstain from all curiosity. But while I draw this impassable circle around me, and confine myself within the bounds of present existence, this small point of time, which I was in danger of neglecting in useless researches, becomes the more important to me. What you call the chief end and aim of my existence concerns me no longer. I cannot escape my destiny; I cannot promote its consummation; but I know, and firmly believe, that I am here to accomplish some end, and that I do accomplish it. But the means which nature has chosen to fulfil my destiny are so much the more sacred to me; to me it is everything; my morality, my happiness. All the rest I shall never learn. I am like a messenger who carries a sealed letter to its place of destination. What the letter contains is indifferent to him; his business is only to earn his fee for carrying it."

"Alas!" said I, "how poor a thing you would leave me!"

"But in what a labyrinth have we lost ourselves!" exclaimed the prince, looking with a smile at the table on which the rouleaus lay. "After all perhaps not far from the mark," continued he; "you will now no doubt understand my reasons for this new mode of life. I could not so suddenly tear myself away from my fancied wealth, could not so readily separate the props of my morality and happiness from the pleasing dream with which everything within me was so closely bound up. I longed for

the frivolity which seems to render the existence of most of those about me endurable to themselves. Everything which precluded reflection was welcome to me. Shall I confess it to you? I wished to lower myself, in order to destroy this source of my griefs, by deadening the power of reflection."

Here we were interrupted by a visit. In my next I shall have to communicate to you a piece of news, which, from the tenor of a conversation like the one of to-day, you would scarcely have anticipated.

LETTER V.

BARON VON F—— TO COUNT VON O——.

As the time of our departure from Venice is now approaching with rapid steps, this week was to be devoted to seeing everything worthy of notice in pictures and public edifices; a task which, when one intends making a long stay in a place, is always delayed till the last moment.

The "Marriage at Cana," by Paul Veronese, which is to be seen in a Benedictine convent in the Island of St. George, was in particular mentioned to us in high terms. Do not expect me to give you a description of this extraordinary work of art, which, on the whole, made a very surprising, but not equally pleasing, impression on me. We should have required as many hours as we had minutes to study a composition of one hundred and twenty figures, upon a ground thirty feet broad. What human eye is capable of grasping so complicated a whole, or at once to enjoy all the beauty which the artist has everywhere lavished upon it! It is, however, to be lamented, that a work of so much merit, which if exhibited in some public place, would command the admiration of every one, should be destined merely to ornament the refectory of a few monks. The church of the monastery is no less worthy of admiration, being one of the finest in the whole city. Towards evening we went in a gondola to the Guidecca, in order to spend the pleasant

hours of evening in its charming garden. Our party, which was not very numerous, soon dispersed in various directions; and Civitella, who had been waiting all day for an opportunity of speaking to me privately, took me aside into an arbor.

"You are a friend to the prince," he began, "from whom he is accustomed to keep no secrets, as I know from very good authority. As I entered his hotel to-day I met a man coming out whose occupation is well known to me, and when I entered the room the prince's brow was clouded." I wished to interrupt him, — "You cannot deny it," continued he; "I knew the man, I looked at him well. And is it possible that the prince should have a friend in Venice — a friend who owes his life to him, and yet be reduced on an emergency to make use of such creatures?"

"Tell me frankly, Baron! Is the prince in difficulties? It is in vain you strive to conceal it from me. What! you refuse to tell me! I can easily learn from one who would sell any secret for gold."

"My good Marquis ——"

"Pardon me! I must appear intrusive in order not to be ungrateful. To the prince I am indebted for life, and what is still more, for a reasonable use of it. Shall I stand idly by and see him take steps which, besides being inconvenient to him, are beneath his dignity? Shall I feel it in my power to assist him, and hesitate for a moment to step forward?"

"The prince," replied I, "is not in difficulties. Some remittances which we expected *viâ* Trent have not yet arrived, most likely either by accident, or because not feeling certain whether he had not already left Venice, they waited for a communication from him. This has now been done, and until their arrival" ——

Civitella shook his head. "Do not mistake my motive," said he; "in this there can be no question as to diminishing the extent of my obligations towards the prince, which all my uncle's wealth would be insufficient to cancel. My object is simply to spare him a few unpleasant moments. My uncle possesses a large fortune which I can command as freely as though it were my own. A fortu-

nate circumstance occurs, which enables me to avail myself of the only means by which I can possibly be of the slightest use to your master. I know," continued he, "how much delicacy the prince possesses, but the feeling is mutual, and it would be noble on his part to afford me this slight gratification, were it only to make me appear to feel less heavily the load of obligation under which I labor."

He continued to urge his request, until I had pledged my word to assist him to the utmost of my ability. I knew the prince's character, and had but small hopes of success. The marquis promised to agree to any conditions the prince might impose, but added, that it would deeply wound him to be regarded in the light of a stranger.

In the heat of our conversation we had strayed far away from the rest of the company, and were returning, when Z—— came to meet us.

"I am in search of the prince," he cried; "is he not with you?"

"We were just going to him," was our reply. "We thought to find him with the rest of the party."

"The company is all together, but he is nowhere to be found. I cannot imagine how we lost sight of him."

It now occurred to Civitella that he might have gone to look at the adjoining church, which had a short time before attracted his attention. We immediately went to look for him there. As we approached, we found Biondello waiting in the porch. On coming nearer, we saw the prince emerge hastily from a side door; his countenance was flushed, and he looked anxiously round for Biondello, whom he called. He seemed to be giving him very particular instructions for the execution of some commission, while his eyes continued constantly fixed on the church door, which had remained open. Biondello hastened into the church. The prince, without perceiving us, passed through the crowd, and went back to his party, which he reached before us.

We resolved to sup in an open pavilion of the garden, where the marquis had, without our knowledge, arranged a little concert, which was quite first-rate. There was a

young singer in particular, whose delicious voice and charming figure excited general admiration. Nothing, however, seemed to make an impression on the prince; he spoke little, and gave confused answers to our questions; his eyes were anxiously fixed in the direction whence he expected Biondello; and he seemed much agitated. Civitella asked him what he thought of the church; he was unable to give any description of it. Some beautiful pictures, which rendered the church remarkable, were spoken of; the prince had not noticed them. We perceived that our questions annoyed him, and therefore discontinued them. Hour after hour rolled on and still Biondello returned not. The prince could no longer conceal his impatience; he rose from the table, and paced alone, with rapid strides, up and down a retired walk. Nobody could imagine what had happened to him. I did not venture to ask him the reason of so remarkable a change in his demeanor; I have for some time past resigned my former place in his confidence. It was, therefore, with the utmost impatience that I awaited the return of Biondello to explain this riddle to me.

It was past ten o'clock when he made his appearance. The tidings he brought did not make the prince more communicative. He returned in an ill-humor to the company, the gondola was ordered, and we returned home.

During the remainder of that evening I could find no opportunity of speaking to Biondello, and was, therefore, obliged to retire to my pillow with my curiosity unsatisfied. The prince had dismissed us early, but a thousand reflections flitted across my brain, and kept me awake. For a long time I could hear him pacing up and down his room; at length sleep overcame me. Late at midnight I was awakened by a voice, and I felt a hand passed across my face; I opened my eyes, and saw the prince standing at my bedside, with a lamp in his hand. He told me he was unable to sleep, and begged me to keep him company through the night. I was going to dress myself, but he told me to stay where I was, and seated himself at my bedside.

"Something has happened to me to-day," he began,

"the impression of which will never be effaced from my soul. I left you, as you know, to see the —— church, respecting which Civitella had raised my curiosity, and which had already attracted my attention. As neither you nor he were at hand, I walked the short distance alone, and ordered Biondello to wait for me at the door. The church was quite empty; a dim and solemn light surrounded me as I entered from the blazing sultry day without. I stood alone in the spacious building, throughout which there reigned the stillness of the grave. I placed myself in the centre of the church, and gave myself up to the feelings which the sight was calculated to produce; by degrees the grand proportions of this majestic building expanded to my gaze, and I stood wrapt in deep and pleasing contemplation. Above me the evening bell was tolling; its tones died softly away in the aisles, and found an echo in my heart. Some altar-pieces at a distance attracted my attention. I approached to look at them; unconsciously I had wandered through one side of the church, and was now standing at the opposite end. Here a few steps, raised round a pillar, led into a little chapel, containing several small altars, with statues of saints in the niches above them. On entering the chapel on the right I heard a whispering, as though some one near was speaking in a low voice. I turned towards the spot whence the sound proceeded, and saw before me a female form. No! I cannot describe to you the beauty of this form. My first feeling was one of awe, which, however, soon gave place to ravishing surprise."

"But this figure, your highness? Are you certain that it was something living, something real, and not perhaps a picture, or an illusion of your fancy?"

"Hear me further. It was a lady. Surely, till that moment, I have never seen her sex in its full perfection! All around was sombre; the setting sun shone through a single window into the chapel, and its rays rested upon her figure. With inexpressible grace, half kneeling, half lying, she was stretched before an altar; one of the most striking, most lovely, and picturesque objects in all nature. Her dress was of black moreen, fitting tightly to

her slender waist and beautifully-formed arms, the skirts spreading around her like a Spanish robe; her long light-colored hair was divided into two broad plaits, which, apparently from their own weight, had escaped from under her veil, and flowed in charming disorder down her back. One of her hands grasped the crucifix, and her head rested gracefully upon the other. But, where shall I find words to describe to you the angelic beauty of her countenance, in which the charms of a seraph seemed displayed. The setting sun shone full upon her face, and its golden beams seemed to surround it as with a glory. Can you recall to your mind the Madonna of our Florentine painter? She was here personified, even to those few deviations from the studied costume which so powerfully, so irresistibly attracted me in the picture."

With regard to the Madonna, of whom the prince spoke, the case is this: Shortly after your departure he made the acquaintance of a Florentine painter, who had been summoned to Venice to paint an altar-piece for some church, the name of which I do not recollect. He had brought with him three paintings, which had been intended for the gallery in the Cornari palace. They consisted of a Madonna, a Heloise, and a Venus, very lightly apparelled. All three were of great beauty; and, although the subjects were quite different, they were so intrinsically equal that it seemed almost impossible to determine which to prefer. The prince alone did not hesitate for a moment. As soon as the pictures were placed before him the Madonna absorbed his whole attention; in the two others he admired the painter's genius; but in this he forgot the artist and his art, his whole soul being absorbed in the contemplation of the work. He was quite moved, and could scarcely tear himself away from it. We could easily see by the artist's countenance that in his heart he coincided with the prince's judgment; he obstinately refused to separate the pictures, and demanded fifteen hundred zechins for the three. The prince offered him half that sum for the Madonna alone, but in vain. The artist insisted on his first demand, and who knows what might have been the result if a ready purchaser had not stepped forward.

Two hours afterwards all three pictures were sold, and we never saw them again. It was this Madonna which now recurred to the prince's mind.

"I stood," continued he, "gazing at her in silent admiration. She did not observe me; my arrival did not disturb her, so completely was she absorbed in her devotion. She prayed to her Deity, and I prayed to her — yes, I adored her! All the pictures of saints, all the altars and the burning tapers around me had failed to remind me of what now for the first time burst upon me, that I was in a sacred place. Shall I confess it to you? In that moment I believed firmly in Him whose image was clasped in her beautiful hand. I read in her eyes that he answered her prayers. Thanks be to her charming devotion, it had revealed him to me. I wandered with her through all the paradise of prayer.

"She rose, and I recollected myself. I stepped aside confused; but the noise I made in moving discovered me. I thought that the unexpected presence of a man might alarm, that my boldness would offend her; but neither of these feelings were expressed in the look with which she regarded me. Peace, benign peace, was portrayed in her countenance, and a cheerful smile played upon her lips. She was descending from her heaven; and I was the first happy mortal who met her benevolent look. Her mind was still wrapt in her concluding prayer; she had not yet come in contact with earth.

"I now heard something stir in the opposite corner of the chapel. It was an elderly lady, who rose from a cushion close behind me. Till now I had not observed her. She had been distant only a few steps from me, and must have seen my every motion. This confused me. I cast my eyes to the earth, and both the ladies passed by me."

On this last point I thought myself able to console the prince.

"Strange," continued he, after a long silence, "that there should be something which one has never known — never missed; and that yet on a sudden one should seem to live and breathe for that alone. Can one single moment so completely metamorphose a human being? It

would now be as impossible for me to indulge in the wishes or enjoy the pleasures of yesterday as it would be to return to the toys of my childhood, and all this since I have seen this object which lives and rules in the inmost recesses of my soul. It seems to say that I can love nothing else, and that nothing else in this world can produce an impression on me."

"But consider, gracious prince," said I, "the excitable mood you were in when this apparition surprised you, and how all the circumstances conspired to inflame your imagination. Quitting the dazzling light of day and the busy throng of men, you were suddenly surrounded by twilight and repose. You confess that you had quite given yourself up to those solemn emotions which the majesty of the place was calculated to awaken; the contemplation of fine works of art had rendered you more susceptible to the impressions of beauty in any form. You supposed yourself alone — when you saw a maiden who, I will readily allow, may have been very beautiful, and whose charms were heightened by a favorable illumination of the setting sun, a graceful attitude, and an expression of fervent devotion — what is more natural than that your vivid fancy should look upon such a form as something supernaturally perfect?"

"Can the imagination give what it never received?" replied he. "In the whole range of my fancy there is nothing which I can compare with that image. It is impressed on my mind distinctly and vividly as in the moment when I beheld it. I can think of nothing but that picture; but you might offer me whole worlds for it in vain."

"My gracious prince, this is love."

"Must the sensation which makes me happy necessarily have a name? Love! Do not degrade my feeling by giving it a name which is so often misapplied by the weak-minded. Who ever felt before what I do now? Such a being never before existed; how then can the name be admitted before the emotion which it is meant to express? Mine is a novel and peculiar feeling, connected only with this being, and capable of being applied to her alone. Love! From love I am secure!"

"You sent away Biondello, no doubt, to follow in the steps of these strangers, and to make inquiries concerning them. What news did he bring you?"

"Biondello discovered nothing; or, at least, as good as nothing. An aged, respectably dressed man, who looked more like a citizen than a servant, came to conduct them to their gondola. A number of poor people placed themselves in a row, and quitted her, apparently well satisfied. Biondello said he saw one of her hands, which was ornamented with several precious stones. She spoke a few words, which Biondello could not comprehend, to her companion; he says it was Greek. As she had some distance to walk to the canal, the people began to throng together, attracted by the strangeness of her appearance. Nobody knew her — but beauty seems born to rule. All made way for her in a respectful manner. She let fall a black veil, that covered half of her person, over her face, and hastened into the gondola. Along the whole Giudecca Biondello managed to keep the boat in view, but the crowd prevented his following it further."

"But surely he took notice of the gondolier so as to be able to recognize him again."

"He has undertaken to find out the gondolier, but he is not one of those with whom he associates. The mendicants, whom he questioned, could give him no further information than that the signora had come to the church for the last few Saturdays, and had each time divided a gold-piece among them. It was a Dutch ducat, which Biondello changed for them, and brought to me."

"It appears, then, that she is a Greek — most likely of rank; at any rate, rich and charitable. That is as much as we dare venture to conclude at present, gracious sir; perhaps too much. But a Greek lady in a Catholic church?"

"Why not? She may have changed her religion. But there is certainly some mystery in the affair. Why should she go only once a week? Why always on Saturday, on which day, as Biondello tells me, the church is generally deserted. Next Saturday, at the latest, must decide this question. Till then, dearest friend, you must help me to while away the hours. But it is in vain. They will go

their lingering pace, though my soul is burning with expectation!"

"And when this day at length arrives — what, then, gracious prince? What do you purpose doing?"

"What do I purpose doing? I shall see her. I will discover where she lives and who she is. But to what does all this tend? I hear you ask. What I saw made me happy; I therefore now know wherein my happiness consists!

"And our departure from Venice, which is fixed for next Monday?"

"How could I know that Venice still contained such a treasure for me? You ask me questions of my past life. I tell you that from this day forward I will begin a new existence."

"I thought that now was the opportunity to keep my word to the marquis. I explained to the prince that a protracted stay in Venice was altogether incompatible with the exhausted state of his finances, and that, if he extended his sojourn here beyond the appointed time, he could not reckon on receiving funds from his court. On this occasion, I learned what had hitherto been a secret to me, namely, that the prince had, without the knowledge of his other brothers, received from his sister, the reigning —— of ——, considerable loans, which she would gladly double if his court left him in the lurch. This sister, who, as you know, is a pious enthusiast, thinks that the large savings which she makes at a very economical court cannot be deposited in better hands than in those of a brother whose wise benevolence she well knows, and whose character she warmly honors. I have, indeed, known for some time that a very close intercourse has been kept up between the two, and that many letters have been exchanged; but, as the prince's own resources have hitherto always been sufficient to cover his expenditure, I had never guessed at this hidden channel. It is clear, therefore, that the prince must have had some expenses which have been and still are unknown to me; but if I can judge of them by his general character, they will certainly not be of such a description as to tend to his disgrace. And yet I thought I under-

stood him thoroughly. After this disclosure, I of course did not hesitate to make known to him the marquis' offer, which, to my no small surprise, he immediately accepted. He gave me the authority to transact the business with the marquis in whatever way I thought most advisable, and then immediately to settle the account with the usurer. To his sister he proposed to write without delay.

It was morning when we separated. However disagreeable this affair is to me for more than one reason, the worst of it is that it seems to threaten a longer residence in Venice. From the prince's passion I rather augur good than evil. It is, perhaps, the most powerful method of withdrawing him from his metaphysical dreams to the concerns and feelings of real life. It will have its crisis, and, like an illness produced by artificial means, will eradicate the natural disorder.

Farewell, my dear friend. I have written down these incidents immediately upon their occurrence. The post starts immediately; you will receive this letter on the same day as my last.

LETTER VI.

BARON F—— TO COUNT O——.

June 20.

This Civitella is certainly one of the most obliging personages in the world. The prince had scarcely left me the other day before I received a note from the marquis enforcing his former offers with renewed earnestness. I instantly forwarded, in the prince's name, a bond for six thousand zechins; in less than half an hour it was returned, with double the sum required, in notes and gold. The prince at length assented to this increase, but insisted that the bond, which was drawn only for six weeks, should be accepted.

The whole of the present week has been consumed in inquiries after the mysterious Greek. Biondello set all his engines to work, but until now in vain. He certainly

discovered the gondolier; but from him he could learn nothing, save that the ladies had disembarked on the island of Murano, where they entered two sedan chairs which were waiting for them. He supposed them to be English because they spoke a foreign language, and had paid him in gold. He did not even know their guide, but believed him to be a glass manufacturer from Murano. We were now, at least, certain that we must not look for her in the Giudecca, and that in all probability she lived in the island of Murano; but, unluckily, the description the prince gave of her was not such as to make her recognizable by a third party. The passionate interest with which he had regarded her had hindered him from observing her minutely; for all the minor details, which other people would not have failed to notice, had escaped his observation; from his description one would have sooner expected to find her prototype in the works of Ariosto or Tasso than on a Venetian island. Besides, our inquiries had to be conducted with the utmost caution, in order not to become prejudicial to the lady, or to excite undue attention. As Biondello was the only man besides the prince who had seen her, even through her veil, and could therefore recognize her, he strove to be as much as possible in all the places where she was likely to appear; the life of the poor man, during the whole week, was a continual race through all the streets of Venice. In the Greek church, particularly, every inquiry was made, but always with the same ill-success; and the prince, whose impatience increased with every successive failure, was at last obliged to wait till Saturday, with what patience he might. His restlessness was excessive. Nothing interested him, nothing could fix his attention. He was in constant feverish excitement; he fled from society, but the evil increased in solitude. He had never been so much besieged by visitors as in this week. His approaching departure had been announced, and everybody crowded to see him. It was necessary to occupy the attention of the people in order to lull their suspicions, and to amuse the prince with the view of diverting his mind from its all-engrossing object. In this emergency Civitella hit upon play; and, for the

purpose of driving away most of the visitors, proposed that the stakes should be high. He hoped by awakening in the prince a transient liking for play, from which it would afterwards be easy to wean him, to destroy the romantic bent of his passion. "The cards," said Civitella, "have saved me from many a folly which I had intended to commit, and repaired many which I had already perpetrated. At the faro table I have often recovered my tranquillity of mind, of which a pair of bright eyes had robbed me, and women never had more power over me than when I had not money enough to play."

I will not enter into a discussion as to how far Civitella was right; but the remedy we had hit upon soon began to be worse than the disease it was intended to cure. The prince, who could only make the game at all interesting to himself by staking extremely high, soon overstepped all bounds. He was quite out of his element. Everything he did seemed to be done in a passion; all his actions betrayed the uneasiness of his mind. You know his general indifference to money; he seemed now to have become totally insensible to its value. Gold flowed through his hands like water. As he played without the slightest caution he lost almost invariably. He lost immense sums, for he staked like a desperate gamester. Dearest O——, with an aching heart I write it, in four days he had lost above twelve thousand zechins.

Do not reproach me. I blame myself sufficiently. But how could I prevent it? Could I do more than warn him? I did all that was in my power, and cannot find myself guilty. Civitella, too, lost not a little; I won about six hundred zechins. The unprecedented ill-luck of the prince excited general attention, and therefore he would not leave off playing. Civitella, who is always ready to oblige him, immediately advanced him the required sum. The deficit is made up, but the prince owes the marquis twenty-four thousand zechins. Oh, how I long for the savings of his pious sister. Are all sovereigns so, my dear friend? The prince behaves as though he had done the marquis a great honor, and he, at any rate, plays his part well.

Civitella sought to quiet me by saying that this reck-

lessness, this extraordinary ill-luck, would be most effectual in bringing the prince to his senses. The money, he said, was of no consequence. He himself would not feel the loss in the least, and would be happy to serve the prince, at any moment, with three times the amount. The cardinal also assured me that his nephew's intentions were honest, and that he should be ready to assist him in carrying them out.

The most unfortunate thing was that these tremendous sacrifices did not even effect their object. One would have thought that the prince would at least feel some interest in his play. But such was not the case. His thoughts were wandering far away, and the passion which we wished to stifle by his ill-luck in play seemed, on the contrary, only to gather strength. When, for instance, a decisive stroke was about to be played, and every one's eyes were fixed, full of expectation, on the board, his were searching for Biondello, in order to catch the news he might have brought him, from the expression of his countenance. Biondello brought no tidings, and his master's losses continued.

The gains, however, fell into very needy hands. A few "your excellencies," whom scandal reports to be in the habit of carrying home their frugal dinner from the market in their senatorial caps, entered our house as beggars, and left it with well-lined purses. Civitella pointed them out to me. "Look," said he, "how many poor devils make their fortunes by one great man taking a whim into his head. This is what I like to see. It is princely and royal. A great man must, even by his failings, make some one happy, like a river which by its overflowing fertilizes the neighboring fields."

Civitella has a noble and generous way of thinking, but the prince owes him twenty-four thousand zechins.

At length the long-wished-for Saturday arrived, and my master insisted upon going, directly after dinner, to the —— church. He stationed himself in the chapel where he had first seen the unknown, but in such a way as not to be immediately observed. Biondello had orders to keep watch at the church door, and to enter into conversation with the attendant of the ladies. I had taken

upon myself to enter, like a chance passenger, into the same gondola with them on their return, in order to follow their track if the other schemes should fail. At the spot where the gondolier said he had landed them the last time two sedans were stationed; the chamberlain, Z——, was ordered to follow in a separate gondola, in order to trace the retreat of the unknown, if all else should fail. The prince wished to give himself wholly up to the pleasure of seeing her, and, if possible, try to make her acquaintance in the church. Civitella was to keep out of the way altogether, as his reputation among the women of Venice was so bad that his presence could not have failed to excite the suspicions of the lady. You see, dear count, it was not through any want of precaution on our part that the fair unknown escaped us.

Never, perhaps, was there offered up in any church such ardent prayers for success, and never were hopes so cruelly disappointed. The prince waited till after sunset, starting in expectation at every sound which approached the chapel, and at every creaking of the church door. Seven full hours passed, and no Greek lady. I need not describe his state of mind. You know what hope deferred is, hope which one has nourished unceasingly for seven days and nights.

LETTER VII.

BARON VON F—— TO COUNT VON O——.

July.

The mysterious unknown of the prince reminded Marquis Civitella of a romantic incident which happened to himself a short time since, and, to divert the prince, he offered to relate it. I will give it you in his own words; but the lively spirit which he infuses into all he tells will be lost in my narration.

(Here follows the subjoined fragment, which appeared in the eighth part of the Thalia, and was originally intended for the second volume of the Ghost-Seer. It

found a place here after Schiller had given up the idea of completing the Ghost-Seer.)

"In the spring of last year," began Civitella, "I had the misfortune to embroil myself with the Spanish ambassador, a gentleman who, in his seventieth year, had been guilty of the folly of wishing to marry a Roman girl of eighteen. His vengeance pursued me, and my friends advised me to secure my safety by a timely flight, and to keep out of the way until the hand of nature, or an adjustment of differences, had secured me from the wrath of this formidable enemy. As I felt it too severe a punishment to quit Venice altogether, I took up my abode in a distant quarter of the town, where I lived in a lonely house, under a feigned name, keeping myself concealed by day, and devoting the night to the society of my friends and of pleasure.

"My windows looked upon a garden, the west side of which was bounded by the walls of a convent, while towards the east it jutted out into the Laguna in the form of a little peninsula. The garden was charmingly situated, but little frequented. It was my custom every morning, after my friends had left me, to spend a few moments at the window before retiring to rest, to see the sun rise over the Adriatic, and then to bid him good-night. If you, my dear prince, have not yet enjoyed this pleasure, I recommend exactly this station, the only eligible one perhaps in all Venice to enjoy so splendid a prospect in perfection. A purple twilight hangs over the deep, and a golden mist on the Laguna announces the sun's approach. The heavens and the sea are wrapped in expectant silence. In two seconds the orb of day appears, casting a flood of fiery light on the waves. It is an enchanting sight.

"One morning, when I was, according to custom, enjoying the beauty of this prospect, I suddenly discovered that I was not the only spectator of the scene. I fancied I heard voices in the garden, and turning to the quarter whence the sound proceeded, I perceived a gondola steering for the land. In a few moments I saw figures walking at a slow pace up the avenue. They were a man and a woman, accompanied by a little negro. The female was

clothed in white, and had a brilliant on her finger. It was not light enough to perceive more.

"My curiosity was raised. Doubtless a rendezvous of a pair of lovers — but in such a place, and at so unusual an hour! It was scarcely three o'clock, and everything was still veiled in dusky twilight. The incident seemed to me novel and proper for a romance, and I waited to see the end.

"I soon lost sight of them among the foliage of the garden, and some time elapsed before they again emerged to view. Meanwhile a delightful song was heard. It proceeded from the gondolier, who was in this manner shortening the time, and was answered by a comrade a short way off. They sang stanzas from Tasso; time and place were in unison, and the melody sounded sweetly in the profound silence around.

"Day in the meantime had dawned, and objects were discerned more plainly. I sought my people, whom I found walking hand-in-hand up a broad walk, often standing still, but always with their backs turned towards me, and proceeding further from my residence. Their noble, easy carriage convinced me at once that they were people of rank, and the splendid figure of the lady made me augur as much of her beauty. They appeared to converse but little; the lady, however, more than her companion. In the spectacle of the rising sun, which now burst out in all its splendor, they seemed to take not the slightest interest.

"While I was employed in adjusting my glass, in order to bring them into view as closely as possible, they suddenly disappeared down a side path, and some time elapsed before I regained sight of them. The sun had now fully risen; they were approaching straight towards me, with their eyes fixed upon where I stood. What a heavenly form did I behold! Was it illusion, or the magic effect of the beautiful light? I thought I beheld a supernatural being, for my eyes quailed before the angelic brightness of her look. So much loveliness combined with so much dignity! — so much mind, and so much blooming youth! It is in vain I attempt to describe it. I had never seen true beauty till that moment.

"In the heat of conversation they lingered near me, and I had full opportunity to contemplate her. Scarcely, however, had I cast my eyes upon her companion, but even her beauty was not powerful enough to fix my attention. He appeared to be a man still in the prime of life, rather slight, and of a tall, noble figure. Never have I beheld so much mind, so much noble expression, in a human countenance. Though perfectly secured from observation, I was unable to meet the lightning glance that shot from beneath his dark eyebrows. There was a moving expression of sorrow about his eyes, but an expression of benevolence about the mouth which relieved the settled gravity spread over his whole countenance. A certain cast of features, not quite European, together with his dress, which appeared to have been chosen with inimitable good taste from the most varied costumes, gave him a peculiar air, which not a little heightened the impression produced by his appearance. A degree of wildness in his looks warranted the supposition that he was an enthusiast, but his deportment and carriage showed that his character had been formed by mixing in society."

Z——, who you know must always give utterance to what he thinks, could contain himself no longer. "Our Armenian!" cried he. "Our very Armenian, and nobody else."

"What Armenian, if one may ask?" inquired Civitella.

"Has no one told you of the farce?" replied the prince. "But no interruption! I begin to feel interested in your hero. Pray continue your narrative."

"There was something inexplicable in his whole demeanor," continued Civitella. "His eyes were fixed upon his companion with an expression of anxiety and passion, but the moment they met hers he looked down abashed. 'Is the man beside himself!' thought I. I could stand for ages and gaze at nothing else but her.

"The foliage again concealed them from my sight. Long, long did I look for their reappearance, but in vain. At length I caught sight of them from another window.

"They were standing before the basin of a fountain at

some distance apart, and both wrapped in deep silence. They had, probably, remained some time in the same position. Her clear and intelligent eyes were resting inquiringly on his, and seemed as if they would imbibe every thought from him as it revealed itself in his countenance. He, as if he wanted courage to look directly into her face, furtively sought its reflection in the watery mirror before him, or gazed steadfastly at the dolphin which bore the water to the basin. Who knows how long this silent scene might have continued could the lady have endured it? With the most bewitching grace the lovely girl advanced towards him, and passing her arm round his neck, raised his hand to her lips. Calmly and unmoved the strange being suffered her caresses, but did not return them.

"This scene moved me strangely. It was the man that chiefly excited my sympathy and interest. Some violent emotion seemed to struggle in his breast; it was as if some irresistible force drew him towards her, while an unseen arm held him back. Silent, but agonizing, was the struggle, and beautiful the temptation. 'No,' I thought, 'he attempts too much; he will, he must yield.'

"At his silent intimation the young negro disappeared. I now expected some touching scene—a prayer on bended knees, and a reconciliation sealed with glowing kisses. But no! nothing of the kind occurred. The incomprehensible being took from his pocketbook a sealed packet, and placed it in the hands of the lady. Sadness overcast her face as she she looked at it, and a tear bedewed her eye.

"After a short silence they separated. At this moment an elderly lady advanced from one of the sidewalks, who had remained at a distance, and whom I now first discovered. She and the fair girl slowly advanced along the path, and, while they were earnestly engaged in conversation, the stranger took the opportunity of remaining behind. With his eyes turned towards her, he stood irresolute, at one instant making a rapid step forward, and in the next retreating. In another moment he had disappeared in the copse.

"The women at length look round, seem uneasy at not finding him, and pause as if to await his coming. He comes not. Anxious glances are cast around, and steps are redoubled. My eyes aid in searching through the garden; he comes not, he is nowhere to be seen.

"Suddenly I see a plash in the canal, and see a gondola moving from the shore. It is he, and I scarcely can refrain from calling to him. Now the whole thing is clear — it was a parting.

"She appears to have a presentiment of what has happened. With a speed that her companion cannot use she hastens to the shore. Too late! Quick as the arrow in its flight the gondola bounds forward, and soon nothing is visible but a white handkerchief fluttering in the air from afar. Soon after this I saw the fair *incognita* and her companion cross the water.

"When I awoke from a short sleep I could not help smiling at my delusion. My fancy had incorporated these events in my dreams until truth itself seemed a dream. A maiden, fair as an houri, wandering beneath my windows at break of day with her lover — and a lover who did not know how to make a better use of such an hour. Surely these supplied materials for the composition of a picture which might well occupy the fancy of a dreamer! But the dream had been too lovely for me not to desire its renewal again and again; nay, even the garden had become more charming in my sight since my imagination had peopled it with such attractive forms. Several cheerless days that succeeded this eventful morning drove me from the window, but the first fine evening involuntarily drew me back to my post of observation. Judge of my surprise when after a short search I caught sight of the white dress of my *incognita!* Yes, it was she herself. I had not dreamed!

"Her former companion was with her, and led by the hand a little boy; but the fair girl herself walked apart, and seemed absorbed in thought. All spots were visited that had been rendered memorable by the presence of her friend. She paused for a long time before the basin, and her fixed gaze seemed to seek on its crystal mirror the reflection of one beloved form.

"Although her noble beauty had attracted me when I first saw her the impression produced was even stronger on this occasion, although perhaps at the same time more conducive to gentler emotions. I had now ample opportunity of considering this divine form; the surprise of the first impression gradually gave place to softer feelings. The glory that seemed to invest her had departed, and I saw before me the loveliest of women, and felt my senses inflamed. In a moment the resolution was formed that she must be mine.

"While I was deliberating whether I should descend and approach her, or whether before I ventured on such a step it would not be better to obtain information regarding her, a door opened in the convent wall, through which there advanced a Carmelite monk. The sound of his approach roused the lady, and I saw her advance with hurried steps towards him. He drew from his bosom a paper, which she eagerly grasped, while a vivid color instantaneously suffused her countenance.

"At this moment I was called from the window by the arrival of my usual evening visitor. I carefully avoided approaching the spot again as I had no desire to share my conquest with another. For a whole hour I was obliged to endure this painful constraint before I could succeed in freeing myself from my importunate guest, and when I hastened to the window all had disappeared.

"The garden was empty when I entered it; no vessel of any kind was visible in the canal; no trace of people on any side; I neither knew whence she had come nor whither she had gone. While I was looking round me in all directions I observed something white upon the ground. On drawing near I found it was a piece of paper folded in the shape of a note. What could it be but the letter which the Carmelite had brought? 'Happy discovery!' I exclaimed; 'this will reveal the whole secret, and make me master of her fate.'

"The letter was sealed with a sphinx, had no superscription, and was written in cyphers; this, however, did not discourage me, for I have some knowledge of this mode of writing. I copied it hastily, as there was every reason to expect that she would soon miss it and return

in search of it. If she should not find it she would regard its loss as an evidence that the garden was resorted to by different persons, and such a discovery might easily deter her from visiting it again. And what worse fortune could attend my hopes.

"That which I had conjectured actually took place, and I had scarcely ended my copy when she reappeared with her former companion, anxiously intent on the search. I attached the note to a tile which I had detached from the roof, and dropped it at a spot which she would pass. Her gracefully expressed joy at finding it rewarded me for my generosity. She examined it in every part with keen, searching glances, as if she were seeking to detect the unhallowed hands that might have touched it; but the contented look with which she hid it in her bosom showed that she was free from all suspicion. She went, and the parting glance she threw on the garden seemed expressive of gratitude to the guardian deities of the spot, who had so faithfully watched over the secret of her heart.

"I now hastened to decipher the letter. After trying several languages, I at length succeeded by the use of English. Its contents were so remarkable that my memory still retains a perfect recollection of them" ——

I am interrupted, and must give you the conclusion on a future occasion.

LETTER VIII.

BARON F—— TO COUNT O——.

August.

In truth, my dearest friend, you do the good Biondello injustice. The suspicion you entertain against him is unfounded, and while I allow you full liberty to condemn all Italians generally, I must maintain that this one at least is an honest man.

You think it singular that a person of such brilliant endowments and such exemplary conduct should debase himself to enter the service of another if he were not actuated by secret motives; and these, you further con-

clude, must necessarily be of a suspicious character. But where is the novelty of a man of talent and of merit endeavoring to win favor with a prince who has the power of establishing his fortune? Is there anything derogatory in serving the prince? and has not Biondello clearly shown that his devotion is purely personal by confessing that he earnestly desired to make a certain request of the prince? The whole mystery will, therefore, no doubt be revealed when he acquaints him of his wishes. He may certainly be actuated by secret motives, but why may these not be innocent in their nature?

You think it strange that this Biondello should have kept all his great talents concealed, and in no way have attracted attention during the early months of our acquaintance with him, when you were still with us. This I grant; but what opportunity had he then of distinguishing himself? The prince had not yet called his powers into requisition, and chance, therefore, could alone aid us in discovering his talents.

He very recently gave a proof of his devotion and honesty of purpose which must at once annihilate all your doubts. The prince was watched; measures were being taken to gain information regarding his mode of life, associates, and general habits. I know not with whom this inquisitiveness originated. Let me beg your attention, however, to what I am about to relate:—

There is a house in St. George's which Biondello is in the habit of frequenting. He probably finds some peculiar attractions there, but of this I know nothing. It happened a few days ago that he there met assembled together a party of civil and military officers in the service of the government, old acquaintances and jovial comrades of his own. Surprise and pleasure were expressed on all sides at this meeting. Their former good-fellowship was re-established; and after each in turn had related his own history up to the present time, Biondello was called upon to give an account of his life; this he did in a few words. He was congratulated on his new position; his companions had heard accounts of the splendid footing on which the Prince of ——'s establishment was maintained; of his liberality, especially to persons who

showed discretion in keeping secrets; the prince's connection with the Cardinal A—i was well known, he was said to be addicted to play, etc. Biondello's surprise at this is observed, and jokes are passed upon the mystery which he tries to keep up, although it is well known that he is the emissary of the Prince of ——. The two lawyers of the party make him sit down between them; their glasses are repeatedly emptied, he is urged to drink, but excuses himself on the grounds of inability to bear wine; at last, however, he yields to their wishes, in order that he may the better pretend intoxication.

"Yes!" cried one of the lawyers, "Biondello understands his business, but he has not yet learned all the tricks of the trade; he is but a novice."

"What have I still to learn?" ask Biondello.

"You understand the art of keeping a secret," remarked the other; "but you have still to learn that of parting with it to advantage."

"Am I likely to find a purchaser for any that I may have to dispose of?" asked Biondello.

On this the other guests withdrew from the apartment, and left him alone with his two neighbors, who continued the conversation in the same strain. The substance of the whole was, however, briefly as follows: Biondello was to procure them certain information regarding the intercourse of the prince with the cardinal and his nephew, acquaint them with the source from whence the prince derived his money, and to intercept all letters written to Count O——. Biondello put them off to a future occasion, but he was unsuccessful in his attempts to draw from them the name of the person by whom they were employed. From the splendid nature of the proposals made to him it was evident, however, that they emanated from some influential and extremely wealthy party.

Last night he related the whole occurrence to the prince, whose first impulse was without further ceremony to secure the manœuverers at once, but to this Biondello strongly objected. He urged that he would be obliged to set them at liberty again, and that, in this case, he should endanger not only his credit among this class of men, but even his life. All these men were connected

together, and bound by one common interest, each one making the cause of the others his own; in fact, he would rather make enemies of the senate of Venice than be regarded by these men as a traitor — and, besides, he could no longer be useful to the prince if he lost the confidence of this class of people.

We have pondered and conjectured much as to the source of all this. Who is there in Venice that can care to know what money my master receives or pays out, what passess between Cardinal A—i and himself, and what I write to you? Can it be some scheme of the Prince of —d—, or is the Armenian again on the alert?

LETTER IX.

BARON F—— TO COUNT O——.

August.

The prince is revelling in love and bliss. He has recovered his fair Greek. I must relate to you how this happened.

A traveller, who had crossed from Chiozza, gave the prince so animated an account of the beauty of this place, which is charmingly situated on the shores of the gulf, that he became very anxious to see it. Yesterday was fixed upon for the excusion; and, in order to avoid all restraint and display, no one was to accompany him but Z—— and myself, together with Biondello, as my master wished to remain unknown. We found a vessel ready to start, and engaged our passage at once. The company was very mixed but not numerous, and the passage was made without the occurrence of any circumstance worthy of notice.

Chiozza is built, like Venice, on a foundation of wooden piles, and is said to contain about forty thousand inhabitants. There are but few of the higher classes resident there, but one meets sailors and fishermen at every step. Whoever appears in a peruke, or a cloak, is regarded as an aristocrat — a rich man; the cap and overcoat are here

the insignia of the poor. The situation is certainly very lovely, but it will not bear a comparison with Venice.

We did not remain long, for the captain, who had more passengers for the return voyage, was obliged to be in Venice at an early hour, and there was nothing at Chiozza to make the prince desirous of remaining. All the passengers were on board when we reached the vessel. As we had found it so difficult to place ourselves on a social footing with the company on the outward passage, we determined on this occasion to secure a cabin to ourselves. The prince inquired who the new-comers were, and was informed that they were a Dominican and some ladies, who were returning to Venice. My master evincing no curiosity to see them, we immediately betook ourselves to our cabin.

The Greek was the subject of our conversation throughout the whole passage, as she had been during our former transit. The prince dwelt with ardor on her appearance in the church; and whilst numerous plans were in turn devised and rejected, hours passed like a moment of time, and we were already in sight of Venice. Some of the passengers now disembarked, the Dominican amongst the number. The captain went to the ladies, who, as we now first learned, had been separated from us by only a thin wooden partition, and asked them where they wished to land. The island of Murano was named in reply to his inquiry, and the house indicated ——. "The island of Murano!" exclaimed the prince, who seemed suddenly struck by a startling presentiment. Before I could reply to his exclamation, Biondello rushed into the cabin. "Do you know," asked he eagerly, "who is on board with us?" The prince started to his feet, as Biondello continued, "She is here! she herself! I have just spoken to her companion!"

The prince hurried out. He felt as if he could not breathe in our narrow cabin, and I believe at that moment as if the whole world would have been too narrow for him. A thousand conflicting feelings struggled for the mastery in his heart; his knees trembled, and his countenance was alternately flushed and pallid. I sympathized and participated in his emotion, but I cannot by

words convey to your mind any idea of the state in which he was.

When we stopped at Murano, the prince sprang on shore. She advanced from her cabin. I read in the face of the prince that it was indeed the Greek. One glance was sufficient to dispel all doubt on that point. A more lovely creature I have never seen. Even the prince's glowing descriptions fell far short of the reality. A radiant blush suffused her face when she saw my master. She must have heard all we said, and could not fail to know that she herself had been the subject of our conversation. She exchanged a significant glance with her companion, which seemed to say, "That is he;" and then cast her eyes to the ground with diffident confusion. On placing her foot on the narrow plank, which had been thrown from the vessel to the shore, she seemed anxiously to hesitate, less, as it seemed to me, from the fear of falling than from her inability to cross the board without assistance, which was proffered her by the outstretched arm of the prince. Necessity overcame her reluctance, and, accepting the aid of his hand, she stepped on shore. Excessive mental agitation had rendered the prince uncourteous, and he wholly forgot to offer his services to the other lady — but what was there that he would not have forgotten at this moment? My attention in atoning for the remissness of the prince prevented my hearing the commencement of a conversation which had begun between him and the young Greek, while I had been helping the other lady on shore.

He was still holding her hand in his, probably from absence of mind, and without being conscious of the fact.

"This is not the first time, Signora, that —— that" —— he stopped short, unable to finish the sentence.

"I think I remember" —— she faltered.

"We met in the church of" —— said he, quickly.

"Yes, it was in the church of" —— she rejoined.

"And could I have supposed that this day would have brought me" ——

Here she gently withdrew her hand from his — he was evidently embarrassed; but Biondello, who had in the meantime been speaking to the servant, now came to his aid.

"Signor," said he, "the ladies had ordered sedans to be in readiness for them; they have not yet come, for we are here before the expected time. But there is a garden close by in which you may remain until the crowd has dispersed."

The proposal was accepted; you may conceive with what alacrity on the part of the prince! We remained in the garden till late in the evening; and, fortunately, Z—— and myself so effectually succeeded in occupying the attention of the elder lady that the prince was enabled, undisturbed, to carry on his conversation with the fair Greek. You will easily believe that he made good use of his time, when I tell you that he obtained permission to visit her. At the very moment that I am now writing he is with her; on his return I shall be able to give you further particulars regarding her.

When we got home yesterday we found that the long-expected remittances had arrived from our court; but at the same time the prince received a letter which excited his indignation to the highest pitch. He has been recalled, and that in a tone and manner to which he is wholly unaccustomed. He immediately wrote a reply in a similar spirit, and intends remaining. The remittances are only just sufficient to pay the interest on the capital which he owes. We are looking with impatience for a reply from his sister.

LETTER X.

BARON F—— TO COUNT O——.

September.

The prince has fallen out with his court, and all resources have consequently been cut off from home.

The term of six weeks, at the end of which my master was to pay the marquis, has already elapsed several days; but still no remittances have been forwarded, either from his cousin, of whom he had earnestly requested an additional allowance in advance, or from his sister. You may readily suppose that Civitella has not reminded him

of his debt; the prince's memory is, however, all the more faithful. Yesterday morning at length brought an answer from the seat of government.

We had shortly before concluded a new arrangement with the master of our hotel, and the prince had publicly announced his intention to remain here some time longer. Without uttering a word my master put the letter into my hand. His eyes sparkled, and I could read the contents in his face.

Can you believe it, dear O——; all my master's proceedings here are known at —— and have been most calumniously misrepresented by an abominable tissue of lies? "Information has been received," says the letter, amongst other things, "to the effect that the prince has for some time past belied his former character, and adopted a mode of conduct totally at variance with his former exemplary manner of acting and thinking." "It is known," the writer says, "that he has addicted himself with the greatest excess to women and play; that he is overwhelmed with debts; puts his confidence in visionaries and charlatans, who pretend to have power over spirits; maintains suspicious relations with Roman Catholic prelates, and keeps up a degree of state which exceeds both his rank and his means. Nay, it is even said, that he is about to bring this highly offensive conduct to a climax by apostacy to the Church of Rome! and in order to clear himself from this last charge he is required to return immediately. A banker at Venice, to whom he must make known the true amount of his debts, has received instructions to satisfy his creditors *immediately after his departure;* for, under existing circumstances, it does not appear expedient to remit the money directly into his hands."

What accusations, and what a mode of preferring them. I read the letter again and again, in the hope of discovering some expression that admitted of a milder construction, but in vain; it was wholly incomprehensible.

Z—— now reminded me of the secret inquiries which had been made some time before of Biondello. The true nature of the inquiries and circumstances all coincided. He had falsely ascribed them to the Armenian; but now

the source from whence the came was very evident. Apostacy! But who can have any interest in calumniating my master so scandalously? I should fear it was some machination of the Prince of —d—, who is determined on driving him from Venice.

In the meantime the prince remained absorbed in thought, with his eyes fixed on the ground. His continued silence alarmed me. I threw myself at his feet. "For God's sake, your highness," I cried, "moderate your feelings — you will — nay, you shall have satisfaction. Leave the whole affair to me. Let *me* be your emissary. It is beneath your dignity to reply to such accusations; but you will not, I know, refuse me the privilege of doing so for you. The name of your calumniator must be given up, and ——'s eyes must be opened."

At this moment we were interrupted by the entrance of Civitella, who inquired with surprise into the cause of our agitation. Z—— and I did not answer; but the prince, who had long ceased to make any distinction between him and us, and who, besides, was too much excited to listen to the dictates of prudence, desired me to communicate the contents of the letter to him. On my hesitating to obey him, he snatched the letter from my hand and gave it to the marquis.

"I am in your debt, marquis," said he, as Civitella gave him back the letter, after perusing it, with evident astonishment, "but do not let that circumstance occasion you any uneasiness; grant me but a respite of twenty days, and you shall be fully satisfied."

"Do I deserve this at your hands, gracious prince?" exclaimed Civitella, with extreme emotion.

"You have refrained from pressing me, and I gratefully appreciate your delicacy. In twenty days, as I before said, you shall be fully satisfied."

"But how is this?" asked Civitella, with agitation and surprise. "What means all this? I cannot comprehend it."

We explained to him all that we knew, and his indignation was unbounded. The prince, he asserted, must insist upon full satisfaction; the insult was unparalleled.

In the meanwhile he implored him to make unlimited use of his fortune and his credit.

When the marquis left us the prince still continued silent. He paced the apartment with quick and determined steps, as if some strange and unusual emotion were agitating his frame. At length he paused, muttering between his teeth, "Congratulate yourself; he died at ten o'clock."

We looked at him in terror.

"Congratulate yourself," he repeated. "Did he not say that I should congratulate myself? What could he have meant?"

"What has reminded you of those words?" I asked; "and what have they to do with the present business?"

"I did not then understand what the man meant, but now I do. Oh, it is intolerable to be subject to a master."

"Gracious prince!"

"Who can make us feel our dependence. Ha! it must be sweet, indeed."

He again paused. His looks alarmed me, for I had never before seen him thus agitated.

"Whether a man be poorest of the poor," he continued, "or the next heir to the throne, it is all one and the same thing. There is but one difference between men—to obey or to command."

He again glanced over the letter.

"You know the man," he continued, "who has dared to write these words to me. Would you salute him in the street if fate had not made him your master? By Heaven, there is something great in a crown."

He went on in this strain, giving expression to many things which I dare not trust to paper. On this occasion the prince confided a circumstance to me which alike surprised and terrified me, and which may be followed by the most alarming consequences. We have hitherto been entirely deceived regarding the family relations of the court of ——.

He answered the letter on the spot, notwithstanding my earnest entreaty that he should postpone doing so;

and the strain in which he wrote leaves no ground to hope for a favorable settlement of those differences.

You are no doubt impatient, dear O——, to hear something definite with respect to the Greek; but in truth I have very little to tell you. From the prince I can learn nothing, as he has been admitted into her confidence, and is, I believe, bound to secrecy. The fact has, however, transpired that she is not a Greek, as we supposed, but a German of the highest descent. From a certain report that has reached me it would appear that her mother is of the most exalted rank, and that she is the fruit of an unfortunate amour which was once talked of all over Europe. A course of secret persecution to which she had been exposed, in consequence of her origin, compelled her to seek protection in Venice, and to adopt that concealment which had rendered it impossible for the prince to discover her retreat. The respect with which the prince speaks of her, and a certain deferential deportment which he maintains towards her, appear to corroborate the truth of this report.

He is devoted to her with a fearful intensity of passion which increases day by day. In the earliest stage of their acquaintance but few interviews were granted; but after the first week the separations were of shorter duration, and now there is scarce a day on which the prince is not with her. Whole evenings pass without our even seeing him, and when he is not with her she appears to form the sole object of his thoughts. His whole being seems metamorphosed. He goes about as if wrapped in a dream, and nothing that formerly interested him has now power to arrest his attention even for a moment.

How will this end, my dear friend? I tremble for the future. The rupture with his court has placed my master in a state of humiliating dependence on one sole person — the Marquis Civitella. This man is now master of our secrets — of our whole fate. Will he always conduct himself as nobly as he does now? Are his good intentions to be relied upon; and is it expedient to confide so much weight and power to one person — even were he the best of men? The prince's sister has again been written to

—the result of this fresh appeal you shall learn in my next letter.

COUNT O—— IN CONTINUATION.

This letter never reached me. Three months passed without my receiving any tidings from Venice,—an interruption to our correspondence which the sequel but too clearly explained. All my friend's letters to me had been kept back and suppressed. My emotion may be conceived when, in the December of the same year, the following letter reached me by mere accident (as it afterwards appeared), owing to the sudden illness of Biondello, into whose hands it had been committed.

"You do not write; you do not answer me. Come, I entreat you, come on the wings of friendship! Our hopes are fled! Read the enclosed, — all our hopes are at an end!

"The wounds of the marquis are reported mortal. The cardinal vows vengeance, and his bravos are in pursuit of the prince. My master — oh! my unhappy master! Has it come to this! Wretched, horrible fate! We are compelled to hide ourselves, like malefactors, from assassins and creditors.

"I am writing to you from the convent of ——, where the prince has found an asylum. At this moment he is resting on his hard couch by my side, and is sleeping — but, alas! it is only the sleep of deadly exhaustion, that will but give him new strength for new trials. During the ten days that she was ill no sleep closed his eyes. I was present when the body was opened. Traces of poison were detected. To-day she is to be buried.

"Alas! dearest O——, my heart is rent. I have lived through scenes that can never be effaced from my memory. I stood beside her deathbed. She departed like a saint, and her last strength was spent in trying with persuasive eloquence to lead her lover into the path that she was treading in her way to heaven. Our firmness was completely gone — the prince alone maintained his fortitude, and although he suffered a triple agony of death with her, he yet retained strength of mind sufficient to refuse the last prayer of the pious enthusiast."

This letter contained the following enclosure:—

TO THE PRINCE OF ———, FROM HIS SISTER.

"The one sole redeeming church which has made so glorious a conquest of the Prince of —— will surely not refuse to supply him with means to pursue the mode of life to which she owes this conquest. I have tears and prayers for one that has gone astray, but nothing further to bestow on one so worthless! HENRIETTE ——."

I instantly threw myself into a carriage — travelled night and day, and in the third week I was in Venice. My speed availed nothing. I had come to bring comfort and help to an unhappy one, but I found a happy one who needed not my weak aid. F—— was ill when I arrived, and unable to see me, but the following note was brought to me from him.

"Return, dearest O——, to whence you came. The prince no longer needs you or me. His debts have been paid; the cardinal is reconciled to him, and the marquis has recovered. Do you remember the Armenian who perplexed us so much last year? In his arms you will find the prince, who five days since attended mass for the first time."

Notwithstanding all this I earnestly sought an interview with the prince, but was refused. By the bedside of my friend I learnt the particulars of this strange story.

THE SPORT OF DESTINY.

A FRAGMENT OF A TRUE HISTORY.

Aloysius von G—— was the son of a citizen of distinction, in the service of ——, and the germs of his fertile genius had been early developed by a liberal education. While yet very young, but already well grounded in the principles of knowledge, he entered the military service of his sovereign, to whom he soon made himself known as a young man of great merit and still greater promise. G—— was now in the full glow of youth, so also was the prince. G—— was ardent and enterprising; the prince, of a similar disposition, loved such characters. Endued with brilliant wit and a rich fund of information, G—— possessed the art of ingratiating himself with all around him; he enlivened every circle in which he moved by his felicitous humor, and infused life and spirit into every subject that came before him. The prince had discernment enough to appreciate in another those virtues which he himself possessed in an eminent degree. Everything which G—— undertook, even to his very sports, had an air of grandeur; no difficulties could daunt him, no failures vanquish his perseverance. The value of these qualities was increased by an attractive person, the perfect image of blooming health and herculean strength, and heightened by the eloquent expression natural to an active mind; to these was added a certain native and unaffected dignity, chastened and subdued by a noble modesty. If the prince was charmed with the intellectual attractions of his young companion, his fascinating exterior irresistibly captivated his senses. Similarity of age, of tastes, and of character soon produced an intimacy between them, which possessed all the strength of friendship and all the warmth and fervor of the most passionate love. G—— rose with rapidity from

one promotion to another; but whatever the extent of favors conferred they still seemed in the estimation of the prince to fall short of his deserts. His fortune advanced with gigantic strides, for the author of his greatness was his devoted admirer and his warmest friend. Not yet twenty-two years of age, he already saw himself placed on an eminence hitherto attained only by the most fortunate at the close of their career. But his active spirit was incapable of reposing long in the lap of indolent vanity, or of contenting itself with the glittering pomp of an elevated office, to perform the behests of which he was conscious of possessing both the requisite courage and the abilities. Whilst the prince was engaged in rounds of pleasure, his young favorite buried himself among archives and books, and devoted himself with laborious assiduity to affairs of state, in which he at length became so expert that every matter of importance passed through his hands. From the companion of his pleasures he soon became first councillor and minister, and finally the ruler of his sovereign. In a short time there was no road to the prince's favor but through him. He disposed of all offices and dignities; all rewards were received from his hands.

G —— had attained this vast influence at too early an age, and had risen by too rapid strides to enjoy his power with moderation. The eminence on which he beheld himself made his ambition dizzy, and no sooner was the final object of his wishes attained than his modesty forsook him. The respectful deference shown him by the first nobles of the land, by all who, in birth, fortune, and reputation, so far surpassed him, and which was even paid to him, youth as he was, by the oldest senators, intoxicated his pride, while his unlimited power served to develop a certain harshness which had been latent in his character, and which, throughout all the vicissitudes of his fortune, remained. There was no service, however considerable or toilsome, which his friends might not safely ask at his hands; but his enemies might well tremble! for, in proportion as he was extravagant in rewards, so was he implacable in revenge. He made less use of his influence to enrich himself than to

render happy a number of beings who should pay homage to him as the author of their prosperity; but caprice alone, and not justice, dictated the choice of his subjects. By a haughty, imperious demeanor he alienated the hearts even of those whom he had most benefited; while at the same time he converted his rivals and secret enviers into deadly enemies.

Amongst those who watched all his movements with jealousy and envy, and who were silently preparing instruments for his destruction, was Joseph Martinengo, a Piedmontese count belonging to the prince's suite, whom G—— himself had formerly promoted, as an inoffensive creature, devoted to his interests, for the purpose of supplying his own place in attending upon the pleasures of the prince — an office which he began to find irksome, and which he willingly exchanged for more useful employment. Viewing this man merely as the work of his own hands, whom he might at any period consign to his former insignificance, he felt assured of the fidelity of his creature from motives of fear no less than of gratitude. He fell thus into the error committed by Richelieu, when he made over to Louis XII., as a sort of plaything, the young Le Grand. Without Richelieu's sagacity, however, to repair his error, he had to deal with a far more wily enemy than fell to the lot of the French minister. Instead of boasting of his good fortune, or allowing his benefactor to feel that he could now dispense with his patronage, Martinengo was, on the contrary, the more cautious to maintain a show of dependence, and with studied humility affected to attach himself more and more closely to the author of his prosperity. Meanwhile, he did not omit to avail himself, to its fullest extent, of the opportunities afforded him by his office, of being continually about the prince's person, to make himself daily more useful, and eventually indispensable to him. In a short time he had fathomed the prince's sentiments thoroughly, had discovered all the avenues to his confidence, and imperceptibly stolen himself into his favor. All those arts which a noble pride, and a natural elevation of character, had taught the minister to disdain, were brought into play by the Italian, who scrupled not to avail him-

self of the most despicable means for attaining his object. Well aware that man never stands so much in need of a guide and assistant as in the paths of vice, and that nothing gives a stronger title to bold familiarity than a participation in secret indiscretions, he took measures for exciting passions in the prince which had hitherto lain dormant, and then obtruded himself upon him as a confidant and an accomplice. He plunged him especially into those excesses which least of all endure witnesses, and imperceptibly accustomed the prince to make him the depository of secrets to which no third person was admitted. Upon the degradation of the prince's character he now began to found his infamous schemes of aggrandizement, and, as he had made secrecy a means of success, he had obtained entire possession of his master's heart before G—— even allowed himself to suspect that he shared it with another.

It may appear singular that so important a change should escape the minister's notice; but G—— was too well assured of his own worth ever to think of a man like Martinengo in the light of a competitor; while the latter was far too wily, and too much on his guard, to commit the least error which might tend to rouse his enemy from his fatal security. That which has caused thousands of his predecessors to stumble on the slippery path of royal favor was also the cause of G——'s fall, immoderate self-confidence. The secret intimacy between his creature, Martinengo, and his royal master gave him no uneasiness; he readily resigned a privilege which he despised and which had never been the object of his ambition. It was only because it smoothed his way to power that he had ever valued the prince's friendship, and he inconsiderately threw down the ladder by which he had risen as soon as he had attained the wished-for eminence.

Martinengo was not the man to rest satisfied with so subordinate a part. At each step which he advanced in the prince's favor his hopes rose higher, and his ambition began to grasp at a more substantial gratification. The deceitful humility which he had hitherto found it necessary to maintain towards his benefactor became daily more irksome to him, in propor-

tion as the growth of his reputation awakened his pride. On the other hand, the minister's deportment toward him by no means improved with his marked progress in the prince's favor, but was often too visibly directed to rebuke his growing pride by reminding him of his humble origin. This forced and unnatural position having become quite insupportable, he at length formed the determination of putting an end to it by the destruction of his rival. Under an impenetrable veil of dissimulation he brought his plan to maturity. He dared not venture as yet to come into open conflict with his rival; for, although the first glow of the minister's favor was at an end, it had commenced too early, and struck root too deeply in the bosom of the prince, to be torn from it abruptly. The slightest circumstance might restore it to all its former vigor; and therefore Martinengo well understood that the blow which he was about to strike must be a mortal one. Whatever ground G—— might have lost in the prince's affections he had gained in his respect. The more the prince withdrew himself from the affairs of state, the less could he dispense with the services of a man, who with the most conscientious devotion and fidelity had consulted his master's interests, even at the expense of the country,— and G—— was now as indispensable to him as a minister as he had formerly been dear to him as a friend.

By what means the Italian accomplished his purpose has remained a secret between those on whom the blow fell and those who directed it. It was reported that he laid before the prince the original draughts of a secret and very suspicious correspondence which G—— is said to have carried on with a neighboring court; but opinions differ as to whether the letters were authentic or spurious. Whatever degree of truth there may have been in the accusation it is but too certain that it fearfully accomplished the end in view. In the eyes of the prince G—— appeared the most ungrateful and vilest of traitors, whose treasonable practices were so thoroughly proved as to warrant the severest measures without further investigation. The whole affair was arranged with the most profound secrecy between Martinengo and his mas-

ter, so that G—— had not the most distant presentiment of the impending storm. He continued wrapped in this fatal security until the dreadful moment in which he was destined, from being the object of universal homage and envy, to become that of the deepest commiseration.

When the decisive day arrived, G—— appeared, according to custom, upon the parade. He had risen in a few years from the rank of ensign to that of colonel; and even this was only a modest name for that of prime minister, which he virtually filled, and which placed him above the foremost of the land. The parade was the place where his pride was greeted with universal homage, and where he enjoyed for one short hour the dignity for which he endured a whole day of toil and privation. Those of the highest rank approached him with reverential deference, and those who were not assured of his favor with fear and trembling. Even the prince, whenever he visited the parade, saw himself neglected by the side of his vizier, inasmuch as it was far more dangerous to incur the displeasure of the latter than profitable to gain the friendship of the former. This very place, where he was wont to be adored as a god, had been selected for the dreadful theatre of his humiliation.

With a careless step he entered the well-known circle of courtiers, who, as unsuspicious as himself of what was to follow, paid their usual homage, awaiting his commands. After a short interval appeared Martinengo, accompanied by two adjutants, no longer the supple, cringing, smiling courtier, but overbearing and insolent, like a lackey suddenly raised to the rank of a gentleman. With insolence and effrontery he strutted up to the prime minister, and, confronting him with his head covered, demanded his sword in the prince's name. This was handed to him with a look of silent consternation; Martinengo, resting the naked point on the ground, snapped it in two with his foot, and threw the fragments at G——'s feet. At this signal the two adjutants seized him; one tore the Order of the Cross from his breast; the other pulled off his epaulettes, the facings of his uniform, and even the badge and plume of feathers from his hat. During the whole of the appalling operation,

which was conducted with incredible speed, not a sound nor a respiration was heard from more than five hundred persons who were present; but all, with blanched faces and palpitating hearts, stood in deathlike silence around the victim, who in his strange disarray — a rare spectacle of the melancholy and the ridiculous — underwent a moment of agony which could only be equalled by feelings engendered on the scaffold. Thousands there are who in his situation would have been stretched senseless on the ground by the first shock; but his firm nerves and unflinching spirit sustained him through this bitter trial, and enabled him to drain the cup of bitterness to its dregs.

When this procedure was ended he was conducted through rows of thronging spectators to the extremity of the parade, where a covered carriage was in waiting. He was motioned to ascend, an escort of hussars being ready-mounted to attend to him. Meanwhile the report of this event had spread through the whole city; every window was flung open, every street lined with throngs of curious spectators, who pursued the carriage, shouting his name, amid cries of scorn and malicious exultation, or of commiseration more bitter to bear than either. At length he cleared the town, but here a no less fearful trial awaited him. The carriage turned out of the high road into a narrow, unfrequented path — a path which led to the gibbet, and alongside which, by command of the prince, he was borne at a slow pace. After he had suffered all the torture of anticipated execution the carriage turned off into the public road. Exposed to the sultry summer-heat, without refreshment or human consolation, he passed seven dreadful hours in journeying to the place of destination — a prison fortress. It was nightfall before he arrived; when, bereft of all consciousness, more dead than alive, his giant strength having at length yielded to twelve hours' fast and consuming thirst, he was dragged from the carriage; and, on regaining his senses, found himself in a horrible subterraneous vault. The first object that presented itself to his gaze was a horrible dungeon-wall, feebly illuminated by a few rays of the moon, which forced their way

through narrow crevices to a depth of nineteen fathoms. At his side he found a coarse loaf, a jug of water, and a bundle of straw for his couch. He endured this situation until noon the ensuing day, when an iron wicket in the centre of the tower was opened, and two hands were seen lowering a basket, containing food like that he had found the preceding night. For the first time since the terrible change in his fortunes did pain and suspense extort from him a question or two. Why was he brought hither? What offence had he committed? But he received no answer; the hands disappeared; and the sash was closed. Here, without beholding the face, or hearing the voice of a fellow-creature; without the least clue to his terrible destiny; fearful doubts and misgivings overhanging alike the past and the future; cheered by no rays of the sun, and soothed by no refreshing breeze; remote alike from human aid and human compassion; — here, in this frightful abode of misery, he numbered four hundred and ninety long and mournful days, which he counted by the wretched loaves that, day after day, with dreary monotony, were let down into his dungeon. But a discovery which he one day made early in his confinement filled up the measure of his affliction. He recognized the place. It was the same which he himself, in a fit of unworthy vengeance against a deserving officer, who had the misfortune to displease him, had ordered to be constructed only a few months before. With inventive cruelty he had even suggested the means by which the horrors of captivity might be aggravated; and it was but recently that he had made a journey hither in order personally to inspect the place and hasten its completion. What added the last bitter sting to his punishment was that the same officer for whom he had prepared the dungeon, an aged and meritorious colonel, had just succeeded the late commandant of the fortress, recently deceased, and, from having been the victim of his vengeance, had become the master of his fate. He was thus deprived of the last melancholy solace, the right of compassionating himself, and of accusing destiny, hardly as it might use him, of injustice. To the acuteness of his other suffering was now added a bitter self-

contempt, and the pain which to a sensitive mind is the severest — dependence upon the generosity of a foe to whom he had shown none.

But that upright man was too noble-minded to take a mean revenge. It pained him deeply to enforce the severities which his instructions enjoined; but as an old soldier, accustomed to fulfil his orders to the letter with blind fidelity, he could do no more than pity, compassionate. The unhappy man found a more active assistant in the chaplain of the garrison, who, touched by the sufferings of the prisoner, which had just reached his ears, and then only through vague and confused reports, instantly took a firm resolution to do something to alleviate them. This excellent man, whose name I unwillingly suppress, believed he could in no way better fulfil his holy vocation than by bestowing his spiritual support and consolation upon a wretched being deprived of all other hopes of mercy.

As he could not obtain permission from the commandant himself to visit him he repaired in person to the capital, in order to urge his suit personally with the prince. He fell at his feet, and implored mercy for the unhappy man, who, shut out from the consolations of Christianity, a privilege from which even the greatest crime ought not to debar him, was pining in solitude, and perhaps on the brink of despair. With all the intrepidity and dignity which the conscious discharge of duty inspires, he entreated, nay demanded, free access to the prisoner, whom he claimed as a penitent for whose soul he was responsible to heaven. The good cause in which he spoke made him eloquent, and time had already somewhat softened the prince's anger. He granted him permission to visit the prisoner, and administer to his spiritual wants.

After a lapse of sixteen months, the first human face which the unhappy G—— beheld was that of his new benefactor. The only friend he had in the world he owed to his misfortunes, all his prosperity had gained him none. The good pastor's visit was like the appearance of an angel — it would be impossible to describe his feelings, but from that day forth his tears flowed more

kindly, for he had found one human being who sympathized with and compassionated him.

The pastor was filled with horror on entering the frightful vault. His eyes sought a human form, but beheld, creeping towards him from a corner opposite, which resembled rather the lair of a wild beast than the abode of anything human, a monster, the sight of which made his blood run cold. A ghastly deathlike skeleton, all the hue of life perished from a face on which grief and despair had traced deep furrows — his beard and nails, from long neglect, grown to a frightful length — his clothes rotten and hanging about him in tatters; and the air he breathed, for want of ventilation and cleansing, foul, fetid, and infectious. In this state he found the favorite of fortune; — his iron frame had stood proof against it all! Seized with horror at the sight, the pastor hurried back to the governor, in order to solicit a second indulgence for the poor wretch, without which the first would prove of no avail.

As the governor again excused himself by pleading the imperative nature of his instructions, the pastor nobly resolved on a second journey to the capital, again to supplicate the prince's mercy. There he protested solemnly that, without violating the sacred character of the sacrament, he could not administer it to the prisoner until some resemblance of the human form was restored to him. This prayer was also granted; and from that day forward the unfortunate man might be said to begin a new existence.

Several long years were spent by him in the fortress, but in a much more supportable condition, after the short summer of the new favorite's reign had passed, and others succeeded in his place, who either possessed more humanity or no motive for revenge. At length, after ten years of captivity, the hour of his delivery arrived, but without any judicial investigation or formal acquittal. He was presented with his freedom as a boon of mercy, and was, at the same time, ordered to quit his native country forever.

Here the oral traditions which I have been able to collect respecting his history begin to fail; and I find

myself compelled to pass in silence over a period of about twenty years. During the interval G—— entered anew upon his military career, in a foreign service, which eventually brought him to a pitch of greatness quite equal to that from which he had, in his native country, been so awfully precipitated. At length time, that friend of the unfortunate, who works a slow but inevitable retribution, took into his hands the winding up of this affair. The prince's days of passion were over; humanity gradually resumed its sway over him as his hair whitened with age. At the brink of the grave he felt a yearning towards the friend of his early youth. In order to repay, as far as possible, the gray-headed old man, for the injuries which had been heaped upon the youth, the prince, with friendly expressions, invited the exile to revisit his native land, towards which for some time past G——'s heart had secretly yearned. The meeting was extremely trying, though apparently warm and cordial, as if they had only separated a few days before. The prince looked earnestly at his favorite, as if trying to recall features so well known to him, and yet so strange; he appeared as if numbering the deep furrows which he had himself so cruelly traced there. He looked searchingly in the old man's face for the beloved features of the youth, but found not what he sought. The welcome and the look of mutual confidence were evidently forced on both sides; shame on one side and dread on the other had forever separated their hearts. A sight which brought back to the prince's soul the full sense of his guilty precipitancy could not be gratifying to him, while G—— felt that he could no longer love the author of his misfortunes. Comforted, nevertheless, and in tranquillity, he looked back upon the past as the remembrance of a fearful dream.

In a short time G—— was reinstated in all his former dignities, and the prince smothered his feelings of secret repugnance by showering upon him the most splendid favors as some indemnification for the past. But could he also restore to him the heart which he had forever untuned for the enjoyment of life? Could he restore his years of hope? or make even a shadow of reparation to

the stricken old man for what he had stolen from him in the days of his youth?

For nineteen years G—— continued to enjoy this clear, unruffled evening of his days. Neither misfortune nor age had been able to quench in him the fire of passion, nor wholly to obscure the genial humor of his character. In his seventieth year he was still in pursuit of the shadow of a happiness which he had actually possessed in his twentieth. He at length died governor of the fortress ..... where state prisoners are confined. One would naturally have expected that towards these he would have exercised a humanity, the value of which he had been so thoroughly taught to appreciate in his own person; but he treated them with harshness and caprice; and a paroxysm of rage, in which he broke out against one of his prisoners, laid him in his coffin, in his eightieth year.

THE ROBBERS.

SCHILLER'S PREFACE.

AS PREFIXED TO THE FIRST EDITION OF THE ROBBERS PUBLISHED IN 1781.

Now first translated into English.

THIS play is to be regarded merely as a dramatic narrative in which, for the purpose of tracing out the innermost workings of the soul, advantage has been taken of the dramatic method, without otherwise conforming to the stringent rules of theatrical composition, or seeking the dubious advantage of stage adaptation. It must be admitted as somewhat inconsistent that three very remarkable people, whose acts are dependent on perhaps a thousand contingencies, should be completely developed within three hours, considering that it would scarcely be possible, in the ordinary course of events, that three such remarkable people should, even in twenty-four hours, fully reveal their characters to the most penetrating inquirer. A greater amount of incident is here crowded together than it was possible for me to confine within the narrow limits prescribed by Aristotle and Batteux.

It is, however, not so much the bulk of my play as its contents which banish it from the stage. Its scheme and economy require that several characters should appear who would offend the finer feelings of virtue and shock the delicacy of our manners. Every delineator of human character is placed in the same dilemma if he proposes to give a faithful picture of the world as it really is, and not an ideal phantasy, a mere creation of his own. It is the course of mortal things that the good should be shadowed by the bad, and virtue shine the brightest when contrasted with vice. Whoever proposes to discourage vice and to vindicate religion, morality, and social order

against their enemies, must unveil crime in all its deformity and place it before the eyes of men in its colossal magnitude; he must diligently explore its dark mazes, and make himself familiar with sentiments at the wickedness of which his soul revolts.

Vice is here exposed in its innermost workings. In Francis it resolves all the confused terrors of conscience into wild abstractions, destroys virtuous sentiments by dissecting them, and holds up the earnest voice of religion to mockery and scorn. He who has gone so far (a distinction by no means enviable) as to quicken his understanding at the expense of his soul — to him the holiest things are no longer holy; to him God and man are alike indifferent, and both worlds are as nothing. Of such a monster I have endeavored to sketch a striking and lifelike portrait, to hold up to abhorrence all the machinery of his scheme of vice, and to test its strength by contrasting it with truth. How far my narrative is successful in accomplishing these objects the reader is left to judge. My conviction is that I have painted nature to the life.

Next to this man (Francis) stands another who would perhaps puzzle not a few of my readers. A mind for which the greatest crimes have only charms through the glory which attaches to them, the energy which their perpetration requires, and the dangers which attend them. A remarkable and important personage, abundantly endowed with the power of becoming either a Brutus or a Catiline, according as that power is directed. An unhappy conjunction of circumstances determines him to choose the latter for his example, and it is only after a fearful straying that he is recalled to emulate the former. Erroneous notions of activity and power, an exuberance of strength which bursts through all the barriers of law, must of necessity conflict with the rules of social life. To these enthusiast dreams of greatness and efficiency it needed but a sarcastic bitterness against the unpoetic spirit of the age to complete the strange Don Quixote whom, in the Robber Moor, we at once detest and love, admire and pity. It is, I hope, unnecessary to remark that I no more hold up this picture as a warning

exclusively to robbers than the greatest Spanish satire was levelled exclusively at knight-errants.

It is nowadays so much the fashion to be witty at the expense of religion that a man will hardly pass for a genius if he does not allow his impious satire to run a tilt at its most sacred truths. The noble simplicity of holy writ must needs be abused and turned into ridicule at the daily assemblies of the so-called wits; for what is there so holy and serious that will not raise a laugh if a false sense be attached to it? Let me hope that I shall have rendered no inconsiderable service to the cause of true religion and morality in holding up these wanton misbelievers to the detestation of society, under the form of the most despicable robbers.

But still more. I have made these said immoral characters to stand out favorably in particular points, and even in some measure to compensate by qualities of the head for what they are deficient in those of the heart. Herein I have done no more than literally copy nature. Every man, even the most depraved, bears in some degree the impress of the Almighty's image, and perhaps the greatest villain is not farther removed from the most upright man than the petty offender; for the moral forces keep even pace with the powers of the mind, and the greater the capacity bestowed on man, the greater and more enormous becomes his misapplication of it; the more responsible is he for his errors.

The "Adramelech" of Klopstock (in his Messiah) awakens in us a feeling in which admiration is blended with detestation. We follow Milton's Satan with shuddering wonder through the pathless realms of chaos. The Medea of the old dramatists is, in spite of all her crimes, a great and wondrous woman, and Shakespeare's Richard III. is sure to excite the admiration of the reader, much as he would hate the reality. If it is to be my task to portray men as they are, I must at the same time include their good qualities, of which even the most vicious are never totally destitute. If I would warn mankind against the tiger, I must not omit to describe his glossy, beautifully-marked skin, lest, owing to this omission, the ferocious animal should not be recognized

till too late. Besides this, a man who is so utterly depraved as to be without a single redeeming point is no meet subject for art, and would disgust rather than excite the interest of the reader; who would turn over with impatience the pages which concern him. A noble soul can no more endure a succession of moral discords than the musical ear the grating of knives upon glass.

And for this reason I should have been ill-advised in attempting to bring my drama on the stage. A certain strength of mind is required both on the part of the poet and the reader; in the former that he may not disguise vice, in the latter that he may not suffer brilliant qualities to beguile him into admiration of what is essentially detestable. Whether the author has fulfilled his duty he leaves others to judge, that his readers will perform theirs he by no means feels assured. The vulgar — among whom I would not be understood to mean merely the rabble — the vulgar I say (between ourselves) extend their influence far around, and unfortunately — set the fashion. Too shortsighted to reach my full meaning, too narrow-minded to comprehend the largeness of my views, too disingenuous to admit my moral aim — they will, I fear, almost frustrate my good intentions, and pretend to discover in my work an apology for the very vice which it has been my object to condemn, and will perhaps make the poor poet, to whom anything rather than justice is usually accorded, responsible for his simplicity.

Thus we have a *Da capo* of the old story of Democritus and the Abderitans,* and our worthy Hippocrates would needs exhaust whole plantations of hellebore, were

* This alludes to the fable amusingly recorded by Wieland in his *Geschichte der Abderiten*. The Abderitans, who were a byword among the ancients for their extreme simplicity, are said to have sent express for Hippocrates to cure their great townsman Democritus, whom they believed to be out of his senses, because his sayings were beyond their comprehension. Hippocrates, on conversing with Democritus, having at once discovered that the cause lay with themselves, assembled the senate and principal inhabitants in the market-place with the promise of instructing them in the cure of Democritus. He then banteringly advised them to import six shiploads of hellebore of the very best quality, and on its arrival to distribute it among the citizens, at least seven pounds per head, but to the senators double that quantity, as they were bound to have an extra supply of sense. By the time these worthies discovered that they had been laughed at, Hippocrates was out of their reach. The story in Wieland is infinitely more amusing than this short quotation from memory enables me to show.
— H. G. B.

it proposed to remedy this mischief by a healing decoction. Let as many friends of truth as you will, instruct their fellow-citizens in the pulpit and on the stage, the vulgar will never cease to be vulgar, though the sun and moon may change their course, and "heaven and earth wax old as a garment." Perhaps, in order to please tender-hearted people, I might have been less true to nature; but if a certain beetle, of whom we have all heard, could extract filth even from pearls, if we have examples that fire has destroyed and water deluged, shall therefore pearls, fire, and water be condemned. In consequence of the remarkable catastrophe which ends my play, I may justly claim for it a place among books of morality, for crime meets at last with the punishment it deserves; the lost one enters again within the pale of the law, and virtue is triumphant. Whoever will but be courteous enough towards me to read my work through with a desire to understand it, from him I may expect — not that he will admire the poet, but that he will esteem the honest man.

SCHILLER.

EASTER FAIR, 1781.

ADVERTISEMENT TO THE ROBBERS.

AS COMMUNICATED BY SCHILLER TO DALBERG IN 1781, AND SUPPOSED TO HAVE BEEN USED AS A PROLOGUE.

*** *This has never before been printed with any of the editions.*

THE picture of a great, misguided soul, endowed with every gift of excellence, yet lost in spite of all its gifts! Unbridled passions and bad companionship corrupt his heart, urge him on from crime to crime, until at last he stands at the head of a band of murderers, heaps horror upon horror, and plunges from precipice to precipice into the lowest depths of despair. Great and majestic in misfortune, by misfortune reclaimed, and led back to the paths of virtue. Such a man shall you pity and hate, abhor yet love, in the Robber Moor. You will likewise see a juggling, fiendish knave unmasked and blown to atoms in his own mines; a fond, weak, and over-indulgent father; the sorrows of too enthusiastic love, and the tortures of ungoverned passion. Here, too, you will witness, not without a shudder, the interior economy of vice; and from the stage be taught how all the tinsel of fortune fails to smother the inward worm; and how terror, anguish, remorse, and despair tread close on the footsteps of guilt. Let the spectator weep to-day at our exhibition, and tremble, and learn to bend his passions to the laws of religion and reason; let the youth behold with alarm the consequences of unbridled excess; nor let the man depart without imbibing the lesson that the invisible hand of Providence makes even villains the instruments of its designs and judgments, and can marvellously unravel the most intricate perplexities of fate.

PREFACE TO THE SECOND EDITION.

THE eight hundred copies of the first edition of my ROBBERS were exhausted before all the admirers of the piece were supplied. A second was therefore undertaken, which has been improved by greater care in printing, and by the omission of those equivocal sentences which were offensive to the more fastidious part of the public. Such an alteration, however, in the construction of the play as should satisfy all the wishes of my friends and critics has not been my object.

In this second edition the several songs have been arranged for the pianoforte, which will enhance its value to the musical part of the public. I am indebted for this to an able composer,* who has performed his task in so masterly a manner that the hearer is not unlikely to forget the poet in the melody of the musician.

DR. SCHILLER.

STUTTGART, Jan. 5, 1782.

* Alluding to his friend Zumsteeg. — ED.

THE ROBBERS.

A TRAGEDY.

"Quæ medicamenta non sanant, ferrum sanat; quæ ferrum non sanat, ignis sanat."—HIPPOCRATES.

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

MAXIMILIAN, COUNT VON MOOR.
CHARLES, } *his Sons.*
FRANCIS, }
AMELIA VON EDELREICH, *his Niece.*
SPIEGELBERG, }
SCHWEITZER, }
GRIMM, }
RAZMANN, } *Libertines, afterwards Banditti.*
SCHUFTERLE, }
ROLLER, }
KOSINSKY, }
SCHWARTZ, }
HERMANN, *the natural son of a Nobleman.*
DANIEL, *an old Servant of* Count von Moor.
PASTOR MOSER.
FATHER DOMINIC, *a Monk.*
BAND OF ROBBERS, SERVANTS, ETC.

The scene is laid in Germany. Period of action about two years.

THE ROBBERS.

ACT I.

SCENE I. — *Franconia.*

Apartment in the Castle of COUNT MOOR.

FRANCIS, OLD MOOR.

FRANCIS. But are you really well, father? You look so pale.

OLD MOOR. Quite well, my son — what have you to tell me?

FRANCIS. The post is arrived — a letter from our correspondent at Leipsic.

OLD M. (*eagerly*). Any tidings of my son Charles?

FRANCIS. Hem! Hem! — Why, yes. But I fear — I know not — whether I dare — your health.—Are you really quite well, father?

OLD M. As a fish in water.* Does he write of my son? What means this anxiety about my health? You have asked me that question twice.

FRANCIS. If you are unwell — or are the least apprehensive of being so — permit me to defer — I will speak to you at a fitter season. (*Half aside.*) These are no tidings for a feeble frame.

OLD M. Gracious Heavens? what am I doomed to hear?

FRANCIS. First let me retire and shed a tear of compassion for my lost brother. Would that my lips might be forever sealed — for he is your son! Would that I could throw an eternal veil over his shame — for he is my brother! But to obey you is my first, though painful, duty — forgive me, therefore.

OLD M. Oh, Charles! Charles! Didst thou but

* This is equivalent to our English saying "As sound as a roach."

know what thorns thou plantest in thy father's bosom! That one gladdening report of thee would add ten years to my life! yes, bring back my youth! whilst now, alas, each fresh intelligence but hurries me a step nearer to the grave!

FRANCIS. Is it so, old man, then farewell! for even this very day we might all have to tear our hair over your coffin.*

OLD M. Stay! There remains but one short step more — let him have his will! (*He sits down.*) The sins of the father shall be visited unto the third and fourth generation — let him fulfil the decree.

FRANCIS (*takes the letter out of his pocket*). You know our correspondent! See! I would give a finger of my right hand might I pronounce him a liar — a base and slanderous liar! Compose yourself! Forgive me if I do not let you read the letter yourself. You cannot, must not, yet know all.

OLD M. All, all, my son. You will but spare me crutches.†

FRANCIS (*reads*). "Leipsic, May 1. Were I not bound by an inviolable promise to conceal nothing from you, not even the smallest particular, that I am able to collect, respecting your brother's career, never, my dearest friend, should my guiltless pen become an instrument of torture to you. I can gather from a hundred of your letters how tidings such as these must pierce your fraternal heart. It seems to me as though I saw thee, for the sake of this worthless, this detestable " —— (OLD M. *covers his face*). Oh! my father, I am only reading you the mildest passages — "this detestable man, shedding a thousand tears." Alas! mine flowed — ay, gushed in torrents over these pitying cheeks. "I already picture to myself your aged pious father, pale as death." Good Heavens! and so you are, before you have heard anything.

OLD M. Go on! Go on!

FRANCIS. "Pale as death, sinking down on his chair,

* This idiom is very common in Germany, and is used to express affliction.

† *Du ersparst mir die Krücke:* meaning that the contents of the letter can but shorten his declining years, and so spare him the necessity of crutches.

and cursing the day when his ear was first greeted with the lisping cry of 'Father!' I have not yet been able to discover all, and of the little I do know I dare tell you only a part. Your brother now seems to have filled up the measure of his infamy. I, at least, can imagine nothing beyond what he has already accomplished; but possibly his genius may soar above my conceptions. After having contracted debts to the amount of forty thousand ducats,"—a good round sum for pocket-money, father—"and having dishonored the daughter of a rich banker, whose affianced lover, a gallant youth of rank, he mortally wounded in a duel, he yesterday, in the dead of night, took the desperate resolution of absconding from the arm of justice, with seven companions whom he had corrupted to his own vicious courses." Father? for heaven's sake, father! How do you feel?

Old M. Enough. No more, my son, no more!

Francis. I will spare your feelings. "The injured cry aloud for satisfaction. Warrants have been issued for his apprehension—a price is set on his head—the name of Moor"—No, these unhappy lips shall not be guilty of a father's murder (*he tears the letter*). Believe it not, my father, believe not a syllable.

Old M. (*weeps bitterly*). My name—my unsullied name!

Francis (*throws himself on his neck*). Infamous! most infamous Charles! Oh, had I not my forebodings, when, even as a boy, he would scamper after the girls, and ramble about over hill and common with ragamuffin boys and all the vilest rabble; when he shunned the very sight of a church as a malefactor shuns a gaol, and would throw the pence he had wrung from your bounty into the hat of the first beggar he met, whilst we at home were edifying ourselves with devout prayers and pious homilies? Had I not my misgivings when he gave himself up to reading the adventures of Julius Cæsar, Alexander the Great, and other benighted heathens, in preference to the history of the penitent Tobias? A hundred times over have I warned you—for my brotherly affection was ever kept in subjection to filial duty—that this forward youth would one day bring sorrow and disgrace on us all. Oh

that he bore not the name of Moor! that my heart beat less warmly for him! This sinful affection, which I cannot overcome, will one day rise up against me before the judgment-seat of heaven.

OLD M. Oh! my prospects! my golden dreams!

FRANCIS. Ay, well I knew it. Exactly what I always feared. That fiery spirit, you used to say, which is kindling in the boy, and renders him so susceptible to impressions of the beautiful and grand — the ingenuousness which reveals his whole soul in his eyes — the tenderness of feeling which melts him into weeping sympathy at every tale of sorrow — the manly courage which impels him to the summit of giant oaks, and urges him over fosse and palisade and foaming torrents — that youthful thirst of honor — that unconquerable resolution — all those resplendent virtues which in the father's darling gave such promise — would ripen into the warm and sincere friend — the excellent citizen — the hero — the great, the very great man! Now, mark the result, father; the fiery spirit *has* developed itself — expanded — and behold its precious fruits. Observe this ingenuousness — how nicely it has changed into effrontery; — this tenderness of soul — how it displays itself in dalliance with coquettes, in susceptibility to the blandishments of a courtesan! See this fiery genius, how in six short years it hath burnt out the oil of life, and reduced his body to a living skeleton; so that passing scoffers point at him with a sneer and exclaim — "*C'est l'amour qui a fait cela.*" Behold this bold, enterpising spirit — how it conceives and executes plans, compared to which the deeds of a Cartouche or a Howard sink into insignificance. And presently, when these precious germs of excellence shall ripen into full maturity, what may not be expected from the full development of such a boyhood? Perhaps, father, you may yet live to see him at the head of some gallant band, which assembles in the silent sanctuary of the forest, and kindly relieves the weary traveller of his superfluous burden. Perhaps you may yet have the opportunity, before you go to your own tomb, of making a pilgrimage to the monument which he may erect for himself, somewhere between earth and heaven! Perhaps, — oh, father

—father, look out for some other name, or the very peddlers and street boys who have seen the effigy of your worthy son exhibited in the market-place at Leipsic will point at you with the finger of scorn!

OLD M. And thou, too, my Francis, thou too? Oh, my children, how unerringly your shafts are levelled at my heart.

FRANCIS. You see that I too have a spirit; but my spirit bears the sting of a scorpion. And then it was "the dry commonplace, the cold, the wooden Francis," and all the pretty little epithets which the contrast between us suggested to your fatherly affection, when he was sitting on your knee, or playfully patting your cheeks? "He would die, forsooth, within the boundaries of his own domain, moulder away, and soon be forgotten;" while the fame of this universal genius would spread from pole to pole! Ah! the cold, dull, wooden Francis thanks thee, heaven, with uplifted hands, that he bears no resemblance to his brother.

OLD M. Forgive me, my child! Reproach not thy unhappy father, whose fondest hopes have proved visionary. The merciful God who, through Charles, has sent these tears, will, through thee, my Francis, wipe them from my eyes!

FRANCIS. Yes, father, we will wipe them from your eyes. Your Francis will devote his life to prolong yours. (*Taking his hand with affected tenderness.*) Your life is the oracle which I will especially consult on every undertaking—the mirror in which I will contemplate everything. No duty so sacred but I am ready to violate it for the preservation of your precious days. You believe me?

OLD M. Great are the duties which devolve on thee, my son—Heaven bless thee for what thou has been, and wilt be to me.

FRANCIS. Now tell me frankly, father. Should you not be a happy man, were you not obliged to call this son your own?

OLD M. In mercy, spare me! When the nurse first placed him in my arms, I held him up to Heaven and exclaimed, "Am I not truly blest?"

FRANCIS. So you said then. Now, have you found it so? You may envy the meanest peasant on your estate in this, that he is not the father of such a son. So long as you call him yours you are wretched. Your misery will grow with his years — it will lay you in your grave.

OLD M. Oh! he has already reduced me to the decrepitude of fourscore.

FRANCIS. Well, then — suppose you were to disown this son.

OLD M. (*startled*). Francis! Francis! what hast thou said!

FRANCIS. Is not your love for him the source of all your grief? Root out this love, and he concerns you no longer. But for this weak and reprehensible affection he would be dead to you; — as though he had never been born. It is not flesh and blood, it is the heart that makes us sons and fathers! Love him no more, and this monster ceases to be your son, though he were cut out of your flesh. He has till now been the apple of your eye; but if thine eye offend you, says Scripture, pluck it out. It is better to enter heaven with one eye than hell with two! "It is profitable for thee that one of thy members should perish, and not that thy whole body should be cast into hell." These are the words of the Bible!

OLD M. Wouldst thou have me curse my son?

FRANCIS. By no means, father. God forbid! But whom do you call your son? Him to whom you have given life, and who in return does his utmost to shorten yours.

OLD M. Oh, it is all too true! it is a judgment upon me. The Lord has chosen him as his instrument.

FRANCIS. See how filially your bosom child behaves. He destroys you by your own excess of paternal sympathy; murders you by means of the very love you bear him — has coiled round a father's heart to crush it. When you are laid beneath the turf he becomes lord of your possessions, and master of his own will. That barrier removed, and the torrent of his profligacy will rush on without control. Imagine yourself in his place. How often he must wish his father under ground — and how often, too, his brother — who so unmercifully impede the free course

of his excesses. But call you this a requital of love? Is this filial gratitude for a father's tenderness? to sacrifice ten years of your life to the lewd pleasures of an hour? in one voluptuous moment to stake the honor of an ancestry which has stood unspotted through seven centuries? Do you call this a son? Answer? Do you call this your son?

OLD M. An undutiful son! Alas! but still my child! my child!

FRANCIS. A most amiable and precious child — whose constant study is to get rid of his father. Oh, that you could learn to see clearly! that the film might be removed from your eyes! But your indulgence must confirm him in his vices! your assistance tend to justify them. Doubtless you will avert the curse of Heaven from his head, but on your own, father — on yours — will it fall with twofold vengeance.

OLD M. Just! most just! Mine, mine be all the guilt!

FRANCIS. How many thousands who have drained the voluptuous bowl of pleasure to the dregs have been reclaimed by suffering! And is not the bodily pain which follows every excess a manifest declaration of the divine will! And shall man dare to thwart this by an impious exercise of affection? Shall a father ruin forever the pledge committed to his charge? Consider, father, if you abandon him for a time to the pressure of want will not he be obliged to turn from his wickedness and repent? Otherwise, untaught even in the great school of adversity, he must remain a confirmed reprobate? And then — woe to the father who by a culpable tenderness hath frustrated the ordinances of a higher wisdom! Well, father?

OLD M. I will write to him that I withdraw my protection.

FRANCIS. That would be wise and prudent.

OLD M. That he must never come into my sight again ——

FRANCIS. 'Twill have a most salutary effect.

OLD M. (*tenderly*). Until he reforms.

FRANCIS. Right, quite right. But suppose that he comes disguised in the hypocrite's mask, implores your compassion with tears, and wheedles from you a pardon,

then quits you again on the morrow, and jests at your weakness in the arms of his harlot. No, my father! He will return of his own accord, when his conscience awakens him to repentance.

OLD M. I will write to him, on the spot, to that effect.

FRANCIS. Stop, father, one word more. Your just indignation might prompt reproaches too severe, words which might break his heart — and then — do you not think that your deigning to write with your own hand might be construed into an act of forgiveness? It would be better, I think, that you should commit the task to me?

OLD M. Do it, my son. Ah! it would, indeed, have broken my heart! Write to him that ——

FRANCIS (*quickly*). That's agreed, then?

OLD M. Say that he has caused me a thousand bitter tears — a thousand sleepless nights — but, oh! do not drive my son to despair!

FRANCIS. Had you not better retire to rest, father? This affects you too strongly.

OLD M. Write to him that a father's heart —— But I charge you, drive him not to despair. [*Exit in sadness.*

FRANCIS (*looking after him with a chuckle*). Make thyself easy, old dotard! thou wilt never more press thy darling to thy bosom — there is a gulf between thee and him impassable as heaven is from hell. He was torn from thy arms before even thou couldst have dreamed it possible to decree the separation. Why, what a sorry bungler should I be had I not skill enough to pluck a son from a father's heart; ay, though he were riveted there with hooks of steel! * I have drawn around thee a magic circle of curses which he cannot overleap. Good speed to thee, Master Francis. Papa's darling is disposed of — the course is clear. I must carefully pick up all the scraps of paper, for how easily might my handwriting be recognized. (*He gathers the fragments of the letter.*) And grief will soon make an end of the old gentleman. And as for her — I must tear this Charles from her heart, though half her life come with him.

* "Grapple them to thy soul with hooks of steel." — HAMLET, Act 1, Sc. 3.

No small cause have I for being dissatisfied with Dame Nature, and, by my honor, I will have amends! Why did I not crawl the first from my mother's womb? why not the only one? why has she heaped on me this burden of deformity? on me especially? Just as if she had spawned me from her refuse.* Why to me in particular this snub of the Laplander? these negro lips? these Hottentot eyes? On my word, the lady seems to have collected from all the race of mankind whatever was loathsome into a heap, and kneaded the mass into my particular person. Death and destruction! who empowered her to deny to me what she accorded to him? Could a man pay his court to her before he was born? or offend her before he existed? Why went she to work in such a partial spirit?

No! no! I do her injustice—she bestowed inventive faculty, and set us naked and helpless on the shore of this great ocean, the world—let those swim who can—the heavy † may sink. To me she gave naught else, and how to make the best use of my endowment is my present business. Men's natural rights are equal; claim is met by claim, effort by effort, and force by force—right is with the strongest—the limits of our power constitute our laws.

It is true there are certain organized conventions, which men have devised to keep up what is called the social compact. Honor! truly a very convenient coin, which those who know how to pass it may lay out with great advantage.‡ Conscience! oh yes, a useful scarecrow to frighten sparrows away from cherry-trees; it is something like a fairly written bill of exchange with which your bankrupt merchant staves off the evil day.

Well! these are all most admirable institutions for keeping fools in awe, and holding the mob under foot, that the cunning may live the more at their ease. Rare institutions, doubtless. They are something like the fences my boors plant so closely to keep out the hares—yes i' faith, not a hare can trespass on the enclosure, but my lord

* See Richard III., Act I, Sc. 1, line 17.

† *Heavy* is used in a double meaning; the German word is *plump*, which means lumpish, clumsy, awkward.

‡ So Falstaff, Hen. IV., Pt. I., Act V., Sc. 1, "Honor is a mere scutcheon."

claps spurs to his hunter, and away he gallops over the teeming harvest!

Poor hare! thou playest but a sorry part in this world's drama, but your worshipful lords must needs have hares! *

Then courage, and onward, Francis. The man who fears nothing is as powerful as he who is feared by everybody. It is now the mode to wear buckles on your small-clothes, that you may loosen or tighten them at pleasure. I will be measured for a conscience after the newest fashion, one that will stretch handsomely as occasion may require. Am I to blame? It is the tailor's affair? I have heard a great deal of twaddle about the so-called ties of blood — enough to make a sober man beside himself. He is your brother, they say; which interpreted, means that he was manufactured in the same mould, and for that reason he must needs be sacred in your eyes! To what absurd conclusions must this notion of a sympathy of souls, derived from the propinquity of bodies, inevitably tend? A common source of being is to produce community of sentiment; identity of matter, identity of impulse! Then again,— he is thy father! He gave thee life, thou art his flesh and blood — and therefore he must be sacred to thee! Again a most inconsequential deduction! I should like to know why he begot me; † certainly not out of love for me — for I must first have existed! Could he know me before I had being, or did he think of me during my begetting? or did he wish for me at the moment? Did he know what I should be? If so I would not advise him to acknowledge it or I should pay him off for his feat. Am I to be thankful to him that I am a man? As little as I should have had a right to blame him if he had made me a woman. Can I acknowledge an affection which is not based on any personal regard? Could personal regard be present before the existence of its object? In what, then, consists the sacredness of paternity?

* This may help to illustrate a passage in Shakespeare which puzzles the commentators — "Cupid is a good hare-finder."— MUCH ADO, Act I., Sc. 1.

The hare, in Germany, is considered an emblem of abject submission and cowardice. The word may also be rendered "Simpleton," "Sawney," or any other of the numerous epithets which imply a soft condition.

† The reader of Sterne will remember a very similar passage in the first chapter of Tristram Shandy.

Is it in the act itself out of which existence arose? as though this were aught else than an animal process to appease animal desires. Or does it lie, perhaps, in the result of this act, which is nothing more after all than one of iron necessity, and which men would gladly dispense with, were it not at the cost of flesh and blood? Do I then owe him thanks for his affection? Why, what is it but a piece of vanity, the besetting sin of the artist who admires his own works, however hideous they may be? Look you, this is the whole juggle, wrapped up in a mystic veil to work on our fears. And shall I, too, be fooled like an infant? Up then! and to thy work manfully. I will root up from my path whatever obstructs my progress towards becoming the master. Master I must be, that I may extort by force what I cannot win by affection.* [*Exit.*

SCENE II.—*A Tavern on the Frontier of Saxony.*

CHARLES VON MOOR *intent on a book;* SPIEGELBERG *drinking at the table.*

CHARLES VON M. (*lays the book aside*). I am disgusted with this age of puny scribblers when I read of great men in my Plutarch.

SPIEGEL. (*places a glass before him, and drinks*). Josephus is the book you should read.

CHARLES VON M. The glowing spark of Prometheus is burnt out, and now they substitute for it the flash of lycopodium,† a stage-fire which will not so much as light a pipe. The present generation may be compared to rats crawling about the club of Hercules.‡ A French abbé lays it down that Alexander was a poltroon; a phthisicky

* This soliloquy in some parts resembles that of Richard, Duke of Gloster, in Shakespeare's Henry VI., Act V. Sc. 6.

† Lycopodium (in German *Bärlappen-mehl*), vulgarly known as the Devil's Puff-ball or Witchmeal, is used on the stage, as well in England as on the continent, to produce flashes of fire. It is made of the pollen of common club moss, or wolf's claw (*Lycopodium clavatum*), the capsules of which contain a highly inflammable powder. Translators have uniformly failed in rendering this passage.

‡ This simile brings to mind Shakespeare's—

"We petty men
Walk under his huge legs, and peep about."
JULIUS CÆSAR, Act I., Sc. 2.

professor, holding at every word a bottle of *sal volatile* to his nose, lectures on strength. Fellows who faint at the veriest trifle criticise the tactics of Hannibal; whimpering boys store themselves with phrases out of the slaughter at Cannæ, and blubber over the victories of Scipio, because they are obliged to construe them.

SPIEGEL. Spouted in true Alexandrian style.

CHARLES VON M. A brilliant reward for your sweat in the battle-field truly to have your existence perpetuated in gymnasiums, and your immortality laboriously dragged about in a schoolboy's satchel. A precious recompense for your lavished blood to be wrapped round gingerbread by some Nuremberg chandler, or, if you have great luck, to be screwed upon stilts by a French playwright, and be made to move on wires! Ha, ha, ha!

SPIEGEL. (*drinks*). Read Josephus, I tell you.

CHARLES VON M. Fie! fie upon this weak, effeminate age, fit for nothing but to ponder over the deeds of former times, and torture the heroes of antiquity with commentaries, or mangle them in tragedies. The vigor of its loins is dried up, and the propagation of the human species has become dependent on potations of malt liquor.

SPIEGEL. Tea, brother! tea!

CHARLES VON M. They curb honest nature with absurd conventionalities; have scarcely the heart to charge a glass, because they are tasked to drink a health in it; fawn upon the lackey that he may put in a word for them with His Grace, and bully the unfortunate wight from whom they have nothing to fear. They worship any one for a dinner, and are just as ready to poison him should he chance to outbid them for a feather-bed at an auction. They damn the Sadducee who fails to come regularly to church, although their own devotion consists in reckoning up their usurious gains at the very altar. They cast themselves on their knees that they may have an opportunity of displaying their mantles, and hardly take their eyes off the parson from their anxiety to see how his wig is frizzled. They swoon at the sight of a bleeding goose, yet clap their hands with joy when they see their rival driven bankrupt from the Exchange. Warmly as I pressed their hands, — "Only one more

day." In vain! To prison with the dog! Entreaties! Vows! Tears! (*stamping the ground*). Hell and the devil!

SPIEGEL. And all for a few thousand paltry ducats!

CHARLES VON M. No, I hate to think of it. Am I to squeeze my body into stays, and straight-lace my will in the trammels of law. What might have risen to an eagle's flight has been reduced to a snail's pace by law. Never yet has law formed a great man; 'tis liberty that breeds giants and heroes. Oh! that the spirit of Herman* still glowed in his ashes! Set me at the head of an army of fellows like myself, and out of Germany shall spring a republic compared to which Rome and Sparta will be but as nunneries. (*Rises and flings his sword upon the table.*)

SPIEGEL. (*jumping up*). Bravo! Bravissimo! you are coming to the right key now. I have something for your ear, Moor, which has long been on my mind, and you are the very man for it — drink, brother, drink! What if we turned Jews and brought the kingdom of Jerusalem again on the tapis? But tell me is it not a clever scheme? We send forth a manifesto to the four quarters of the world, and summon to Palestine all that do not eat swine-flesh. Then I prove by incontestable documents that Herod the Tetrarch was my direct ancestor, and so forth. There will be a victory, my fine fellow, when they return and are restored to their lands, and are able to rebuild Jerusalem. Then make a clean sweep of the Turks out of Asia while the iron is hot, hew cedars in Lebanon, build ships, and then the whole nation shall chaffer with old clothes and old lace throughout the world. Meanwhile ——

CHARLES VON M. (*smiles and takes him by the hand*). Comrade! There must be an end now of our fooleries.

SPIEGEL. (*with surprise*). Fie! you are not going to play the prodigal son! — a fellow like you who with his sword has scratched more hieroglyhics on other men's

* Herman is the German for *Armin* or *Arminius*, the celebrated deliverer of Germany from the Roman yoke. See *Menzel's History*, vol. i., p. 85, etc.

faces than three quill-drivers could inscribe in their day-books in a leap-year! Shall I tell you the story of the great dog funeral? Ha! I must just bring back your own picture to your mind; that will kindle fire in your veins, if nothing else has power to inspire you. Do you remember how the heads of the college caused your dog's leg to be shot off, and you, by way of revenge, proclaimed a fast through the whole town? They fumed and fretted at your edict. But you, without losing time, ordered all the meat to be bought up in Leipsic, so that in the course of eight hours there was not a bone left to pick all over the place, and even fish began to rise in price. The magistrates and the town council vowed vengeance. But we students turned out lustily, seventeen hundred of us, with you at our head, and butchers and tailors and haberdashers at our backs, besides publicans, barbers, and rabble of all sorts, swearing that the town should be sacked if a single hair of a student's head was injured. And so the affair went off like the shooting at Hornberg,* and they were obliged to be off with their tails between their legs. You sent for doctors — a whole posse of them — and offered three ducats to any one who would write a prescription for your dog. We were afraid the gentlemen would stand too much upon honor and refuse, and had already made up our minds to use force. But this was quite unnecessary; the doctors got to fisticuffs for the three ducats, and their competition brought down the price to three groats; in the course of an hour a dozen prescriptions were written, of which, of course, the poor beast very soon died.

CHARLES VON M. The vile rascals.

SPIEGEL. The funeral procession was arranged with all due pomp; odes for the dog were indited by the gross; and at night we all turned out, near a thousand of us, a lantern in one hand and our rapier in the other, and so proceeded through the town, the bells chiming and ringing, till the dog was entombed. Then came a feed

* The "shooting at Hornberg" is a proverbial expression in Germany for any expedition from which, through lack of courage, the parties retire without firing a shot.

which lasted till broad daylight, when you sent your acknowledgments to the college dons for their kind sympathy, and ordered the meat to be sold at half-price. *Mort de ma vie*, if we had not as great a respect for you as a garrison for the conqueror of a fortress.

CHARLES VON M. And are you not ashamed to boast of these things? Have you not shame enough in you to blush even at the recollection of such pranks?

SPIEGEL. Come, come! You are no longer the same Moor. Do you remember how, a thousand times, bottle in hand, you made game of the miserly old governor, bidding him by all means rake and scrape together as much as he could, for that you would swill it all down your throat? Don't you remember, eh? — don't you remember? O you good-for-nothing, miserable braggart! that was speaking like a man, and a gentleman, but ——

CHARLES VON M. A curse on you for reminding me of it! A curse on myself for what I said! But it was done in the fumes of wine, and my heart knew not what my tongue uttered.

SPIEGEL. (*shakes his head*). No, no! that cannot be! Impossible, brother! You are not in earnest! Tell me! most sweet brother, is it not poverty which has brought you to this mood? Come! let me tell you a little story of my youthful days. There was a ditch close to my house, eight feet wide at the least, which we boys were trying to leap over for a wager. But it was no go. Splash! there you lay sprawling, amidst hisses and roars of laughter, and a relentless shower of snowballs. By the side of my house a hunter's dog was lying chained, a savage beast, which would catch the girls by their petticoats with the quickness of lightning if they incautiously passed too near him. Now it was my greatest delight to tease this brute in every possible way; and it was enough to make one burst with laughing to see the beast fix his eyes on me with such fierceness that he seemed ready to tear me to pieces if he could but get at me. Well, what happened? Once, when I was amusing myself in this manner, I hit him such a bang in the ribs with a stone that in his fury he broke loose and ran right upon me. I tore away like lightning, but — devil take it! — that con-

founded ditch lay right in my way. What was to be done? The dog was close at my heels and quite furious; there was no time to deliberate. I took a spring and cleared the ditch. To that leap I was indebted for life and limb; the beast would have torn me to atoms.

CHARLES VON M. And to what does all this tend?

SPIEGEL. To this—that you may be taught that strength grows with the occasion. For which reason I never despair even when things are the worst. Courage grows with danger. Powers of resistance increase by pressure. It is evident by the obstacles she strews in my path that fate must have designed me for a great man.

CHARLES VON M. (*angrily*). I am not aware of anything for which we still require courage, and have not already shown it.

SPIEGEL. Indeed! And so you mean to let your gifts go to waste? To bury your talent? Do you think your paltry achievements at Leipsic amount to the *ne plus ultra* of genius? Let us but once get to the great world—Paris and London! where you get your ears boxed if you salute a man as honest. It is a real jubilee to practise one's handicraft there on a grand scale. How you will stare! How you will open your eyes! to see signatures forged; dice loaded; locks picked, and strong boxes gutted; all that you shall learn of Spiegelberg! The rascal deserves to be hanged on the first gallows that would rather starve than manipulate with his fingers.

CHARLES VON M. (*in a fit of absence*). How now? I should not wonder if your proficiency went further still.

SPIEGEL. I begin to think you mistrust me. Only wait till I have grown warm at it; you shall see wonders; your little brain shall whirl clean round in your pericranium when my teeming wit is delivered. (*He rises excited.*) How it clears up within me! Great thoughts are dawning in on my soul! Gigantic plans are fermenting in my creative brain. Cursed lethargy (*striking his forehead*), which has hitherto enchained my faculties, cramped and fettered my prospects! I awake; I feel what I am—and what I am to be!

CHARLES VON M. You are a fool! The wine is swaggering in your brain.

SPIEGEL. (*more excited*). Spiegelberg, they will say, art thou a magician, Spiegelberg? 'Tis a pity, the king will say, that thou wert not made a general, Spiegelberg, thou wouldst have thrust the Austrians through a buttonhole. Yes, I hear the doctors lamenting, 'tis a crying shame that he was not bred to medicine, he would have discovered the *elixir vitæ*. Ay, and that he did not take to financiering, the Sullys will deplore in their cabinets, —he would have turned flints into louis-d'ors by his magic. And Spiegelberg will be the word from east to west; then down into the dirt with you, ye cowards, ye reptiles, while Spiegelberg soars with outspread wings to the temple of everlasting fame.

CHARLES VON M. A pleasant journey to you! I leave you to climb to the summit of glory on the pillars of infamy. In the shade of my ancestral groves, in the arms of my Amelia, a nobler joy awaits me. I have already, last week, written to my father to implore his forgiveness, and have not concealed the least circumstance from him; and where there is sincerity there is compassion and help. Let us take leave of each other, Moritz. After this day we shall meet no more. The post has arived. My father's forgiveness must already be within the walls of this town.

Enter SCHWEITZER, GRIMM, ROLLER, SCHUFTERLE, *and* RAZMAN.

ROLLER. Are you aware that they are on our track!

GRIMM. That we are not for a moment safe from being taken?

CHARLES VON M. I don't wonder at it. It must be as it will! Have none of you seen Schwarz? Did he say anything about having a letter for me?

ROLLER. He has been long in search of you on some such errand, I suspect.

CHARLES VON M. Where is he?—where, where? (*is about to rush off in haste*).

ROLLER. Stay! we have appointed him to come here. You tremble?——

CHARLES VON M. I do not tremble. Why should I tremble? Comrades, this letter — rejoice with me! I am the happiest man under the sun; why should I tremble?

Enter SCHWARZ.

CHARLES VON M. (*rushes towards him*). Brother, brother! the letter, the letter!

SCHW. (*gives him a letter, which he opens hastily*). What's the matter? You have grown as pale as a white-washed wall!

CHARLES VON M. My brother's hand!

SCHW. What the deuce is Spiegelberg about there?

GRIMM. The fellow's mad. He jumps about as if he had St. Vitus' dance.

SCHUF. His wits are gone a wool gathering! He's making verses, I'll be sworn!

RAZ. Spiegelberg! Ho! Spiegelberg! The brute does not hear.

GRIMM. (*shakes him*). Hallo! fellow! are you dreaming? or ——

SPIEGEL. (*who has all this time been making gestures in a corner of the room, as if working out some great project, jumps up wildly*). Your money or your life! (*He catches* SCHWEITZER *by the throat, who very coolly flings him against the wall;* MOOR *drops the letter and rushes out. A general sensation.*)

ROLLER. (*calling after him*). Moor! where are you going? What's the matter?

GRIMM. What ails him? What has he been doing? He is as pale as death.

SCHW. He must have got strange news. Just let us see!

ROLLER. (*picks up the letter from the ground, and reads*). "Unfortunate brother!"— a pleasant beginning —"I have only briefly to inform you that you have nothing more to hope for. You may go, your father directs me to tell you, wherever your own vicious propensities lead. Nor are you to entertain, he says, any hope of ever

gaining pardon by weeping at his feet, unless you are prepared to fare upon bread and water in the lowest dungeon of his castle until your hair shall outgrow eagles' feathers,* and your nails the talons of a vulture. These are his very words. He commands me to close the letter. Farewell forever! I pity you.

"FRANCIS VON MOOR."

SCHW. A most amiable and loving brother, in good truth! And the scoundrel's name is Francis.

SPIEGEL. (*slinking forward*). Bread and water! Is that it? A temperate diet! But I have made a better provision for you. Did I not say that I should have to think for you all at last?

SCHWEIT. What does the blockhead say! The jackass is going to think for us all!

SPIEGEL. Cowards, cripples, lame dogs are ye all if you have not courage enough to venture upon something great.

ROLLER. Well, of course, so we should be, you are right; but will your proposed scheme get us out of this devil of a scrape? eh?

SPIEGEL. (*with a proud laugh*). Poor thing! Get us out of this scrape? Ha, ha, ha! Get us out of the scrape! — and is that all your thimbleful of brain can reach? And with that you trot your mare back to the stable? † Spiegelberg would have been a miserable bungler indeed if that were the extent of his aim. Heroes, I tell you, barons, princes, gods, it will make of you.

RAZ. That's pretty well for one bout, truly! But no doubt it is some neck-breaking piece of business; it will cost a head or so at the least.

SPIEGEL. It wants nothing but courage; as to the headwork, I take that entirely upon myself. Courage, I say, Schweitzer! Courage, Roller! Grimm! Razman! Schufterle! Courage!

SCHW. Courage! If that is all, I have courage enough to walk through hell barefoot.

* See Daniel, chap. iv. ver. 33.
† Our proverb, "A fool's bolt is soon shot," is somewhat parallel.

SCHUFT. And I courage enough to fight the very devil himself under the open gallows for the rescue of any poor sinner.

SPIEGEL. That's just what it should be! If ye have courage, let any one of you step forward and say he has still something to lose, and not everything to gain?

SCHW. Verily, I should have a good deal to lose, if I were to lose all that I have yet to win!

RAZ. Yes, by Jove! and I much to win, if I could win all that I have not got to lose.

SCHUFT. Were I to lose what I carry on my back on trust I should at any rate have nothing to lose on the morrow.

SPIEGEL. Very well then! (*He takes his place in the middle of them, and says in solemn adjuration*) — if but a drop of the heroic blood of the ancient Germans still flow in your veins — come! We will fix our abode in the Bohemian forests, draw together a band of robbers, and —— What are you gaping at? Has your slender stock of courage oozed out already?

ROLLER. You are not the first rogue by many that has defied the gallows; — and yet what other choice have we?

SPIEGEL. Choice? You have no choice. Do you want to lie rotting in the debtor's jail and beat hemp till you are bailed by the last trumpet? Would you toil with pick-axe and spade for a morsel of dry bread? or earn a pitiful alms by singing doleful ditties under people's windows? Or will you be sworn at the drumhead — and then comes the question, whether anybody would trust your hang-dog visages — and so under the splenetic humor of some despotic sergeant serve your time of purgatory in advance? Would you like to run the gauntlet to the beat of the drum? or be doomed to drag after you, like a galley-slave, the whole iron store of Vulcan? Behold your choice. You have before you the complete catalogue of all that you may choose from!

ROLLER. Spiegelberg is not altogether wrong! I, too, have been concocting plans, but they come much to the same thing. How would it be, thought I, were we to club our wits together, and dish up a pocketbook, or an

almanac, or something of that sort, and write reviews at a penny a line, as is now the fashion?

SCHUFT. The devil's in you! you are pretty nearly hitting on my own schemes. I have been thinking to myself how would it answer were I to turn Methodist, and hold weekly prayer-meetings?

GRIMM. Capital! and, if that fails, turn atheist! We might fall foul of the four Gospels, get our book burned by the hangman, and then it would sell at a prodigious rate.

RAZ. Or we might take the field to cure a fashionable ailment. I know a quack doctor who has built himself a house with nothing but mercury, as the motto over his door implies.

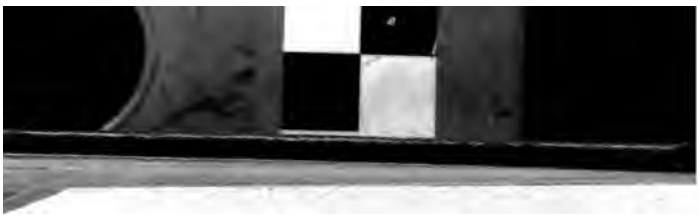
SCHWEIT. (*rises and holds out his hand to Spiegelberg*). Spiegelberg, thou art a great man! or else a blind hog has by chance found an acorn.

SCHW. Excellent schemes! Honorable professions! How great minds sympathize! All that seems wanting to complete the list is that we should turn pimps and bawds.

SPIEGEL. Pooh! Pooh! Nonsense. And what is to prevent our combining most of these occupations in one person? My plan will exalt you the most, and it holds out glory and immortality into the bargain. Remember, too, ye sorry varlets, and it is a matter worthy of consideration: one's fame hereafter — the sweet thought of immortality ——

ROLLER. And that at the very head of the muster-roll of honorable names! You are a master of eloquence, Spiegelberg, when the question is how to convert an honest man into a scoundrel. But does any one know what has become of Moor?

SPIEGEL. Honest, say you? Do you think you'll be less honest then than you are now? What do you call honest? To relieve rich misers of half of those cares which only scare golden sleep from their eyelids; to force hoarded coin into circulation; to restore the equalization of property; in one word, to bring back the golden age; to relieve Providence of many a burdensome pensioner, and so save it the trouble of sending war, pestilence, famine,



and above all, doctors — that is what I call honesty, d'ye see; that's what I call being a worthy instrument in the hand of Providence, — and then, at every meal you eat, to have the sweet reflection: this is what thy own ingenuity, thy lion boldness, thy night watchings, have procured for thee — to command the respect both of great and small ——

ROLLER. And at last to mount towards heaven in the living body, and in spite of wind and storm, in spite of the greedy maw of old father Time, to be hovering beneath the sun and moon and all the stars of the firmament, where even the unreasoning birds of heaven, attracted by noble instinct, chant their seraphic music, and angels with tails hold their most holy councils? Don't you see? And, while monarchs and potentates become a prey to moths and worms, to have the honor of receiving visits from the royal bird of Jove. Moritz, Moritz, Moritz! beware of the three-legged beast.*

SPIEGEL. And does that fright thee, craven-heart? † Has not many a universal genius, who might have reformed the world, rotted upon the gallows? And does not the renown of such a man live for hundreds and thousands of years, whereas many a king and elector would be passed over in history, were not historians obliged to give him a niche to complete the line of succession, or that the mention of him did not swell the volume a few octavo pages, for which he counts upon hard cash from the publisher. And when the wayfarer sees you swinging to and fro in the breeze he will mutter to himself, "That fellow's brains had no water in them, I'll warrant me," and then groan over the hardship of the times.

SCHWEIT. (*slaps him on the shoulder*). Well said, Spiegelberg! Well said! Why the devil do we stand here hesitating?

SCHW. And suppose it is called disgrace — what then? Cannot one, in case of need, always carry a small powder about one, which quietly smooths the weary traveller's passage across the Styx, where no cock-crowing will dis-

* The gallows, which in Germany is formed of three posts.
† The German is *Hasen-herz*. See note at page 150.

turb his rest? No, brother Moritz! Your scheme is good; so at least says my creed.

SCHUFT. Zounds! and mine too! Spiegelberg, I am your recruit.

RAZ. Like a second Orpheus, Spiegelberg, you have charmed to sleep that howling beast, conscience! Take me as I stand, I am yours entirely!

GRIMM. *Si omnes consentiunt ego non dissentio;** mind, without a comma. There is an auction going on in my head — methodists — quack doctors — reviewers — rogues; — the highest bidder has me. Here is my hand, Moritz!

ROLLER. And you too, Schweitzer? (*he gives his right hand to* SPIEGELBERG). Thus I consign my soul to the devil.

SPIEGEL. And your name to the stars! What does it signify where the soul goes to? If crowds of *avant-couriers* give notice of our descent that the devils may put on their holiday gear, wipe the accumulated soot of a thousand years from their eyelashes, and myriads of horned heads pop up from the smoking mouth of their sulphurous chimneys to welcome our arrival! Up, comrades! (*leaping up*). Up! What in the world is equal to this ecstacy of delight? Come along, comrades!

ROLLER. Gently, gently! Where are you going? Every beast must have a head, boys!

SPIEGEL. (*with bitterness*). What is that incubus preaching about? Was not the head already there before a single limb began to move? Follow me, comrades!

ROLLER. Gently, I say! even liberty must have its master. Rome and Sparta perished for want of a chief.

SPIEGEL. (*in a wheedling manner*). Yes, — stay — Roller is right. And he must have an enlightened head. Do you understand? A keen, politic head. Yes! when I think what you were only an hour ago, and what you are now, and that it is all owing to one happy thought. Yes, of course, you must have a chief, and you'll own that he who struck out this idea may claim to have an enlightened and politic head?

* The joke is explained by placing a comma after *non*.

ROLLER. If one could hope, if one could dream, but I fear he will not consent.

SPIEGEL. Why not? Speak out boldly, friend! Difficult as it may be to steer a laboring vessel against wind and tide, oppressive as may be the weight of a crown, speak your thought without hesitation, Roller! Perhaps he may be prevailed upon after all!

ROLLER. And if he does not the whole vessel will be crazy enough. Without Moor we are a body without a soul.

SPIEGEL. (*turning angrily from him*). Dolt! blockhead!

(*Enter* CHARLES VON MOOR *in violent agitation, stalking backwards and forwards, and speaking to himself.*)

CHARLES VON M. Man — man! false, perfidious crocodile-brood! Your eyes are all tears, but your hearts steel! Kisses on your lips, but daggers couched in your bosoms! Even lions and tigers nourish their young. Ravens feast their brood on carrion, and he — he! Malice I have learned to bear; and I can smile when my fellest enemy drinks to me in my own heart's blood; but when kindred turn traitors, when a father's love becomes a fury's hate; oh, then, let manly resignation give place to raging fire! the gentle lamb become a tiger! and every nerve strain itself to vengeance and destruction!

ROLLER. Hark ye, Moor! What think ye of it? A robber's life is pleasanter, after all, than to lie rotting on bread and water in the lowest dungeon of the castle?

CHARLES VON M. Why was not this spirit implanted in a tiger which gluts its raging jaws with human flesh? Is this a father's tenderness? Is this love for love? Would I were a bear to rouse all the bears of the north against this murderous race! Repentance, and no pardon! Oh, that I could poison the ocean that men might drink death from every spring! Contrition, implicit reliance, and no pardon!

ROLLER. But listen, Moor, — listen to what I am telling you!

CHARLES VON M. 'Tis incredible! 'tis a dream — a delusion! Such earnest entreaty, such a vivid picture of misery and tearful penitence — a savage beast would have been melted to compassion! stones would have wept, and yet he — it would be thought a malicious libel upon human nature were I to proclaim it — and yet, yet — oh, that I could sound the trumpet of rebellion through all creation, and lead air, and earth, and sea into battle array against this generation of hyenas!

GRIMM. Hear me, only hear me! You are deaf with raving.

CHARLES VON M. Avaunt, avaunt! Is not thy name man? Art thou not born of woman? Out of my sight, thou thing with human visage! I loved him so unutterably! — never son so loved a father; I would have sacrificed a thousand lives for him —— (*foaming and stamping the ground*). Ha! where is he that will put a sword into my hand that I may strike this generation of vipers to the quick! Who will teach me how to reach their heart's core, to crush, to annihilate the whole race? — Such a man shall be my friend, my angel, my god — him will I worship!

ROLLER. Such friends behold in us; be but advised!

SCHW. Come with us into the Bohemian forests! We will form a band of robbers there, and you —— (MOOR *stares at him*).

SCHWEIT. You shall be our captain! you *must* be our captain!

SPIEGEL. (*throws himself into a chair in a rage*). Slaves and cowards!

CHARLES VON M. Who inspired thee with that thought? Hark, fellow! (*grasping* ROLLER *tightly*) that human soul of thine did not produce it; who suggested it to thee? Yes, by the thousand arms of death! that's what we will, and what we must do! the thought's divine. He who conceived it deserves to be canonized. Robbers and murderers! As my soul lives, I am your captain!

ALL (*with tumultuous shouts*). Hurrah! long live our captain!

SPIEGEL. (*starting up, aside*). Till I give him his *coup de grace!*

CHARLES VON M. See, it falls like a film from my eyes! What a fool was I to think of returning to be caged? My soul's athirst for deeds, my spirit pants for freedom. Murderers, robbers! with these words I trample the law underfoot—mankind threw off humanity when I appealed to it. Away, then, with human sympathies and mercy! I no longer have a father, no longer affections; blood and death shall teach me to forget that anything was ever dear to me! Come! come! Oh, I will recreate myself with some most fearful vengeance;—'tis resolved, I am your captain! and success to him who shall spread fire and slaughter the widest and most savagely—I pledge myself he shall be right royally rewarded. Stand around me, all of you, and swear to me fealty and obedience unto death! Swear by this trusty right hand.

ALL (*place their hands in his*). We swear to thee fealty and obedience unto death!

CHARLES VON M. And, by this same trusty right hand, I here swear to you to remain your captain, true and faithful unto death! This arm shall make an instant corpse of him who doubts, or fears, or retreats. And may the same befall me from your hands if I betray my oath! Are you content?

[SPIEGELBERG *runs up and down in a furious rage.*

ALL (*throwing up their hats*). We are content!

CHARLES VON M. Well, then, let us be gone! Fear neither death nor danger, for an unalterable destiny rules over us. Every man has his doom, be it to die on the soft pillow of down, or in the field of blood, or on the scaffold, or the wheel! One or the other of these must be our lot! [*Exeunt.*

SPIEGEL. (*looking after them after a pause*). Your catalogue has a hole in it. You have omitted poison.

[*Exit.*

SCENE III.—MOOR'S *Castle.*—AMELIA'S *Chamber.*

FRANCIS, AMELIA.

FRANCIS. Your face is averted from me, Amelia? Am I less worthy than he who is accursed of his father?

AMELIA. Away! Oh! what a loving, compassionate

father, who abandons his son a prey to wolves and mo sters! In his own comfortable home he pampers hims with delicious wines and stretches his palsied limbs down, while his noble son is starving. Shame upon yo inhuman wretches! Shame upon you, ye souls of dragoı ye blots on humanity! — his only son!

FRANCIS. I thought he had two.

AMELIA. Yes, he deserves to have such sons as y are. On his deathbed he will in vain stretch out l withered hands for his Charles, and recoil with a shudd when he feels the ice-cold hand of his Francis. Oh, it sweet, deliciously sweet, to be cursed by such a fathe Tell me, Francis, dear brotherly soul — tell me what mu one do to be cursed by him?

FRANCIS. You are raving, dearest; you are to pitied.

AMELIA. Oh! indeed. Do you pity your brothe No, monster, you hate him! I hope you hate me too.

FRANCIS. I love you as dearly as I love myse Amelia!

AMELIA. If you love me you will not refuse me o little request.

FRANCIS. None, none! if you ask no more than n life.

AMELIA. Oh, if that is the case! then one reque which you will so easily, so readily grant. (*Loftily.*) Ha me! I should perforce blush crimson if, whilst thinki of Charles, it should for a moment enter my mind th you do not hate me. You promise me this? Now g and leave me; I so love to be alone!

FRANCIS. Lovely enthusiast! how greatly I admi your gentle, affectionate heart. Here, here, Charl reigned sole monarch, like a god within his temple; stood before thee waking, he filled your imaginati dreaming; the whole creation seemed to thee to cent in Charles, and to reflect him alone; it gave thee other echo but of him.

AMELIA (*with emotion*). Yes, verily, I own it. Despi of you all, barbarians as you are, I will own it before the world. I love him!

FRANCIS. Inhuman, cruel! So to requite a love like this! To forget her ——

AMELIA (*starting*). What! forget me?

FRANCIS. Did you not place a ring on his finger? — a diamond ring, the pledge of your love? To be sure how is it possible for youth to resist the fascinations of a wanton? Who can blame him for it, since he had nothing else left to give away? and of course she repaid him with interest by her caresses and embraces.

AMELIA (*with indignation*). My ring to a wanton?

FRANCIS. Fie, fie! it is disgraceful. 'Twould not be much, however, if that were all. A ring, be it ever so costly, is, after all, a thing which one may always buy of a Jew. Perhaps the fashion of it did not please him, perhaps he exchanged it for one more beautiful.

AMELIA (*with violence*). But *my* ring, I say, *my* ring?

FRANCIS. Even yours, Amelia. Ha! such a brilliant, and on my finger; and from Amelia! Death itself should not have plucked it hence. It is not the costliness of the diamond, not the cunning of the pattern — it is love which constitutes its value. Is it not so, Amelia? Dearest child, you are weeping. Woe be to him who causes such precious drops to flow from those heavenly eyes; ah, and if you knew all, if you could but see him yourself, see him under that form?

AMELIA. Monster! what do you mean? What form do you speak of?

FRANCIS. Hush, hush, gentle soul, press me no further (*as if soliloquizing, yet aloud*). If it had only some veil, that horrid vice, under which it might shroud itself from the eye of the world! But there it is, glaring horribly through the sallow, leaden eye; proclaiming itself in the sunken, deathlike look; ghastly protruding bones; the faltering, hollow voice; preaching audibly from the shattered, shaking skeleton; piercing to the most vital marrow of the bones, and sapping the manly strength of youth — faugh! the idea sickens me. Nose, eyes, ears shrink from it. You saw that miserable wretch, Amelia, in our hospital, who was heavily breathing out his spirit; modesty seemed to cast down her abashed eye as she passed him; you cried woe upon him. Recall that hid-

eous image to your mind, and your Charles stands before you. His kisses are pestilence, his lips poison.

AMELIA (*strikes him*). Shameless liar!

FRANCIS. Does such a Charles inspire you with horror? Does the mere picture fill you with disgust? Go, then! gaze upon him yourself, your handsome, your angelic, your divine Charles! Go, drink his balmy breath, and revel in the ambrosial fumes which ascend from his throat! The very exhalations of his body will plunge you into that dark and deathlike dizziness which follows the smell of a bursting carcase, or the sight of a corpse-strewn battle-field. (AMELIA *turns away her face.*) What sensations of love! What rapture in those embraces! But is it not unjust to condemn a man because of his diseased exterior? Even in the most wretched lump of deformity a soul great and worthy of love may beam forth brightly like a pearl on a dunghill. (*With a malignant smile.*) Even from lips of corruption love may ——. To be sure if vice should undermine the very foundations of character, if with chastity virtue too should take her flight as the fragrance departs from the faded rose — if with the body the soul too should be tainted and corrupted ——.

AMELIA (*rising joyfully*). Ha! Charles! now I recognize thee again! Thou art whole, whole! It was all a lie! Dost thou not know, miscreant, that it would be impossible for Charles to be the being you describe? (FRANCIS *remains standing for some time, lost in thought, then suddenly turns round to go away.*) Whither are you going in such haste? Are you flying from your own infamy?

FRANCIS (*hiding his face*). Let me go, let me go! to give free vent to my tears! tyrannical father, thus to abandon the best of your sons to misery and disgrace on every side! Let me go, Amelia! I will throw myself at his feet, on my knees I will conjure him to transfer to me the curse that he has pronounced, to disinherit me, to hate me, my blood, my life, my all ——.

AMELIA (*falls on his neck*). Brother of my Charles! Dearest, most excellent Francis!

FRANCIS. Oh, Amelia! how I love you for this un-

shaken constancy to my brother. Forgive me for venturing to subject your love to so severe a trial! How nobly you have realized my wishes! By those tears, those sighs, that divine indignation — and for me too, for me — our souls did so truly harmonize.

AMELIA. Oh, no! that they never did!

FRANCIS. Alas! they harmonized so truly that I always thought we must be twins. And were it not for that unfortunate difference in person, to be twin-like, which, it must be admitted, would be to the disadvantage of Charles, we should again and again be mistaken for each other. Thou art, I often said to myself, thou art the very Charles, his echo, his counterpart.

AMELIA (*shakes her head*). No, no! by that chaste light of heaven! not an atom of him, not the least spark of his soul.

FRANCIS. So entirely the same in our dispositions; the rose was his favorite flower, and what flower do I esteem above the rose? He loved music beyond expression; and ye are witnesses, ye stars! how often you have listened to me playing on the harpsichord in the dead silence of night, when all around lay buried in darkness and slumber; and how is it possible for you, Amelia, still to doubt? if our love meets in one perfection, and if it is the self-same love, how can its fruits degenerate? (AMELIA *looks at him with astonishment.*) It was a calm, serene evening, the last before his departure for Leipzic, when he took me with him to the bower where you so often sat together in dreams of love, — we were long speechless; at last he seized my hand, and said, in a low voice, and with tears in his eyes, "I am leaving Amelia; I know not, but I have a sad presentiment that it is forever; forsake her not, brother; be her friend, her Charles — if Charles — should never — never return. (*He throws himself down before her, and kisses her hand with fervor.*) Never, never, never will he return; and I stand pledged by a sacred oath to fulfil his behest!

AMELIA (*starting back*). Traitor! Now thou art unmasked! In that very bower he conjured me, if he died, to admit no other love. Dost thou see how impious, how execrable ——. Quit my sight!

FRANCIS. You know me not, Amelia; you do not know me in the least!

AMELIA. Oh, yes, I know you; from henceforth I know you; and you pretend to be like him? You mean to say that he wept for me in your presence? Yours? He would sooner have inscribed my name on the pillory? Begone — this instant!

FRANCIS. You insult me.

AMELIA. Go — I say. You have robbed me of a precious hour; may it be deducted from your life.

FRANCIS. You hate me then!

AMELIA. I despise you — away!

FRANCIS (*stamping with fury*). Only wait! you shall learn to tremble before me! — To sacrifice me for a beggar!

[*Exit in anger.*

AMELIA. Go, thou base villain! Now, Charles, am I again thine own. Beggar, did he say! then is the world turned upside down, beggars are kings, and kings are beggars! I would not change the rags he wears for the imperial purple. The look with which he begs must, indeed, be a noble, a royal look, a look that withers into naught the glory, the pomp, the triumphs of the rich and great! Into the dust with thee, glittering baubles! (*She tears her pearls from her neck.*) Let the rich and the proud be condemned to bear the burden of gold, and silver, and jewels! Be they condemned to carouse at the tables of the voluptuous! To pamper their limbs on the downy couch of luxury! Charles! Charles! Thus am I worthy of thee! [*Exit.*

ACT II.

SCENE I. — FRANCIS VON MOOR *in his chamber — in meditation.*

FRANCIS. It lasts too long — and the doctor even says is recovering — an old man's life is a very eternity! The course would be free and plain before me, but for this troublesome, tough lump of flesh, which, like the infernal demon-hound in ghost stories, bars the way to my treasures.

Must, then, my projects bend to the iron yoke of a mechanical system? Is my soaring spirit to be chained down to the snail's pace of matter? To blow out a wick which is already flickering upon its last drop of oil — 'tis nothing more. And yet I would rather not do it myself, on account of what the world would say. I should not wish him to be killed, but merely disposed of. I should like to do what your clever physician does, only the reverse way — not stop Nature's course by running a bar across her path, but only help her to speed a little faster. Are we not able to prolong the conditions of life? Why, then, should we not also be able to shorten them?

Philosophers and physiologists teach us how close is the sympathy between the emotions of the mind and the movements of the bodily machine. Convulsive sensations are always accompanied by a disturbance of the mechanical vibrations — passions injure the vital powers — an overburdened spirit bursts its shell. Well, then — what if one knew how to smooth this unbeaten path, for the easier entrance of death into the citadel of life? — to work the body's destruction through the mind — ha! an original device! — who can accomplish this? — a device without a parallel! Think upon it, Moor! That were an art worthy of thee for its inventor. Has not poisoning been raised almost to the rank of a regular science, and Nature compelled, by the force of experiments, to define her limits, so that one may now calculate the heart's throbbings for years in advance, and say to the beating pulse, "So far, and no farther"? Why should not one try one's skill in this line?*

And how, then, must I, too, go to work to dissever that sweet and peaceful union of soul and body? What species of sensations should I seek to produce? Which would most fiercely assail the condition of life? *Anger?* — that ravenous wolf is too quickly satiated. *Care?* — that worm gnaws far too slowly. *Grief?* — that viper

* A woman in Paris, by means of a regularly performed series of experiments, carried the art of poisoning to such perfection that she could predict almost to a certainty the day of death, however remote. Fie upon our physicians, who should blush to be outdone by a woman in their own province. Beckmann, in his article on secret poisoning, has given a particular account of this woman, the Marchioness de Brinvilliers. — *See* "History of Inventions," Standard Library Edition, vol. i, pp. 47–63.

creeps too lazily for me. *Fear?*—hope destroys its power. What! and are these the only executioners of man? is the armory of death so soon exhausted? (*In deep thought.*) How now! what! ho! I have it! (*Starting up.*) *Terror!* What is proof against terror? What powers have religion and reason under that giant's icy grasp! And yet—if he should withstand even this assault? If he should! Oh, then, come *Anguish* to my aid! and thou, gnawing *Repentance!*—furies of hell, burrowing snakes who regorge your food, and feed upon your own excrements; ye that are forever destroying, and forever reproducing your poison! And thou, howling *Remorse*, that desolatest thine own habitation, and feedest upon thy mother. And come ye, too, gentle Graces, to my aid; even you, sweet smiling *Memory*, goddess of the past—and thou, with thy overflowing horn of plenty, blooming *Futurity;* show him in your mirror the joys of Paradise, while with fleeting foot you elude his eager grasp. Thus will I work my battery of death, stroke after stroke, upon his fragile body, until the troop of furies close upon him with *Despair!* Triumph! triumph!—the plan is complete—difficult and masterly beyond compare—sure—safe; for then (*with a sneer*) the dissecting knife can find no trace of wound or of corrosive poison.

(*Resolutely.*) Be it so! (*Enter* HERMANN.) Ha! *Deus ex machinâ!* Hermann!

HERMANN. At your service, gracious sir!

FRANCIS (*shakes him by the hand*). You will not find it that of an ungrateful master.

HERMANN. I have proofs of this.

FRANCIS. And you shall have more soon—very soon, Hermann!—I have something to say to thee, Hermann.

HERMANN. I am all attention.

FRANCIS. I know thee—thou art a resolute fellow—a man of mettle.—To call thee smooth-tongued!—My father has greatly belied thee, Hermann.

HERMANN. The devil take me if I forget it!

FRANCIS. Spoken like a man! Vengeance becomes a manly heart! Thou art to my mind, Hermann. Take this purse, Hermann. It should be heavier were I master here.

HERMANN. That is my unceasing wish, most gracious sir. I thank you.

FRANCIS. Really, Hermann! dost thou wish that I were master? But my father has the marrow of a lion in his bones, and I am but a younger son.

HERMANN. I wish you were the eldest son, and that your father were as marrowless as a girl sinking in a consumption.

FRANCIS. Ha! how that elder son would recompense thee! How he would raise thee from this grovelling condition, so ill suited to thy spirit and noble birth, to be a light of the age! — Then shouldst thou be covered with gold from head to foot, and dash through the streets four in hand — verily thou shouldst! — But I am losing sight of what I meant to say. — Have you already forgotten the Lady Amelia, Hermann?

HERMANN. A curse upon it! Why do you remind me of her?

FRANCIS. My brother has filched her away from you.

HERMANN. He shall rue it.

FRANCIS. She gave you the sack. And, if I remember right, he kicked you down stairs.

HERMANN. For which I will kick him into hell.

FRANCIS. He used to say, it was whispered abroad, that your father could never look upon you without smiting his breast and sighing, "God be merciful to me, a sinner!"

HERMANN (*wildly*). Thunder and lightning! No more of this!

FRANCIS. He advised you to sell your patent of nobility by auction, and to get your stockings mended with the proceeds.

HERMANN. By all the devils in hell, I'll scratch out his eyes with my own nails!

FRANCIS. What? you are growing angry? What signifies your anger? What harm can you do him? What can a mouse like you do to such a lion? Your rage only makes his triumph the sweeter. You can do nothing more than gnash your teeth, and vent your rage upon a dry crust.

HERMANN (*stamping*). I will grind him to powder!

FRANCIS (*slapping his shoulder*). Fie, Hermann! You are a gentleman. You must not put up with the affront. You must not give up the lady, no, not for all the world, Hermann! By my soul, I would move heaven and earth were I in your place.

HERMANN. I will not rest till I have *him*, and *him*, too, under ground.

FRANCIS. Not so violent, Hermann! Come nearer — you shall have Amelia.

HERMANN. That I must; despite the devil himself, I *will* have her.

FRANCIS. You shall have her, I tell you; and that from my hand. Come closer, I say. — You don't know, perhaps, that Charles is as good as disinherited.

HERMANN (*going closer to him*). Incredible! The first I have heard of it.

FRANCIS. Be patient, and listen! Another time you shall hear more.— Yes, I tell you, as good as banished these eleven months. But the old man already begins to lament the hasty step, which, however, I flatter myself (*with a smile*) is not entirely his own. Amelia, too, is incessantly pursuing him with her tears and reproaches. Presently he will be having him searched for in every quarter of the world; and if he finds him — then it's all over with you, Hermann. You may perhaps have the honor of most obsequiously holding the coach-door while he alights with the lady to get married.

HERMANN. I'll strangle him at the altar first.

FRANCIS. His father will soon give up his estates to him, and live in retirement in his castle. Then the proud roysterer will have the reins in his own hands, and laugh his enemies to scorn; — and I, who wished to make a great man of you — a man of consequence — I myself, Hermann, shall have to make my humble obeisance at his threshold ——

HERMANN (*with fire*). No, as sure as my name is Hermann, that shall never be! If but the smallest spark of wit glimmer in this brain of mine, that shall never be!

FRANCIS. Will you be able to prevent it? You, too, my good Hermann, will be made to feel his lash. He will spit in your face when he meets you in the streets;

and woe be to you should you venture to shrug your shoulders or to make a wry mouth. Look, my friend! this is all that your lovesuit, your prospects, and your mighty plans amount to.

HERMANN. Tell me, what am I to do?

FRANCIS. Well, then, listen, Hermann! You see how I enter into your feelings, like a true friend. Go — disguise yourself, so that no one may recognize you; obtain audience of the old man; pretend to come straight from Bohemia, to have been at the battle of Prague along with my brother — to have seen him breathe his last on the field of battle ——

HERMANN. Will he believe me?

FRANCIS. Ho! ho! let that be my care! Take this packet. There you will find your commission set forth at large; and documents, to boot, which shall convince the most incredulous. Only make haste to get away unobserved. Slip through the back gate into the yard, and then scale the garden wall.— The denouement of this tragicomedy you may leave to me!

HERMANN. That, I suppose, will be, "Long live our new baron, Francis von Moor!"

FRANCIS (*patting his cheeks*). How cunning you are! By this means, you see, we attain all our aims at once and quickly. Amelia relinquishes all hope of him, — the old man reproaches himself for the death of his son, and — he sickens — a tottering edifice needs no earthquake to bring it down — he will not survive the intelligence — then am I his only son,— Amelia loses every support, and becomes the plaything of my will, and you may easily guess — in short, all will go as we wish — but you must not flinch from your word.

HERMANN. What do you say? (*Exultingly.*) Sooner shall the ball turn back in its course, and bury itself in the entrails of the marksman. Depend upon me! Only let me to the work. Adieu!

FRANCIS (*calling after him*). The harvest is thine, dear Hermann! (*Alone.*) When the ox has drawn the corn into the barn, he must put up with hay. A dairymaid for thee, and no Amelia!

SCENE II.— *Old Moor's Bedchamber.*

OLD MOOR *asleep in an arm-chair;* AMELIA.

AMELIA (*approaching him on tip-toe*). Softly! Softly! he slumbers. (*She places herself before him.*) How beautiful! how venerable! — venerable as the picture of a saint. No, I cannot be angry with thee, thou head with the silver locks; I cannot be angry with thee! Slumber on gently, wake up cheerfully — I alone will be the sufferer.

OLD M. (*dreaming*). My son! my son! my son!

AMELIA (*seizes his hand*). Hark! hark! his son is in his dreams.

OLD M. Are you there? Are you really there! Alas! how miserable you seem! Fix not on me that mournful look! I am wretched enough.

AMELIA (*awakens him abruptly*). Look up, dear old man! 'Twas but a dream. Collect yourself!

OLD M. (*half awake*). Was he not there? Did I not press his hands? Cruel Francis! wilt thou tear him even from my dreams?

AMELIA (*aside*). Ha! mark that, Amelia!

OLD M. (*rousing himself*). Where is he? Where? Where am I? You here, Amelia?

AMELIA. How do you find yourself? You have had a refreshing slumber.

OLD M. I was dreaming about my son. Why did I not dream on? Perhaps I might have obtained forgiveness from his lips.

AMELIA. Angels bear no resentment — he forgives you. (*Seizes his hand sorrowfully.*) Father of my Charles! I, too, forgive you.

OLD M. No, no, my child! That deathlike paleness of thy cheek is the father's condemnation. Poor girl! I have robbed thee of the happiness of thy youth. Oh, do not curse me!

AMELIA (*affectionately kissing his hand*). I curse you?

OLD M. Dost thou know this portrait, my daughter?

AMELIA. Charles!

OLD M. Such was he in his sixteenth year. But now,

alas! how changed. Oh, it is raging within me. That gentleness is now indignation; that smile despair. It was his birthday, was it not, Amelia — in the jessamine bower — when you drew this picture of him? Oh, my daughter! How happy was I in your loves.

AMELIA (*with her eye still riveted upon the picture*). No, no, it is not he! By Heaven, that is not Charles! Here (*pointing to her head and her heart*), here he is perfect; and how different. The feeble pencil avails not to express that heavenly spirit which reigned in his fiery eye. Away with it! This is a poor image, an ordinary man! I was a mere dauber.

OLD M. That kind, that cheering look! Had that been at my bedside, I should have lived in the midst of death. Never, never should I have died!

AMELIA. No, you would never, never have died. It would have been but a leap, as we leap from one thought to another and a better. That look would have lighted you across the tomb — that look would have lifted you beyond the stars!

OLD M. It is hard! it is sad! I am dying, and my son Charles is not here — I am borne to my tomb, and he weeps not over my grave. How sweet it is to be lulled into the sleep of death by a son's prayer — that is the true requiem.

AMELIA (*with enthusiasm*). Yes, sweet it is, heavenly sweet, to be lulled into the sleep of death by the song of the beloved. Perhaps our dreams continue in the grave — a long, eternal, never-ending dream of Charles — till the trumpet of resurrection sounds — (*rising in ecstasy*) — and thenceforth and forever in his arms! (*A pause; she goes to the piano and plays.*)

ANDROMACHE.

Oh, Hector, wilt thou go for evermore,
When fierce Achilles, on the blood-stained shore,
  Heaps countless victims o'er Patroclus' grave?
When then thy hapless orphan boy will rear,
Teach him to praise the gods and hurl the spear,
  When thou art swallow'd up in Xanthus' wave?

OLD M. A beautiful song, my daughter. You must play that to me before I die.

AMELIA. It is the parting of Hector and Andromache. Charles and I used often to sing it together to the guitar. (*She continues.*)

HECTOR.

Beloved wife! stern duty calls to arms —
Go, fetch my lance! and cease those vain alarms!
On me is cast the destiny of Troy!
Astyanax, my child, the Gods will shield,
Should Hector fall upon the battle-field;
And in Elysium we shall meet with joy!

Enter DANIEL.

DANIEL. There is a man without, who craves to be admitted to your presence, and says he brings tidings of importance.

OLD M. To me there is but one thing in this world of importance; thou knowest it, Amelia. Perhaps it is some unfortunate creature who seeks assistance? He shall not go hence in sorrow.

AMELIA. If it is a beggar, let him come up quickly.

OLD M. Amelia, Amelia! spare me!

AMELIA (*continues to play and sing.*)

ANDROMACHE.

Thy martial tread no more will grace my hall —
Thine arms shall hang sad relics on the wall —
And Priam's race of godlike heroes fade!
Oh, thou wilt go where Phœbus sheds no light —
Where black Cocytus wails in endless night —
Thy love will die in Lethe's gloomy shade.

HECTOR.

Though I in Lethe's darksome wave should sink,
And cease on other mortal ties to think,
Yet thy true love shall never be forgot!
Hark! on the walls I hear the battle roar —
Gird on my armor — and, oh, weep no more.
Thy Hector's love in Lethe dieth not!

(*Enter* FRANCIS, HERMANN *in disguise*, DANIEL.)

FRANCIS. Here is the man. He says that he brings
errible news. Can you bear the recital!

OLD M. I know but one thing terrible to hear. Come
nither, friend, and spare me not! Hand him a cup of
wine!

HERMANN (*in a feigned voice*). Most gracious sir?
Let not a poor man be visited with your displeasure, if
against his will he lacerates your heart. I am a stranger
in these parts, but I know you well; you are the father
of Charles von Moor.

OLD M. How know you that?

HERMANN. I knew your son——

AMELIA (*starting up*). He lives then? He lives!
You know him? Where is he? Where? (*About to rush
out.*)

OLD M. What know you about my son?

HERMANN. He was a student at the university of
Leipzic. From thence he travelled about, I know not
how far. He wandered all over Germany, and, as he
told me himself, barefoot and bareheaded, begging his
bread from door to door. After five months, the fatal
war between Prussia and Austria broke out afresh, and
as he had no hopes left in this world, the fame of Frede-
rick's victorious banner drew him to Bohemia. Permit
me, said he to the great Schwerin, to die on the bed of
heroes, for I have no longer a father!——

OLD M. O! Amelia! Look not on me!

HERMANN. They gave him a pair of colors. With the
Prussians he flew on the wings of victory. We chanced
to lie together, in the same tent. He talked much of hi
old father, and of happy days that were past—and c
disappointed hopes—it brought the tears into our eyes

OLD M. (*buries his face in his pillow*). No more! O
no more!

HERMANN. A week after, the fierce battle of Pra
was fought—I can assure you your son behaved lik
brave soldier. He performed prodigies that day in s
of the whole army. Five regiments were successi
out down by his side, and still he kept his ground.
right and left, and still your son ke

ground. A ball shattered his right hand: he seized the colors with his left, and still he kept his ground——

AMELIA (*in transport*). Hector, Hector! do you hear? He kept his ground——

HERMANN. On the evening of the battle I found him on the same spot. He had sunk down, amidst a shower of hissing balls: with his left hand he was stanching the blood that flowed from a fearful wound; his right he had buried in the earth. "Comrade!" cried he, when he saw me, "there has been a report through the ranks that the general fell an hour ago——" "He is fallen," I replied, "and thou?——" "Well, then," he cried, withdrawing his left hand from the wound, "let every brave soldier follow his general! Soon after he breathed out his noble soul, to join his heroic leader.

FRANCIS (*feigning to rush wildly on* HERMANN). May death seal thy accursed lips! Art thou come here to give the death-blow to our father? Father! Amelia! father!

HERMANN. It was the last wish of my expiring comrade. "Take this sword," faltered he, with his dying breath, "deliver it to my aged father; his son's blood is upon it — he is avenged — let him rejoice. Tell him that his curse drove me into battle and into death; that I fell in despair." His last sigh was "Amelia."

AMELIA (*like one aroused from lethargy*). His last sigh — Amelia!

OLD M. (*screaming horribly, and tearing his hair*). My curse drove him into death! He fell in despair!

FRANCIS (*pacing up and down the room*). Oh! what have you done, father? My Charles! my brother!

HERMANN. Here is the sword; and here, too, is a picture which he drew from his breast at the same time. It is the very image of this young lady. "This for my brother Francis," he said; I know not what he meant by it.

FRANCIS (*feigning astonishment*). For me? Amelia's picture? For me — Charles — Amelia? For me?

AMELIA (*rushing violently upon* HERMANN). Thou venal, bribed impostor! (*Lays hold of him.*)

HERMANN. I am no impostor, noble lady. See your-

if it is not your picture. It may be that you yourself
/e it to him.

FRANCIS. By heaven, Amelia! your picture! It is,
deed.

AMELIA (*returns him the picture*). My picture, mine!
'h! heavens and earth!

OLD M. (*screaming and tearing his face.*) Woe, woe!
ny curse drove him into death! He fell in despair!

FRANCIS. And he thought of me in the last and parting hour — of me. Angelic soul! When the black banner of death already waved over him he thought of me!

OLD M. (*stammering like an idiot.*) My curse drove him into death. In despair my son perished.

HERMANN. This is more than I can bear! Farewell, old gentleman! (*Aside to* FRANCIS.) How could you have the heart to do this? [*Exit in haste.*

AMELIA (*rises and rushes after him*). Stay! stay! What were his last words?

HERMANN (*calling back*). His last sigh was "Amelia." [*Exit.*

AMELIA. His last sigh was Amelia! No, thou art no impostor. It is too true — true — he is dead — dead! (*staggering to and fro till she sinks down*) — dead — Charles is dead!

FRANCIS. What do I see? What is this line on the sword? — written with blood — Amelia!

AMELIA. By him?

FRANCIS. Do I see clearly, or am I dreaming? Behold, in characters of blood, "Francis, forsake not my Amelia." And on the other side, "Amelia, all-powerful death has released thee from thy oath." Now do you see — do you see? With hand stiffening in death he wrote it, with his warm life's blood he wrote it — wrote it on the solemn brink of eternity. His spirit lingered in his flight t unite Francis and Amelia.

AMELIA. Gracious heaven! it is his own hand. H never loved me. [*Rushes o*

FRANCIS (*stamping the ground*). Confusion! her st born heart foils all my cunning!

OLD MOOR. Woe, woe! forsake me not, my daugh Francis, Francis! give me back my son!

FRANCIS. Who was it that cursed him? Who was it that drove his son into battle, and death, and despair? Oh, he was an angel, a jewel of heaven! A curse on his destroyers! A curse, a curse upon yourself!

OLD MOOR (*strikes his breast and forehead with his clenched fist*). He was an angel, a jewel of heaven! A curse, a curse, perdition, a curse on myself! I am the father who slew his noble son! He loved me even to death! To expiate my vengeance he rushed into battle and into death! Monster, monster that I am! (*He rages against himself.*)

FRANCIS. He is gone. What avail these tardy lamentations? (*with a satanic sneer.*) It is easier to murder than to restore to life. You will never bring him back from his grave.

OLD MOOR. Never, never, never bring him back from the grave! Gone! lost for ever! And you it was that beguiled my heart to curse him — you — you — Give me back my son!

FRANCIS. Rouse not my fury, lest I forsake you even in the hour of death!

OLD MOOR. Monster! inhuman monster! Restore my son to me. (*Starts from the chair and attempts to catch* FRANCIS *by the throat, who flings him back.*)

FRANCIS. Feeble old dotard! would you dare? Die! despair! [*Exit.*

OLD MOOR. May the thunder of a thousand curses light upon thee! thou hast robbed me of my son. (*Throwing himself about in his chair full of despair*). Alas! alas! to despair and yet not die. They fly, they forsake me in death; my guardian angels fly from me; all the saints withdraw from the hoary murderer. Oh, misery! will no one support this head, no one release this struggling soul? No son, no daughter, no friend, not one human being — will no one? Alone — forsaken. Woe, woe! To despair, yet not to die!

Enter AMELIA, *her eyes red with weeping.*

OLD MOOR. Amelia! messenger of heaven! Art thou come to release my soul?

AMELIA (*in a gentle tone*). You have lost a noble son.

OLD MOOR. Murdered him, you mean. With the weight of this impeachment I shall present myself before the judgment-seat of God.

AMELIA. Not so, old man! Our heavenly Father has taken him to himself. We should have been too happy in this world. Above, above, beyond the stars, we shall meet again.

OLD MOOR. Meet again! Meet again! Oh! it will pierce my soul like a sword — should I, a saint, meet him among the saints. In the midst of heaven the horrors of hell will strike through me! * The remembrance of that deed will crush me in the presence of the Eternal: I have murdered my son!

AMELIA. Oh, his smiles will chase away the bitter remembrance from your soul! Cheer up, dear father! I am quite cheerful. Has he not already sung the name of Amelia to listening angels on seraphic harps, and has not heaven's choir sweetly echoed it? Was not his last sigh, Amelia? And will not Amelia be his first accent of joy?

OLD MOOR. Heavenly consolation flows from your lips! He will smile upon me, you say? He will forgive me? You must stay with my, beloved of my Charles, when I die.

AMELIA. To die is to fly to his arms. Oh, how happy and enviable is your lot! Would that my bones were decayed! — that my hairs were gray! Woe upon the vigor of youth! Welcome, decrepid age, nearer to heaven and my Charles!

Enter FRANCIS.

OLD MOOR. Come near, my son! Forgive me if I spoke too harshly to you just now! I forgive you all. I wish to yield up my spirit in peace.

* This may be illustrated by a parallel from Shakspeare: —

"When we shall meet at compt,
This look of thine will hurl my soul from heaven,
And fiends will snatch at it."

OTHELLO, Act v, Sc 2.

FRANCIS. Have you done weeping for your son? F aught that I see you had but one.

OLD MOOR. Jacob had twelve sons, but for his Josep he wept tears of blood.

FRANCIS. Hum!

OLD MOOR. Bring the Bible, my daughter, and read to me the story of Jacob and Joseph! It always appeared to me so touching, even before I myself became a Jacob.

AMELIA. What part shall I read to you? (*Takes the Bible and turns over the leaves.*)

OLD MOOR. Read to me the grief of the bereaved father, when he found his Joseph no more among his children; — when he sought him in vain amidst his eleven sons; — and his lamentation when he heard that he was taken from him forever.

AMELIA (*reads*). "And they took Joseph's coat, and killed a kid of the goats, and dipped the coat in the blood; and they sent the coat of many colors, and they brought it to their father, and said, 'This have we found: know now whether it be thy son's coat or no.' (*Exit* FRANCIS *suddenly.*) And he knew it and said, 'It is my son's coat; an evil beast hath devoured him; Joseph is without doubt rent in pieces'" ——

OLD MOOR (*falls back upon the pillow*). An evil beast hath devoured Joseph!

AMELIA (*continues reading*). "And Jacob rent his clothes, and put sackcloth upon his loins, and mourned for his son many days. And all his sons and all his daughters rose up to comfort him, but he refused to be comforted, and he said, 'For I will go down into the grave'" ——

OLD MOOR. Leave off! leave off. I feel very ill.

AMELIA (*running towards him, lets fall the book*). Heaven help us! What is this?

OLD MOOR. It is death — darkness — is waving — before my eyes — I pray thee — send for the minister — that he may — give me — the Holy Communion. Where is — my son Francis?

AMELIA. He is fled. God have mercy upon us!

OLD MOOR. Fled — fled from his father's deathbed?

And is that all — all — of two children full of promise — thou hast given — thou hast — taken away — thy name be ——

AMELIA (*with a sudden cry*). Dead! both dead!
[*Exit in despair.*

Enter FRANCIS, *dancing with joy.*

FRANCIS. Dead, they cry, dead! Now am I master. Through the whole castle it rings, dead! but stay, perchance he only sleeps? To be sure, yes, to be sure! that certainly is a sleep after which no "good-morrow" is ever said. Sleep and death are but twin-brothers. We will for once change their names! Excellent, welcome sleep! We will call thee death! (*He closes the eyes of* OLD MOOR.) Who now will come forward and dare to accuse me at the bar of justice, or tell me to my face, thou art a villain? Away, then, with this troublesome mask of humility and virtue! Now you shall see Francis as he is, and tremble! My father was over-gentle in his demands, turned his domain into a family-circle, sat blandly smiling at the gate, and saluted his peasants as brethren and children. My brows shall lower upon you like thunderclouds; my lordly name shall hover over you like a threatening comet over the mountains; my forehead shall be your weather-glass! He would caress and fondle the child that lifted its stubborn head against him. But fondling and caressing is not my mode. I will drive the rowels of the spur into their flesh, and give the scourge a trial. Under my rule it shall be brought to pass that potatoes and small-beer shall be considered a holiday treat; and woe to him who meets my eye with the audacious front of health. Haggard want and crouching fear are my insignia; and in this livery I will clothe ye. [*Exit.*

SCENE III. — THE BOHEMIAN WOODS.

SPIEGELBERG, RAZMAN, *a troop of* ROBBERS.

RAZ. Are you come? Is it really you? Oh, let me squeeze thee into a jelly, my dear heart's brother! Welcome to the Bohemian forests! Why, you are grown

quite stout and jolly! You have brought us recruits in right earnest, a little army of them; you are the very prince of crimps.

SPIEGEL. Eh, brother? Eh? And proper fellows they are! You must confess the blessing of heaven is visibly upon me; I was a poor, hungry wretch, and had nothing but this staff when I went over the Jordan, and now there are eight-and-seventy of us, mostly ruined shopkeepers, rejected masters of arts, and law-clerks from the Swabian provinces. They are a rare set of fellows, brother, capital fellows, I promise you; they will steal you the very buttons off each other's trousers in perfect security, although in the teeth of a loaded musket,* and they live in clover and enjoy a reputation for forty miles round, which is quite astonishing. There is not a newspaper in which you will not find some little feat or other of that cunning fellow, Spiegelberg; I take in the papers for nothing else; they have described me from head to foot; you would think you saw me; they have not forgotten even my coat-buttons. But we lead them gloriously by the nose. The other day I went to the printing-office and pretended that I had seen the famous Spiegelberg, dictated to a penny-a-liner who was sitting there the exact image of a quack doctor in the town; the matter gets wind, the fellow is arrested, put to the rack, and in his anguish and stupidity he confesses — the devil take me if he does not — confesses that he is Spiegelberg. Fire and fury! I was on the point of giving myself up to a magistrate rather than have my fair fame marred by such a poltroon; however, within three months he was hanged. I was obliged to stuff a right good pinch of snuff into my nose as some time afterwards I was passing the gibbet and saw the pseudo Spiegelberg parading there in all his glory; and, while Spiegelberg's representative is dangling by the neck, the real Spiegelberg very quietly slips himself out of the noose, and makes jolly long noses behind the backs of these sagacious wiseacres of the law.

* The acting edition reads, "Hang your hat up in the sun, and I'll take you a wager it's gone the next minute, as clean out of sight as if the devil himself had walked off with it."

RAZ. (*laughing*). You are still the same fellow you always were.

SPIEGEL. Ay, sure! body and soul. But I must tell you a bit of fun, my boy, which I had the other day in the nunnery of St. Austin. We fell in with the convent just about sunset; and as I had not fired a single cartridge all day, — you know I hate the *diem perdidi* as I hate death itself, — I was determined to immortalize the night by some glorious exploit, even though it should cost the devil one of his ears! * We kept quite quiet till late in the night. At last all is as still as a mouse — the lights are extinguished. We fancy the nuns must be comfortably tucked up. So I take brother Grimm along with me, and order the others to wait at the gate till they hear my whistle — I secure the watchman, take the keys from him, creep into the maid-servants' dormitory, take away all their clothes, and whisk the bundle out at the window. We go on from cell to cell, take away the clothes of one sister after another, and lastly those of the lady-abbess herself. Then I sound my whistle, and my fellows outside begin to storm and halloo as if doomsday was at hand, and away they rush with the devil's own uproar into the cells of the sisters! Ha, ha, ha! You should have seen the game — how the poor creatures were groping about in the dark for their petticoats, and how they took on when they found they were gone; and we, in the meantime, at 'em like very devils; and now, terrified and amazed, they wriggled under their bedclothes, or cowered together like cats behind the stoves. There was such shrieking and lamentation; and then the old beldame of an abbess — you know, brother, there is nothing in the world I hate so much as a spider and an old woman — so you may just fancy that wrinkled old hag standing naked before me, conjuring me by her maiden modesty forsooth! Well, I was determined to make short work of it; either, said I, out with your plate and your convent-jewels and all your shining dollars, or — my fellows knew what I meant. The end of it was I brought away more than a thousand dollars' worth

* A saying equivalent to "at all hazards;" or, "come what will of it."

out of the convent, to say nothing of the fun, which wil tell its own story in due time.

RAZ. (*stamping on the ground*). Hang it, that I shoul be absent on such an occasion.

SPIEGEL. Do you see? Now tell me, is not that life 'Tis that which keeps one fresh and hale, and braces th body so that it swells hourly like an abbot's paunch; I don't know, but I think I must be endowed with som magnetic property, which attracts all the vagabonds o the face of the earth towards me like steel and iron.

RAZ. A precious magnet, indeed. But I should lik to know, I'll be hanged if I should'nt, what witchcraf you use?

SPIEGEL. Witchcraft? No need of witchcraft. Al it wants is a head — a certain practical capacity which, o course, is not taken in with every spoonful of barle meal; for you know I have always said that an hones man may be carved out of any willow stump, but t make a rogue you must have brains; besides which i requires a national genius — a certain rascal-climate — s to speak.*

RAZ. Brother, I have heard Italy celebrated for it artists.

SPIEGEL. Yes, yes! Give the devil his due. Italy makes a very noble figure; and if Germany goes on as i has begun, and if the Bible gets fairly kicked out, of whic there is every prospect, Germany, too, may in time arriv at something respectable; but I should tell you that climat does not, after all, do such a wonderful deal; genius thrive everywhere; and as for the rest, brother, a crab, yo know, will never become a pineapple, not even in Para dise. But to pursue our subject, where did I leave off

RAZ. You were going to tell me about your strata gems.

SPIEGEL. Ah, yes! my stratagems. Well, when yo get into a town, the first thing is to fish out from th

* In the first (and suppressed) edition was added, "*Go to the Grisons, fo instance; that is what I call the thief's Athens.*" This obnoxious passage ha been carefully expunged from all the subsequent editions. It gave morta offence to the Grison magistrates, who made a formal complaint of the insul and caused Schiller to be severely rebuked by the Grand Duke. This inciden forms one of the epochs in our author's history.

beadles, watchmen, and turnkeys, who are their best customers, and for these, accordingly, you must look out; then ensconce yourself snugly in coffee-houses, brothels, and beer-shops, and observe who cry out most against the cheapness of the times, the reduced five per cents., and the increasing nuisance of police regulations; who rail the loudest against government, or decry physiognomical science, and such like? These are the right sort of fellows, brother. Their honesty is as loose as a hollow tooth; you have only to apply your pincers. Or a shorter and even better plan is to drop a full purse in the public highway, conceal yourself somewhere near, and mark who finds it. Presently after you come running up, search, proclaim your loss aloud, and ask him, as it were casually, "Have you perchance picked up a purse, sir?" If he says "Yes," why then the devil fails you. But if he denies it, with a "pardon me, sir, I remember, I am sorry, sir," (*he jumps up*), then, brother, you've done the trick. Extinguish your lantern, cunning Diogenes, you have found your match.

RAZ. You are an accomplished practitioner.

SPIEGEL. My God! As if that had ever been doubted. Well, then, when you have got your man into the net, you must take great care to land him cleverly. You see, my son, the way I have managed is thus: as soon as I was on the scent I stuck to my candidate like a leech; I drank brotherhood with him, and, *nota bene*, you must always pay the score. That costs a pretty penny, it is true, but never mind that. You must go further; introduce him to gaming-houses and brothels; entangle him in broils and rogueries till he becomes bankrupt in health and strength, in purse, conscience, and reputation; for I must tell you, by the way, that you will make nothing of it unless you ruin both body and soul. Believe me, brother, and I have experienced it more than fifty times in my extensive practice, that when the honest man is once ousted from his stronghold, the devil has it all his own way — the transition is then as easy as from a whore to a devotee. But hark! What bang was that?

RAZ. It was thunder; go on.

SPIEGEL. Or, there is a yet shorter and still better

way. You strip your man of all he has, even to his very shirt, and then he will come to you of his own accord; you won't teach me to suck eggs, brother; ask that copper-faced fellow there. My eyes, how neatly I got him into my meshes. I showed him forty ducats, which I promised to give him if he would bring me an impression in wax of his master's keys. Only think, the stupid brute not only does this, but actually brings me — I'll be hanged if he did not — the keys themselves; and then thinks to get the money. "Sirrah," said I, "are you aware that I am going to carry these keys straight to the lieutenant of police, and to bespeak a place for you on the gibbet?" By the powers! you should have seen how the simpleton opened his eyes, and began to shake from head to foot like a dripping poodle. "For heaven's sake, sir, do but consider. I will — will" —— "What will you? Will you at once cut your stick and go to the devil with me?" "Oh, with all my heart, with great pleasure." Ha! ha! ha! my fine fellow; toasted cheese is the thing to catch mice with; do have a good laugh at him, Razman; ha! ha! ha!

RAZ. Yes, yes, I must confess. I shall inscribe that lesson in letters of gold upon the tablet of my brain. Satan must know his people right well to have chosen you for his factor.

SPIEGEL. Eh, brother? Eh? And if I help him to half a score of fellows he will, of course, let me off scot-free — publishers, you know, always give one copy in ten gratis to those who collect subscribers for them; why should the devil be more of a Jew? Razman, I smell powder.

RAZ. Zounds! I smelt it long ago. You may depend upon it there has being something going forward hereabouts. Yes, yes! I can tell you, Spiegelberg, you will be welcome to our captain with your recruits; he, too, has got hold of some brave fellows.

SPIEGEL. But look at mine! at mine here, bah!

RAZ. Well, well! they may be tolerably expert in the finger department, but, I tell you, the fame of our captain has tempted even some honorable men to join his staff.

SPIEGEL. So much the worse.

Raz. Without joking. And they are not ashamed to serve under such a leader. He does not commit murder as we do for the sake of plunder,; and as to money, as soon as he had plenty of it at command, he did not seem to care a straw for it; and his third of the booty, which belongs to him of right, he gives away to orphans, or supports promising young men with it at college. But should he happen to get a country squire into his clutches who grinds down his peasants like cattle, or some gold-laced villain, who warps the law to his own purposes, and hoodwinks the eyes of justice with his gold, or any chap of that kidney; then, my boy, he is in his element, and rages like a very devil, as if every fibre in his body were a fury.

Spiegel. Humph!

Raz. The other day we were told at a tavern that a rich count from Ratisbon was about to pass through, who had gained the day in a suit worth a million of money by the craftiness of his lawyer. The captain was just sitting down to a game of backgammon. "How many of us are there?" said he to me, rising in haste. I saw him bite his nether lip, which he never does except when he is very determined. "Not more than five," I replied. "That's enough," he said; threw his score on the table, left the wine he had ordered untouched, and off we went. The whole time he did not utter a syllable, but walked aloof and alone, only asking us from time to time whether we heard anything, and now and then desiring us to lay our ears to the ground. At last the count came in sight, his carriage heavily laden, the lawyer, seated by his side, an outrider in advance, and two horsemen riding behind. Then you should have seen the man. With a pistol in each hand he ran before us to the carriage,—and the voice with which he thundered, "Halt!" The coachman, who would not halt, was soon toppled from his box; the count fired out of the carriage and missed—the horseman fled. "Your money, rascal!" cried Moor, with his stentorian voice. The count lay like a bullock under the axe: "And are you the rogue who turns justice into a venal prostitute?" The lawyer shook till his teeth chattered again; and a dagger soon stuck in his body,

like a stake in a vineyard. "I have done my part," cried the captain, turning proudly away; "the plunder is your affair." And with this he vanished into the forest.

SPIEGEL. Hum! hum! Brother, what I told you just now remains between ourselves; there is no occasion for his knowing it. You understand me?

RAZ. Yes, yes, I understand!

SPIEGEL. You know the man! He has his own notions! You understand me?

RAZ. Oh, I quite understand.

(*Enter* SCHWARZ *at full speed*).

Who's there? What is the matter? Any travellers in the forest?

SCHWARZ. Quick, quick! Where are the others? Zounds! there you stand gossiping! Don't you know — do you know nothing of it? — that poor Roller——

RAZ. What of him? What of him?

SCHWARZ. He's hanged, that's all, and four others with him——

RAZ. Roller hanged? S'death! when? How do you know?

SCHWARZ. He has been in limbo more than three weeks, and we knew nothing of it. He was brought up for examination three several days, and still we heard nothing. They put him to the rack to make him tell where the captain was to be found — but the brave fellow would not slip. Yesterday he got his sentence, and this morning was dispatched express to the devil——

RAZ. Confound it! Does the captain know?

SCHWARZ. He heard of it only yesterday. He foamed like a wild boar. You know that Roller was always an especial favorite; and then the rack! Ropes and scaling-ladders were conveyed to the prison, but in vain. Moor himself got access to him disguised as a Capuchin monk, and proposed to change clothes with him; but Roller absolutely refused; whereupon the captain swore an oath that made our very flesh creep. He vowed that he would light a funeral pile for him, such as had never yet graced the bier of royalty, one that should burn them all to cinders. I fear for the city. He has long owed it a

grudge for its intolerable bigotry; and you know, when he says "I'll do it," the thing is as good as done.

RAZ. That is true! I know the captain. If he had pledged his word to the devil to go to hell he never would pray again, though half a *pater-noster* would take him to heaven. Alas! poor Roller! — poor Roller!

SPIEGEL. *Memento mori!* But it does not concern me. (*Hums a tune*).

Should I happen to pass the gallows stone,
I shall just take a sight with one eye,
And think to myself, you may dangle alone,
Who now, sir, 's the fool, you or I?

RAZ. (*Jumping up*). Hark! a shot! (*Firing and noise is heard behind the scenes*).

SPIEGEL. Another!

RAZ. And another! The captain!

(*Voices behind the scenes are heard singing*).

The Nürnbergers deem it the wisest plan,
Never to hang till they've caught their man.
Da capo.

SCHWEITZER *and* ROLLER (*behind the scenes*). Holla, ho! Holla, ho!

RAZ. Roller! by all the devils! Roller!

SCHWEITZER *and* ROLLER (*still behind the scenes*). Razman! Schwarz! Spiegelberg! Razman!

RAZ. Roller! Schweitzer! Thunder and lightning! Fire and fury! (*They run towards him.*)

Enter CHARLES VON MOOR (*on horseback*), SCHWEITZER, ROLLER, GRIMM, SCHUFTERLE, *and a troop of* ROBBERS *covered with dust and mud*).

CHARLES (*leaping from his horse*) Liberty! Liberty! — Thou art on terra firma, Roller! Take my horse, Schweitzer, and wash him with wine. (*Throws himself on the ground.*) That was hot work!

RAZ. (*to* ROLLER). Well, by the fires of Pluto! Art thou risen from the wheel?

SCHWARZ. Art thou his ghost? or am I a fool? or art thou really the man?

ROLLER (*still breathless*). The identical — alive — whole. — Where do you think I come from?

SCHWARZ. It would puzzle a witch to tell! The staff was already broken over you.

ROLLER. Ay, that it was, and more than that! I come straightway from the gallows. Only let me get my breath. Schweitzer will tell you all. Give me a glass of brandy! You there too, Spiegelberg! I thought we should have met again in another place. But give me a glass of brandy! my bones are tumbling to pieces. Oh, my captain! Where is my captain?

SCHWARZ. Have patience, man, have patience. Just tell me — say — come, let's hear — how did you escape? In the name of wonder how came we to get you back again? My brain is bewildered. From the gallows, you say?

ROLLER (*swallows a flask of brandy*). Ah, that is capital! that warms the inside! Straight from the gallows, I tell you. You stand there and stare as if that was impossible. I can assure you, I was not more than three paces from that blessed ladder, on which I was to mount to Abraham's bosom — so near, so very near, that I was sold, skin and all, to the dissecting-room! The fee-simple of my life was not worth a pinch of snuff. To the captain I am indebted for breath, and liberty, and life.

SCHWEITZER. It was a trick worth the telling. We had heard the day before, through our spies, that Roller was in the devil's own pickle; and unless the vault of heaven fell in suddenly he would, on the morrow — that is, to-day — go the way of all flesh. Up! says the captain, and follow me — what is not a friend worth? Whether we save him or not, we will at least light him up a funeral pile such as never yet honored royalty; one which shall burn them black and blue. The whole troop was summoned. We sent Roller a trusty messenger, who conveyed the notice to him in a little billet, which he slipped into his porridge ——

ROLLER. I had but small hope of success.

SCHWEITZER. We waited till the thoroughfares were clear. The whole town was out after the sight; equestrians, pedestrians, carriages, all pell-mell; the noise and the gibbet-psalm sounded far and wide. Now, says the captain, light up, light up! We all flew like darts; they set fire to the city in three-and-thirty places at once; threw burning firebrands on the powder-magazine, and into the churches and granaries. *Morbleu!* in less than a quarter of an hour a northeaster, which, like us, must have owed a grudge to the city, came seasonably to our aid, and helped to lift the flames up to the highest gables. Meanwhile we ran up and down the streets like furies, crying, fire! ho! fire! ho! in every direction. There was such howling — screaming — tumult — fire-bells tolling. And presently the powder-magazine blew up into the air with a crash as if the earth were rent in twain, heaven burst to shivers, and hell sunk ten thousand fathoms deeper.

ROLLER. Now my guards looked behind them — there lay the city, like Sodom and Gomorrah — the whole horizon was one mass of fire, brimstone, and smoke; and forty hills echoed and reflected the infernal prank far and wide. A panic seized them all — I take advantage of the moment, and, quick as lightning — my fetters had been taken off, so nearly was my time come — while my guards were looking away petrified, like Lot's wife, I shot off — tore through the crowd — and away! After running some sixty paces I throw off my clothes, plunge into the river, and swim along under water till I think they have lost sight of me. My captain stood ready, with horses and clothes — and here I am. Moor! Moor! I only wish that you may soon get into just such another scrape that I may requite you in like manner.

RAZ. A brutal wish, for which you deserve to be hanged. It was a glorious prank, though.

ROLLER. It was help in need; you cannot judge of it. You should have marched, like me, with a rope round your neck, travelling to your grave in the living body, and seen their horrid sacramental forms and hangman's ceremonies — and then, at every reluctant step, as the struggling feet were thrust forward, to see the infernal

machine, on which I was to be elevated, glaring more and more hideously in the blaze of a noonday sun — and the hangman's rascallions watching for their prey — and the horrible psalm-singing — the cursed twang still rings in my ears — and the screeching hungry ravens, a whole flight of them, who were hovering over the half-rotten carcass of my predecessor. To see all this — ay, more, to have a foretaste of the blessedness which was in store for me! Brother, brother! And then, all of a sudden, the signal of deliverance. It was an explosion as if the vault of heaven were rent in twain. Hark ye, fellows! I tell you, if a man were to leap out of a fiery furnace into a freezing lake he could not feel the contrast half so strongly as I did when I gained the opposite shore.

SPIEGEL. (*Laughs.*) Poor wretch! Well, you have got over it. (*Pledges him*). Here's to a happy regeneration!

ROLLER (*flings away his glass*). No, by all the treasures of Mammon, I should not like to go through it a second time. Death is something more than a harlequin's leap, and its terrors are even worse than death itself.

SPIEGEL. And the powder-magazine leaping into the air! Don't you see it now, Razman? That was the reason the air stunk so, for miles round, of brimstone, as if the whole wardrobe of Moloch was being aired under the open firmament. It was a master-stroke, captain! I envy you for it.

SCHWEITZER. If the town makes it a holiday-treat to see our comrade killed by a baited hog, why the devil should we scruple to sacrifice the city for the rescue of our comrade? And, by the way, our fellows had the extra treat of being able to plunder worse than the old emperor. Tell me, what have you sacked?

ONE OF THE TROOP. I crept into St. Stephen's church during the hubbub, and tore the gold lace from the altar-cloth. The patron saint, thought I to myself, can make gold lace out of packthread.

SCHWEITZER. 'Twas well done. What is the use of such rubbish in a church? They offer it to the Creator, who despises such trumpery, while they leave his creatures

to die of hunger. And you, Sprazeler — where did you throw your net?

A Second. I and Brizal broke into a merchant's store, and have brought stuffs enough with us to serve fifty men.

A Third. I have filched two gold watches and a dozen silver spoons.

Schweitzer. Well done, well done! And we have lighted them a bonfire that will take a fortnight to put out again. And, to get rid of the fire, they must ruin the city with water. Do you know, Schufterle, how many lives have been lost?

Schuf. Eighty-three, they say. The powder-magazine alone blew threescore to atoms.

Charles (*very seriously*). Roller, thou art dearly bought.

Schuf. Bah! bah! What of that? If they had but been men it would have been another matter — but they were babes in swaddling clothes, and shrivelled old nurses that kept the flies from them, and dried-up stove-squatters who could not crawl to the door — patients whining for the doctor, who, with his stately gravity, was marching to the sport. All that had the use of their legs had gone forth in the sight, and nothing remained at home but the dregs of the city.

Charles. Alas for the poor creatures! Sick people, sayest thou, old men and infants?

Schuf. Ay, the devil go with them! And lying-in-women into the bargain; and women far gone with child, who were afraid of miscarrying under the gibbet; and young mothers, who thought the sight might do them a mischief, and mark the gallows upon the foreheads of their unborn babes — poor poets, without a shoe, because their only pair had been sent to the cobbler to mend — and other such vermin, not worth the trouble of mentioning. As I chanced to pass by a cottage I heard a great squalling inside. I looked in; and, when I came to examine, what do you think it was? Why, an infant — a plump and ruddy urchin — lying on the floor under a table which was just beginning to burn. Poor little wretch! said I, you will be cold there, and with that I threw it into the flames ——

CHARLES. Indeed, Schufterle? Then may those flames burn in thy bosom to all eternity! Avaunt, monster! Never let me see thee again in my troop! What! Do you murmur? Do you hesitate? Who dares hesitate when I command? Away with him, I say! And there are others among you ripe for my vengeance. I know thee, Spiegelberg. But I will step in among you ere long, and hold a fearful muster-roll. [*Exeunt, trembling.*

CHARLES (*alone, walking up and down in great agitation*). Hear them not, thou avenger in heaven! How can I avert it? Art thou to blame, great God, if thy engines, pestilence, and famine, and floods, overwhelm the just with the unjust? Who can stay the flame, which is kindled to destroy the hornet's nest, from extending to the blessed harvest? Oh! fie on the slaughter of women, and children, and the sick! How this deed weighs me down! It has poisoned my fairest achievements! There he stands, poor fool, abashed and disgraced in the sight of heaven; the boy that presumed to wield Jove's thunder, and overthrew pigmies when he should have crushed Titans. Go, go! 'tis not for thee, puny son of clay, to wield the avenging sword of sovereign justice! Thou didst fail at thy first essay. Here, then, I renounce the audacious scheme. I go to hide myself in some deep cleft of the earth, where no daylight will be witness of my shame. (*He is about to fly.*)

Enter a ROBBER *hurriedly.*

ROBBER. Look out, captain! There is mischief in the wind! Whole detachments of Bohemian cavalry are scouring the forests. That infernal bailiff must have betrayed us.

Enter more ROBBERS.

2D ROBBER. Captain! captain! they have tracked us! Some thousands of them are forming a cordon round the middle forest.

Enter more ROBBERS *again.*

3D ROBBER. Woe, woe, woe! we are all taken, hanged drawn, and quartered. Thousands of hussars, dragoons,

and chasseurs are mustering on the heights, and guard all the passes. [*Exit* CHARLES VON MOOR.

Enter SCHWEITZER, GRIMM, ROLLER, SCHWARZ, SCHUFTERLE, SPIEGELBERG, RAZMAN, *and the whole troop.*

SCHWEITZER. Ha! Have we routed them out of their feather-beds at last? Come, be jolly, Roller! I have long wished to have a bout with those knights of the bread-basket. Where is the captain? Is the whole troop assembled? I hope we have powder enough?

RAZ. Powder, I believe you; but we are only eighty in all and therefore scarcely one to twenty.

SCHWEITZER. So much the better! And though there were fifty against my great toe-nail — fellows who have waited till we lit the straw under their very seats. Brother, brother, there is nothing to fear. They sell their lives for tenpence; and are we not fighting for our necks? We will pour into them like a deluge, and fire volleys upon their heads like crashes of thunder. But where the devil is the captain.

SPIEGEL. He forsakes us in this extremity. Is there no hope of escape?

SCHWEITZER. Escape?

SPIEGEL. Oh, that I had tarried in Jerusalem!

SCHWEITZER. I wish you were choked in a cesspool, you paltry coward! With defenceless nuns you are a mighty man; but at sight of a pair of fists a confirmed sneak! Now show your courage or you shall be sewn up alive in an ass's hide and baited to death with dogs.

RAZ. The captain! the captain!

Enter CHARLES (*speaking slowly to himself*).

CHARLES. I have allowed them to be hemmed in on every side. Now they must fight with the energy of despair. (*Aloud.*) Now my boys! now for it! We must fight like wounded boars, or we are utterly lost!

SCHWEITZER. Ha! I'll rip them open with my tusks, till their entrails protrude by the yard! Lead on, captain! we will follow you into the very jaws of death.

CHARLES. Charge all your arms! You've plenty of powder, I hope?

SCHWEITZER (*with energy*). Powder? ay, enough to blow the earth up to the moon.

RAZ. Every one of us has five brace of pistols, ready loaded, and three carbines to boot.

CHARLES. Good! good! Now some of you must climb up the trees, or conceal yourselves in the thickets, and some fire upon them in ambush —

SCHWEITZER. That part will suit you, Spiegelberg.

CHARLES. The rest will follow me, and fall upon their flanks like furies.

SCHWEITZER. There will I be!

CHARLES. At the same time let every man make his whistle ring through the forest, and gallop about in every direction, so that our numbers may appear the more formidable. And let all the dogs be unchained, and set on upon their ranks, that they may be broken and dispersed and run in the way of our fire. We three, Roller, Schweitzer, and myself, will fight wherever the fray is hottest.

SCHWEITZER. Masterly! excellent! We will so bewilder them with balls that they shall not know whence the salutes are coming. I have more than once shot away a cherry from the mouth. Only let them come on! (SCHUFTERLE *is pulling* SCHWEITZER; *the latter takes the captain aside, and entreats him in a low voice.*)

CHARLES. Silence!

SCHWEITZER. I entreat you —

CHARLES. Away! Let him have the benefit of his disgrace; it has saved him. He shall not die on the same field with myself, my Schweitzer, and my Roller. Let him change his apparel, and I will say he is a traveller whom I have plundered. Make yourself easy, Schweitzer. Take my word for it he will be hanged yet.

Enter FATHER DOMINIC.

FATHER DOM. (*to himself, starts*). Is this the dragon's nest? With your leave, sirs! I am a servant of the church; and yonder are seventeen hundred men who guard every hair of my head.

SCHWEITZER. Bravo! bravo! Well spoken to keep his courage warm.

CHARLES. Silence, comrade! Will you tell us briefly, good father, what is your errand here?

FATHER DOM. I am delegated by the high justices, on whose sentence hangs life or death — ye thieves — ye incendiaries — ye villains — ye venomous generation of vipers, crawling about in the dark, and stinging in secret — ye refuse of humanity — brood of hell — food for ravens and worms — colonists for the gallows and the wheel —

SCHWEITZER. Dog! a truce with your foul tongue! or ——. (*He holds the butt-end of his gun before* FATHER DOMINIC'S *face.*)

CHARLES. Fie, fie, Schweitzer! You cut the thread of his discourse. He has got his sermon so nicely by heart. Pray go on, sir! — "for the gallows and the wheel?"

FATHER DOM. And thou, their precious captain! — commander-in-chief of cut-purses! — king of sharpers! — Grand Mogul of all the rogues under the sun! — great prototype of that first hellish ringleader who imbued a thousand legions of innocent angels with the flame of rebellion, and drew them down with him into the bottomless pit of damnation! The agonizing cries of bereaved mothers pursue thy footsteps! Thou drinkest blood like water! and thy murderous knife holds men cheaper than air-bubbles!

CHARLES. Very true — exceedingly true! Pray proceed, sir!

FATHER DOM. What do you mean? Very true — exceedingly true! Is that an answer?

CHARLES. How, sir? You were not prepared for that, it seems? Go on — by all means go on. What more were you going to say?

FATHER DOM. (*heated*). Abominable wretch! Avaunt! Does not the blood of a murdered count of the empire cling to thy accursed fingers? Hast thou not, with sacrilegious hands, dared to break into the Lord's sanctuary, and carry off the consecrated vessels of the *sanctissimum?* Hast thou not flung firebrands into our godly city, and brought down the powder-magazine upon the heads of devout Christians? (*Clasps his hands*). Hor-

rible, horrible wickedness! that stinketh in the nostrils of Heaven, and provoketh the day of judgment to burst upon you suddenly! ripe for retribution — rushing headlong to the last trump!

CHARLES. Masterly guesses thus far! But now, sir, to the point! What is it that the right worshipful justices wish to convey to me through you?

FATHER DOM. What you are not worthy to receive. Look around you, incendiary! As far as your eye can reach you are environed by our horsemen — there is no chance of escape. As surely as cherries grow on these oaks, and peaches on these firs, so surely shall you turn your backs upon these oaks and these firs in safety.

CHARLES. Do you hear that, Schweitzer? But go on!

FATHER DOM. Hear, then, what mercy and forbearance justice shows towards such miscreants. If you instantly prostrate yourselves in submission and sue for mercy and forgiveness, then severity itself will relent to compassion, and justice be to thee an indulgent mother. She will shut one eye upon your horrible crimes, and be satisfied — only think! — to let you be broken on the wheel.

SCHWEITZER. Did you hear that, captain? Shall I throttle this well-trained shepherd's cur till the red blood spurts from every pore?

ROLLER. Captain! Fire and fury! Captain! How he bites his lip! Shall I topple this fellow upside down like a ninepin?

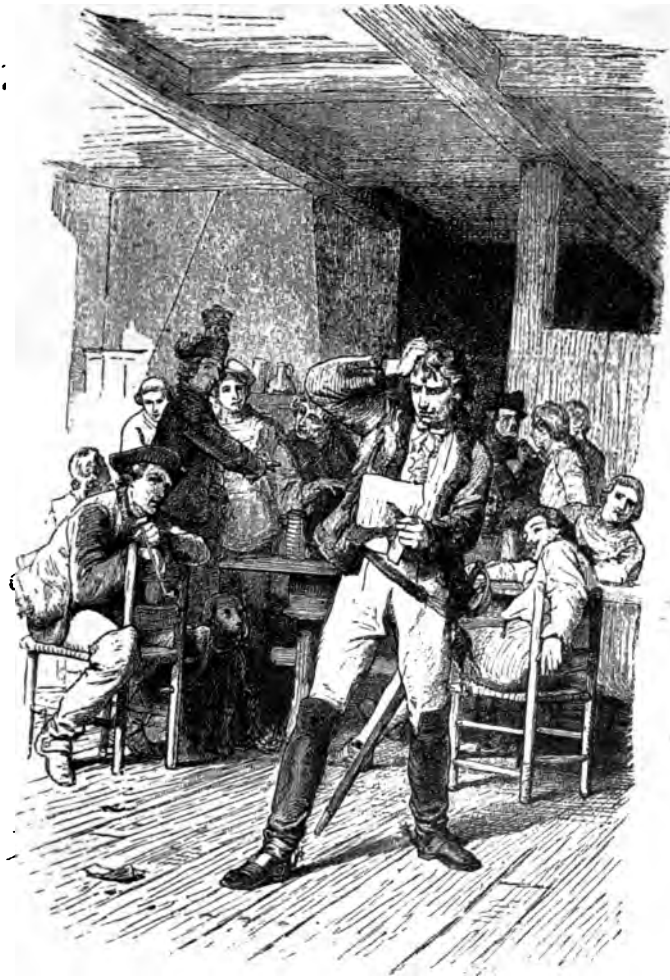
SCHWEITZER. Mine, mine be the job! Let me kneel to you, captain; let me implore you! I beseech you to grant me the delight of pounding him to a jelly! (FATHER DOMINIC *screams.*)

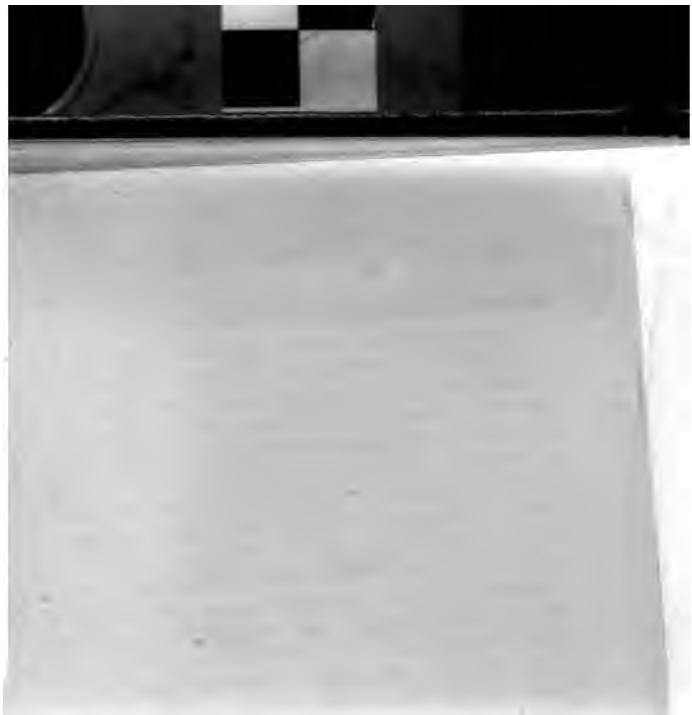
CHARLES. Touch him not! Let no one lay a finger on him! — (*To* FATHER DOMINIC, *drawing his sword.*) Hark ye, sir father! Here stand nine-and-seventy men, of whom I am the captain, and not one of them has been taught to trot at a signal, or learned to dance to the music of artillery; while yonder stand seventeen hundred men grown [illegible] under the musket. But now listen! Thus say[illegible] captain of incendiaries. It is true I have

slain a count of the empire, burnt and plundered the church of St. Dominic, flung firebrands into your bigoted city, and brought down the powder-magazine upon the heads of devout Christians. But that is not all, — I have done more. (*He holds out his right hand.*) Do you observe these four costly rings, one on each finger? Go and report punctually to their worships, on whose sentence hangs life or death, what you shall hear and see. This ruby I drew from the finger of a minister, whom I stretched at the feet of his prince, during the chase. He had fawned himself up from the lowest dregs, to be the first favorite; — the ruin of his neighbor was his ladder to greatness — orphans' tears helped him to mount it. This diamond I took from a lord treasurer, who sold offices of honor and trust to the highest bidder, and drove the sorrowing patriot from his door. This opal I wear in honor of a priest of your cloth, whom I dispatched with my own hand, after he had publicly deplored in his pulpit the waning power of the Inquisition. I could tell you more stories about my rings, but that I repent the words I have already wasted upon you ——

FATHER DOM. O Pharaoh! Pharaoh!

CHARLES. Do you hear it? Did you mark that sigh? Does he not stand there as if he were imploring fire from heaven to descend and destroy this troop of Korah? He pronounces judgment with a shrug of the shoulders, and eternal damnation with a Christian "Alas!" Is it possible for humanity to be so utterly blind? He who has the hundred eyes of Argus to spy out the faults of his brother — can he be so totally blind to his own? They thunder forth from their clouds about gentleness and forbearance, while they sacrifice human victims to the God of love as if he were the fiery Moloch. They preach the love of one's neighbor, while they drive the aged and blind with curses from their door. They rave against covetousness; yet for the sake of gold they have depopulated Peru, and yoked the natives, like cattle, to their chariots. They rack their brains in wonder to account for the creation of a Judas Iscariot, yet the best of them would betray the whole Trinity for ten shekels. Out upon you, Pharisees! ye falsifiers of truth! ye apes of





Deity! You are not ashamed to kneel before crucifixes and altars; you lacerate your backs with thongs, and mortify your flesh with fasting; and with these pitiful mummeries you think, fools as you are, to veil the eyes of Him whom, with the same breath, you address as the Omniscient, just as the great are the most bitterly mocked by those who flatter them while they pretend to hate flatterers. You boast of your honesty and your exemplary conduct; but the God who sees through your hearts would be wroth with Him that made you, were He not the same that had also created the monsters of the Nile. Away with him out of my sight!

FATHER DOM. That such a miscreant should be so proud!

CHARLES. That's not all. Now I will speak proudly. Go and tell the right worshipful justices — who set men's lives upon the cast of a die — I am not one of those thieves who conspire with sleep and midnight, and play the hero and the lordling on a scaling-ladder. What I have done I shall no doubt hereafter be doomed to read in the register of heaven; but with his miserable ministers of earth I will waste no more words. Tell your masters that my trade is retribution — vengeance my occupation! (*He turns his back upon him.*)

FATHER DOM. Then you despise mercy and forbearance? — Be it so, I have done with you. (*Turning to the troop.*) Now then, sirs, you shall hear what the high powers direct me to make known to you! — If you will instantly deliver up to me this condemned malefactor, bound hand and foot, you shall receive a full pardon — your enormities shall be entirely blotted out, even from memory. The holy church will receive you, like lost sheep, with renewed love, into her maternal bosom, and the road to honorable employment shall be open to you all. (*With a triumphant smile.*) Now sir! how does your majesty relish this? Come on! bind him! and you are free!

CHARLES. Do you hear that? Do you hear it? What startles you? Why do you hesitate? They offer you freedom — you that are already their prisoners. They grant you your lives, and that is no idle pretence, for it

is clear you are already condemned felons. They promise you honor and emolument; and, on the other hand, what can you hope for, even should you be victorious to-day, but disgrace, and curses, and persecution? They ensure you the pardon of Heaven; you that are actually damned. There is not a single hair on any of you that is not already bespoke in hell. Do you still hesitate? are you staggered? Is it so difficult, then, to choose between heaven and hell?—Do put in a word, father!

FATHER DOM. (*aside.*) Is the fellow crazy?—(*Aloud*). Perhaps you are afraid that this is a trap to catch you alive?—Read it yourselves! Here is the general pardon fully signed. (*He hands a paper to* SCHWEITZER.) Can you still doubt?

CHARLES. Only see! only see! What more can you require? Signed with their own hands! It is mercy beyond all bounds! Or are you afraid of their breaking their word, because you have heard it said that no faith need be kept with traitors? Dismiss that fear! Policy alone would constrain them to keep their word, even though it should merely have been pledged to old Nick. Who hereafter would believe them? How could they trade with it a second time? I would take my oath upon it that they mean it sincerely. They know that I am the man who has goaded you on and incited you; they believe you innocent. They look upon your crimes as so many juvenile errors—exuberances of rashness. It is I alone they want. I must pay the penalty. Is it not so, father?

FATHER DOM. What devil incarnate is it that speaks out of him? Of course it is so—of course. The fellow turns my brain.

CHARLES. What! no answer yet? Do you think it possible to cut your way through yon phalanx? Only look round you! just look round! You surely do not reckon upon that; that were indeed a childish conceit! Or do you flatter yourselves that you will fall like heroes, because you saw that I rejoiced in the prospect of the fight? Oh, do not console yourself with the thought! You are not MOOR. You are miserable thieves! wretched tools of my great designs! despicable as the rope in the

hand of the hangman! No! no! Thieves do not fall like heroes. Life must be the hope of thieves, for something fearful has to follow. Thieves may well be allowed to quake at the fear of death. Hark! Do you hear their horns echoing through the forest? See there! how their glittering sabres threaten! What! are you still irresolute? are you mad? are you insane? It is unpardonable. Do you imagine I shall thank you for my life? I disdain your sacrifice!

FATHER DOM. (*in utter amazement*). I shall go mad! I must be gone! Was the like ever heard of?

CHARLES. Or are you afraid that I shall stab myself, and so by suicide put an end to the bargain, which only holds good if I am given up alive? No, comrades! that is a vain fear. Here, I fling away my dagger, and my pistols, and this phial of poison, which might have been a treasure to me. I am so wretched that I have lost the power even over my own life. What! still in suspense? Or do you think, perhaps, that I shall stand on my defence when you try to seize me? See here! I bind my right hand to this oak-branch; now I am quite defenceless, a child may overpower me. Who is the first to desert his captain in the hour of need?

ROLLER (*with wild energy*). And what though hell encircle us with ninefold coils! (*Brandishing his sword.*) Who is the coward that will betray his captain?

SCHWEITZER (*tears the pardon and flings the pieces into* FATHER DOMINIC'S *face*). Pardon be in our bullets! Away with thee, rascal! Tell your senate that you could not find a single traitor in all Moor's camp. Huzza! Huzza! Save the captain!

ALL (*shouting*). Huzza! Save the captain! Save him! Save our noble captain!

CHARLES (*releasing his hand from the tree, joyfully*). Now we are free, comrades! I feel a host in this single arm! Death or liberty! At the least they shall not take a man of us alive!

[*They sound the signal for attack; noise and tumult. Exeunt with drawn swords.*]

ACT III.

SCENE I. — AMELIA *in the garden, playing the guitar.*

Bright as an angel from Walhalla's hall,
More beautiful than aught of earth was he!
Heaven-mild his look, as sunbeams when they fall,
Reflected from a calm cerulean sea.

His warm embrace — oh, ravishing delight!
With heart to heart the fiery pulses danced —
Our every sense wrap'd in ecstatic night —
Our souls in blissful harmony entranced.

His kisses — oh, what paradise of feeling!
E'en as two flames which round each other twine —
Or flood of seraph harp-tones gently stealing
In one soft swell, away to realms divine!

They rushed, commingled, melted, soul in soul!
Lips glued to lips, with burning tremor bound!
Cold earth dissolved, and love without control
Absorbed all sense of worldly things around!

He's gone! — forever gone! Alas! in vain
My bleeding heart in bitter anguish sighs;
To me is left alone this world of pain,
And mortal life in hopeless sorrow dies.

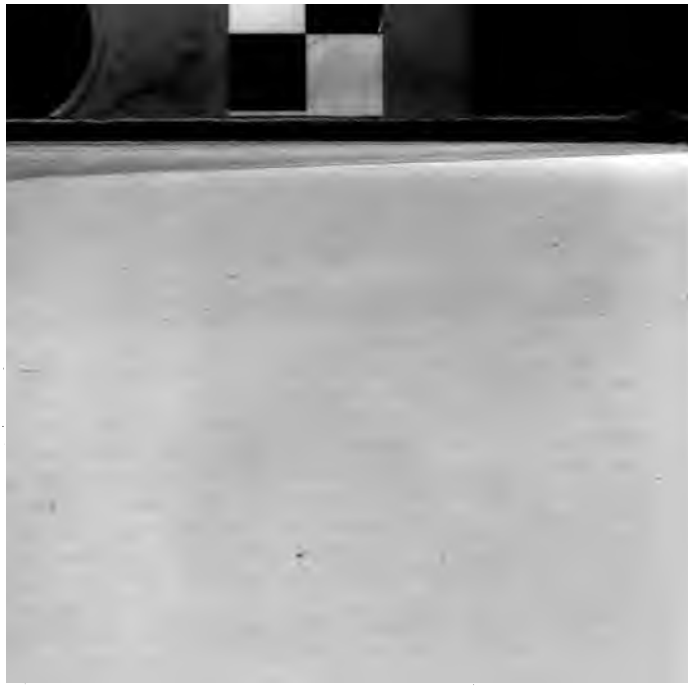
Enter FRANCIS.

FRANCIS. Here again already, perverse enthusiast? You stole away from the festive banquet, and marred the mirthful pleasures of my guests.

AMELIA. 'Tis pity, truly, to mar such innocent pleasures! Shame on them! The funeral knell that tolled over your father's grave must still be ringing in your ears ——

FRANCIS. Wilt thou sorrow, then, forever? Let the dead sleep in peace, and do thou make the living happy! I come ——

AMELIA. And when do you go again?



FRANCIS. Alas! Look not on me thus sorrowfully! You wound me, Amelia. I come to tell you——

AMELIA. To tell me, I suppose, that Francis von Moor has become lord and master here.

FRANCIS. Precisely so; that is the very subject on which I wish to communicate with you. Maximilian von Moor is gone to the tomb of his ancestors. I am master. But I wish to be so in the fullest sense, Amelia. You know what you have been to our house; always regarded as Moor's daughter, his love for you will survive even death itself; that, assuredly, you will never forget?

AMELIA. Never, never! Who could be so unfeeling as to drown the memory of it in festive banqueting?

FRANCIS. It is your duty to repay the love of the father to his sons; and Charles is dead. Ha! you are struck with amazement; dizzy with the thought! To be sure 'tis a flattering and an elating prospect which may well overpower the pride of a woman. Francis tramples under foot the hopes of the noblest and the richest, and offers his heart, his hand, and with them all his gold, his castles, and his forests to a poor, and, but for him, destitute orphan. Francis — the feared — voluntarily declares himself Amelia's slave——

AMELIA. Why does not a thunderbolt cleave the impious tongue which utters the criminal proposal! Thou hast murdered my beloved Charles; and shall Amelia, his betrothed, call thee husband? Thou?——

FRANCIS. Be not so violent, most gracious princess! It is true that Francis does not come before you like a whining Celadon — 'tis true he has not learned, like a lovesick swain of Arcadia, to sigh forth his amorous plaints to the echo of caves and rocks. Francis speaks — and, when not answered, commands!

AMELIA. Commands? thou reptile! Command me? And what if I laughed your command to scorn?——

FRANCIS. That you will hardly do. There are means, too, which I know of, admirably adapted to humble the pride of a capricious, stubborn girl — cloisters and walls!

AMELIA. Excellent! delightful! to be forever secure within cloisters and walls from thy basilisk look, and to

have abundant leisure to think and dream of Charles. Welcome with your cloister! welcome your walls!

FRANCIS. Ha! Is that it? Beware! Now you have taught me the art of tormenting you. The sight of me shall, like a fiery-haired fury, drive out of your head these eternal phantasies of Charles. Francis shall be the dread phantom ever lurking behind the image of your beloved, like the fiend-dog that guards the subterranean treasure. I will drag you to church by the hair, and sword in hand wring the nuptial vow from your soul. By main force will I ascend your virginal couch, and storm your haughty modesty with still greater haughtiness.

AMELIA (*gives him a slap in the face*). Then take that first by way of dowry!

FRANCIS. Ha! I will be tenfold, and twice tenfold revenged for this! My wife! No, that honor you shall never enjoy. You shall be my mistress, my strumpet! The honest peasant's wife shall point her finger at you as she passes you in the street. Ay, gnash your teeth as fiercely as you please — scatter fire and destruction from your eyes — the fury of a woman piques my fancy — it makes you more beautiful, more tempting. Come, this resistance will garnish my triumph, and your struggles give zest to my embraces. Come, come to my chamber — I burn with desire. Come this instant. (*Attempts to drag her away*).

AMELIA (*falls on his neck*). Forgive me, Francis! *As he is about to clasp her in his arms, she suddenly draws the sword at his side, and hastily disengages herself*). Do you see now, miscreant, how I am able to deal with you? I am only a woman, but a woman enraged. Dare to approach, and this steel shall strike your lascivious heart to the core — the spirit of my uncle will guide my hand. Avaunt, this instant! (*She drives him away*).

Ah! how different I feel! Now I breathe again — I feel strong as the snorting steed, ferocious as the tigress when she springs upon the ruthless destroyer of her cubs. To a cloister, did he say? I thank thee for the happy thought! Now has disappointed love found a place of

refuge — the cloister — the Redeemer's bosom is the sanctuary of disappointed love. (*She is on the point of going*).*

* In the acting edition the following scene occurs between Hermann and Francis, immediately before that with Amelia. As Schiller himself thought this among the happiest of his additions, and regretted that it was "entirely and very unfortunately overlooked in the first edition," it seems desirable to introduce it here, as well as the soliloquy immediately following, which has acquired some celebrity.

SCENE VIII.

Enter HERMANN.

FRANCIS. Ha! Welcome, my Euryalus! My prompt and trusty instrument!

HERMANN (*abruptly and peevishly*). You sent for me, count — why?

FRANCIS. That you might put the seal to your master-piece.

HERMANN (*gruffly*). Indeed?

FRANCIS. Give the picture its finishing touch.

HERMANN. Poh! Poh!

FRANCIS (*startled*). Shall I call the carriage? We'll arrange the business during the drive?

HERMANN (*scornfully*). No ceremony, sir, if you please. For any business we may have to arrange there is room enough between these four walls. At all events I'll just say a few words to you by way of preface, which may save your lungs some unnecessary exertion.

FRANCIS (*reservedly*). Hum! And what may those words be?

HERMANN (*with bitter irony*). "You shall have Amelia — and t' at from my hand——"

FRANCIS (*with astonishment*). Hermann!

HERMANN (*as before, with his back turned on* FRANCIS). "Amelia will become the plaything of my will — and you may easily guess the rest — in short, all will go as we wish." [*Breaks into an indignant laugh, and then turns haughtily to* FRANCIS.) Now, Count von Moor, what have you to say to me?

FRANCIS (*evasively*). To thee? Nothing. I had something to say to Hermann.

HERMANN, No evasion. Why was I sent for hither? Was it to be your dupe a second time, and to hold the ladder for a thief to mount? to sell my soul for a hangman's fee? What else did you want with me?

FRANCIS (*as if recollecting*). Ha! It just occurs to me! We must not forget the main point. Did not my steward mention it to you? I wanted to talk to you about the dowry.

HERMANN. This is mere mockery, sir; or, if not mockery, something worse. Moor, take care of yourself — beware how you kindle my fury, Moor. We are alone! And I have still an unsullied name to stake against yours! Trust not the devil, although he be of your own raising.

FRANCIS (*with dignity*). Does this deportment become thee towards thy sovereign and gracious master? Tremble, slave!

HERMANN (*ironically*). For fear of your displeasure, I suppose? What signifies your displeasure to a man who is at war with himself? Fie, Moor. I already abhor you as a villain; let me not despise you for a fool. I can open graves, and restore the dead to life! Which of us now is the slave?

FRANCIS (*in a conciliating tone*). Come, my good friend, be discreet, and do not prove faithless.

HERMANN. Pshaw! To expose a wretch like you is here the best discretion — to keep faith with you would be an utter want of sense. Faith? with whom? Faith with the prince of liars? Oh, I shudder at the thought of such faith. A very little timely faithlessness would have almost made a saint of me. But patience! patience! Revenge is cunning in resources.

FRANCIS. Ah, by-the-by, I just remember. You lately lost a purse with a hundred louis in it, in this apartment. I had almost forgotten it. Here, my good friend! take back what belongs to you. (*Offers him a purse*).

Enter HERMANN, *timidly.*

HERMANN. Lady Amelia! Lady Amelia!

AMELIA. Unhappy man! why dost thou disturb me?

HERMANN. I must throw this weight from my soul before it drags it down to hell. (*Falls down before her.*) Pardon! pardon! I have grievously injured you, Lady Amelia!

AMELIA. Arise! depart! I will hear nothing. (*Going.*)

HERMANN (*detaining her*). No; stay! In the name of Heaven! In the name of the Eternal! You must know all!

AMELIA. Not another word. I forgive you. Depart in peace. (*In the act of going.*)

HERMANN. Only one word — listen; it will restore all your peace of mind.

AMELIA (*turning back and looking at him with astonishment*). How, friend? Who in heaven or on earth can restore my peace of mind?

HERMANN (*throws it scornfully at his feet*). A curse on your Judas bribe! It is the earnest-money of hell. You once before thought to make my poverty a pander to my conscience — but you were mistaken, count! egregiously mistaken. That purse of gold came most opportunely — to maintain certain persons.

FRANCIS (*terrified*). Hermann! Hermann! Let me not suspect certain things of you. Should you have done anything contrary to my instructions -- you would be the vilest of traitors!

HERMANN (*exultingly*). Should I? Should I really? Well then, count, let me give you a little piece of information! (*Significantly.*) I will fatten up your infamy, and add fuel to your doom. The book of your misdeeds shall one day be served up as a banquet, and all the world be invited to partake of it. (*Contemptuously.*) Do you understand me now, my most sovereign, gracious, and excellent master?

FRANCIS (*starts up, losing all command of himself*). Ha! Devil! Deceitful impostor! (*Striking his forehead.*) To think that I should stake my fortune on the caprice of an idiot! That was madness! (*Throws himself, in great excitement, on a couch.*)

HERMANN (*whistles through his fingers*). Wheugh! the biter bit! ——

FRANCIS (*biting his lip*). But it is true, and ever will be true — that there is no thread so feebly spun, or which snaps asunder so readily, as that which weaves the bands of guilt! ——

HERMANN. Gently! Gently! Are angels, then, superseded, that devils turn moralists?

FRANCIS (*starts up abruptly; to* HERMANN *with a malignant laugh*). And certain persons will no doubt acquire much honor by making the discovery?

HERMANN (*clapping his hands*). Masterly! Inimitable! You play your part to admiration! First you lure the credulous fool into the slough, and then chuckle at the success of your malice, and cry "Woe be to you, sinner!" (*Laughing and clenching his teeth.*) Oh, how cleverly these imps of the devil manœuvre. But, count (*clapping him on the shoulder*), you have not yet got your lesson quite perfect -- by Heavens! You first learn what the losing gamester will hazard. Set fire to the powder-magazine, says the pirate, and blow all to hell — both friend and foe!

HERMANN. One word from my lips can do it. Hear me!

AMELIA (*seizing his hand with compassion*). Good sir! Can one word from thy lips burst asunder the portals of eternity?

HERMANN. (*rising*). Charles lives!

AMELIA (*screaming*). Wretch!

HERMANN. Even so. And one word more. Your uncle——

AMELIA. (*rushing upon him*). Thou liest!

HERMANN. Your uncle——

AMELIA. Charles lives?

HERMANN. And your uncle——

AMELIA. Charles lives?

HERMANN. And your uncle too — betray me not! (HERMANN *runs off*.)

AMELIA (*stands a long while like one petrified; after which she starts up wildly, and rushes after* HERMANN). Charles lives!

FRANCIS (*runs to the wall, and takes down a pistol*). Here is treason! I must be resolute——

HERMANN (*draws a pistol as quickly from his pocket, and presents it at him*). Don't trouble yourself -- one must be prepared for everything with you.

FRANCIS (*lets the pistol fall, and throws himself on the sofa in great confusion*). Only keep my council till — till I have collected my thoughts——

HERMANN. I suppose till you have hired a dozen assassins to silence my tongue forever! Is it not so! But (*in his ear*) the secret is committed to paper, which my heirs will publish. [*Exit.*

SCENE IX.

FRANCIS, *solus*.

Francis! Francis! Francis! What is all this? Where was thy courage? where thy once so fertile wit? Woe! Woe! And to be betrayed by thy own instruments! The pillars of my good fortune are tottering to their fall, the fences are broken down, and the raging enemy is already bursting in upon me. Well! this calls for some bold and sudden resolve! What if I went in person — and secretly plunged this sword in his body? A wounded man is but a child. Quick! I'll do it. (*He walks with a resolute step to the end of the stage, but stops suddenly as if overcome by sensations of horror*). Who are these gliding behind me? (*Rolling his eyes fearfully.*) Faces such as I have never yet beheld. What hideous yells do I hear! I feel that I have courage — courage! oh yes, to overflowing! But if a mirror should betray me? or my shadow! or the whistling of the murderous stroke! Ugh! Ugh! How my hair bristles! A shudder creeps through my frame. (*He lets a poigniard fall from under his clothes.*) I am no coward — perhaps somewhat too tender-hearted. Yes! that is it! These are the last struggles of expiring virtue. I revere them. I should indeed be a monster were I to become the murderer of my own brother. No!—no! no! That thought be far from me! Let me cherish this vestige of humanity. I will not murder. Nature, thou hast conquered. I still feel something here that seems like — affection. He shall live. *Exit.*

SCENE II.— *Country near the Danube.*

THE ROBBERS (*encamped on a rising ground, under trees, their horses are grazing below.*)

CHARLES. Here must I lie (*throwing himself upon the ground*). I feel as if my limbs were all shattered. My tongue is as dry as a potsherd (SCHWEITZER *disappears unperceived.*) I would ask one of you to bring me a handful of water from that stream, but you are all tired to death.

SCHWARZ. Our wine-flasks too are all empty.

CHARLES. See how beautiful the harvest looks! The trees are breaking with the weight of their fruit. The vines are full of promise.

GRIMM. It is a fruitful year.

CHARLES. Do you think so? Then at least one toil in the world will be repaid. One? Yet in the night a hailstorm may come and destroy it all.

SCHWARZ. That is very possible. It all may be destroyed an hour before the reaping.

CHARLES. Just what I say. All will be destroyed. Why should man prosper in that which he has in common with the ant, while he fails in that which places him on a level with the gods. Or is this the aim and limit of his destiny?

SCHWARZ. I know not.

CHARLES. Thou hast said well; and wilt have done better, if thou never seekest to know. Brother, I have looked on men, their insect cares and their giant projects, — their god-like plans and mouse-like occupations, their intensely eager race after happiness — one trusting to the fleetness of his horse, — another to the nose of his ass, — a third to his own legs; this checkered lottery of life, in which so many stake their innocence and their heaven to snatch a prize, and, — blanks are all they draw — for they find, too late, that there was no prize in the wheel. It is a drama, brother, enough to bring tears into your eyes, while it shakes your sides with laughter.

SCHWARZ. How gloriously the sun is setting yonder!

CHARLES (*absorbed in the scene*). So dies a hero! Worthy of adoration!

SCHWARZ. You seem deeply moved.

CHARLES. When I was but a boy — it was my darling thought to live like him, like him to die — (*with suppressed grief.*) It was a boyish thought!

GRIMM. It was, indeed.

CHARLES. There was a time — (*pressing his hat down upon his face*). I would be alone, comrades.

SCHWARZ. Moor! Moor! Why, what the deuce! How his color changes.

GRIMM. By all the devils! What ails him? Is he ill?

CHARLES. There was a time when I could not have slept had I forgotten my evening prayers ——

GRIMM. Are you beside yourself? Would you let the remembrances of your boyish years school you now?

CHARLES (*lays his head upon the breast of* GRIMM). Brother! Brother!

GRIMM. Come! Don't play the child — I pray you ——

CHARLES. Oh that I were — that I were again a child!

GRIMM. Fie! fie!

SCHWARZ. Cheer up! Behold this smiling landscape — this delicious evening!

CHARLES. Yes, friends, this world is very lovely —

SCHWARZ. Come, now, that was well said.

CHARLES. This earth so glorious! —

GRIMM. Right — right — I love to hear you talk thus.

CHARLES. (*sinking back*). And I so hideous in this lovely world — a monster on this glorious earth!

GRIMM. Oh dear! oh dear!

CHARLES. My innocence! give me back my innocence! Behold, every living thing is gone forth to bask in the cheering rays of the vernal sun — why must I alone inhale the torments of hell out of the joys of heaven? All are so happy, all so united in brotherly love, by the spirit of peace! The whole world one family, and one Father above — but He not my father! I alone the outcast, I alone rejected from the ranks of the blessed — the sweet name of child is not for me — never for me the soul-thrilling glance of her I love — never, never the bosom friend's

embrace — (*starting back wildly*) — surrounded by murderers — hemmed in by hissing vipers — riveted to vice with iron fetters — whirling headlong on the frail reed of sin to the gulf of perdition — amid the blooming flowers of a glad world, a howling Abaddon!

SCHWARZ (*to the others*). How strange! I never saw him thus before.

CHARLES (*with melancholy*). Oh, that I might return again to my mother's womb. That I might be born a beggar! I should desire no more, — no more, oh heaven! — but that I might be like one of those poor laborers! Oh, I would toil till the blood streamed down my temples — to buy myself the luxury of one guiltless slumber — the blessedness of a single tear.

GRIMM (*to the others*). A little patience — the paroxysm is nearly over.

CHARLES. There was a time when my tears flowed so freely. Oh, those days of peace! Dear home of my fathers — ye verdant halcyon vales! O all ye Elysian scenes of my childhood! — will you never return? — will your delicious breezes never cool my burning bosom? Mourn with me, Nature, mourn! They will never return! never will their delicious breezes cool my burning bosom! They are gone! gone! irrevocably gone!

Enter SCHWEITZER *with water in his hat.*

SCHWEITZER (*offering him water in his hat*). Drink, captain; here is plenty of water, and cold as ice.

SCHWARZ. You are bleeding! What have you been doing?

SCHWEITZER. A bit of a freak, you fool, which had well-nigh cost me two legs and a neck. As I was frolicking along the steep sandbanks of the river, plump, in a moment, the whole concern slid from under me, and I after it, some ten fathoms deep; — there I lay, and, as I was recovering my five senses, lo and behold, the most sparkling water in the gravel! Not so much amiss this time, said I to myself, for the caper I have cut. The captain will be sure to relish a drink.

CHARLES (*returns him the hat and wipes his face*). But

you are covered with mud, Schweitzer, and we can't see the scar which the Bohemian horseman marked on your forehead — your water was good, Schweitzer — and those scars become you well.

SCHWEITZER. Bah! There's room for a score or two more yet.

CHARLES. Yes, boys — it was a hot day's work — and only one man lost. Poor Roller! he died a noble death. A marble monument would be erected to his memory had he died in any other cause than mine. Let this suffice. (*He wipes the tears from his eyes.*) How many, did you say, of the enemy were left on the field?

SCHWEITZER. A hundred and sixty huzzars, ninety-three dragoons, some forty chasseurs — in all about three hundred.

CHARLES. Three hundred for one! Every one of you has a claim upon this head. (*He bares his head.*) By this uplifted dagger! As my soul liveth, I will never forsake you!

SCHWEITZER. Swear not! You do not know but you may yet be happy, and repent your oath.

CHARLES. By the ashes of my Roller! I will never forsake you.

Enter KOSINSKY.

KOSINSKY (*aside*). Hereabouts, they say, I shall find him. Ha! What faces are these? Should they be — if these — they must be the men! Yes, 'tis they, 'tis they! I will accost them.

SCHWARZ. Take heed! Who goes there?

KOSINSKY. Pardon, sirs. I know not whether I am going right or wrong.

CHARLES. Suppose right, whom do you take us to be?

KOSINSKY. Men!

SCHWEITZER. I wonder, captain, whether we have given any proof of that?

KOSINSKY. I am in search of men who can look death in the face, and let danger play around them like a tamed snake; who prize liberty above life or honor; whose very names, hailed by the poor and the oppressed, appal the boldest, and make tyrants tremble.

SCHWEITZER (*to the* Captain). I like that fellow. Hark ye, friend! You have found your men.

KOSINSKY. So I should think, and I hope soon to find them brothers. You can direct me to the man I am looking for. 'Tis your captain, the great Count von Moor.

SCHWEITZER (*taking him warmly by the hand*). There's a good lad. You and I must be chums.

CHARLES (*coming nearer*). Do you know the captain?

KOSINSKY. Thou art he! — in those features — that air — who can look at thee, and doubt it? (*Looks earnestly at him for some time*). I have always wished to see the man with the annihilating look, as he sat on the ruins of Carthage.* That wish is realised.

SCHWEITZER. A mettlesome fellow!

CHARLES. And what brings you to me?

KOSINSKY. Oh, captain! my more than cruel fate. I have suffered shipwrecked on the stormy ocean of the world; I have seen all my fondest hopes perish; and nought remains to me but a remembrance of the bitter past, which would drive me to madness, were I not to drown it by directing my energies to new objects.

CHARLES. Another arraignment of the ways of Providence! Proceed.

KOSINSKY. I became a soldier. Misfortune still followed me in the army. I made a venture to the Indies, and my ship was shivered on the rocks — nothing but frustrated hopes! At last, I heard tell far and wide of your valiant deeds, incendiarisms, as they called them, and I came straightway hither, a distance of thirty leagues, firmly resolved to serve under you, if you will deign to accept my services. I entreat thee, noble captain, refuse me not!

SCHWEITZER (*with a leap into the air*). Hurrah! Hurrah! Our Roller replaced ten hundred-fold! An out-and-out brother cut-throat for our troop.

CHARLES. What is your name?

KOSINSKY. Kosinsky.

CHARLES. What? Kosinsky! And do you know that you are but a thoughtless boy, and are embarking on

* Alluding to Caius Marius. See *Plutarch's Lives*.

the most weighty passage of your life as heedlessly as a giddy girl? You will find no playing at bowls or nine-pins here, as you probably imagine.

KOSINSKY. I understand you, sir. I am, 'tis true, but four-and-twenty years old, but I have seen swords glittering, and have heard balls whistling around me.

CHARLES. Indeed, young gentleman? And was it for this that you took fencing lessons, to run poor travellers through the body for the sake of a dollar, or stab women in the back? Go! go! You have played truant to your nurse because she shook the rod at you.

SCHWEITZER. Why, what the devil, captain! what are you about? Do you mean to turn away such a Hercules? Does he not look as if he could baste Maréchal Saxe across the Ganges with a ladle?

CHARLES. Because your silly schemes miscarry, you come here to turn rogue and assassin! Murder, boy, do you know the meaning of that word? You may have slumbered in peace after cropping a few poppy-heads, but to have a murder on your soul ——

KOSINSKY. All the murders you bid me commit be upon my head!

CHARLES. What! Are you so nimble-witted? Do you take measure of a man to catch him by flattery? How do you know that I am not haunted by terrific dreams, or that I shall not tremble on my death-bed? How much have you already done of which you have considered the responsibility?

KOSINSKY. Very little, I must confess; excepting this long journey to you, noble count ——

CHARLES. Has your tutor let the story of Robin Hood get into your hands? Such careless rascals ought to be sent to the galleys. And has it heated your childish fancy, and infected you with the mania of becoming a hero? Are you thirsting for honor and fame? Would you buy immortality by deeds of incendiarism? Mark me, ambitious youth! No laurel blooms for the incendiary. No triumph awaits the victories of the bandit — nothing but curses, danger, death, disgrace. Do you see the gibbet yonder on the hill?

SPIEGEL (*going up and down indignantly*). Oh,

how stupid! How abominably, unpardonably stupid! That's not the way. I went to work in a very different manner.

KOSINSKY. What should he fear, who fears not death?

CHARLES. Bravo! Capital! You have made good use of your time at school; you have got your Seneca cleverly by heart. But, my good friend, you will not be able with these fine phrases to cajole nature in the hour of suffering; they will never blunt the biting tooth of remorse. Ponder on it well, my son! (*Takes him by the hand.*) I advise you as a father. First learn the depth of the abyss before you plunge headlong into it. If in this world you can catch a single glimpse of happiness — moments may come when you — awake, — and then — it may be too late. Here you step out as it were beyond the pale of humanity — you must either be more than human or a demon. Once more, my son! if but a single spark of hope glimmer for you elsewhere, fly this fearful compact, where nought but despair enters, — unless a higher wisdom has so ordained it. You may deceive yourself — believe me, it is possible to mistake that for strength of mind which in reality is nothing more than despair. Take my counsel! mine! and depart quickly.

KOSINSKY. No! I will not stir. If my entreaties fail to move you, hear but the story of my misfortunes. And then you will force the dagger into my hand as eagerly as you now seek to withhold it. Seat yourselves awhile on the grass and listen.

CHARLES. I will hear your story.

KOSINSKY. Know, then, that I am a Bohemian nobleman. By the early death of my father I became master of large possessions. The scene of my domain was a paradise; for it contained an angel — a maid adorned with all the charms of blooming youth, and chaste as the light of heaven. But to whom do I talk of this? It falls unheeded on your ears — ye never loved, ye were never beloved ——

SCHWEITZER. Gently, gently! The captain grows red as fire.

CHARLES. No more! I'll hear you some other time — to-morrow, — or by-and-by, or — after I have seen blood.

KOSINSKY. Blood, blood! Only hear on! Blood will fill your whole soul. She was of citizen birth, a German — but her look dissolved all the prejudices of aristocracy. With blushing modesty she received the bridal ring from my hand, and on the morrow I was to have led my AMELIA to the altar. (CHARLES *rises suddenly.*) In the midst of my intoxicating dream of happiness, and while our nuptials were preparing, an express summoned me to court. I obeyed the summons. Letters were shown me which I was said to have written, full of treasonable matter. I grew scarlet with indignation at such malice; they deprived me of my sword, thrust me into prison, and all my senses forsook me.

SCHWEITZER. And in the meantime — go on! I already scent the game.

KOSINSKY. There I lay a whole month, and knew not what was taking place. I was full of anxiety for my Amelia, who I was sure would suffer the pangs of death every moment in apprehension of my fate. At last the prime minister makes his appearance, — congratulates me in honey-sweet words on the establishment of my innocence, — reads to me a warrant of discharge, — and returns me my sword. I flew in triumph to my castle, to the arms of my Amelia, but she had disappeared! She had been carried off, it was said, at midnight, no one knew whither, and no eye had beheld her since. A suspicion instantly flashed across my mind. I rushed to the capital — I made inquiries at court — all eyes were upon me, — no one would give me information. At last I discovered her through a grated window of the palace — she threw me a small billet.

SCHWEITZER. Did I not say so?

KOSINSKY. Death and destruction! The contents were these! They had given her the choice between seeing me put to death, and becoming the mistress of the prince. In the struggle between honor and love she chose the latter, and (*with a bitter smile*) I was saved.

SCHWEITZER. And what did you do then?

KOSINSKY. Then I stood like one transfixed with a thunderbolt! Blood was my first thought, blood my last! Foaming at the mouth, I ran to my quarters, armed myself with a two-edged sword, and, with all haste, rushed to the minister's house, for he — he alone — had been the fiendish pander. They must have observed me in the street, for, as I went up, I found all the doors fastened. I searched, I enquired. He was gone, they said, to the prince. I went straight thither, but nobody there would know anything about him. I return, force the doors, find the base wretch, and was on the point —— when five or six servants suddenly rushed on me from behind, and wrenched the weapon from my hands.

SCHWEITZER (*stamping the ground*). And so the fellow got off clear, and you lost your labor?

KOSINSKY. I was arrested, accused, criminally prosecuted, degraded, and — mark this — transported beyond the frontier, as a special favor. My estates were confiscated to the minister, and Amelia remained in the clutches of the tiger, where she weeps and mourns away her life, while my vengeance must keep a fast, and crouch submissively to the yoke of despotism.

SCHWEITZER (*rising and whetting his sword*). That is grist to our mill, captain! There is something here for the incendiaries!

CHARLES (*who has been walking up and down in violent agitation, with a sudden start to the* ROBBERS). I must see her. Up! collect your baggage — you'll stay with us, Kosinsky! Quick, pack up!

THE ROBBERS. Where to? What?

CHARLES. Where to? Who asks that question? (*Fiercely to* SCHWEITZER) Traitor, wouldst thou keep me back? But by the hope for heaven! ——

SCHWEITZER. I, a traitor? Lead on to hell and I will follow you!

CHARLES (*falling on his neck*). Dear brother! thou shalt follow me. She weeps, she mourns away her life. Up! quickly! all of you! to Franconia! In a week we must be there. [*Exeunt.*

ACT IV.

SCENE I.— *Rural scenery in the neighborhood of* CHARLES VON MOOR'S *castle.*

CHARLES VON MOOR, KOSINSKY, *at a distance.*

CHARLES. Go forward, and announce me. You remember what you have to say?

KOSINSKY. You are Count Brand, you come from Mecklenburg. I am your groom. Do not fear, I shall take care to play my part. Farewell! [*Exit*

CHARLES. Hail to thee, Earth of my Fatherland (*kisses the earth.*) Heaven of my Fatherland! Sun of my Fatherland! Ye meadows and hills, ye streams and woods! Hail, hail to ye all! How deliciously the breezes are wafted from my native hills? What streams of balmy perfume greet the poor fugitive! Elysium Realms of poetry! Stay, Moor, thy foot has strayed into a holy temple. (*Comes nearer.*)

See there! the old swallow-nests in the castle yard! — and the little garden-gate! — and this corner of the fence where I so often watched in ambuscade to teaze old Towzer! — and down there in the green valley, where, as the great Alexander, I led my Macedonians to the battle of Arbela; and the grassy hillock yonder, from which I hurled the Persian satrap — and then waved on high my victorious banner! (*He smiles.*) The golden age of boyhood lives again in the soul of the outcast. I was then so happy, so wholly, so cloudlessly happy — and now — behold all my prospects a wreck! Here should I have presided, a great, a noble, an honored man — here have lived over again the years of boyhood in the blooming children of my Amelia — here! — here have been the idol of my people — but the foul fiend opposed it (*Starting.*) Why am I here? To feel like the captive when the clanking of his chains awakes him from his dream of liberty. No, let me return to my wretchedness The captive had forgotten the light of day, but the dream of liberty flashes past his eyes like a blaze of lightning in the night, which leaves it darker than before. Farewell

ye native vales! once ye saw Charles as a boy, and then Charles was happy. Now ye have seen the man his happiness turned to despair! (*He moves rapidly towards the most distant point of the landscape, where he suddenly stops and casts a melancholy look across to the castle.*) Not to behold her! not even one look?—and only a wall between me and Amelia! No! see her I must!—and him too!—though it crush me! (*He turns back.*) Father! father! thy son approaches. Away with thee, black, reeking gore! Away with that grim, ghastly look of death! Oh, give me but this one hour free! Amelia! Father! thy Charles approaches! (*He goes quickly towards the castle.*) Torment me when the morning dawns—give me no rest with the coming night—beset me in frightful dreams! But, oh! poison not this my only hour of bliss! (*He is standing at the gate.*) What is it I feel? What means this, Moor? Be a man! These death-like shudders—foreboding terrors. [*Enters.*

SCENE II.* — *Gallery in the Castle.*

Enter CHARLES VON MOOR, AMELIA.

AMELIA. And are you sure that you should know his portrait among these pictures?

CHARLES. Oh, most certainly! his image has always been fresh in my memory. (*Passing along the pictures.*) This is not it.

AMELIA. You are right! He was the first count, and received his patent of nobility from Frederic Barbarossa, to whom he rendered some service against the corsairs.

CHARLES (*still reviewing the pictures*). Neither is it this—nor this—nor that—it is not among these at all.

AMELIA. Nay! look more attentively! I thought you knew him.

CHARLES. As well as my own father! This picture wants the sweet expression around the mouth, which distinguished him from among a thousand. It is not he.

AMELIA. You surprise me. What! not seen him for eighteen years, and still——

* In some editions this is the third scene, and there is no second.

CHARLES (*quickly, with a hectic blush*). Yes, this is he! (*He stands as if struck by lightning.*)

AMELIA. An excellent man!

CHARLES (*absorbed in the contemplation of the picture*). Father! father! forgive me! Yes, an excellent man! (*He wipes his eyes.*) A godlike man!

AMELIA. You seem to take a deep interest in him.

CHARLES. Oh, an excellent man! And he is gone, you say!

AMELIA. Gone! as our best joys perish. (*Gently taking him by the hand.*) Dear sir, no happiness ripens in this world.

CHARLES. Most true, most true! And have you already proved this truth by sad experience? You, who can scarcely yet have seen your twenty-third year?

AMELIA. Yes, alas, I have proved it. Whatever lives, lives to die in sorrow. We engage our hearts, and grasp after the things of this world, only to undergo the pang of losing them.

CHARLES. What can you have lost, and yet so young?

AMELIA. Nothing — everything — nothing. Shall we go on, count?*

CHARLES. In such haste? Whose portrait is that on the right? There is an unhappy look about that countenance, methinks.

AMELIA. That portrait on the left is the son of the count, the present count. Come, let us pass on!

CHARLES. But this portrait on the right?

AMELIA. Will you not continue your walk, sir?

CHARLES. But this portrait on the right hand? You are in tears, Amelia? [*Exit* AMELIA, *in precipitation.*

CHARLES. She loves me, she loves me! Her whole being began to rebel, and the traitor tears rolled down her cheeks. She loves me! Wretch, hast thou deserved this at her hands? Stand I not here like a condemned criminal before the fatal block? Is this the couch on which we so often sat — where I have hung in rapture on her neck? Are these my ancestral halls? (*Overcome by the*

* In the acting edition is added —
"MOOR. And would you learn forgetfulness in that holy garb there? (*Pointing to a nun's habit.*)
"AMELIA. To-morrow I hope to do so. Shall we continue our walk, sir?"

sight of his father's portrait.) Thou — thou — Flames of fire darting from thine eyes — His curse — His curse — He disowns me — Where am I? My sight grows dim — Horrors of the living God — 'Twas I, 'twas I that killed my father! [*He rushes off.*

Enter Francis von Moor, *in deep thought.*

Francis. Away with that image! Away with it! Craven heart! Why dost thou tremble, and before whom? Have I not felt, during the few hours that the count has been within these walls as if a spy from hell were gliding at my heels. Methinks I should know him! There is something so lofty, so familiar, in his wild, sun-burnt features, which makes me tremble. Amelia, too, is not indifferent towards him! Does she not dart eager, languishing looks at the fellow — looks of which she is so chary to all the world beside? Did I not see her drop those stealthy tears into the wine, which, behind my back, he quaffed so eagerly that he seemed to swallow the very glass? Yes, I saw it — I saw it in the mirror with my own eyes. Take care, Francis! Look about you! Some destruction-brooding monster is lurking beneath all this! (*He stops, with a searching look, before the portrait of* Charles.)

His long, crane-like neck — his black, fire-sparkling eyes — hem! hem! — his dark, over-hanging, bushy eye-brows. (*Suddenly starting back.*) Malicious hell! dost thou send me this suspicion? It is Charles! Yes, all his features are reviving before me. It is he! despite his mask! it is he! Death and damnation! (*Goes up and down with agitated steps.*) Is it for this that I have sacrificed my nights — that I have mowed down mountains and filled up chasms? For this that I have turned rebel against all the instincts of humanity? To have this vagabond outcast blunder in at last, and destroy all my cunningly devised fabric. But gently! gently! What remains to be done is but child's play. Have I not already waded up to my very ears in mortal sin? Seeing how far the shore lies behind me, it would be madness to attempt to swim back. To return is now out of the question. Grace itself would

be beggared, and infinite mercy become bankrupt, wer they to be responsible for all my liabilities. Then onwar like a man. (*He rings the bell.*) Let him be gathered t the spirit of his father, and now come on! For the dea I care not! Daniel! Ho! Daniel! I'd wager a trif they have already inveigled him too into the plot again me! He looks so full of mystery!

Enter DANIEL.

DANIEL. What is your pleasure, my master?

FRANCIS. Nothing. Go, fill this goblet with wine, an quickly! (*Exit* DANIEL.) Wait a little, old man! shall find you out! I will fix my eye upon you so keenl that your stricken conscience shall betray itself throug your mask! He shall die! He is but a sorry bungle who leaves his work half finished, and then looks on idly trusting to chance for what may come of it.

Enter DANIEL, *with the wine.*

Bring it here! Look me steadfastly in the face! Hov your knees knock together! How you tremble! Confess old man! what have you been doing?

DANIEL. Nothing, my honored master, by heaven an my poor soul!

FRANCIS. Drink this wine! What? your hesitate Out with it quickly! What have you put into the wine

DANIEL. Heaven help me! What! I in the wine?

FRANCIS. You have poisoned it! Are you not a white as snow? Confess, confess! Who gave it you The count? Is it not so? The count gave it you?

DANIEL. The count? Jesu Maria! The count has no given me anything.

FRANCIS (*grasping him tight*). I will throttle you til you are black in the face, you hoary-headed liar! Noth ing? Why, then, are you so often closeted together He, and you, and Amelia? And what are you alway whispering about? Out with it! What secrets, eh What secrets has he confided to you?

DANIEL. I call the Almighty to witness that he ha not confided any secrets to me.

FRANCIS. Do you mean to deny it? What schemes have you been hatching to get rid of me? Am I to be smothered in my sleep? or is my throat to be cut in shaving? or am I to be poisoned in wine or chocolate? Eh? Out with it, out with it! Or am I to have my quietus administered in my soup? Out with it! I know it all!

DANIEL. May heaven so help me in the hour of need as I now tell you the truth, and nothing but the pure, unvarnished truth!

FRANCIS. Well, this time I will forgive you. But the money! he most certainly put money into your purse? And he pressed your hand more warmly than is customary? something in the manner of an old acquaintance?

DANIEL. Never, indeed, sir.

FRANCIS. He told you, for instance, that he had known you before? that you ought to know him? that the scales * would some day fall from your eyes? that — what? Do you mean to say that he never spoke thus to you?

DANIEL. Not a word of the kind.

FRANCIS. That certain circumstances restrained him — that one must sometimes wear a mask in order to get at one's enemies — that he would be revenged, most terribly revenged?

DANIEL. Not a syllable of all this.

FRANCIS. What? Nothing at all? Recollect yourself. That he knew the old count well — most intimately — that he loved him — loved him exceedingly — loved him like a son ——

DANIEL. Something of that sort I remember to have heard him say.

FRANCIS (*turning pale*). Did he say so? did he really? How? let me hear! He said he was my brother?

DANIEL (*astonished*). What, my master? He did not say that. But as Lady Amelia was conducting him through the gallery — I was just dusting the picture frames — he suddenly stood still before the portrait of my late master, and seemed thunderstruck. Lady Amelia pointed it out,

* Used in the sense of film. So in Scripture, Acts ix. ver. 18, "there fell from his eyes as it had been scales."

and said, "An excellent man!" "Yes, a most excellent man!" he replied, wiping a tear from his eye.

FRANCIS. Hark, Daniel! You know I have ever been a kind master to you; I have given you food and raiment, and have spared you labor in consideration of your advanced age.

DANIEL. For which may heaven reward you! and I, on my part, have always served you faithfully.

FRANCIS. That is just what I was going to say. You have never in all your life contradicted me; for you know much too well that you owe me obedience in all things, whatever I may require of you.

DANIEL. In all things with all my heart, so it be not against God and my conscience.

FRANCIS. Stuff! nonsense! Are you not ashamed of yourself? An old man, and believe that Christmas tale! Go, Daniel! that was a stupid remark. You know that I am your master. It is on me that God and conscience will be avenged, if, indeed, there be a God and a conscience.

DANIEL (*clasping his hands together*). Merciful Heaven!

FRANCIS. By your obedience! Do you understand that word? By your obedience, I command you. With to-morrow's dawn the count must no longer be found among the living.

DANIEL. Merciful Heaven! and wherefore?

FRANCIS. By your blind obedience! I shall rely upon you implicitly.

DANIEL. On me? May the Blessed Virgin have mercy on me! On me? What evil, then, have I, an old man, done!

FRANCIS. There is no time now for reflection; your fate is in my hands. Would you rather pine away the remainder of your days in the deepest of my dungeons, where hunger shall compel you to gnaw your own bones, and burning thirst make you suck your own blood? Or would you rather eat your bread in peace, and have rest in your old age?

DANIEL. What, my lord! Peace and rest in my old age? And I a murderer?

FRANCIS. Answer my question!

DANIEL. My gray hairs! my gray hairs!

FRANCIS. Yes or no!

DANIEL. No! God have mercy upon me!

FRANCIS (*in the act of going*). Very well! you shall have need of it. (DANIEL *detains him and falls on his knees before him.*)

DANIEL. Mercy, master! mercy!

FRANCIS. Yes or no!

DANIEL. Most gracious master! I am this day seventy-one years of age! and have honored my father and my mother, and, to the best of my knowledge, have never in the whole course of my life defrauded any one to the value of a farthing, — and I have adhered to my creed truly and honestly, and have served in your house four-and-forty years, and am now calmly awaiting a quiet, happy end. Oh, master! master! (*violently clasping his knees*) and would you deprive me of my only solace in death, that the gnawing worm of an evil conscience may cheat me of my last prayer? that I may go to my long home an abomination in the sight of God and man? No, no! my dearest, best, most excellent, most gracious master! you do not ask that of an old man turned threescore and ten!

FRANCIS. Yes or no! What is the use of all this palaver?

DANIEL. I will serve you from this day forward more diligently than ever; I will wear out my old bones in your service like a common day-laborer; I will rise earlier and lie down later. Oh, and I will remember you in my prayers night and morning; and God will not reject the prayer of an old man.

FRANCIS. Obedience is better than sacrifice. Did you ever hear of the hangman standing upon ceremony when he was told to execute a sentence?

DANIEL. That is very true? but to murder an innocent man — one ——

FRANCIS. Am I responsible to you? Is the axe to question the hangman why he strikes this way and not that? But see how forbearing I am. I offer you a re-

ward for performing what you owe me in virtue of your allegiance.

DANIEL. But, when I swore allegiance to you, I at least hoped that I should be allowed to remain a Christian.

FRANCIS. No contradiction! Look you! I give you the whole day to think about it! Ponder well on it. Happiness or misery. Do you hear — do you understand? The extreme of happiness or the extreme of misery! I can do wonders in the way of torture.

DANIEL (*after some reflection*). I'll do it; I will do it to-morrow. [*Exit.*

FRANCIS. The temptation is strong, and I should think he was not born to die a martyr to his faith. Have with you, sir count! According to all ordinary calculations, you will sup to-morrow with old Beelzebub. In these matters all depends upon one's view of a thing; and he is a fool who takes any view that is contrary to his own interest. A father quaffs perhaps a bottle of wine more than ordinary — he is in a certain mood — the result is a human being, the last thing that was thought of in the affair. Well, I, too, am in a certain mood, — and the result is that a human being perishes; and surely there is more of reason and purpose in this than there was in his production. If the birth of a man is the result of an animal paroxysm, who should take it into his head to attach any importance to the negation of his birth? A curse upon the folly of our nurses and teachers, who fill our imaginations with frightful tales, and impress fearful images of punishment upon the plastic brain of childhood, so that involuntary shudders shake the limbs of the man with icy fear, arrest his boldest resolutions, and chain his awakening reason in the fetters of superstitious darkness. Murder! What a hell full of furies hovers around that word. Yet 'tis no more than if nature forgets to bring forth one man more — or the doctor makes a mistake — and thus the whole phantasmagoria vanishes. It was something, and it is nothing. Does not this amount to exactly the same thing as though it had been nothing, and came to nothing; and about nothing it is hardly worth while to waste a word. Man is made of filth, and

for a time wades in filth, and produces filth, and sinks back into filth, till at last he fouls the boots of his own posterity.* That is the burden of the song — the filthy cycle of human fate; and with that — a pleasant journey to you, sir brother! Conscience, that splenetic, gouty moralist, may drive shrivelled old drones out of brothels, and torture usurers on their deathbeds — with me it shall never more have audience. [*Exit.*

SCENE III. — *Another Room in the Castle.*

CHARLES VON MOOR *enters from one side*, DANIEL *from the other.*

CHARLES (*hastily*). Where is Lady Amelia?

DANIEL. Honored sir! permit an old man to ask you a favor.

CHARLES. It is granted. What is it you ask?

DANIEL. Not much, and yet all — but little, and yet a great deal. Suffer me to kiss your hand!

CHARLES. That I cannot permit, good old man (*embraces him*), from one whom I should like to call my father.

DANIEL. Your hand, your hand! I beseech you.

CHARLES. That must not be.

DANIEL. It must! (*He takes hold of it, surveys it quickly, and falls down before him.*) Dear, dearest Charles!

CHARLES (*startled; he composes himself, and says in a distant tone*). What mean you, my friend? I don't understand you.

DANIEL. Yes, you may deny it, you may dissemble as much as you please? 'Tis very well! very well. For all that you are my dearest, my excellent young master. Good Heaven! that I, poor old man, should live to have the joy — what a stupid blockhead was I that I did not at a glance — oh, gracious powers! And you are really come back, and the dear old master is underground, and

* "To what base uses we may return, Horatio! Why, may not imagination trace the noble dust of Alexander, till we find it stopping a bunghole?" — *HAMLET*, Act v, Sc. 1.

here you are again! What a purblind dolt I was, to be sure! (*striking his forehead*) that I did not on the instant — Oh, dear me! — who could have dreamt it — What I have so often prayed for with tears — Oh, mercy me! There he stands again, as large as life, in the old room!

CHARLES. What's all this oration about? Are you in a fit of delirium, and have escaped from your keepers; or are you rehearsing a stage-player's part with me?

DANIEL. Oh, fie! fie! It is not pretty of you to make game of an old servant. That scar! Eh! do you remember it? Good Heaven! what a fright you put me into — I always loved you so dearly; and what misery you might have brought upon me. You were sitting in my lap — do you remember? there in the round chamber. Has all that quite vanished from your memory — and the cuckoo, too, that you were so fond of listening to? Only think! the cuckoo is broken, broken all to shivers — old Susan smashed it in sweeping the room — yes, indeed, and there you sat in my lap, and cried, "Cockhorse!" and I ran off to fetch your wooden horse — mercy on me! what business had I, thoughtless old fool, to leave you alone — and how I felt as if I were in a boiling caldron when I heard you screaming in the passage; and, when I rushed in, there was your red blood gushing forth, and you lying on the ground. Oh, by the Blessed Virgin! did I not feel as if a bucket of icy cold water was emptied all over me? — but so it happens, unless one keeps all one's eyes upon children. Good Heaven! if it had gone into your eye! Unfortunately it happened to be the right hand. "As long as I live," said I, "never again shall any child in my charge get hold of a knife or scissors, or any other edge tool." 'Twas lucky for me that both my master and mistress were gone on a journey. "Yes, yes! this shall be a warning to me for the rest of my life," said I — Gemini, Gemini! I might have lost my place, I might — God forgive you, you naughty boy — but, thank Heaven! it healed fairly, all but that ugly scar.

CHARLES. I do not comprehend one word of all that you are talking about.

DANIEL. Eh? eh? that was the time! was it not?

for a time wades in filth, and produces filth, and sinks back into filth, till at last he fouls the boots of his own posterity.* That is the burden of the song — the filthy cycle of human fate; and with that — a pleasant journey to you, sir brother! Conscience, that splenetic, gouty moralist, may drive shrivelled old drones out of brothels, and torture usurers on their deathbeds — with me it shall never more have audience. [*Exit.*

SCENE III. — *Another Room in the Castle.*

CHARLES VON MOOR *enters from one side,* DANIEL *from the other.*

CHARLES (*hastily*). Where is Lady Amelia?

DANIEL. Honored sir! permit an old man to ask you a favor.

CHARLES. It is granted. What is it you ask?

DANIEL. Not much, and yet all — but little, and yet a great deal. Suffer me to kiss your hand!

CHARLES. That I cannot permit, good old man (*embraces him*), from one whom I should like to call my father.

DANIEL. Your hand, your hand! I beseech you.

CHARLES. That must not be.

DANIEL. It must! (*He takes hold of it, surveys it quickly, and falls down before him.*) Dear, dearest Charles!

CHARLES (*startled; he composes himself, and says in a distant tone*). What mean you, my friend? I don't understand you.

DANIEL. Yes, you may deny it, you may dissemble as much as you please? 'Tis very well! very well. For all that you are my dearest, my excellent young master. Good Heaven! that I, poor old man, should live to have the joy — what a stupid blockhead was I that I did not at a glance — oh, gracious powers! And you are really come back, and the dear old master is underground, and

* "To what base uses we may return, Horatio! Why, may not imagination trace the noble dust of Alexander, till we find it stopping a bunghole?" — HAMLET, Act v, Sc. 1.

here you are again! What a purblind dolt I was, to be sure! (*striking his forehead*) that I did not on the instant — Oh, dear me! — who could have dreamt it — What I have so often prayed for with tears — Oh, mercy me! There he stands again, as large as life, in the old room!

CHARLES. What's all this oration about? Are you in a fit of delirium, and have escaped from your keepers; or are you rehearsing a stage-player's part with me?

DANIEL. Oh, fie! fie! It is not pretty of you to make game of an old servant. That scar! Eh! do you remember it? Good Heaven! what a fright you put me into — I always loved you so dearly; and what misery you might have brought upon me. You were sitting in my lap — do you remember? there in the round chamber. Has all that quite vanished from your memory — and the cuckoo, too, that you were so fond of listening to? Only think! the cuckoo is broken, broken all to shivers — old Susan smashed it in sweeping the room — yes, indeed, and there you sat in my lap, and cried, "Cockhorse!" and I ran off to fetch your wooden horse — mercy on me! what business had I, thoughtless old fool, to leave you alone — and how I felt as if I were in a boiling caldron when I heard you screaming in the passage; and, when I rushed in, there was your red blood gushing forth, and you lying on the ground. Oh, by the Blessed Virgin! did I not feel as if a bucket of icy cold water was emptied all over me? — but so it happens, unless one keeps all one's eyes upon children. Good Heaven! if it had gone into your eye! Unfortunately it happened to be the right hand. "As long as I live," said I, "never again shall any child in my charge get hold of a knife or scissors, or any other edge tool." 'Twas lucky for me that both my master and mistress were gone on a journey. "Yes, yes! this shall be a warning to me for the rest of my life," said I — Gemini, Gemini! I might have lost my place, I might — God forgive you, you naughty boy — but, thank Heaven! it healed fairly, all but that ugly scar.

CHARLES. I do not comprehend one word of all that you are talking about.

DANIEL. Eh? eh? that was the time! was it not?

How many a ginger-cake, and biscuit, and macaroon, have I slipped into your hands — I was always so fond of you. And do you recollect what you said to me down in the stable, when I put you upon old master's hunter, and let you scamper round the great meadow? "Daniel!" said you, "only wait till I am grown a big man, and you shall be my steward, and ride in the coach with me." "Yes," said I, laughing, "if heaven grants me life and health, and you are not ashamed of the old man," I said, "I shall ask you to let me have the little house down in the village, that has stood empty so long; and then I will lay in a few butts of good wine, and turn publican in my old age." Yes, you may laugh, you may laugh! Eh, young gentleman, have you quite forgotten all that? You do not want to remember the old man, so you carry yourself strange and loftily; — but, you are my jewel of a young master, for all that. You have, it is true, been a little bit wild — don't be angry! — as young blood is apt to be! All may be well yet in the end.

CHARLES (*falls on his neck*). Yes! Daniel! I will no longer hide it from you! I am your Charles, your lost Charles! And now tell me, how does my Amelia?

DANIEL (*begins to cry*). That I, old sinner, should live to have this happiness — and my late blessed master wept so long in vain! Begone, begone, hoary old head! Ye weary bones, descend into the grave with joy! My lord and master lives! my own eyes have beheld him!

CHARLES. And he will keep his promise to you. Take that, honest graybeard, for the old hunter (*forces a heavy purse upon him*). I have not forgotten the old man.

DANIEL. How? What are you doing? Too much! You have made a mistake.

CHARLES. No mistake, Daniel! (DANIEL *is about to throw himself on his knees before him.*) Rise! Tell me, how does my Amelia?

DANIEL. Heaven reward you! Heaven reward you! O gracious me! Your Amelia will never survive it, she will die for joy?

CHARLES (*eagerly*). She has not forgotten me then?

DANIEL. Forgotten you? How can you talk thus?

Forgotten you, indeed! You should have been there, you should have seen how she took on, when the news came of your death, which his honor caused to be spread abroad——

CHARLES. What do you say? my brother——

DANIEL. Yes, your brother; his honor, your brother — another day I will tell you more about it, when we have time — and how cleverly she sent him about his business when he came a wooing every blessed day, and offered to make her his countess. Oh, I must go; I must go and tell her; carry her the news (*is about to run off*).

CHARLES. Stay! stay! she must not know — nobody must know, not even my brother——

DANIEL. Your brother? No, on no account; he must not know it! Certainly not! If he know not already more than he ought to know. Oh, I can tell you, there are wicked men, wicked brothers, wicked masters; but I would not for all my master's gold be a wicked servant. His honor thought you were dead.

CHARLES. Humph! What are you muttering about?

DANIEL (*in a half-suppressed voice*). And to be sure when a man rises from the dead thus uninvited — your brother was the sole heir of our late master——

CHARLES. Old man! what is it you are muttering between your teeth, as if some dreadful secret were hovering on your tongue which you fear to utter, and yet ought? Out with it!

DANIEL. But I would rather gnaw my old bones with hunger, and suck my own blood for thirst, than gain a life of luxury by murder. [*Exit hastily.*

CHARLES (*starting up, after a terrible pause*). Betrayed! Betrayed! It flashes upon my soul like lightning! A fiendish trick! A murderer and a robber through fiendlike machinations! Calumniated by him! My letters falsified, suppressed! his heart full of love! Oh, what a monstrous fool was I! His fatherly heart full of love! oh, villany, villany! It would have cost me but once kneeling at his feet — a tear would have done it — oh blind, blind fool that I was! (*running up against the wall*). I might have been happy — oh villany, villany! Knavishly, yes, knavishly cheated out of all happiness in

this life! (*He runs up and down in a rage.*) A murderer, a robber, all through a knavish trick! He was not even angry! Not a thought of cursing ever entered his heart. Oh, miscreant! inconceivable, hypocritical, abominable miscreant!

Enter KOSINSKY.

KOSINSKY. Well, captain, where are you loitering? What is the matter? You are for staying here some time longer, I perceive?

CHARLES. Up! Saddle the horses! Before sunset we must be over the frontier!

KOSINSKY. You are joking.

CHARLES (*in a commanding tone*). Quick! quick! delay not! leave every thing behind! and let no eye see you! (*Exit* KOSINSKY.)

I fly from these walls. The least delay might drive me raving mad; and he my father's son! Brother! brother! thou hast made me the most miserable wretch on earth; I never injured thee; this was not brotherly. Reap the fruits of thy crime in quiet, my presence shall no longer embitter thy enjoyment — but, surely, this was not acting like a brother. May oblivion shroud thy misdeed forever, and death not bring it back to light.

Enter KOSINSKY.

KOSINSKY. The horses are ready saddled, you can mount as soon as you please.

CHARLES. Why in such haste? Why so urgent? Shall I see her no more?

KOSINSKY. I will take off the bridles again, if you wish it; you bade me hasten head over heels.

CHARLES. One more farewell! one more! I must drain this poisoned cup of happiness to the dregs, and then — Stay, Kosinsky! Ten minutes more — behind, in the castle yard — and we gallop off.

Scene IV.— *In the Garden.*

AMELIA. "You are in tears, Amelia!" These were his very words — and spoken with such expression — such a voice! — oh, it summoned up a thousand dear re-

membrances! — scenes of past delight, as in my youthful days of happiness, my golden spring-tide of love. The nightingale sung with the same sweetness, the flowers breathed the same delicious fragrance, as when I used to hang enraptured on his neck.* Ha! false, perfidious heart! And dost thou seek thus artfully to veil thy perjury? No, no! begone forever from my soul, thou sinful image! I have not broken my oath, thou only one! Avaunt, from my soul, ye treacherous impious wishes! In the heart where Charles reigns no son of earth may dwell. But why, my soul, dost thou thus constantly, thus obstinately turn towards this stranger? Does he not cling to my heart in the very image of my only one! Is he not his inseparable companion in my thoughts? "You are in tears, Amelia?" Ha! let me fly from him! — fly! — never more shall my eyes behold this stranger!

[CHARLES *opens the garden gate.*

AMELIA (*starting*). Hark! hark! did I not hear the gate creak? (*She perceives* CHARLES *and starts up.*) He? — whither? — what? I am rooted to the spot, — I cannot fly! Forsake me not, good Heaven! No! thou shalt not tear me from my Charles! My soul has no room for two deities, I am but a mortal maid! (*She draws the picture of* CHARLES *from her bosom.*) Thou, my Charles! be thou my guardian angel against this stranger, this invader of our loves! At thee will I look, at thee, nor turn away my eyes — nor cast one sinful look towards him! (*She sits silent, her eyes fixed upon the picture.*)

CHARLES. You here, Lady Amelia? — and so sad? and a tear upon that picture? (AMELIA *gives him no answer.*) And who is the happy man for whom these silver drops fall from an angel's eyes? May I be permitted to look at — (*He endeavors to look at the picture.*)

AMELIA. No — yes — no!

CHARLES (*starting back*). Ha — and does he deserve to be so idolized? Does he deserve it?

AMELIA. Had you but known him!

* Here, in the acting edition, is added, 'Assuredly, if the spirits of the departed wander among the living, then must this stranger be Charles's angel!"

CHARLES. I should have envied him.

AMELIA. Adored, you mean.

CHARLES. Ha!

AMELIA. Oh, you would so have loved him? — there was so much, so much in his face — in his eyes — in the tone of his voice, — which was so like yours — that I love so dearly! (CHARLES *casts his eyes down to the ground.*) Here, where you are standing, he has stood a thousand times — and by his side, one who, by his side, forgot heaven and earth. Here his eyes feasted on nature's most glorious panorama, — which, as if conscious of his approving glance, seemed to increase in beauty under the approbation of her masterpiece. Here he held the audience of the air captive with his heavenly music. Here, from this bush, he plucked roses, and plucked those roses for me. Here, here, he lay on my neck; here he imprinted burning kisses on my lips, and the flowers hung their heads with pleasure beneath the foot-tread of the lovers.*

* In the acting edition the scene changes materially at this point, and the most sentimental part of the whole drama is transformed into the most voluptuous. The stage direction here is,— "(*They give way to their transports without control, and mingle their kisses.* MOOR *hangs in ecstacy on her lips, while she sinks half delirious on the couch.*) O Charles! now avenge thyself; my vow is broken.

MOOR (*tearing himself away from her, as if in frenzy*). Can this be hell that still pursues me! (*Gazing on her.*) I felt so happy!

AMELIA (*perceiving the ring upon her finger, starts up from the couch*). What! Art thou still there — on that guilty hand? Witness of my perjury. Away with thee! (*She pulls the ring from her finger and gives it to* CHARLES.) Take it — take it, beloved seducer! and with it what I hold most sacred — take my all — my Charles! (*She falls back upon the couch.*)

MOOR (*changes color*). O thou Most High! was this thy almighty will? It is the very ring I gave her in pledge of our mutual faith. Hell be the grave of love! She has returned my ring.

AMELIA (*terrified*). Heavens! What is the matter? Your eyes roll wildly, and your lips are pale as death! Ah! woe is me. And are the pleasures of thy crime so soon forgotten?

MOOR (*suppressing his emotion*). 'Tis nothing! Nothing! (*Raising his eyes to heaven.*) I am still a man! (*He takes off his own ring and puts it on* AMELIA'S *finger.*) In return take this! sweet fury of my heart! And with it what I hold most sacred — take my all — my Amelia!

AMELIA (*starting up*). Your Amelia!

MOOR (*mournfully*). Oh, she was such a lovely maiden, and faithful as an angel. When we parted we exchanged rings, and vowed eternal constancy. She heard that I was dead — believed it — yet remained constant to the dead. She heard again that I was living — yet became faithless to the living. I flew into her arms — was happy as the blest in Paradise. Think what my heart was doomed to feel, Amelia! She gave me back my ring — she took her own.

AMELIA (*her eyes fixed on the earth in amazement*). 'Tis strange, most strange! 'Tis horrible!

CHARLES. He is no more?

AMELIA. He sails on troubled seas — Amelia's love sails with him. He wanders through pathless, sandy deserts — Amelia's love clothes the burning sand with verdure, and the barren shrubs with flowers. Southern suns scorch his bare head, northern snows pinch his feet, tempestuous hail beats down on his temples, but Amelia's love lulls him to sleep in the midst of the storm. Seas, and mountains, and skies, divide the lovers — but their souls rise above this prison-house of clay, and meet in the paradise of love. You appear sad, count!

CHARLES. These words of love rekindle my love.

AMELIA (*pale*). What? You love another? Alas! what have I said?

CHARLES. She believed me dead, and in my supposed death she remained faithful to me — she heard again that I was alive, and she sacrificed for me the crown of a saint. She knows that I am wandering in deserts, and roaming about in misery, yet her love follows me on wings through deserts and through misery. Her name, too, like yours, is Amelia.

AMELIA. How I envy your Amelia!

CHARLES. Oh, she is an unhappy maid. Her love is fixed upon one who is lost — and it can never — never be rewarded.

AMELIA. Say not so! It will be rewarded in heaven. Is it not agreed that there is a better world, where mourners rejoice, and where lovers meet again?

CHARLES. Yes, a world where the veil is lifted — where the phantom love will make terrible discoveries — Eternity is its name. My Amelia is an unhappy maid.

AMELIA. Unhappy, and loves you? *

MOOR. Ay, strange and horrible! My child, there is much — ay, much for man to learn ere his poor intellect can fathom the decrees of Him who smiles at human vows and weeps at human projects. My Amelia is an unfortunate maiden!

AMELIA. Unfortunate! Because she rejected you?

MOOR. Unfortunate. Because she embraced the man she betrayed.

AMELIA (*with melancholy tenderness*) Oh, then, she is indeed unfortunate! From my soul I pity her! She shall be my sister. But there is another and a better world."

* In the acting edition the scene closes with a different dénouement. Amelia here says, "Are all unhappy who live with you, and bear the name of Amelia.

"CHARLES. Yes, all — when they think they embrace an angel, and find

mean/ced

CHARLES. Unhappy, because she loves me! What if I were a murderer? How, Lady Amelia, if your lover could reckon you up a murder for every one of your kisses? Woe to my Amelia! She is an unhappy maid.

AMELIA (*gayly rising*). Ha! What a happy maid am I! My only one is a reflection of Deity, and Deity is mercy and compassion! He could not bear to see a fly suffer. His soul is as far from every thought of blood as the sun is from the moon. (CHARLES *suddenly turns away into a thicket, and looks wildly out into the landscape.* AMELIA *sings, playing the guitar.*)

Oh! Hector, wilt thou go forevermore,
Where fierce Achilles, on the blood-stained shore,
Heaps countless victims o'er Patroclus' grave?
Who then thy hapless orphan boy will rear,
Teach him to praise the gods and hurl the spear,
When thou art swallowed up in Xanthus' wave?

CHARLES (*silently tunes the guitar, and plays*).

Beloved wife! — stern duty calls to arms —
Go, fetch my lance! and cease those vain alarms!
[*He flings the guitar away, and rushes off.*

SCENE V.—*A neighboring forest. Night. An old ruined castle in the centre of the scene.*

The band of ROBBERS *encamped on the ground.*

The ROBBERS *singing.*

To rob, to kill, to wench, to fight,
Our pastime is, and daily sport;
The gibbet claims us morn and night,
So let's be jolly, time is short.

A merry life we lead, and free,
A life of endless fun;

in their arms — a murderer. Alas, for my Amelia! She is indeed unfortunate.

"AMELIA (*with an expression of deep affliction*). Oh, I must weep for her.

"CHARLES (*grasping her hand, and pointing to the ring*). Weep for thyself.

"AMELIA (*recognizing the ring*). Charles! Charles! O heaven and earth! (*She sinks fainting; the scene closes.*)"

Our couch is 'neath the greenwood tree,
Through wind and storm we gain our fee,
  The moon we make our sun.
Old Mercury is our patron true,
And a capital chap for helping us through.

To-day we make the abbot our host,
  The farmer rich to-morrow;
And where we shall get our next day's roast,
  Gives us nor care nor sorrow.

And, when with Rhenish and rare Moselle
  Our throats we have been oiling,
Our courage burns with a fiercer swell,
And we're hand and glove with the Lord of Hell,
  Who down in his flames is broiling.

For fathers slain the orphans' cries,
  The widowed mothers' moan and wail,
Of brides bereaved the whimpering sighs,
  Like music sweet, our ears regale.

Beneath the axe to see them writhe,
  Bellow like calves, fall dead like flies;
Such bonny sights, and sounds so blithe,
  With rapture fill our ears and eyes.

And when at last our death-knell rings —
  The devil take that hour!
Payment in full the hangman brings,
  And off the stage we scour.
On the road a glass of good liquor or so,
Then hip! hip! hip! and away we go!

SCHWEITZER. The night is far advanced, and the captain has not yet returned.

RAZ. And yet he promised to be back before the clock struck eight.

SCHWEITZER. Should any harm have befallen him, comrades, wouldn't we kindle fires! ay, and murder sucking babes?

SPIEGEL. (*takes* RAZMANN *aside*). A word in your ear, Razmann!

SCHWARZ (*to* GRIMM). Should we not send out scouts?

GRIMM. Let him alone. He no doubt has some feat in hand that will put us to shame.

SCHWEITZER. Then you are out, by old Harry! He did not part from us like one that had any masterpiece of roguery in view. Have you forgotten what he said as he marched us across the heath? "The fellow that takes so much as a turnip out of a field, if I know it, leaves his head behind him, as true as my name is Moor." We dare not plunder.

RAZ. (*aside to* SPIEGELBERG). What are you driving at? Speak plainer.

SPIEGEL. Hush! hush! I know not what sort of a notion you and I have of liberty, that we should toil under the yoke like bullocks, while we are making such wonderful fine speeches about independence. I like it not.

SCHWEITZER (*to* GRIMM). What crotchet has that swaggering booby got in his numskull, I wonder?

RAZ. (*aside to* SPIEGELBERG). Is it the captain you mean? ——

SPIEGEL. Hush! I tell you; hush! He has got his eavesdroppers all around us. Captain, did you say? Who made him captain over us? Has he not, in fact, usurped that title, which by right belongs to me? What? Is it for this that we stake our lives — that we endure all the splenetic caprices of fortunes — that we may in the end congratulate ourselves upon being the serfs of a slave? Serfs! When we might be princes? By heaven! Razmann, I could never brook it.

SCHWEITZER (*overhearing him — to the others*). Yes — there's a hero for you! He is just the man to do mighty execution upon frogs with stones. The very breath of his nostrils, when he sneezes, would blow you through the eye of a needle.

SPIEGEL. (*to* RAZMANN). Yes — and for years I have been intent upon it. There must be an alteration, Razmann. If you are the man I always took you for — Razmann! He is missing — he is almost given up — Razmann — methinks his hour is come. What? does not the color *so much* as mount to your cheek when you hear the

chimes of liberty ringing in your ears? Have you not courage enough to take the hint?

RAZ. Ha! Satan! What bait art thou spreading for my soul?

SPIEGEL. Does it take? Good! then follow me! I have marked in what direction he slunk off. Come along! a brace of pistols seldom fail; and then — we shall be the first to strangle sucking babes. (*He endeavors to draw him off.*)

SCHWEITZER (*enraged, draws his sword*). Ha! caitiff! I have overheard you! You remind me, at the right moment, of the Bohemian forest! Were not you the coward that began to quail when the cry arose, "the enemy is coming!" I then swore by my soul — (*They fight,* SPIEGELBERG *is killed.*) To the devil with thee, assassin!

ROBBERS (*in agitation*). Murder! murder! — Schweitzer! — Spiegelberg! — Part them!

SCHWEITZER (*throwing the sword on the body*). There let him rot! Be still, my comrades! Don't let such a trifle disturb you. The brute has always been inveterate against the captain and has not a single scar on his whole body. Once more, be still. Ha, the scoundrel! He would stab a man behind his back — skulk and murder! Is it for this that the hot sweat has poured down us in streams? that we may sneak out of the world at last like contemptible wretches? The brute! Is it for this that we have lived in fire and brimstone? To perish at last like rats?

GRIMM. But what the devil, comrade, were you after? What were you quarrelling about? The captain will be furious.

SCHWEITZER. Be that on my head. And you, wretch! (*to* RAZMANN) you were his accomplice, you! Get out of my sight! Schufterle was another of your kidney, but he has met his deserts in Switzerland — has been hanged, as the captain prophesied. —— (*A shot is heard.*)

SCHWARZ (*jumping up*). Hark! a pistol shot! (*Another shot is heard.*) Another! Hallo! the captain!

GRIMM. Patience! If it be he, there will be a third. (*The third shot is heard.*)

SCHWARZ. 'Tis he! 'Tis the captain! Absent yourself awhile, Schweitzer — till we explain to him! (*They fire.*)

Enter CHARLES VON MOOR *and* KOSINSKY.

SCHWEITZER (*running to meet them*). Welcome, captain. I have been somewhat choleric in your absence. (*He conducts him to the corpse.*) Be you judge between him and me. He meant to waylay and assassinate you.

ROBBERS (*in consternation*). What; the captain?

CHARLES (*after fixing his eyes for some time upon the corpse, with a sudden burst of feeling*). Oh, incomprehensible finger of the avenging Nemesis! Was it not he whose siren song seduced me to be what I am? Let this sword be consecrated to the dark goddess of retribution! That was not *thy* deed, Schweitzer.

SCHWEITZER. By heaven, it was mine, though! and, as the devil lives, it is not the worst deed I have done in my time. (*Turns away moodily.*)

CHARLES (*absorbed in thought*). I comprehend — Great Ruler in heaven — I comprehend. The leaves fall from the trees, and my autumn is come. Remove this object from my sight! (*The corpse of* SPIEGELBERG *is carried out.*)

GRIMM. Give us your orders, captain! What shall we do next?

CHARLES. Soon — very soon — all will be accomplished. Hand me my lute; I have lost myself since I have been there. My lute, I say — I must nurse up my strength again. Leave me!

ROBBERS. 'Tis midnight, captain.

CHARLES. They were only stage tears after all. Let me bring to memory the song of the old Roman, that my slumbering genius may wake up again. Hand me my lute. Midnight, say you?

SCHWARZ. Yes, and past, too! Our eyes are as heavy as lead. For three days we have not slept a wink.

CHARLES. What? does balmy sleep visit the eyes of murderers? Why doth it flee mine? I never was a

coward, nor a villain. Lay yourselves to rest. At day-break we march.

ROBBERS. Good night, captain. (*They stretch themselves on the ground and fall asleep.*)

Profound silence. CHARLES VON MOOR *takes up his guitar, and plays.*

BRUTUS.

Oh, be ye welcome, realms of peace and rest!
  Receive the last of all the sons of Rome!
From dread Philippi's field, where all the best
  Fell bleeding in her cause, I wearied come.
Cassius, no more! And Rome now prostrate laid!
  My brethren all lie weltering in their gore!
No refuge left but Hades' gloomy shade;
  No hope remains! — No world for Brutus more!

CÆSAR.

Who's he that, with a hero's lofty bearing,
  Comes striding o'er yon mountain's rocky bed?
Unless my eyes deceive, that noble daring
  Bespeaks the Roman warrior's fearless tread.
Whence, son of Tiber, do thy footsteps bend!
  Say, stands the seven-hilled city firmly yet?
No Cæsar there, to be the soldier's friend!
  Full oft has he that orphaned city wept.

BRUTUS.

Ha! thou of three-and-twenty wounds! Avaunt!
  Thou unblest shade, what calls thee back to light?
Down with thee, down, to Pluto's deepest haunt,
  And shroud thy form in black, eternal night,
Proud mourner! triumph not to learn our fall!
  Phillippi's altars reek with freedom's blood?
The bier of Brutus is Rome's funeral pall;
  He Minos seeks. Hence to thy Stygian flood!

CÆSAR.

That death-stroke, Brutus, which thy weapon hurled!
  Thou, too, Brutus? — that thou shouldst be my foe!

Oh, son! It was thy father! Son! The world
Was thine by heritage! Now proudly go,
Well mayst thou claim to be the chief in glory,
'Twas thy fell sword that pierced thy father's heart!
Now go — and at yon gates relate thy story —
Say Brutus claims to be the chief in glory,
'Twas his fell sword that pierced his father's heart!
Go — Now thou'rt told what staid me on this shore,
Grim ferryman, push off, and swiftly ply thine oar.

BRUTUS.

Stay, father, stay! Within the whole bright round
Of Sol's diurnal course I knew but one
Who to compare with Cæsar could be found;
And that one, Cæsar, thou didst call thy son!
'Twas only Cæsar could destroy a Rome;
Brutus alone that Cæsar could withstand—
Where Brutus lives, must Cæsar die! Thy home
Be far from mine. I'll seek another land.
[*He lays down his guitar, and walks to and fro in deep meditation.*

Who will give me certainty! All is so dark — a confused labyrinth — no outlet — no guiding star. Were but all to end with this last gasp of breath. To end, like an empty puppet-show. But why then this burning thirst after happiness? Wherefore this ideal of unattained perfection? This looking to an hereafter for the fulfilment of our hopes? If the paltry pressure of this paltry thing (*putting a pistol to his head*) makes the wise man and the fool — the coward and the brave — the noble and the villain equal? — the harmony which pervades the inanimate world is so divinely perfect — why, then, should there be such discord in the intellectual? No! no! there must be something beyond, for I have not yet attained to happiness.

Think ye that I will tremble, spirits of my slaughtered victims? No, I will not tremble. (*Trembling violently.*) The shrieks of your dying agonies — your black, convulsive features — your ghastly bleeding wounds — what are

they all but links of one indissoluble chain of destiny, which hung upon the temperament of my father, the life's blood of my mother, the humors of my nurses and tutors, and even upon the holiday pastimes of my childhood! (*Shaking with horror.*) Why has my Perillus made of me a brazen bull, whose burning entrails yearn after human flesh? (*He lifts the pistol again to his head.*)

Time and Eternity! — linked together by a single instant! Fearful key, which locks behind me the prison-house of life, and opens before me the habitations of eternal night — tell me — oh, tell me—whither — whither wilt thou lead me? Strange, unexplored land! Humanity is unnerved at the fearful thought, the elasticity of our finite nature is paralyzed, and fancy, that wanton ape of the senses, juggles our credulity with appalling phantoms. No! no! a man must be firm. Be what thou wilt, thou undefined futurity, so I remain but true to myself. Be what thou wilt, so I but take this inward self hence with me. External forms are but the trappings of the man. My heaven and my hell is within.

What if Thou shouldst doom me to be sole inhabitant of some burnt-out world which thou hast banished from thy sight, where darkness and never-ending desolation were all my prospect; then would my creative brain people the silent waste with its own images, and I should have eternity for leisure to unravel the complicated picture of universal wretchedness. Or wilt thou make me pass through ever-repeated births and ever-changing scenes of misery, stage by stage *— to annihilation? Can I not burst asunder the life-threads woven for me in another world as easily as I do these? Thou mayest reduce me into nothing; but Thou canst not take from me this power. (*He loads the pistol, and then suddenly pauses.*) And shall I then rush into death from a coward fear of the ills of life? Shall I yield to misery the palm of victory over myself? No! I will endure it! (*He flings the pistol away.*) Misery shall blunt its edge against my

* This and other passages will remind the reader of Cato's soliloquy. "It must be so, Plato; thou reasonest well." But the whole bears a strong resemblance to Hamlet's "To be or not to be;" and some passages in *Measure for Measure*, Act iii, Sc. 1.

pride! Be my destiny fulfilled! (*It grows darker and darker.*)

HERMANN (*coming through the forest*). Hark! hark! the owl screeches horribly — the village clock strikes twelve. Well, well — villany is asleep — no listeners in these wilds. (*He goes to the castle and knocks.*) Come forth, thou man of sorrow! tenant of the miserable dungeon! thy meal awaits thee.

CHARLES (*stepping gently back, unperceived*). What means this?

VOICE (*from within the castle*). Who knocks? Is it you, Hermann, my raven?

HERMANN. Yes, 'tis Hermann, your raven. Come to the grating and eat. (*Owls are screeching.*) Your night companions make a horrid noise, old man! Do you relish your repast?

VOICE. Yes — I was very hungry. Thanks to thee, thou merciful sender of ravens, for this thy bread in the wilderness! And how is my dear child, Hermann?

HERMANN. Hush! — hark! — A noise like snoring! Don't you hear something?

VOICE. What? Do you hear anything?

HERMANN. 'Tis the whistling of the wind through the crannies of the tower — a serenading which makes one's teeth chatter, and one's nails turn blue. Hark! tis there again. I still fancy I hear snoring. You have company, old man. Ugh! ugh! ugh!

VOICE. Do you see anything?

HERMANN. Farewell! farewell! this is a fearful place. Go down into your hole, — thy deliverer, thy avenger is above. Oh! accursed son! (*Is about to fly.*)

CHARLES (*stepping forth with horror*). Stand!

HERMANN (*screaming*). Oh, me! *

* In the acting edition Hermann, instead of this, says, —

'Tis one of his spies for certain, I have lost all fear (*draws his sword*). Villain, defend yourself! You have a man before you.

MOOR. I'll have an answer (*strikes the sword out of his hand*). What boots this childish sword-play? Didst thou not speak of vengeance? Vengeance belongs especially to me — of all men on earth. Who dares interfere with my vocation?

HERMANN (*starts back in affright*). By heaven! That man was not born of woman. His touch withers like the stroke of death.

VOICE. Alas, Hermann! to whom are you speaking?

MOOR. What! still those sounds? What is going on there? (*Runs to-*

CHARLES. Stand! I say.

HERMANN. Woe! woe! woe! now all is discovered

CHARLES. Speak! Who art thou? What brough thee here? Speak!

HERMANN. Mercy, mercy! gracious sir! Hear bu one word before you kill me.

CHARLES (*drawing his sword*). What am I to hear

HERMANN. 'Tis true, you forbade me at the peril of m life — but I could not help it — I dare not do otherwis — a God in heaven — your own venerable father there — pity for him overcame me. Kill me, if you will!

CHARLES. There's some mystery here — Out with it Speak! I must know all.

VOICE (*from the castle*). Woe! woe! Is it you, Her mann, that are speaking? To whom are you speaking Hermann?

CHARLES. Some one else down there? What is th meaning of all this? (*Runs towards the castle.*) It i some prisoner whom mankind have cast off! I wil loosen his chains. Voice! Speak! Where is the door

HERMANN. Oh, have mercy, sir — seek no further, entreat — for mercy's sake desist! (*He stops his way.*)

CHARLES. Locks, bolts, and bars, away! It must com out. Now, for the first time, come to my aid, thief-craft (*He opens the grated iron door with housebreaking tools An* OLD MAN, *reduced to a skeleton, comes up fron below.*)

THE OLD MAN. Mercy on a poor wretch! Mercy!

wards the tower.) Some horrible mystery, no doubt, lies concealed in th tower. This sword shall bring it to light.

HERMANN (*comes forward trembling*). Terrible stranger! art thou th demon of this fearful desert — or perhaps one of the ministers of that u fathonable retribution who make their circuit in this lower world, and tak account of all the deeds of darkness? Oh! if thou art, be welcome to th tower of horrors!

MOOR. Well guessed, wanderer of the night! You have divined m function. Exterminating Angel is my name; but I am flesh and blood lik thee. Is this some miserable wretch, cast out of men, and buried in th dungeon? I will loosen his chains. Once more, speak! thou voice of terror Where is the door?

HERMANN. As soon could Satan force the gates of heaven as thou th door. Retire, thou man of might! The genius of the wicked is beyond th ordinary powers of man.

MOOR. But not the craft of robbers. (*He takes some pass-keys from h pocket.*) For once I thank heaven I've learned that craft! These keys woul mock hell's foresight. (*He takes a key, and opens the gate of the tower. A old man comes from below emaciated like a skeleton.* MOOR *springs back wi affright.*) Horrible spectre! my father!

CHARLES (*starts back in terror*). That is my father's voice!

OLD MOOR. I thank thee, merciful Heaven! The hour of deliverance has arrived.

CHARLES. Shade of the aged Moor! what has disturbed thee in thy grave? Has thy soul left this earth charged with some foul crime that bars the gates of Paradise against thee? Say? — I will have masses read, to send thy wandering spirit to its home. Hast thou buried in the earth the gold of widows and orphans, that thou art driven to wander howling through the midnight hour?* I will snatch the hidden treasure from the clutches of the infernal dragon, though he should vomit a thousand red-hot flames upon me, and gnash his sharp teeth against my sword. Or comest thou, at my request, to reveal to me the mysteries of eternity? Speak, thou! speak! I am not the man to blanch with fear!

OLD MOOR. I am not a spirit. Touch me — I live — but oh! a life indeed of misery!

CHARLES. What! hast thou not been buried?

OLD MOOR. I was buried — that is to say, a dead dog lies in the vault of my ancestors, and I have been pining for three long moons in this dark and loathsome dungeon, where no sunbeam shines, no warm breeze penetrates, where no friend is seen, where the hoarse raven croaks and owls screech their midnight concert ——

CHARLES. Heaven and earth! Who has done this?

OLD MOOR. Curse him not! 'Tis my son, Francis, who did this.

CHARLES. Francis? Francis? Oh, eternal chaos!

OLD MOOR. If thou art a man, and hast a human heart — oh! my unknown deliverer — then listen to a father's miseries which his own sons have heaped upon him. For three long moons I have moaned my pitiful tale to these flinty walls — but all my answer was an empty echo, that seemed to mock my wailings. Therefore, if thou art a man, and hast a human heart ——

* "Or, if thou hast uphoarded in thy life,
Extorted treasure in the womb of earth,
For which, they say, you spirits oft walk in death."
HAMLET, Act i, Sc. 1.

CHARLES. That appeal might move even wild beasts to pity.

OLD MOOR. I lay upon a sick bed, and had scarcely begun to recover a little strength, after a dangerous illness, when a man was brought to me, who pretended that my first-born had fallen in battle. He brought a sword stained with his blood, and his last farewell — and said that my curse had driven him into battle, and death, and despair.

CHARLES (*turning away in violent agitation*). The light breaks in upon me!

OLD MOOR. Hear me on! I fainted at the dreadful news. They must have thought me dead; for, when I recovered my senses, I was already in my coffin, shrouded like a corpse. I scratched against the lid. It was opened — 'twas in the dead of night — my son Francis stood before me — "What!" said he, with a tremendous voice, "wilt thou then live forever?" — and with this he slammed-to the lid of the coffin. The thunder of these words bereft me of my senses; when I awoke again, I felt that the coffin was in motion, and being borne on wheels. At last it was opened — I found myself at the entrance of this dungeon — my son stood before me, and the man, too, who had brought me the bloody sword from Charles. I fell at my son's feet, and ten times I embraced his knees, and wept, and conjured, and supplicated,— but the supplications of a father reached not his flinty heart. "Down with the old carcass!" said he, with a voice of thunder, "he has lived too long;" — and I was thrust down without mercy, and my son Francis closed the door upon me.

CHARLES. Impossible! — impossible! Your memory or senses deceive you.

OLD MOOR. Oh, that it were so! But hear me on, and restrain your rage! There I lay for twenty hours, and not a soul cared for my misery. No human footstep treads this solitary wild, for 'tis commonly believed that the ghosts of my ancestors drag clanking chains through these ruins, and chant their funeral dirge at the hour of midnight. At last I heard the door creak again on its hinges; this man opened it, and brought me bread and

water. He told me that I had been condemned to die of hunger, and that his life was in danger should it be discovered that he fed me. Thus has my miserable existence been till now sustained — but the unceasing cold — the foul air of my filthy dungeon — my incurable grief — have exhausted my strength, and reduced my body to a skeleton. A thousand times have I implored heaven, with tears, to put an end to my sufferings — but doubtless the measure of my punishment is not fulfilled, — or some happiness must be yet in store for me, for which he deigns thus miraculously to preserve me. But I suffer justly — my Charles! my Charles! — and before there was even a gray hair on his head!

CHARLES. Enough! Rise! ye stocks, ye lumps of ice! ye lazy unfeeling sleepers! Up! will none of you awake? (*He fires a pistol over their heads.*)

THE ROBBERS (*starting up*). Ho! hallo! hallo! what is the matter?

CHARLES. Has not that tale shaken you out of your sleep? 'Tis enough to break the sleep eternal! See here, see here! The laws of the world have become mere dice-play; the bonds of nature are burst asunder; the Demon of Discord has broken loose, and stalks abroad triumphant! the Son has slain his Father!

THE ROBBERS. What does the captain say?

CHARLES. Slain! did I say? No, that is too mild a term! A son has a thousandfold broken his own father on the wheel, — impaled, racked, flayed him alive! — but all these words are too feeble to express what would make sin itself blush and cannibals shudder. For ages, no devil ever conceived a deed so horrible. His own father! — but see, see him! he has fainted away! His own father — the son — into this dungeon — cold — naked — hungry — athirst — Oh! see, I pray you, see! — 'tis my own father, in very truth it is.

THE ROBBERS (*come running and surround the old man*). Your father? Yours?

SCHWEITZER (*approaches him reverently, and falls on his knees before him*). Father of my captain! let me kiss thy feet! My dagger is at thy command.

CHARLES. Revenge, revenge, revenge! thou horribly

injured, profaned old man! Thus, from this moment, and forever, I rend in twain all ties of fraternity. (*He rends his garment from top to bottom.*) Here, in the face of heaven, I curse him — curse every drop of blood which flows in his veins! Hear me, O moon and stars! and thou black canopy of night, that lookest down upon this horror! Hear me, thrice terrible avenger. Thou who reignest above yon pallid orb, who sittest an avenger and a judge above the stars, and dartest thy fiery bolts through darkness on the head of guilt! Behold me on my knees — behold me raise this hand aloft in the gloom of night — and hear my oath — and may nature vomit me forth as some horrible abortion from out the circle of her works if I break that oath! Here I swear that I will never more greet the light of day, till the blood of that foul parricide, spilt upon this stone, reeks in misty vapor towards heaven. (*He rises.*)

ROBBERS. 'Tis a deed of hell! After this, who shall call us villains? No! by all the dragons of darkness! we never have done anything half so horrible.

CHARLES. True! and by all the fearful groans of those whom your daggers have despatched — of those who on that terrible day were consumed by fire, or crushed by the falling tower — no thought of murder or rapine shall be harbored in your breast, till every man among you has dyed his garments scarlet in this monster's blood. It never, I should think, entered your dreams, that it would fall to your lot to execute the great decrees of heaven? The tangled web of our destiny is unravelled! To-day, to-day, an invisible power has ennobled our craft! Worship Him who has called you to this high destiny, who has conducted you hither, and deemed ye worthy to be the terrible angels of his inscrutable judgments! Uncover your heads! Bow down and kiss the dust, and rise up sanctified. (*They kneel.*)

SCHWEITZER. Now, captain, issue your commands! What shall we do?

CHARLES. Rise, Schweitzer! and touch these sacred locks! (*Leading him to his father, and putting a lock of hair in his hand.*) Do you remember still, how you cleft the skull of that Bohemian trooper, at the moment

his sabre was descending on my head, and I had sunk down on my knees, breathless and exhausted? 'Twas then I promised thee a reward that should be right royal. But to this hour I have never been able to discharge that debt.

SCHWEITZER. You swore that much to me,-'tis true; but let me call you my debtor forever!

CHARLES. No; now will I repay thee, Schweitzer! No mortal has yet been honored as thou shalt be. I appoint thee avenger of my father's wrongs! (SCHWEITZER *rises.*)

SCHWEITZER. Mighty captain! this day you have, for the first time, made me truly proud! Say, when, where, how shall I smite him?

CHARLES. The minutes are sacred. You must hasten to the work. Choose the best of the band, and lead them straight to the count's castle! Drag him from his bed, though he sleep, or lie folded in the arms of pleasure! Drag him from the table, though he be drunk! Tear him from the crucifix, though he lie on his knees before it! But mark my words — I charge thee, deliver him into my hands alive! I will hew that man to pieces, and feed the hungry vultures with his flesh, who dares but graze his skin, or injure a single hair of his head! I must have him whole. Bring him to me whole and alive, and a million shall be thy reward. I'll plunder kings at the risk of my life, but thou shalt have it, and go free as air. Thou hast my purpose — see it done!

SCHWEITZER. Enough, captain! here is my hand upon it. You shall see both of us, or neither. Come, Schweitzer's destroying angels, follow me! (*Exit with a troop.*)

CHARLES. The rest of you disperse in the forest — I remain here.

ACT V.

SCENE I. *A vista of rooms. Dark night.*

Enter DANIEL, *with a lantern and a bundle.*

DANIEL. Farewell, dear home! How many happy days have I enjoyed within these walls, while my old *master* lived. Tears to thy memory, thou whom the

grave has long since devoured! He deserves this tribute from an old servant. His roof was the asylum of orphans, the refuge of the destitute, but this son has made it a den of murderers. Farewell, thou dear floor! How often has old Daniel scrubbed thee! Farewell, dear stove, old Daniel takes a heavy leave of thee. All things had grown so familiar to thee, — thou wilt feel it sorely, old Eleazar. But heaven preserve me through grace from the wiles and assault of the tempter. Empty I came hither — empty I will depart, — but my soul is saved! (*He is in the act of going out, when he is met by* FRANCIS, *rushing in, in his dressing-gown.*) Heaven help me! Master! (*He puts out his lantern.*)

FRANCIS. Betrayed! betrayed! The spirit of the dead are vomited from their graves. The realm of death, shaken out of its eternal slumber, roars at me, "Murderer! murderer!" Who moves there?

DANIEL (*frightened*). Help, holy Virgin! help! Is it you, my gracious master, whose shrieks echo so terribly through the castle that every one is aroused out of his sleep?

FRANCIS. Sleep? And who gave thee leave to sleep? Go, get lights! (*Exit* DANIEL. *Enter another servant.*) No one shall sleep at this hour. Do you hear? All shall be awake — in arms — let the guns be loaded! Did you not see them rushing through yon vaulted passages?

SERVANT. See whom, my lord?

FRANCIS. Whom? you dolt, slave! And do you, with a cold and vacant stare, ask me whom? Have they not beset me almost to madness? Whom? blockhead! whom? Ghosts and demons! How far is the night advanced?

SERVANT. The watch has just called two.

FRANCIS. What? will this eternal night last till doomsday? Did you hear no tumult near? no shout of victory? no trampling of horses? Where is Char — the Count, I would say?

SERVANT. I know not, my lord.

FRANCIS. You know not? And are you too one of his gang? I'll tread your villain's heart out through your

ribs for that infernal "I know not!" Begone, fetch the minister!

SERVANT. My lord!

FRANCIS. What! Do you grumble? Do you demur? (*Exit servant hastily.*) Do my very slaves conspire against me? Heaven, earth, and hell — all conspire against me!

DANIEL (*returns with a lighted candle*). My lord!

FRANCIS. Who said I trembled? No! — 'twas but a dream. The dead still rest in their graves! Tremble! or pale? No, no! I am calm — quite tranquil.

DANIEL. You are as pale as death, my lord; your voice is weak and faltering.

FRANCIS. I am somewhat feverish. When the minister comes be sure you say I am in a fever. Say that I intend to be bled in the morning.

DANIEL. Shall I give you some drops of the balsam of life on sugar?

FRANCIS. Yes, balsam of life on sugar! The minister will not be here just yet. My voice is weak and faltering. Give me of the balsam of life on sugar!

DANIEL. Let me have the keys, I will go down to the closet and get it.

FRANCIS. No! no! no! Stay! — or I will go with you. You see I must not be left alone! How easily I might, you see — faint — if I should be left alone. Never mind, never mind! It will pass off — you must not leave me.

DANIEL. Indeed, sir, you are ill, very ill.

FRANCIS. Yes, just so, just so, nothing more. And illness, you know, bewilders the brain, and breeds strange and maddening dreams. What signify dreams? Dreams come from the stomach and cannot signify anything. Is it not so, Daniel? I had a very comical dream just now. (*He sinks down fainting.*)

DANIEL. Oh, merciful heaven! what is this? George! — Conrad! Sebastian! Martin! Give but some sign of life! (*Shaking him.*) Oh, the Blessed Virgin! Oh, Joseph! Keep but your reason! They will say I have murdered him! Lord have mercy upon me!

FRANCIS (*confused*). Avaunt! — avaunt! — why dost

thou glare upon me thus, thou horrible spectre?* The time for the resurrection of the dead is not yet come.

DANIEL. Merciful heavens! he has lost his senses.

FRANCIS (*recovering himself gradually*). Where am I? You here, Daniel? What have I said? Heed it not. I have told a lie, whatever I said. Come, help me up! 'Twas only a fit of delirium — because — because — I have not finished my night's rest.

DANIEL. If John were but here! I'll call for help — I'll send for the physician.

FRANCIS. Stay! Seat yourself by my side on this sofa! There. You are a sensible man, a good man. Listen to my dream!

DANIEL. Not now; another time! Let me lead you to bed; you have great need of rest.

FRANCIS. No, no; I prythee, listen, Daniel, and have a good laugh at me. You must know I fancied that I held a princely banquet, my heart was merry, and I lay stretched on the turf in the castle garden; and all on a sudden — it was at midday — and all on a sudden — but mind you have a good laugh at me!

DANIEL. All on a sudden.

FRANCIS. All on a sudden a tremendous peal of thunder struck upon my slumbering ear; I started up staggering and trembling; and lo, it seemed as if the whole hemisphere had burst forth in one flaming sheet of fire, and mountains, and cities, and forests melted away like wax in the furnace; and then rose a howling whirlwind, which swept before it the earth, and the sea, and heaven; then came a sound, as from brazen trumpets, "Earth, give up thy dead: sea, give up thy dead!" and the open plains began to heave, and to cast up skulls, and ribs, and jawbones, and legs, which drew together into human bodies, and then came sweeping along in dense, interminable masses — a living deluge.† Then I looked up, and lo! I stood at the foot of the thundering Sinai, and above me was a multitude, and below me a multitude; and on the summit of the mountain, on three smoking

* The reader will remember something similar to this in the banquet scene, Macbeth, Act iv, Sc. 3.

† Schiller has here evidently had in mind Ezekiel, chap. xxxvii. vs. 1-12. Other passages bear considerable resemblance to the Revelations.

thrones, sat three men, before whose gaze all creation trembled.

DANIEL. Why, this is a living picture of the day of judgment.

FRANCIS. Did I not tell you? Is it not ridiculous stuff? And one stepped forth who, to look upon, was like a starlight night; he had in his hand a signet ring of iron, which he held up between the east and the west, and said, "Eternal, holy, just, immutable! There is but *one* truth; there is but *one* virtue! Woe, woe, woe! to the doubting sinner!" Then stepped forth a second, who had in his hand a flashing mirror, which he held up between the east and west, and said, "This is the mirror of truth; hypocrisy and deceit cannot look on it." Then was I terrified, and so were all, for we saw the forms of snakes, and tigers, and leopards reflected from that fearful mirror. Then stepped forth a third, who had in his hand a brazen balance, which he held up between the east and the west, and said, "Approach, ye sons of Adam! I weigh your thoughts in the balance of my wrath! and your deeds with the weight of my fury!"

DANIEL. The Lord have mercy upon me!

FRANCIS. They all stood pale and trembling, and every heart was panting with fearful expectation. Then it seemed to me as if I heard my name called the first from out the thunders of the mountain, and the innermost marrow froze within my bones, and my teeth chattered loudly. Presently the clang of the balance was heard, the rocks sent forth thunders, and the hours glided by, one after the other, towards the left scale, and each threw into it a mortal sin!

DANIEL. Oh, may God forgive you!

FRANCIS. He forgave me not! The left scale grew mountains high, but the other, filled with the blood of atonement, still outweighed it. At last came an old man, heavily bowed down with grief, his arm gnawed through with raging hunger. Every eye turned away in horror from the sight. I knew the man — he cut off a lock of his silver hair, and cast it into the scale of my sins, when lo! in an instant, it sank down to the abyss, and the scale of atonement flew up on high. Then heard I a voice,

issuing like thunder from the bowels* of the mountain, "Pardon, pardon to every sinner of the earth and of the deep! Thou alone art rejected!" (*A profound pause.*) Well, why don't you laugh?

DANIEL. Can I laugh while my flesh creeps? Dreams come from above.

FRANCIS. Pshaw! pshaw! Say not so! Call me a fool, an idiot, an absurd fool! Do, there's a good Daniel, I entreat of you; have a hearty laugh at me!

DANIEL. Dreams come from God. I will pray for you.

FRANCIS. Thou liest, I tell thee. Go, this instant, run! be quick! see where the minister tarries all this time; tell him to come quickly, instantly! But, I tell thee, thou liest!

DANIEL. Heaven have mercy upon you! [*Exit.*

FRANCIS. Vulgar prejudice! mere superstition! It has not yet been proved that the past is not past and forgotten, or that there is an eye above this earth to take account of what passes on it. Humph! humph! But whence, then, this fearful whisper to my soul? Is there really an avenging judge above the stars? No, no! Yes, yes! A fearful monitor within bears witness that there is One above the stars who judgeth! What! meet the avenger above the stars this very night? No, no! I say. All is empty, lonely, desolate, beyond the stars. Miserable subterfuge, beneath which thy cowardice seeks to hide itself. And if there should be something in it after all? No! no! it cannot be. I insist that it cannot be! But yet, if there should be! Woe to thee if thy sins should all have been registered above! — if they should be counted over to thee this very night! Why creeps this shudder through my frame? To die! Why does that word frighten me thus? To give an account to the Avenger, there, above the stars! and if he should be just — the wails of orphans and widows, of the oppressed, the tormented, ascending to his ears, and he be just? Why have they been afflicted? And why have I been permitted to trample upon them?

* Some editions of the original read *Rauch* (smoke), some *Bauch*, as translated.

Enter PASTOR MOSER.

MOSER. Your lordship sent for me! I am surprised! The first time in my life! Is it to scoff at religion, or does it begin to make you tremble?

FRANCIS. I may scoff or I may tremble, according as you shall answer me. Listen to me, Moser, I will prove that you are a fool, or wish to make fools of others, and you shall answer me. Do you hear? At the peril of your life you shall answer me.

MOSER. 'Tis a higher Being whom you summon before your tribunal. He will answer you hereafter.

FRANCIS. I will be answered now, this instant, that I may not commit the contemptible folly of calling upon the idol of the vulgar under the pressure of suffering. I have often, in bumpers of Burgundy, tauntingly pledged you in the toast, "There is no God!" Now I address myself to you in earnest, and I tell you there is none? You shall oppose me with all the weapons in your power; but with the breath of my lips I will blow them away.

MOSER. 'Twere well that you could also blow away the thunder which will alight upon your proud soul with ten thousand times ten thousand tons' weight! That omniscient God, whom you — fool and miscreant — are denying in the midst of his creation, needeth not to justify himself by the mouth of dust. He is as great in your tyrannies as in the sweetest smile of triumphant virtue.

FRANCIS. Uncommonly well said, parson. Thus I like you.

MOSER. I stand here as steward of a greater Master, and am addressing one who, like myself, is a sinner — one whom I care not to please. I must indeed be able to work miracles, to extort the acknowledgment from your obdurate wickedness — but if your conviction is so firm, why have you sent for me in the middle of the night?

FRANCIS. Because time hangs heavy on my hands, and the chess-board has ceased to have any attraction. I wish to amuse myself in a tilt with the parson. Your empty terrors will not unman my courage. I am well aware

that those who have come off short in this world look forward to eternity; but they will be sadly disappointed. I have always read that our whole body is nothing more than a blood-spring, and that, with its last drop, mind and thought dissolve into nothing. They share all the infirmities of the body; why, then, should they not cease with its dissolution? Why not evaporate in its decomposition? Let a drop of water stray into your brain, and life makes a sudden pause, which borders on non-existence, and this pause continued is death. Sensation is the vibration of a few chords, which, when the instrument is broken, cease to sound. If I raze my seven castles — if I dash this Venus to pieces — there is an end of their symmetry and beauty. Behold! thus is it with your immortal soul!

MOSER. So says the philosophy of your despair. But your own heart, which knocks against your ribs with terror even while you thus argue, gives your tongue the lie. These cobwebs of systems are swept away by the single word — "Thou must die!" I challenge you, and be this the test: If you maintain your firmness in the hour of death; if your principles do not then miserably desert you, you shall be admitted to have the best of the argument. But if, in that dread hour, the least shudder creeps over you, then woe be to you! you have deceived yourself.

FRANCIS (*disturbed*). If in the hour of death a shudder creeps over me?

MOSER. I have seen many such wretches before now, who set truth at defiance up to that point; but at the approach of death the illusion vanished. I will stand at your bedside when you are dying — I should much like to see a tyrant die. I will stand by, and look you steadfastly in the face when the physician takes your cold, clammy hand, and is scarcely able to detect your expiring pulse; and when he looks up, and, with a fearful shake of the head, says to you, "All human aid is in vain!" Beware, at that moment, beware, lest you look like Richard and Nero!*

* Schiller no doubt alludes to the tent scene in Shakspeare's Richard III., as there is no historical fact that would warrant the allusion.

FRANCIS. No! no!

MOSER. Even that very "No" will then be turned to a howling "Yea! An inward tribunal, which you can no longer cheat with sceptical delusions, will then wake up and pass judgment upon you. But the waking up will be like that of one buried alive in the bowels of the churchyard; there will come remorse like that of the suicide who has committed the fatal act and repents it; — 'twill be a flash of lightning suddenly breaking in upon the midnight darkness of your life! There will be one look, and, if you can sustain that, I will admit that you have won!

FRANCIS (*walking up and down restlessly*). Cant! Priestly cant!

MOSER. Then, for the first time, will the sword of eternity pass through your soul; — and then, for the first time, too late, the thought of God will wake up a terrible monitor, whose name is Judge. Mark this, Moor; a thousand lives hang upon your beck; and of those thousand every nine hundred and ninety-nine have been rendered miserable by you. You wanted but the Roman empire to be a Nero, the kingdom of Peru to be a Pizarro. Now do you really think that the Almighty will suffer a worm like you to play the tyrant in His world and to reverse all his ordinances? Do you think the nine hundred and ninety-nine were created only to be destroyed, only to serve as puppets in your diabolical game? Think it not! He will call you to account for every minute of which you have robbed them, every joy that you have poisoned, every perfection that you have intercepted. Then, if you can answer Him — then, Moor, I will admit that you have won.

FRANCIS. No more, not another word! Am I to be at the mercy of thy drivelling fancies?

MOSER. Beware! The different destinies of mankind are balanced with terrible nicety. The scale of life which sinks here will rise there, and that which rises here will sink there. What was here temporary affliction will there be eternal triumph; and what here was temporary triumph will there be eternal despair.

FRANCIS (*rushing savagely upon him.*) May the

thunder of heaven strike thee dumb, thou lying spirit! I will tear thy venomed tongue out of thy mouth!

MOSER. Do you so soon feel the weight of truth? Before I have brought forward one single word of evidence? Let me first proceed to the proofs——

FRANCIS. Silence! To hell with thee and thy proofs! The soul is annihilated, I tell thee, and I will not be gainsaid!

MOSER. That is what the spirits of the bottomless pit are hourly moaning for; but heaven denies the boon. Do you hope to escape from the Avenger's arm even in the solitary waste of nothingness? If you climb up into heaven, he is there! if you make your bed in hell, behold he is there also! If you say to the night, "Hide me!" and to the darkness, "Cover me!" even the night shall be light about you,* and darkness blaze upon your damned soul like a noonday sun.

FRANCIS. But I do not wish to be immortal — let them be so that like; I have no desire to hinder them. I will force him to annihilate me; I will so provoke his fury that he may utterly destroy me. Tell me which are the greatest sins — which excite him to the most terrible wrath?

MOSER. I know but two. But men do not commit these, nor do men even dream of them.

FRANCIS. What are they?

MOSER (*very significantly*). Parricide is the name of the one; fratricide of the other. Why do you turn so suddenly pale?

FRANCIS. What, old man? Art thou in league with heaven or with hell? Who told thee that?

MOSER. Woe to him that hath them both upon his soul! It were better for that man that he had never been born! But be at peace; you have no longer either a father or a brother!

FRANCIS. Ha! what! Do you know no greater sin? Think again! Death, heaven, eternity, damnation, hang upon thy lips. Not one greater?

MOSER. No, not one!

* See Psalm cxxxix. vs. 7-12.

FRANCIS (*falling back in a chair*). Annihilation! annihilation!

MOSER. Rejoice, then, rejoice! Congratulate yourself! With all your abominations you are yet a saint in comparison with a parricide. The curse that falls upon you is a love ditty in comparison with the curse that lies upon him. Retribution ——

FRANCIS (*starting up*). Away with thee! May the graves open and swallow thee ten thousand fathoms deep, thou bird of ill omen! Who bade thee come here? Away, I tell thee, or I will run thee through and through!

MOSER. Can mere "priestly cant" excite a philosopher to such a pitch of frenzy? Why not blow it away with a breath of your lips? (*Exit.*)

[FRANCIS *throws himself about in his chair in terrible agitation. Profound stillness.*

Enter a SERVANT, *hastily*

SERVANT. The Lady Amelia has fled. The count has suddenly disappeared.

Enter DANIEL, *in great alarm.*

DANIEL. My lord, a troop of furious horsemen are galloping down the hill, shouting "murder! murder!" The whole village is in alarm.

FRANCIS. Quick! let all the bells be tolled — summon every one to the chapel — let all fall on their knees — pray for me. All prisoners shall be released and forgiven — I will make two and threefold restitution to the poor — I will — why don't you run? Do call in the father confessor, that he may give me absolution for my sins. What! are you not gone yet? (*The uproar becomes more audible.*)

DANIEL. Heaven have mercy upon me, poor sinner! Can I believe you in earnest, sir? You, who always made a jest of religion? How many a Bible and prayer-book have you flung at my head when by chance you caught me at my devotions?

FRANCIS. No more of this. To die! think of it! to *die!* It will be too late! (*The voice of* SCHWEITZER *is*

heard, loud and furious.) Pray for me, Daniel! Pray, I entreat you!

DANIEL. I always told you, — "you hold prayer in such contempt; but take heed! take heed! when the fatal hour comes, when the waters are flowing in upon your soul, you will be ready to give all the treasures of the world for one little Christian prayer." Do you see it now? What abuse you used to heap on me! Now you feel it! Is it not so!

FRANCIS (*embracing him violently*). Forgive me! my dear precious jewel of a Daniel, forgive me! I will clothe you from head to foot — do but pray. I will make quite a bridegroom of you — I will — only do pray — I entreat you — on my knees, I conjure you. In the devil's name, pray! why don't you pray? (*Tumult in the streets, shouts and noises.*)

SCHWEIT. (*in the street*). Storm the place! Kill all before you! Force the gates! I see lights! He must be there!

FRANCIS (*on his knees*). Listen to my prayer, O God in heaven! It is the first time — it shall never happen again. Hear me, God in heaven!

DANIEL. Mercy on me! What are you saying? What a wicked prayer!

Uproar of the PEOPLE, *rushing in.*

PEOPLE. Robbers! murderers! Who makes such a dreadful noise at this midnight hour!

SCHWEIT (*still in the street*). Beat them back, comrades! 'Tis the devil, come to fetch your master. Where is Schwarz* with his troop? Surround the castle, Grimm! Scale the walls!

GRIMM. Bring the firebrands. Either we must up or he must down. I will throw fire into his halls.

FRANCIS (*praying*). Oh Lord! I have been no common murderer — I have been guilty of no petty crimes, gracious Lord ——

DANIEL. Heaven be merciful to us! His very prayers are turned to sins. (*Stones and firebrands are hurled up*

* *Schwarz* is the German for Black, or Blacky.

from below; the windows fall in with a crash; the castle takes fire.)

FRANCIS. I cannot pray. Here! and here! (*striking his breast and his forehead.*) All is so void — so barren! (*Rises from his knees.*) No, I will not pray. Heaven shall not have that triumph, nor hell that pastime.

DANIEL. O holy Virgin! Help! save! The whole castle is in flames!

FRANCIS. There, take this sword! Quick! Run it right through my body, that these fiends may not be in time to make holiday sport of me. (*The fire increases.*)

DANIEL. Heaven forbid? Heaven forbid! I would send no one before his time to heaven, much less to —— (*He runs away*).

FRANCIS (*following him with a ghastly stare, after a pause*). To hell, thou wouldst say. Indeed! I scent something of the kind. (*In delirium.*) Are these their triumphant yells? Do I hear you hissing, ye serpents of the abyss? They force their way up — they besiege the door! Why do I shrink from this biting steel? The door cracks — it yields — there is no escape! Ha! then do thou have mercy upon me! (*He tears away the golden cord from his hat, and strangles himself.*)*

Enter SCHWEITZER *and his band.*

SCHWEITZER. Murderous wretch, where art thou? Did you see how they fled? Has he so few friends? Where has the beast crawled to?

GRIMM (*stumbles over the corpse*). Stay! what is this lying in the way? Lights here.

* In the acting edition, Francis attempts to throw himself into the flames, but is prevented by the robbers, and taken alive He is then brought before his brother, in chains, for sentence. SCHWEITZER says, "I have fulfilled my word, and brought him alive." GRIMM. "We tore him out of the flames, and the castle is in ashes." After confronting Francis with his father, and a reproachful interview between the brothers, Charles delegates the judgment on Francis to Schweitzer and Kosinsky, but for himself forgives him in these words: "Thou hast robbed me of heaven's bliss! Be that sin blotted out! Thy doom is sealed — perdition is thy lot! But I forgive thee, brother." *Upon this* CHARLES *embraces and leaves him; the* ROBBERS, *however, thrust* FRANCIS *into the dungeon where he had immured his father, laughing in a savage manner.*

Beyond this the fate of Francis is left undetermined. Schweitzer, instead *of killing* himself, is made partaker, with Kosinsky, of Moor's estate.

SCHWARZ. He has been beforehand with us. Put up your swords. There he lies sprawling like a dead dog.

SCHWEITZER. Dead! What! dead? Dead without me? 'Tis a lie, I say. Mark how quickly he will spring upon his feet! (*Shakes him*). Hollo! up with you? There is a father to be murdered.

GRIMM. Spare your pains. He is as dead as a log.

SCHWEITZER (*steps aside from him*). Yes, his game is up! He is dead! dead! Go back and tell my captain he is as dead as a log. He will not see me again. (*Blows his brains out.*)

SCENE II.— *The scene the same as the last scene of the preceding Act.*

OLD MOOR *seated on a stone;* CHARLES VON MOOR *opposite;* ROBBERS *scattered through the wood.*

CHARLES. He does not come! (*Strikes his dagger against a stone till the sparks fly.*)

OLD MOOR. Let pardon be his punishment — redoubled love my vengeance.

CHARLES. No! by my enraged soul that shall not be! I will not permit it. He shall bear that enormous load of crime with him into eternity! — what else should I kill him for?

OLD MOOR (*bursting into tears*). Oh my child!

CHARLES. What! you weep for him? In sight of this dungeon?

OLD MOOR. Mercy! oh mercy! (*Wringing his hands violently.*) Now — now my son is brought to judgment!

CHARLES (*starting*). Which son?

OLD MOOR. Ha! what means that question?

CHARLES. Nothing! nothing!

OLD MOOR. Art thou come to make a mockery of my grief?

CHARLES. Treacherous conscience! Take no heed of my words!

OLD MOOR. Yes, I persecuted a son, and a son persecutes me in return. It is the finger of God. Oh my

Charles! my Charles! If thou dost hover around me in the realms of peace, forgive me! oh forgive me!

CHARLES (*hastily*). He forgives you! (*Checking himself.*) If he is worthy to be called your son, he must forgive you!

OLD MOOR. Ha! he was too noble a son for me. But I will go to him with my tears, my sleepless nights, my racking dreams. I will embrace his knees, and cry — cry aloud — "I have sinned against heaven and before thee; I am no longer worthy to be called thy father!"

CHARLES (*in deep emotion*). Was he very dear to you — that other son?

OLD MOOR. Heaven is my witness, how much I loved him. Oh, why did I suffer myself to be beguiled by the arts of a wicked son? I was an envied father among the fathers of the world — my children full of promise, blooming by my side! But — oh that fatal hour! — the demon of envy entered into the heart of my younger son — I listened to the serpent — and — lost both my children! (*Hides his countenance.*)

CHARLES (*removes to a distance from him*). Lost forever!

OLD MOOR. Oh, deeply do I feel the words of Amelia. The spirit of vengeance spoke from her lips. "In vain wilt thou stretch forth thy dying hands after a son, in vain fancy thou art grasping the warm hands of thy Charles, — he will never more stand by thy bedside."

(CHARLES *stretches out his hand to him with averted face.*)

Oh, that this were the hand of my Charles! But he is laid far away in the narrow house — he is sleeping the iron sleep — he hears not the voice of my lamentation. Woe is me! to die in the arms of a stranger? No son left — no son left to close my eyes!

CHARLES (*in violent emotion*). It must be so — the moment has arrived. Leave me — (*to the* ROBBERS.) And yet — can I restore his son to him? Alas! No! I cannot restore him that son! No! I will not think of it.

OLD MOOR. Friend! what is that you were muttering?

CHARLES. Your son — yes, old man — (*faltering*) your son — is — lost forever!

OLD MOOR. Forever?

CHARLES (*looking up to heaven in bitter anguish*). Oh this once — keep my soul from sinking — sustain me but this once!

OLD MOOR. Forever, did you say.

CHARLES. Ask no more! I said forever!

OLD MOOR. Stranger, stranger! why didst thou drag me forth from the dungeon to remind me of my sorrows?

CHARLES. And what if I were now to snatch his blessing? — snatch it like a thief, and steal away with the precious prize? A father's blessing, they say, is never lost.

OLD MOOR. And is my Francis too lost?

CHARLES (*falling on his knees before him*). 'Twas I who burst the bars of your dungeon. I crave thy blessing!

OLD MOOR (*sorrowfully*). Oh that thou shouldst destroy the son! — thou, the father's deliverer! Behold! Heaven's mercy is untiring, and we pitiful worms let the sun go down upon our wrath. (*Lays his hand upon the head of* CHARLES.) Be thou happy, even as thou shalt be merciful!

CHARLES (*rising much affected*). Oh! — where is my manhood? My sinews are unstrung — the sword drops from my hand.

OLD MOOR. How lovely a thing it is when brethren dwell together in unity; as the dewdrops of heaven that fall upon the mountains of Zion.* Learn to deserve that happiness, young man, and the angels of heaven will sun themselves in thy glory. Let thy wisdom be the wisdom of gray hairs, but let thy heart be the heart of innocent childhood.

CHARLES. Oh, for a foretaste of that happiness! Kiss me, divine old man!

OLD MOOR (*kissing him*). Think it thy father's kiss; and I will think I am kissing my son. Canst thou too weep?

CHARLES. I felt as if it were my father's kiss! Woe unto me, were they to bring him now!

* Psalm cxxxiii.

(*The companions of* SCHWEITZER *enter in a silent and mournful procession, hanging down their heads and hiding their faces.*

CHARLES. Good heaven! (*Retreats horror-struck, and seeks to hide himself. They pass by him. His face is averted. Profound silence. They halt.*)

GRIMM (*in a subdued tone*). My captain!

[CHARLES *does not answer and steps farther back.*

SCHWARZ. Dear captain!

[CHARLES *retreats still farther.*

GRIMM. 'Tis not our fault, captain!

CHARLES (*without looking at them*). Who are ye?

GRIMM. You do not look at us! Your faithful followers.

CHARLES. Woe to ye, if ye are faithful to me!

GRIMM. The last farewell from your servant Schweitzer!—

CHARLES (*starting*). Then ye have not found him?

SCHWARZ. Found him dead.

CHARLES (*leaping up with joy*). Thanks, O Sovereign Ruler of all things!—Embrace me, my children!—Mercy be henceforward our watchword!—Now, were that too surmounted,—all would be surmounted.*

Enter ROBBERS *with* AMELIA.

ROBBERS. Hurrah! hurrah! A prize, a splendid prize!

AMELIA (*with hair dishevelled*). The dead, they cry, have arisen at his voice—My uncle alive—in this wood—Where is he? Charles? Uncle!—Ha? (*She rushes into the arms of* OLD MOOR.)

OLD MOOR. Amelia! my daughter! Amelia! (*Holds her tightly grasped in his arms.*)

CHARLES (*starting back*). Who brings this image before my eyes.

AMELIA (*tearing herself away from the old man, rushes upon* CHARLES, *and embraces him in an ecstasy of delight*). I have him, O ye stars! I have him!

* This exclamation is in keeping with that at page 244:—"Soon, very soon, all will be accomplished."

CHARLES (*tearing himself away, to the* ROBBER Let us be gone, comrades! The arch fiend has betray me!

AMELIA. My bridegroom, my bridegroom! thou raving! Ha! 'Tis with delight! Why, then, am I cold, so unfeeling, in the midst of this tumult of hap ness?

OLD MOOR (*rousing himself*). Bridegroom? Daught my daughter! Thy bridegroom?*

AMELIA. His forever! He forever, ever, mine! O ye heavenly powers! support me in this ecstasy of bli lest I sink beneath its weight!

CHARLES. Tear her from my neck! Kill her! K him! Kill me — yourselves — everybody! Let the wh world perish! (*About to rush off.*)

AMELIA. Whither? what? Love! eternity! hap ness! never-ending joys! and thou wouldst fly?

CHARLES. Away, away! most unfortunate of brid See with thine own eyes; ask, and hear it with th own ears! Most miserable of fathers! Let me esc hence forever!

AMELIA. Support me! for heaven's sake support m It is growing dark before my eyes! He flies!

CHARLES. Too late! In vain! Your curse, fath Ask me no more! I am — I have — your curse your supposed curse! Who enticed me hither? (*Ru ing upon the* ROBBERS *with drawn sword.*) Which of y enticed me hither, ye demons of the abyss? Peri then, Amelia! Die, father! Die, for the third ti through me! These, thy deliverers, are Robbers a Murderers! Thy Charles is their Captain! (OLD Mo *expires.*)

[AMELIA *stands silent and transfixed like a stat The whole band are mute. A fearful pau*

CHARLES (*rushing against an oak*). The souls those I have strangled in the intoxication of love — those whom I crushed to atoms in the sacredness of sle

* Instead of this the stage edition has, "Come, my children! Thy ha Charles — and thine, Amelia. Oh! I never looked for such happiness on side the grave. Here let me unite you forever."

—of those whom — Ha! ha! ha! do you hear the powder-magazine bursting over the heads of women in travail? Do you see the flames creeping round the cradles of sucklings? That is our nuptial torch; those shrieks our wedding music! Oh! he forgetteth none of these things!—he knoweth how to connect the links in the chain of life. Therefore do love's delights elude my grasp; therefore is love given me for a torment! This is retribution!

AMELIA. 'Tis all true! Thou Ruler in heaven! 'Tis all true! What have I done, poor innocent lamb? I have loved this man!

CHARLES. This is more than a man can endure. Have I not heard death hissing at me from more thousands of barrels, and never yet moved a hair's breadth out of its way. And shall I now be taught to tremble like a woman? tremble before a woman! No! a woman shall not conquer my manly courage! Blood! blood! 'tis but a fit of womanish feeling. I must glut myself with blood; and this will pass away. (*He is about to fly.*)

AMELIA (*sinking into his arms*). Murderer! devil! I cannot — angel — leave thee!

CHARLES (*thrusting her from him*). Away! insidious serpent! Thou wouldst make a mockery of my frenzy; but I will bid defiance to my tyrant destiny. What! art thou weeping? O ye relentless, malicious stars! She pretends to weep, as if any soul could weep for me! (AMELIA *falls on his neck.*) Ha! what means this? She shuns me not — she spurns me not. Amelia! hast thou then forgotten? Dost thou remember whom thou art embracing, Amelia?

AMELIA. My only one, mine, mine forever!

CHARLES (*recovering himself in an ecstasy of joy*). She forgives me, she loves me! Then am I pure as the ether of heaven, for she loves me! With tears I thank thee, all-merciful Father! (*He falls on his knees, and bursts into a violent fit of weeping.*) The peace of my soul is restored; my sufferings are at an end. Hell is no more! Behold! oh behold! the child of light weeps on the neck of a repentant demon! (*Rising and turning to the* ROBBERS). Why are ye not weeping also? Weep,

weep, ye are all so happy. O Amelia! Amelia! Amelia! (*He hangs on her neck, they remain locked in a silent embrace.*)

A Robber (*stepping forward enraged*). Hold, traitor! This instant come from her arms! or I will speak a word that shall make thy ears tingle, and thy teeth chatter with horror! (*He holds his sword between them.*)

An Aged Robber. Remember the Bohemian forests! Dost thou hear? dost thou tremble? Remember the Bohemian forests, I tell thee! Faithless man! where are thy oaths? Are wounds so soon forgotten? Who staked fortune, honor, life itself for thee? Who stood by thee like walls, and like shields caught the blows which were aimed at thy life? Didst not thou then lift up thy hand and swear an iron oath never to forsake us, even as we forsook not thee? Base, perfidious wretch! and wouldst thou now desert us at the whining of a harlot?

A third Robber. Shame on thy perjury! The spirit of the immolated Roller, whom thou didst summon from the realms of death to attest thy oath, will blush at thy cowardice, and rise from his grave full armed to chastise thee.

The Robbers (*all in disorder, tearing open their garments*). See here! and here! Dost thou know these scars? Thou art ours! With our heart's blood we have bought thee, and thou art ours bodily, even though the Archangel Michael should seek to wrest thee out of the grasp of the fiery Moloch! Now! March with us! Sacrifice for sacrifice, Amelia for the band!

Charles (*releasing her hand*). It is past! I would arise and return to my father; but heaven has said, "It shall not be!" (*Coldly.*) Blind fool that I was! why should I wish it? Is it possible for a great sinner to return? A great sinner never can return. That ought I long since to have known. Be still! I pray thee be still! 'Tis all as it should be. When He sought me I would not; now that I seek him, He will not. What can be more just? Do not roll about thine eyes so wildly. He has no need of me. Has He not creatures in abundance? One he can easily spare, and that one am I. Come along, comrades!

AMELIA (*pulling him back*). Stay, I beseech you! One blow! one deadly blow! Again forsaken! Draw thy sword, and have mercy upon me!

CHARLES. Mercy has taken refuge among bears. I will not kill thee!

AMELIA (*embracing his knees*). Oh, for heaven's sake! by all that is merciful! I ask no longer for love. I know that our stars fly from each other in opposition. Death is all I ask. Forsaken, forsaken! Take that word in all its dreadful import! Forsaken! I cannot survive it! Thou knowest well that no woman can survive that. All I ask is death. See, my hand trembles! I have not courage to strike the blow. I shrink from the gleaming blade! To thee it is so easy, so very easy; thou art a master in murder—draw thy sword, and make me happy!

CHARLES. Wouldst thou alone be happy? Away with thee! I will kill no woman!

AMELIA. Ha! destroyer! thou canst only kill the happy; they who are weary of existence thou sparest! (*She glides towards the robbers.*) Then do ye have mercy on me, disciples of murder! There lurks a bloodthirsty pity in your looks that is consoling to the wretched. Your master is a boaster and a coward.

CHARLES. Woman, what dost thou say? (*The* ROBBERS *turn away.*)

AMELIA. No friend? No; not even among these a friend? (*She rises.*) Well, then, let Dido teach me how to die! (*She is going; a* ROBBER *takes aim at her.*)

CHARLES. Hold! dare it! Moor's Amelia shall die by no other hand than Moor's. (*He strikes her dead.*)

THE ROBBERS. Captain! captain! what hast thou done? Art thou raving?

CHARLES (*with his eyes fixed on the body*). One more pang and all will be over. She is immolated! Now, look on! have you any farther demand? Ye staked a life for me, a life which has ceased to be your own—a life full of infamy and shame! I have sacrificed an angel for you. Now! look upon her! Are you content?

GRIMM. You have repaid your debt with usury. You

have done all that man could do for his honor, and more. Now let's away.

CHARLES. What say you? Is not the life of a saint for the life of a felon more than an equal exchange? Oh! I say unto you if every one of you were to mount the scaffold, and to have his flesh torn from his bones piecemeal with red-hot pincers, through eleven long summer days of torture, yet would it not counterbalance these tears! (*With a bitter laugh.*) The scars! the Bohemian forests! Yes, yes! they must be repaid, of course!

SCHWARZ. Compose yourself, captain! Come along with us! this is no sight for you. Lead us elsewhere!

CHARLES. Stay! one word more before we proceed elsewhere. Mark me, ye malicious executioners of my barbarous nod! from this moment I cease to be your captain.* With shame and horror I here lay down the bloody staff under which you thought yourselves licensed to perpetrate your crimes and to defile the fair light of heaven with deeds of darkness. Depart to the right and to the left. We shall never more have aught in common.

THE ROBBERS. Ha! coward! where are thy lofty schemes? were they but soap-bubbles, which disperse at the breath of a woman?

CHARLES.† Oh! fool that I was, to fancy that I could

* The acting edition reads,—"Banditti! we are quits. This bleeding corpse cancels my bond to you forever. From your own I set you free." ROBBERS. "We are again your slaves till death!" CHARLES. "No, no, no! We have done with each other. My genius whispers me, 'Go no further, Moor. Here is the goal of humanity—and thine.' Take back this bloody plume (*throws it at their feet*). Let him who seeks to be your captain take it up."

† In lieu of this soliloquy and what follows, to the end, the acting edition has:—

R. MOOR. Dare not to scrutinize the acts of Moor. That is my last command. Now, draw near—form a circle around me, and receive the last words of your dying captain. (*He surveys them attentively for some time.*) You have been devotedly faithful to me, faithful beyond example. Had virtue bound you together as firmly as vice, you would have been heroes, and your names recorded by mankind with admiration. Go and offer your services to the state. Dedicate your talents to the cause of a monarch who is waging war in vindication of the rights of man. With this blessing I disband you. Schweitzer and Kosinsky, do you stay. (*The others disperse slowly, with signs of emotion.*)

SCENE VIII.

R. MOOR, SCHWEITZER, *and* KOSINSKY.

R. MOOR. Give me thy right hand, Kosinsky—Schweitzer, thy left. (*He takes their hands, and stands between them; to* KOSINSKY,) Young man,

amend the world by misdeeds and maintain law by lawlessness! I called it vengeance and equity. I presumed, O Providence! upon whetting out the notches of thy sword and repairing thy partialities. But, oh, vain trifling! here I stand on the brink of a fearful life, and learn, with wailing and gnashing of teeth, that two men like myself could ruin the whole edifice of the moral world. Pardon — pardon the boy who thought to forestall Thee; to Thee alone belongeth vengeance; Thou needest not the hand of man! But it is not in my power to recall the past; that which is ruined remains ruined; what I have thrown down will never more rise up again. Yet one thing is left me whereby I may atone to the offended majesty of the law and restore the order which I have violated. A victim is required — a victim to declare before all mankind how inviolable that majesty is — that victim shall be myself. I will be the death-offering!

ROBBERS. Take his sword from him — he will kill himself.

CHARLES. Fools that ye are! doomed to eternal blindness! Think ye that one mortal sin will expiate other mortal sins? Do you suppose that the harmony of the world would be promoted by such an impious discord? (*Throwing his arms at their feet.*) He shall have me alive. I go to deliver myself into the hands of justice.

thou art still pure — amongst the guilty thou alone art guiltless! (*To* SCHWEITZER.) Deeply have I imbrued thy hand in blood. 'Tis I who have done this. With this cordial grasp I take back mine own. Schweitzer! thou art purified! (*He raises their hands fervently to heaven.*) Father in heaven! here I restore them to thee. They will be more devoted to thy service than those who never fell. Of that I feel assured. (SCHWEITZER *and* KOSINSKY *fall on his neck with fervor.*) Not now — not now, dear comrades. Spare my feelings in this trying hour. An earldom has this day fallen to my lot — a rich domain on which no malediction rests. Share it between you, my children; become good citizens; and if for ten human beings that I have destroyed you make but one happy, my soul may yet be saved. Go — no farewell! In another world we may meet again — or perhaps no more. Away! away! ere my fortitude desert me.

[*Exeunt both, with downcast countenances.*

SCENE IX.

And I, too, am a good citizen. Do I not fulfil the extremity of the law? Do I not honor the law? Do I not uphold and defend it? I remember speaking to a poor officer on my way hither, who was toiling as a day-laborer, and has eleven living children. A thousand ducats have been offered to whoever shall deliver up the great robber alive. That man shall be served. [*Exit.*

ROBBERS. Put him in chains! he has lost his senses!

CHARLES. Not that I have any doubt but that justice would find me speedily enough if the powers above so ordained it. But she might surprise me in sleep, or overtake me in flight, or seize me with violence and the sword, and then I should have lost the only merit left me, that of making my death a free-will atonement. Why should I, like a thief, any longer conceal a life, which in the counsels of the heavenly ministry has long been forfeited?

ROBBERS. Let him go. He is infected with the great-man-mania; he means to offer up his life for empty admiration.

CHARLES. I might, 'tis true, be admired for it. (*After a moment's reflection.*) I remember, on my way hither, talking to a poor creature, a day-laborer, with eleven living children. A reward has been offered of a thousand louis-d'ors to any one who shall deliver up the great robber alive. That man shall be served. [*Exit.*

FIESCO; OR, THE GENOESE CONSPIRACY.

A TRAGEDY.

AUTHOR'S PREFACE.

The chief sources from which I have drawn the history of this conspiracy are Cardinal de Retz's *Conjuration du Comte Jean Louis de Fiesque*, the *Histoire des Gènes*, and the third volume of *Robertson's History of Charles the Fifth*.

The liberties which I have taken with the historical facts will be excused, if I have succeeded in my attempt; and, if not, it is better that my failure should appear in the effusions of fancy, than in the delineation of truth. Some deviation from the real catastrophe of the conspiracy (according to which the count actually perished * when his schemes were nearly ripe for execution) was rendered necessary by the nature of the drama, which does not allow the interposition either of chance or of a particular Providence. It would be matter of surprise to me that this subject has never been adopted by any tragic writer, did not the circumstances of its conclusion, so unfit for dramatic representation, afford a sufficient reason for such neglect. Beings of a superior nature may discriminate the finest links of that chain which connects an individual action with the system of the universe, and may, perhaps, behold them extended to the utmost limits of time, past and future; but man seldom sees more than the simple facts, divested of their various relations of cause and effect. The writer, therefore, must adapt his performance to the short-sightedness of human nature, which he would enlighten; and not to the penetration of Omniscience, from which all intelligence is derived.

In my Tragedy of the Robbers it was my object to delineate the victim of an extravagant sensibility; here

* Fiesco, after having succeeded in the chief objects of his undertaking, happened to fall into the sea whilst hastening to quell some disturbances on board of a vessel in the harbor; the weight of his armor rendered his struggles ineffectual, and he perished. The deviation from history in the tragedy might have been carried farther, and would perhaps have rendered it more suitable to dramatic representation. — *Translation.*

I endeavor to paint the reverse; a victim of art and intrigue. But, however strongly marked in the page of history the unfortunate project of Fiesco may appear, on the stage it may prove less interesting. If it be true that sensibility alone awakens sensibility, we may conclude that the political hero is the less calculated for dramatic representation, in proportion as it becomes necessary to lay aside the feelings of a man in order to become a political hero.

It was, therefore, impossible for me to breathe into my fable that glowing life which animates the pure productions of poetical inspiration; but, in order to render the cold and sterile actions of the politician capable of affecting the human heart, I was obliged to seek a clue to those actions in the human heart itself. I was obliged to blend together the man and the politician, and to draw from the refined intrigues of state situations interesting to humanity. The relations which I bear to society are such as unfold to me more of the heart than of the cabinet; and, perhaps, this very political defect may have become a poetical excellence.

FIESCO; OR, THE GENOESE CONSPIRACY.

A TRAGEDY.

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

ANDREAS DORIA, Duke of Genoa, a venerable old man, eighty years of age, retaining the traces of a high spirit: the chief features in this character are dignity and a rigid brevity in command.

GIANETTINO DORIA, nephew of the former, and pretender to the ducal power, twenty-six years of age, rough and forbidding in his address, deportment, and manners, with a vulgar pride and disgusting features.

FIESCO, Count of Lavagna, chief of the conspiracy, a tall, handsome young man, twenty-three years of age; his character is that of dignified pride and majestic affability, with courtly complaisance and deceitfulness.

VERRINA, a determined republican, sixty years of age; grave, austere, and inflexible: a marked character.

BOURGOGNINO, a conspirator, a youth of twenty; frank and high-spirited, proud, hasty, and undisguised.

CALCAGNO, a conspirator, a worn-out debauchee of thirty; insinuating and enterprising.

SACCO, a conspirator, forty-five years of age, with no distinguishing trait of character.

LOMELLINO, in the confidence of the pretender, a haggard courtier.

ZENTURIONE, ZIBO, ASSERATO, } Malcontents.

ROMANO, a painter, frank and simple, with the pride of genius.

MULEY HASSAN, a Moor of Tunis, an abandoned character, with a physiognomy displaying an original mixture of rascality and humor.

A GERMAN of the ducal body-guard, of an honest simplicity, and steady bravery.

THREE SEDITIOUS CITIZENS.

LEONORA, the wife of Fiesco, eighteen years of age, of great sensibility; her appearance pale and slender, engaging, but not dazzling; her countenance marked with melancholy; her dress black.

JULIA, Countess dowager Imperiali, sister of the younger Doria, aged twenty-five; a proud coquette, in person tall and full, her beauty spoiled by affectation, with a sarcastic maliciousness in her countenance; her dress black.

BERTHA, daughter of Verrina, an innocent girl.

ROSA, } Maids of Leonora.
ARABELLA, }

Several Nobles, Citizens, Germans, Soldiers, Thieves.

(SCENE — Genoa. TIME — the year 1547.)

FIESCO; OR, THE GENOESE CONSPIRACY.

A TRAGEDY.

ACT I.

SCENE I. — *A Saloon in* FIESCO'S *House. The distant sound of dancing and music is heard.*

LEONORA, *masked, and attended by* ROSA *and* ARABELLA, *enters hastily.*

LEONORA (*tears off her mask*). No more! Not another word! 'Tis as clear as day! (*Throwing herself in a chair.*) This quite overcomes me——

ARABELLA. My lady!

LEONORA (*rising.*) What, before my eyes! with a notorious coquette! In presence of the whole nobility of Genoa! (*strongly affected.*) — Rosa! Arabella! and before my weeping eyes!

ROSA. Look upon it only as what it really was — a piece of gallantry. It was nothing more.

LEONORA. Gallantry! What! Their busy interchange of glances — the anxious watching of her every motion — the long and eager kiss upon her naked arm, impressed with a fervor that left in crimson glow the very traces of his lips! Ha! and the transport that enwrapped his soul, when, with fixed eyes, he sate like painted ecstacy, as if the world around him had dissolved, and naught remained in the eternal void but he and Julia. Gallantry? Poor thing! Thou hast never loved. Think not that thou canst teach me to distinguish gallantry from love!

ROSA. No matter, Signora! A husband lost is as good as ten lovers gained.

LEONORA. Lost? Is then one little intermission of the heart's pulsations a proof that I have lost Fiesco? Go, malicious slanderer! Come no more into my pres-

ence! 'Twas an innocent frolic — perhaps a mere piece of gallantry. Say, my gentle Arabella, was it not so?

ARABELLA. Most certainly! There can be no doubt of it!

LEONORA (*in a reverie*). But does she then feel herself sole mistress of his heart? Does her name lurk in his every thought? — meet him in every phase of nature? Can it be? Whither will these thoughts lead me? Is this beautiful and majestic world to him but as one precious diamond, on which her image — her image alone — is engraved? That he should love her? — love Julia! Oh! Your arm — support me, Arabella! (*A pause; music is again heard.*)

LEONORA (*starting*). Hark! Was not that Fiesco's voice, which from the tumult penetrated even hither? Can he laugh while his Leonora weeps in solitude? Oh, no, my child, it was the coarse, loud voice of Gianettino.

ARABELLA. It was, Signora — but let us retire to another apartment.

LEONORA. You change color, Arabella — you are false. In your looks, in the looks of all the inhabitants of Genoa, I read a something — a something which — (*hiding her face*) — oh, certainly these Genoese know more than should reach a wife's ear.

ROSA. Oh, jealousy! thou magnifier of trifles!

LEONORA (*with melancholy enthusiasm*). When he was still Fiesco; when in the orange-grove, where we damsels walked, I saw him — a blooming Apollo, blending the manly beauty of Antinous! Such was his noble and majestic deportment, as if the illustrious state of Genoa rested alone upon his youthful shoulders. Our eyes stole trembling glances at him, and shrunk back, as if with conscious guilt, whene'er they encountered the lightning of his looks. Ah, Arabella, how we devoured those looks! with what anxious envy did every one count those directed to her companions! They fell among us like the golden apple of discord — tender eyes burned fiercely — soft bosoms beat tumultuously—jealousy burst asunder all our bonds of friendship ——

ARABELLA. I remember it well. All Genoa's female hearts were in rebellious ferment for so enviable a prize!

LEONORA (*in rapture*). And now to call him mine! Giddy, wondrous fortune! — to call the pride of Genoa mine! — he who from the chisel of the exhaustless artist, Nature, sprang forth all-perfect, combining every greatness of his sex in the most perfect union. Hear me, damsels! I can no longer conceal it — hear me! I confide to you something (*mysteriously*) — a thought! — when I stood at the altar with Fiesco, — when his hand lay in mine, — a thought, too daring for woman, rushed across me. "This Fiesco, whose hand now lies in thine — thy Fiesco" — but hush! let no man hear us boast how far he excels all others of his sex. "This, thy Fiesco" — ah, could you but share my feelings! — "will free Genoa from its tyrants!"

ARABELLA (*astonished*). And could this dream haunt a woman's mind even at the nuptial shrine?

LEONORA. Yes, my Arabella, — well mayest thou be astonished — to the bride it came, even in the joy of the bridal hour (*more animated*). I am a woman, but I feel the nobleness of my blood. I cannot bear to see these proud Dorias thus overtop our family. The good old Andreas — it is a pleasure to esteem him. He may indeed, unenvied, bear the ducal dignity; but Gianettino is his nephew — his heir — and Gianettino has a proud and wicked heart. Genoa trembles before him, and Fiesco (*much affected*)—Fiesco — weep with me, damsels! — loves his sister.

ARABELLA. Alas, my wretched mistress!

LEONORA. Go now, and see this demi-god of the Genoese amid the shameless circles of debauchery and lust! hear the vile jests and wanton ribaldry with which he entertains his base companions! *That is Fiesco!* Ah, damsels, not only has Genoa lost its hero, but I have lost my husband!

ROSA. Speak lower! some one is coming through the gallery.

LEONORA (*alarmed*). Ha! 'Tis Fiesco — let us hasten away — the sight of me might for a moment interrupt his happiness. (*She hastens into a side apartment; the maids follow.*)

Scene II.

Gianettino Doria, *masked, in a green cloak, and the* Moor, *enter in conversation.*

Gianet. Thou hast understood me!

Moor. Well ——

Gianet. The white mask ——

Moor. Well ——

Gianet. I say, the *white* mask ——

Moor. Well — well — well ——

Gianet. Dost thou mark me? Thou canst only fail here! (*pointing to his heart*).

Moor. Give yourself no concern.

Gianet. And be sure to strike home ——

Moor. He shall have enough.

Gianet. (*maliciously*). That the poor count may not have long to suffer.

Moor. With your leave, sir, a word — at what weight do you estimate his head?

Gianet. What weight? A hundred sequins ——

Moor (*blowing through his fingers*). Poh! Light as a feather!

Gianet. What art thou muttering?

Moor. I was saying — it is light work.

Gianet. That is thy concern. He is the very loadstone of sedition. Mark me, sirrah! let thy blow be sure.

Moor. But, sir, — I must fly to Venice immediately after the deed.

Gianet. Then take my thanks beforehand. (*He throws him a bank-note.*) In three days at farthest he must be cold. [*Exit.*

Moor (*picking up the note*). Well, this really is what I call credit! — to trust the simple word of such a rogue as I am! [*Exit.*

Scene III.

Calcagno, *behind him* Sacco, *both in black cloaks.*

Calcagno. I perceive thou watchest all my steps.

Sacco. And I observe thou wouldst conceal them from *me.* Attend, Calcagno! For some weeks past I have

remarked the workings of thy countenance. They bespeak more than concerns the interests of our country. Brother, I should think that we might mutually exchange our confidence without loss on either side. What sayest thou? Wilt thou be sincere?

CALCAGNO. So truly, that thou shalt not need to dive into the recesses of my soul; my heart shall fly half-way to meet thee on my tongue — I love the Countess of Fiesco.

SACCO (*starts back with astonishment*). That, at least, I should not have discovered had I made all possibilities pass in review before me. My wits are racked to comprehend thy choice, but I must have lost them altogether if thou succeed.

CALCAGNO. They say she is a pattern of the strictest virtue.

SACCO. They lie. She is the whole volume on that insipid text. Calcagno, thou must choose one or the other — either to give up thy heart or thy profession.

CALCAGNO. The Count is faithless to her; and of all the arts that may seduce a woman the subtlest is jealousy. A plot against the Dorias will at the same time occupy the Count, and give me easy access to his house. Thus, while the shepherd guards against the wolf, the fox shall make havoc of the poultry.

SACCO. Incomparable brother, receive my thanks! A blush is now superfluous, and I can tell thee openly what just now I was ashamed even to think. I am a beggar if the government be not soon overturned.

CALCAGNO. What, are thy debts so great?

SACCO. So immense that even one-tenth of them would more than swallow ten times my income. A convulsion of the state will give me breath; and if it do not cancel all my debts, at least 'twill stop the mouths of bawling creditors.

CALCAGNO. I understand thee; and if then, perchance, Genoa should be freed, Sacco will be hailed his country's savior. Let no one trick out to me the threadbare tale of honesty, if the fate of empires hang on the bankruptcy of a prodigal and the lust of a debauchee. By heaven, Sacco, I admire the wise design of Providence, that in

us would heal the corruptions in the heart of the state by the vile ulcers on its limbs. Is thy design unfolded to Verrina?

SACCO. As far as it can be unfolded to a patriot. Thou knowest his iron integrity, which ever tends to that one point, his country. His hawk-like eye is now fixed on Fiesco, and he has half-conceived a hope of thee to join the bold conspiracy.

CALCAGNO. Oh, he has an excellent nose! Come, let us seek him, and fan the flame of liberty in his breast by our accordant spirit. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE IV.

JULIA, *agitated with anger, and* FIESCO, *in a white mask, following her.*

JULIA. Servants! footmen!

FIESCO. Countess, whither are you going? What do you intend?

JULIA. Nothing — nothing at all. (*To the servants, who enter and immediately retire.*) Let my carriage draw up——

FIESCO. Pardon me, it must not. You are offended.

JULIA. Oh, by no means. Away — you tear my dress to pieces. Offended. Who is here that can offend me? Go, pray go.

FIESCO (*upon one knee*). Not till you tell me what impertinent——

JULIA (*stands still in a haughty attitude*). Fine! Fine! Admirable! Oh, that the Countess of Lavagna might be called to view this charming scene! How, Count, is this like a husband? This posture would better suit the chamber of your wife when she turns over the journal of your caresses and finds a void in the account. Rise, sir, and seek those to whom your overtures will prove more acceptable. Rise — unless you think your gallantries will atone for your wife's impertinence.

FIESCO (*jumping up*). Impertinence! To you?

JULIA. To break up! To push away her chair! To turn her back upon the table — that table, Count, where *I* was sitting ——

FIESCO. 'Tis inexcusable.

JULIA. And is that all? Out upon the jade! Am I, then, to blame because the Count makes use of his eyes? (*Smilingly admiring herself.*)

FIESCO. 'Tis the fault of your beauty, madam, that keeps them in such sweet slavery.

JULIA. Away with compliment where honor is concerned. Count, I insist on satisfaction. Where shall I find it, in you, or in my uncle's vengeance?

FIESCO. Find it in the arms of love — of love that would repair the offence of jealousy.

JULIA. Jealousy! Jealousy! Poor thing! What would she wish for? (*Admiring herself in the glass.*) Could she desire a higher compliment than were I to declare her taste my own? (*Haughtily.*) Doria and Fiesco! Would not the Countess of Lavagna have reason to feel honored if Doria's niece deigned to envy her choice? (*In a friendly tone, offering the Count her hand to kiss.*) I merely assume the possibility of such a case, Count.

FIESCO (*with animation*). Cruel Countess! Thus to torment me. I know, divine Julia, that respect is all I ought to feel for you. My reason bids me bend a subject's knee before the race of Doria; but my heart adores the beauteous Julia. My love is criminal, but 'tis also heroic, and dares o'erleap the boundaries of rank, and soar towards the dazzling sun of majesty.

JULIA. A great and courtly falsehood, paraded upon stilts! While his tongue deifies me, his heart beats beneath the picture of another.

FIESCO. Rather say it beats indignantly against it, and would shake off the odious burden. (*Taking the picture of* LEONORA, *which is suspended by a sky-blue ribbon from his breast, and delivering it to* JULIA.) Place your own image on that altar and you will instantly annihilate this idol.

JULIA (*pleased, puts by the picture hastily*). A great sacrifice, by mine honor, and which deserves my thanks. (*Hangs her own picture about his neck.*) So, my slave, henceforth bear your badge of service. [*Exit.*

FIESCO (*with transport*). Julia loves me! Julia! I

envy not even the gods. (*Exulting.*) Let this night be a jubilee. Joy shall attain its summit. Ho! within there! (*Servants come running in.*) Let the floors swim with Cyprian nectar, soft strains of music rouse midnight from her leaden slumber, and a thousand burning lamps eclipse the morning sun. Pleasure shall reign supreme, and the Bacchanal dance so wildly beat the ground that the dark kingdom of the shades below shall tremble at the uproar!

[*Exit hastily. A noisy allegro, during which the back scene opens, and discovers a grand illuminated saloon, many masks dancing. At the side, drinking and playing tables, surrounded with company.*

SCENE V.

GIANETTINO, *almost intoxicated*, LOMELLINO, ZIBO, ZENTURIONE, VERRINA, CALCAGNO, *all masked. Several other nobles and ladies.*

GIANET. (*boisterously*). Bravo! Bravo! These wines glide down charmingly. The dancers perform *à merveille.* Go, one of you, and publish it throughout Genoa that I am in good humor, and that every one may enjoy himself. By my ruling star this shall be marked as a red-letter day in the calendar, and underneath be written, — "This day was Prince Doria merry." (*The guests lift their glasses to their mouths. A general toast of "The Republic." Sound of trumpets.*) The Republic? (*Throwing his glass violently on the ground.*) There lie its fragments. (*Three black masks suddenly rise and collect about* GIANETTINO.)

LOMEL. (*supporting* GIANETTINO *on his arm*). My lord, you lately spoke of a young girl whom you saw in the church of St. Lorenzo.

GIANET. I did, my lad! and I must make her acquaintance.

LOMEL. That I can manage for your grace.

GIANET. (*with vehemence*). Can you? Can you? Lomellino, you were a candidate for the procuratorship. You shall have it.

LOMEL. Gracious prince, it is the second dignity in the state; more than threescore noblemen seek it, and all of them more wealthy and honorable than your grace's humble servant.

GIANET. (*indignantly*). By the name of Doria! You shall be procurator. (*The three masks come forward*). What talk you of nobility in Genoa? Let them all throw their ancestry and honors into the scale, one hair from the white beard of my old uncle will make it kick the beam. It is my will that you be procurator, and that is tantamount to the votes of the whole senate.

LOMEL. (*in a low voice*). The damsel is the only daughter of one Verrina.

GIANET. The girl is pretty, and, in spite of all the devils in hell, I must possess her.

LOMEL. What, my lord! the only child of the most obstinate of our republicans?

GIANET. To hell with your republicans! Shall my passion be thwarted by the anger of a vassal? 'Tis as vain as to expect the tower should fall when the boys pelt it with mussel-shells. (*The three black masks step nearer, with great emotion.*) What! Has the Duke Andreas gained his scars in battle for their wives and children, only that his nephew should court the favor of these vagabond republicans! By the name of Doria they shall swallow this fancy of mine, or I will plant a gallows over the bones of my uncle, on which their Genoese liberty shall kick itself to death. (*The three masks step back in disgust.*)

LOMEL. The damsel is at this moment alone. Her father is here, and one of those three masks.

GIANET. Excellent! Bring me instantly to her.

LOMEL. But you will seek in her a mistress, and find a prude.

GIANET. Force is the best rhetoric. Lead me to her. Would I could see that republican dog that durst stand in the way of the bear Doria. (*Going, meets* FIESCO *at the door.*) Where is the Countess?

SCENE VI.

FIESCO *and the former.*

FIESCO. I have handed her to her carriage. (*Takes* GIANETTINO'S *hand, and presses it to his breast.*) Prince, I am now doubly your slave. To you I bow, as sover-

eign of Genoa — to your lovely sister, as mistress of my heart.

LOMEL. Fiesco has become a mere votary of pleasure. The great world has lost much in you.

FIESCO. But Fiesco has lost nothing in giving up the world. To live is to dream, and to dream pleasantly is to be wise. Can this be done more certainly amid the thunders of a throne, where the wheels of government creak incessantly upon the tortured ear, than on the heaving bosom of an enamored woman? Let Gianettino rule over Genoa; Fiesco shall devote himself to love.

GIANET. Away, Lomellino! It is near midnight. The time draws near — Lavagna, we thank thee for thy entertainment — I have been satisfied.

FIESCO. That, prince, is all that I can wish.

GIANET. Then good-night! To-morrow we have a party at the palace, and Fiesco is invited. Come, procurator!

FIESCO. Ho! Lights there! Music!

GIANET. (*haughtily, rushing through the three masks*). Make way there for Doria!

ONE OF THE THREE MASKS (*murmuring indignantly*). Make way? In hell! Never in Genoa!

THE GUESTS (*in motion*). The prince is going. Good-night, Lavagna! (*They depart.*)

SCENE VII.

The THREE BLACK MASKS *and* FIESCO. (*A pause.*)

FIESCO. I perceive some guests here who do not share the pleasure of the feast.

MASKS (*murmuring to each other with indignation*). No! Not one of us.

FIESCO (*courteously*). Is it possible that my attention should have been wanting to any one of my guests? Quick, servants! Let the music be renewed, and fill the goblets to the brim. I would not that my friends should find the time hang heavy. Will you permit me to amuse you with fireworks. Would you choose to see the frolics of my harlequin? Perhaps you would be pleased to join

the ladies. Or shall we sit down to faro, and pass the time in play?

A MASK. We are accustomed to spend it in action.

FIESCO. A manly answer — such as bespeaks Verrina.

VERRINA (*unmasking*). Fiesco is quicker to discover his friends beneath their masks than they to discover him beneath his.

FIESCO. I understand you not. But what means that crape of mourning around your arm? Can death have robbed Verrina of a friend, and Fiesco not know the loss?

VERRINA. Mournful tales ill suit Fiesco's joyful feasts.

FIESCO. But if a friend — (*pressing his hand warmly.*) Friend of my soul! For whom must we both mourn?

VERRINA. Both! both! Oh, 'tis but too true we both should mourn — yet not all sons lament their mother.

FIESCO. 'Tis long since your mother was mingled with the dust.

VERRINA (*with an earnest look*). I do remember me that Fiesco once called me brother, because we both were sons of the same country!

FIESCO (*jocosely*). Oh, is it only that? You meant then but to jest? The mourning dress is worn for Genoa! True, she lies indeed in her last agonies. The thought is new and singular. Our cousin begins to be a wit.

VERRINA. Fiesco! I spoke most seriously.

FIESCO. Certainly — certainly. A jest loses its point when he who makes it is the first to laugh. But you! You looked like a mute at a funeral. Who could have thought that the austere Verrina should in his old age become such a wag!

SACCO. Come, Verrina. He never will be ours.

FIESCO. Be merry, brother. Let us act the part of the cunning heir, who walks in the funeral procession with loud lamentations, laughing to himself the while, under the cover of his handkerchief. 'Tis true we may be troubled with a harsh step-mother. Be it so — we will let her scold, and follow our own pleasures.

VERRINA (*with great emotion*). Heaven and earth!

Shall we then do nothing? What is to become of you, Fiesco? Where am I to seek that determined enemy of tyrants? There was a time when but to see a crown would have been torture to you. Oh, fallen son of the republic! By heaven, if time could so debase my soul I would spurn immortality.

FIESCO. O rigid censor! Let Doria put Genoa in his pocket, or barter it with the robbers of Tunis. Why should it trouble us? We will drown ourselves in floods of Cyprian wine, and revel it in the sweet caresses of our fair ones.

VERRINA (*looking at him with earnestness*). Are these indeed your serious thoughts?

FIESCO. Why should they not be, my friend? Think you 'tis a pleasure to be the foot of that many-legged monster, a republic? No — thanks be to him who gives it wings, and deprives the feet of their functions! Let Gianettino be the duke, affairs of state shall ne'er lie heavy on our heads.

VERRINA. Fiesco! Is that truly and seriously your meaning?

FIESCO. Andreas adopts his nephew as a son, and makes him heir to his estates; what madman will dispute with him the inheritance of his power?

VERRINA (*with the utmost indignation*). Away, then, Genoese! (*Leaves* FIESCO *hastily, the rest follow.*)

FIESCO. Verrina! Verrina! Oh, this republican is as hard as steel!

SCENE VIII.

FIESCO. A MASK *entering.*

MASK. Have you a minute or two to spare, Lavagna?

FIESCO (*in an obliging manner*). An hour if you request it.

MASK. Then condescend to walk into the fields with me.

FIESCO. It wants but ten minutes of midnight

MASK. Walk with me, Count, I pray.

FIESCO. I will order my carriage.

MASK. That is useless — I shall send one horse: we want no more, for only one of us, I hope, will return.

FIESCO (*with surprise*). What say you?

MASK. A bloody answer will be demanded of you, touching a certain tear.

FIESCO. What tear?

MASK. A tear shed by the Countess of Lavagna. I am acquainted with that lady, and demand to know how she has merited to be sacrificed to a worthless woman?

FIESCO. I understand you now; but let me ask who 'tis that offers so strange a challenge?

MASK. It is the same that once adored the lady Zibo, and yielded her to Fiesco.

FIESCO. Scipio Bourgognino!

BOURG (*unmasking*). And who now stands here to vindicate his honor, that yielded to a rival base enough to tyrannize over innocence.

FIESCO (*embraces him with ardor*). Noble youth! thanks to the sufferings of my consort, which have drawn forth the manly feelings of your soul; I admire your generous indignation — but I refuse your challenge.

BOURG. (*stepping back*). Does Fiesco tremble to encounter the first efforts of my sword?

FIESCO. No, Bourgognino! against a nation's power combined I would boldly venture, but not against you. The fire of your valor is endeared to me by a most lovely object — the will deserves a laurel, but the deed would be childish.

BOURG. (*with emotion*). Childish, Count! women can only weep at injuries. 'Tis for men to revenge them.

FIESCO. Uncommonly well said — but fight I will not.

BOURG. (*turning upon him contemptuously*). Count, I shall despise you.

FIESCO (*with animation*). By heaven, youth, that thou shalt never do — not even if virtue fall in value, shall I become a bankrupt. (*Taking him by the hand, with a look of earnestness.*) Did you ever feel for me — what shall I say — respect?

BOURG. Had I not thought you were the first of men I should not have yielded to you.

FIESCO. Then, my friend, be not so forward to despise

a man who once could merit your respect. It is not for the eye of the youthful artist to comprehend at once the master's vast design. Retire, Bourgognino, and take time to weigh the motives of Fiesco's conduct!

[*Exit* BOURGOGNINO, *in silence.*

Go! noble youth! if spirits such as thine break out in flames in thy country's cause, let the Dorias see that they stand fast!

SCENE IX.

FIESCO.— *The* MOOR *entering with an appearance of timidity, and looking round cautiously.*

FIESCO (*fixing his eye on him sharply*). What wouldst thou here? Who art thou?

MOOR (*as above*). A slave of the republic.

FIESCO (*keeping his eye sharply upon him*). Slavery is a wretched craft. What dost thou seek?

MOOR. Sir, I am an honest man.

FIESCO. Wear then that label on thy visage, it will not be superfluous — but what wouldst thou have?

MOOR (*approaching him*, FIESCO *draws back*). Sir, I am no villain.

FIESCO. 'Tis well thou hast told me that — and yet — 'tis not well either (*impatiently*). What dost thou seek?

MOOR (*still approaching*). Are you the Count Lavagna?

FIESCO (*haughtily*). The blind in Genoa know my steps — what wouldst thou with the Count?

MOOR (*close to him*). Be on your guard, Lavagna!

FIESCO (*passing hastily to the other side*). That, indeed, I am.

MOOR (*again approaching*). Evil designs are formed against you, Count.

FIESCO (*retreating*). That I perceive.

MOOR. Beware of Doria!

FIESCO (*approaching him with an air of confidence*). Perhaps my suspicions have wronged thee, my friend — Doria is indeed the name I dread.

MOOR. Avoid the man, then. Can you read?

FIESCO. A curious question! Thou hast known, it seems, many of our cavaliers. What writing hast thou?

MOOR. Your name is amongst other condemned sinners. (*Presents a paper, and draws close to* FIESCO, *who is standing before a looking-glass and glancing over the paper — the* MOOR *steals round him, draws a dagger, and is going to stab.*)

FIESCO (*turning round dexterously, and seizing the* MOOR'S *arm.*) Stop, scoundrel! (*Wrests the dagger from him.*)

MOOR (*stamps in a frantic manner*). Damnation! Your pardon — sire!

FIESCO (*seizing him, calls with a loud voice*). Stephano! Drullo! Antonio! (*holding the* MOOR *by the throat.*) Stay, my friend! — what hellish villany! (*Servants enter.*) Stay, and answer — thou hast performed thy task like a bungler. Who pays thy wages?

MOOR (*after several fruitless attempts to escape*). You cannot hang me higher than the gallows are ——

FIESCO. No — be comforted — not on the horns of the moon, but higher than ever yet were gallows — yet hold! Thy scheme was too politic to be of thy own contrivance: speak, fellow! who hired thee?

MOOR. Think me a rascal, sir, but not a fool.

FIESCO. What, is the scoundrel proud? Speak, sirrah! Who hired thee?

MOOR (*aside*). Shall I alone be called a fool? Who hired me? 'Twas but a hundred miserable sequins. Who hired me, did you ask? Prince Gianettino.

FIESCO (*walking about in a passion*). A hundred sequins? And is that all the value set upon Fiesco's head? Shame on thee, Prince of Genoa! Here, fellow (*taking money from an escritoire*); are a thousand for thee. Tell thy master he is a niggardly assassin. (MOOR *looks at him with astonishment.*) What dost thou gaze at? (MOOR *takes up the money — lays it down — takes it up again, and looks at* FIESCO *with increased astonishment*). What dost thou mean?

MOOR (*throwing the money resolutely upon the table*). Sir, that money I have not earned — I deserve it not.

FIESCO. Blockhead, thou hast deserved the gallows;

but the offended elephant tramples on men not on worms. Were thy life worth but two words I would have thee hanged.

MOOR (*bowing with an air of pleasure at his escape*). Sir, you are too good ——

FIESCO. Not towards thee! God forbid! No. I am amused to think my humor can make or unmake such a villain as thou, therefore dost thou go scot-free — understand me aright — I take thy failure as an omen of my future greatness — 'tis this thought that renders me indulgent, and preserves thy life.

MOOR (*in a tone of confidence*). Count, your hand! honor for honor. If any man in this country has a throat too much — command me, and I'll cut it — gratis.

FIESCO. Obliging scoundrel! He would show his gratitude by cutting throats wholesale!

MOOR. Men like me, sir, receive no favor without acknowledgment. We know what honor is.

FIESCO. The honor of cut-throats?

MOOR. Which is, perhaps, more to be relied on than that of your men of character. They break their oaths made in the name of God. We keep ours pledged to the devil.

FIESCO. Thou art an amusing villain.

MOOR. I rejoice to meet your approbation. Try me; you will find in me a man who is a thorough master of his profession. Examine me; I can show my testimonials of villany from every guild of rogues — from the lowest to the highest.

FIESCO. Indeed! (*seating himself.*) There are laws and systems then even among thieves. What canst thou tell me of the lowest class?

MOOR. Oh, sir, they are petty villains, mere pick-pockets. They are a miserable set. Their trade never produces a man of genius; 'tis confined to the whip and workhouse — and at most can lead but to the gallows.

FIESCO. A charming prospect! I should like to hear something of a superior class.

MOOR. The next are spies and informers — tools of importance to the great, who from their secret information derive their own supposed omniscience. These vil-

lains insinuate themselves into the souls of men like leeches; they draw poison from the heart, and spit it forth against the very source from whence it came.

FIESCO. I understand thee — go on ——

MOOR. Then come the conspirators, villains that deal in poison, and bravoes that rush upon their victims from some secret covert. Cowards they often are, but yet fellows that sell their souls to the devil as the fees of their apprenticeship. The hand of justice binds their limbs to the rack or plants their cunning heads on spikes — this is the third class.

FIESCO. But tell me! When comes thy own?

MOOR. Patience, my lord — that is the very point I'm coming to — I have already passed through all the stages that I mentioned: my genius soon soared above their limits. 'Twas but last night I performed my masterpiece in the third; this evening I attempted the fourth, and proved myself a bungler.

FIESCO. And how do you describe that class?

MOOR (*with energy*). They are men who seek their prey within four walls, cutting their way through every danger. They strike at once, and, by their first salute, save him whom they approach the trouble of returning thanks for a second. Between ourselves they are called the express couriers of hell: and when Beelzebub is hungry they want but a wink, and he gets his mutton warm.

FIESCO. Thou art an hardened villain — such a tool I want. Give me thy hand — thou shalt serve me.

MOOR. Jest or earnest?

FIESCO. In full earnest — and I'll pay thee yearly a thousand sequins.

MOOR. Done, Lavagna! I am yours. Away with common business — employ me in whate'er you will. I'll be your setter or your bloodhound — your fox, your viper — your pimp, or executioner. I'm prepared for all commissions — except honest ones; in those I am as stupid as a block.

FIESCO. Fear not! I would not set the wolf to guard the lamb: Go thou through Genoa to-morrow and sound the temper of the people. Narrowly inquire what they

think of the government, and of the house of Doria — what of me, my debaucheries, and romantic passion. Flood their brains with wine, until the sentiments of the heart flow over. Here's money — lavish it among the manufacturers ——

MOOR. Sir!

FIESCO. Be not afraid — no honesty is in the case. Go, collect what help thou canst. To-morrow I will hear thy report. [*Exit.*

MOOR (*following*). Rely on me. It is now four o'clock in the morning, by eight to-morrow you shall hear as much news as twice seventy spies can furnish. [*Exit.*

SCENE X. — *An apartment in the house of* VERRINA.

BERTHA *on a couch, supporting her head on her hand* — VERRINA *enters with a look of dejection.*

BERTHA (*starts up frightened*). Heavens! He is here!

VERRINA (*stops, looking at her with surprise*). My daughter affrighted at her father!

BERTHA. Fly! fly! or let me fly! Father, your sight is dreadful to me!

VERRINA. Dreadful to my child! — my only child!

BERTHA (*looking at him mournfully*). Oh! you must seek another. I am no more your daughter.

VERRINA. What, does my tenderness distress you?

BERTHA. It weighs me down to the earth.

VERRINA. How, my daughter! do you receive me thus? Formerly, when I came home, my heart o'erburdened with sorrows, my Bertha came running towards me, and chased them away with her smiles. Come, embrace me, my daughter! Reclined upon thy glowing bosom, my heart, when chilled by the sufferings of my country, shall grow warm again. Oh, my child! this day I have closed my account with the joys of this world, and thou alone (*sighing heavily*) remainest to me.

BERTHA (*casting a long and earnest look at him*). Wretched father!

VERRINA (*eagerly embracing her*). Bertha! my only child! Bertha! my last remaining hope! The liberty of Genoa is lost — Fiesco is lost — and thou (*pressing her more strongly, with a look of despair*) mayest be dishonored!

BERTHA (*tearing herself from him*). Great God! You know, then ——

VERRINA (*trembling*). What?

BERTHA. My virgin honor ——

VERRINA (*raging*). What?

BERTHA. Last night ——

VERRINA (*furiously.*) Speak! What!

BERTHA. Force. (*Sinks down upon the side of the sofa.*)

VERRINA (*after a long pause, with a hollow voice*). One word more, my daughter — thy last! Who was it?

BERTHA. Alas, what an angry deathlike paleness! Great God, support me! How his words falter! His whole frame trembles!

VERRINA. I cannot comprehend it. Tell me, my daughter — who?

BERTHA. Compose yourself, my best, my dearest father!

VERRINA (*ready to faint*). For God's sake — who?

BERTHA. A mask ——

VERRINA (*steps back, thoughtfully*). No! That cannot be! — the thought is idle — (*smiling to himself*). What a fool am I to think that all the poison of my life can flow but from one source! (*Firmly addressing himself to* BERTHA.) What was his stature, less than mine or taller?

BERTHA. Taller.

VERRINA (*eagerly*). His hair? Black, and curled?

BERTHA. As black as jet and curled?

VERRINA (*retiring from her in great emotion*). O God! my brain! my brain! His voice?

BERTHA. Was deep and harsh.

VERRINA (*impetuously*). What color was — No! I'll hear no more! His cloak! What color?

BERTHA. I think his cloak was green.

VERRINA (*covering his face with his hands, falls on the couch*). No more. This can be nothing but a dream!

BERTHA (*wringing her hands*). Merciful heaven! Is this my father?

VERRINA (*after a pause, with a forced smile*). Right! It serves thee right — coward Verrina! The villain broke into the sanctuary of the laws. This did not rouse thee. Then he violated the sanctuary of thy honor (*starting up*). Quick! Nicolo! Bring balls and powder — but stay — my sword were better. (*To* BERTHA.) Say thy prayers! Ah! what am I going to do?

BERTHA. Father, you make me tremble!

VERRINA. Come, sit by me, Bertha! (*in a solemn manner.*) Tell me, Bertha, what did that hoary-headed Roman, when his daughter — like you — how can I speak it! fell a prey to ignominy? Tell me, Bertha, what said Virginius to his dishonored daughter?

BERTHA (*shuddering*). I know not.

VERRINA. Foolish girl! He said nothing — but (*rising hastily and snatching up a sword*) he seized an instrument of death ——

BERTHA (*terrified, rushes into his arms*). Great God! What would you do, my father?

VERRINA (*throwing away the sword*). No! There is still justice left in Genoa.

SCENE XI.

SACCO, CALCAGNO, *the former*.

CALCAGNO. Verrina, quick! prepare! to-day begins the election week of the republic. Let us early to the Senate House to choose the new senators. The streets are full of people, you will undoubtedly accompany us (*ironically*) to behold the triumph of our liberty.

SACCO (*to* CALCAGNO). But what do I see? A naked sword! Verrina staring wildly! Bertha in tears!

CALCAGNO. By heavens, it is so. Sacco! some strange event has happened here.

VERRINA (*placing two chairs*). Be seated.

SACCO. Your looks, Verrina, fill us with apprehension.

CALCAGNO. I never saw you thus before — Bertha is in tears, or your grief would have seemed to presage our country's ruin.

VERRINA. Ruin! Pray sit down. (*They both seat themselves.*)

CALCAGNO. My friend, I conjure you ——

VERRINA. Listen to me.

CALCAGNO (*to* SACCO). I have sad misgivings.

VERRINA. Genoese! you both know the antiquity of my family. Your ancestors were vassals to my own. My forefathers fought the battles of the state, their wives were patterns of virtue. Honor was our sole inheritance, descending unspotted from the father to the son. Can any one deny it?

SACCO. No.

CALCAGNO. No one, by the God of heaven!

VERRINA. I am the last of my family. My wife has long been dead. This daughter is all she left me. You are witnesses, my friends, how I have brought her up. Can any one accuse me of neglect?

CALCAGNO. No. Your daughter is a bright example to her sex.

VERRINA. I am old, my friends. On this one daughter all my hopes were placed. Should I lose her, my race becomes extinct. (*After a pause, with a solemn voice*). I have lost her. My family is dishonored.

SACCO and CALCAGNO. Forbid it, heaven! (BERTHA *on the couch, appears much affected.*)

VERRINA. No. Despair not, daughter! These men are just and brave. If they feel thy wrongs they will expiate them with blood. Be not astonished, friends! He who tramples upon Genoa may easily overcome a helpless female.

SACCO and CALCAGNO (*starting up with emotion*). Gianettino Doria!

BERTHA (*with a shriek, seeing* BOURGOGNINO *enter*). Cover me, walls, beneath your ruins! My Scipio!

Scene XII.

Bourgognino — *the former.*

Bourg. (*with ardor*). Rejoice, my love! I bring good tidings. Noble Verrina, my heaven now depends upon a word from you. I have long loved your daughter, but never dared to ask her hand, because my whole fortune was intrusted to the treacherous sea. My ships have just now reached the harbor laden with valuable cargoes. Now I am rich. Bestow your Bertha on me — I will make her happy. (Bertha *hides her face — a profound pause.*)

Verrina. What, youth! Wouldst thou mix thy heart's pure tide with a polluted stream?

Bourg. (*clasps his hand to his sword, but suddenly draws it back*). 'Twas her father said it.

Verrina. No — every rascal in Italy will say it. Are you contented with the leavings of other men's repasts?

Bourg. Old man, do not make me desperate.

Calcagno. Bourgognino! he speaks the truth.

Bourg. (*enraged, rushing towards* Bertha). The truth? Has the girl then mocked me?

Calcagno. No! no! Bourgognino. The girl is spotless as an angel.

Bourg. (*astonished*). By my soul's happiness, I comprehend it not! Spotless, yet dishonored! They look in silence on each other. Some horrid crime hangs on their trembling tongues. I conjure you, friends, mock not thus my reason. Is she pure? Is she truly so? Who answers for her?

Verrina. My child is guiltless.

Bourg. What! Violence! (*Snatches the sword from the ground.*) Be all the sins of earth upon my head if I avenge her not! Where is the spoiler?

Verrina. Seek him in the plunderer of Genoa! (Bourg. *struck with astonishment* — Verrina *walks up and down the room in deep thought, then stops.*) If rightly I can trace thy counsels, O eternal Providence! it is thy will to make my daughter the instrument of Genoa's de-

liverance. (*Approaching her slowly, takes the mourning crape from his arm, and proceeds in a solemn manner.*) Before the heart's blood of Doria shall wash away this foul stain from thy honor no beam of daylight shall shine upon these cheeks. Till then (*throwing the crape over her*) be blind! (*A pause — the rest look upon him with silent astonishment; he continues solemnly, his hand upon* BERTHA'S *head.*) Cursed be the air that shall breathe on thee! Cursed the sleep that shall refresh thee! Cursed every human step that shall come to sooth thy misery! Down, into the lowest vault beneath my house! There whine, and cry aloud! (*pausing with inward horror.*) Be thy life painful as the tortures of the writhing worm — agonizing as the stubborn conflict between existence and annihilation. This curse lie on thee till Gianettino shall have heaved forth his dying breath. If he escape his punishment, then mayest thou drag thy load of misery throughout the endless circle of eternity!

[*A deep silence — horror is marked on the countenances of all present.* VERRINA *casts a scrutinizing look at each of them.*

BOURG. Inhuman father! What is it thou hast done? Why pour forth this horrible and monstrous curse against thy guiltless daughter?

VERRINA. Youth, thou say'st true! — it is most horrible. Now who among you will stand forth and prate still of patience and delay? My daughter's fate is linked with that of Genoa. I sacrifice the affections of a father to the duties of a citizen. Who among us is so much a coward as to hesitate in the salvation of his country, when this poor guiltless being must pay for his timidity with endless sufferings? By heavens, 'twas not a madman's speech! I have sworn an oath, and till Doria lie in the agonies of death I will show no mercy to my child. No — not though, like an executioner, I should invent unheard-of torments for her, or with my own hands rend her innocent frame piecemeal on the barbarous rack. You shudder — you stare at me with ghastly faces. Once more, Scipio — I keep her as a hostage for the tyrant's death. Upon this precious thread do I suspend

thy duty, my own, and yours (*to* SACCO *and* CALCAGNO). The tyrant of Genoa falls, or Bertha must despair — I retract not.

BOURG. (*throwing himself at* BERTHA'S *feet*). He shall fall — shall fall a victim to Genoa. I will as surely sheathe this sword in Doria's heart as upon thy lips I will imprint the bridal kiss. (*Rises.*)

VERRINA. Ye couple, the first that ever owed their union to the Furies, join hands! Thou wilt sheathe thy sword in Doria's heart? Take her! she is thine!

CALCAGNO (*kneeling*). Here kneels another citizen of Genoa and lays his faithful sword before the feet of innocence. As surely may Calcagno find the way to heaven as this steel shall find its way to Gianettino's heart! (*Rises.*)

SACCO (*kneeling*). Last, but not less determined, Raffaelle Sacco kneels. If this bright steel unlock not the prison doors of Bertha, mayest thou, my Saviour, shut thine ear against my dying prayers! (*Rises.*)

VERRINA (*with a calm look*). Through me Genoa thanks you. Now go, my daughter; rejoice to be the mighty sacrifice for thy country!

BOURG. (*embracing her as she is departing*). Go! confide in God—and Bourgognino. The same day shall give freedom to Bertha and to Genoa. [BERTHA *retires.*

SCENE XIII.

The former — without BERTHA.

CALCAGNO. Genoese, before we take another step, one word ——

VERRINA. I guess what you would say.

CALCAGNO. Will four patriots alone be sufficient to destroy this mighty hydra? Shall we not stir up the people to rebellion, or draw the nobles in to join our party?

VERRINA. I understand you. Now hear my advice; I have long engaged a painter who has been exerting all his skill to paint the fall of Appius Claudius. Fiesco is an adorer of the arts, and soon warmed by ennobling scenes. We will send this picture to his house, and will

be present when he contemplates it. Perhaps the sight may rouse his dormant spirit. Perhaps ——

BOURG. No more of him. Increase the danger, not the sharers in it. So valor bids. Long have I felt a something within my breast that nothing would appease. What 'twas now bursts upon me (*springing up with enthusiasm*); 'twas a tyrant! [*The scene closes.*

ACT II.

SCENE I. — *An Ante-chamber in the Palace of* FIESCO.

LEONORA *and* ARABELLA.

ARABELLA. No, no, you were mistaken: your eyes were blinded by jealousy.

LEONORA. It was Julia to the life. Seek not to persuade me otherwise. My picture was suspended by a sky-blue ribbon: this was flame-colored. My doom is fixed irrevocably.

SCENE II.

The former and JULIA.

JULIA (*entering in an affected manner*). The Count offered me his palace to see the procession to the senate-house. The time will be tedious. You will entertain me, madam, while the chocolate is preparing.

[ARABELLA *goes out, and returns soon afterwards.*

LEONORA. Do you wish that I should invite company to meet you?

JULIA. Ridiculous! As if I should come hither in search of company. You will amuse me, madam (*walking up and down, and admiring herself*), if you are able, madam. At any rate I shall lose nothing.

ARABELLA (*sarcastically*). Your splendid dress alone will be the loser. Only think how cruel it is to deprive the eager eyes of our young beaux of such a treat! Ah! and the glitter of your sparkling jewels on which it almost wounds the sight to look. Good heavens! You seem to have plundered the whole ocean of its pearls.

JULIA (*before a glass*). You are not accustomed to such things, miss! But hark ye, miss! pray has your mistress also hired your tongue? Madam, 'tis fine, indeed, to permit your domestics thus to address your guests.

LEONORA. 'Tis my misfortune, signora, that my want of spirits prevents me from enjoying the pleasure of your company.

JULIA. An ugly fault that, to be dull and spiritless. Be active, sprightly, witty! Yours is not the way to attach your husband to you.

LEONORA. I know but one way, Countess. Let yours ever be the sympathetic medium.

JULIA (*pretending not to mind her*). How you dress, madam! For shame! Pay more attention to your personal appearance! Have recourse to art where nature has been unkind. Put a little paint on those cheeks, which look so pale with spleen. Poor creature! Your puny face will never find a bidder.

LEONORA (*in a lively manner to* ARABELLA). Congratulate me, girl. It is impossible I can have lost my Fiesco; or, if I have, the loss must be but trifling. (*The chocolate is brought,* ARABELLA *pours it out.*)

JULIA. Do you talk of losing Fiesco? Good God! How could you ever conceive the ambitious idea of possessing him? Why, my child, aspire to such a height? A height where you cannot but be seen, and must come into comparison with others. Indeed, my dear, he was a knave or a fool who joined you with Fiesco. (*Taking her hand with a look of compassion.*) Poor soul! The man who is received in the assemblies of fashionable life could never be a suitable match for you. (*She takes a dish of chocolate.*)

LEONORA (*smiling at* ARABELLA). If he were, he would not wish to mix with such assemblies.

JULIA. The Count is handsome, fashionable, elegant. He is so fortunate as to have formed connections with people of rank. He is lively and high-spirited. Now, when he severs himself from these circles of elegance and refinement, and returns home warm with their impressions, what does he meet? His wife receives him

with a commonplace tenderness; damps his fire with an insipid, chilling kiss, and measures out her attentions to him with a niggardly economy. Poor husband! Here, a blooming beauty smiles upon him — there, he is nauseated by a peevish sensibility. Signora, signora, for God's sake consider, if he have not lost his understanding, which will he choose?

LEONORA (*offering her a cup of chocolate*). You, madam — if he have lost it.

JULIA. Good! This sting shall return into your own bosom. Tremble for your mockery! But before you tremble — blush!

LEONORA. Do you then know what it is to blush, signora? But why not? 'Tis a toilet trick.

JULIA. Oh, see! This poor creature must be provoked if one would draw from her a spark of wit. Well — let it pass this time. Madam, you were bitter. Give me your hand in token of reconciliation.

LEONORA (*offering her hand with a significant look*). Countess, my anger ne'er shall trouble you.

JULIA (*offering her hand*). Generous, indeed! Yet may I not be so, too? (*Maliciously.*) Countess, do you not think I must love that person whose image I bear constantly about me?

LEONORA (*blushing and confused*). What do you say? Let me hope the conclusion is too hasty.

JULIA. I think so, too. The heart waits not the guidance of the senses — real sentiment needs no breastwork of outward ornament.

LEONORA. Heavens! Where did *you* learn such a truth?

JULIA. 'Twas in mere compassion that I spoke it; for observe, madam, the reverse is no less certain. Such is Fiesco's love for you. (*Gives her the picture, laughing maliciously.*)

LEONORA (*with extreme indignation*). My picture! Given to you! (*Throws herself into a chair, much affected.*) Cruel, Fiesco!

JULIA. Have I retaliated? Have I? Now, madam, have you any other sting to wound me with? (*Goes to side scene.*) My carriage! My object is gained. (To

LEONORA, *patting her cheek.*) Be comforted, my dear; he gave me the picture in a fit of madness.

[*Exeunt* JULIA *and* ARABELLA.

SCENE III.

LEONORA, CALCAGNO *entering.*

CALCAGNO. Did not the Countess Imperiali depart in anger? You, too, so excited, madam?

LEONORA (*violently agitated.*) No! This is unheard-of cruelty.

CALCAGNO. Heaven and earth! Do I behold you in tears?

LEONORA. Thou art a friend of my inhuman——Away, leave my sight!

CALCAGNO. Whom do you call inhuman? You affright me——

LEONORA. My husband. Is he not so?

CALCAGNO. What do I hear!

LEONORA. 'Tis but a piece of villany common enough among your sex!

CALCAGNO (*grasping her hand with vehemence*). Lady, I have a heart for weeping virtue.

LEONORA. You are a man — your heart is not for me.

CALCAGNO. For you alone — yours only. Would that you knew how much, how truly yours——

LEONORA. Man, thou art untrue. Thy words would be refuted by thy actions——

CALCAGNO. I swear to you——

LEONORA. A false oath. Cease! The perjuries of men are so innumerable 'twould tire the pen of the recording angel to write them down. If their violated oaths were turned into as many devils they might storm heaven itself, and lead away the angels of light as captives.

CALCAGNO. Nay, madam, your anger makes you unjust. Is the whole sex to answer for the crime of one?

LEONORA. I tell thee in that one was centred all my affection for the sex. In him I will detest them all.

CALCAGNO. Countess, — you once bestowed your hand amiss. Would you again make trial, I know one who would deserve it better.

LEONORA. The limits of creation cannot bound your falsehoods. I'll hear no more.

CALCAGNO. Oh, that you would retract this cruel sentence in my arms!

LEONORA (*with astonishment*). Speak out. In thy arms!

CALCAGNO. In my arms, which open themselves to receive a forsaken woman, and to console her for the love she has lost.

LEONORA (*fixing her eyes on him*). Love?

CALCAGNO (*kneeling before her with ardor*). Yes, I have said it. Love, madam! Life and death hang on your tongue. If my passion be criminal then let the extremes of virtue and vice unite, and heaven and hell be joined together in one perdition.

LEONORA (*steps back indignantly, with a look of noble disdain*). Ha! Hypocrite! Was that the object of thy false compassion? This attitude at once proclaims thee a traitor to friendship and to love. Begone forever from my eyes! Detested sex! Till now I thought the only victim of your snares was woman; nor ever suspected that to each other you were so false and faithless.

CALCAGNO (*rising, confounded*). Countess!

LEONORA. Was it not enough to break the sacred seal of confidence? but even on the unsullied mirror of virtue does this hypocrite breathe pestilence, and would seduce my innocence to perjury.

CALCAGNO (*hastily*). Perjury, madam, you cannot be guilty of.

LEONORA. I understand thee — thou thoughtest my wounded pride would plead in thy behalf. (*With dignity*). Thou didst not know that she who loves Fiesco feels even the pang that rends her heart ennobling. Begone! Fiesco's perfidy will not make Calcagno rise in my esteem — but — will lower humanity. [*Exit hastily.*

CALCAGNO (*stands as if thunderstruck, looks after her, then striking his forehead*). Fool that I am. [*Exit.*

Scene IV.

The Moor *and* Fiesco.

Fiesco. Who was it that just now departed?

Moor. The Marquis Calcagno.

Fiesco. This handkerchief was left upon the sofa. My wife has been here.

Moor. I met her this moment in great agitation.

Fiesco This handkerchief is moist (*puts it in his pocket*). Calcagno here? And Leonora agitated? This evening thou must learn what has happened.

Moor. Miss Bella likes to hear that she is fair. She will inform me.

Fiesco. Well — thirty hours are past. Hast thou executed my commission?

Moor. To the letter, my lord.

Fiesco (*seating himself*). Then tell me how they talk of Doria, and of the government.

Moor. Oh, most vilely. The very name of Doria shakes them like an ague-fit. Gianettino is as hateful to them as death itself — there's naught but murmuring. They say the French have been the rats of Genoa, the cat Doria has devoured them, and now is going to feast upon the mice.

Fiesco. That may perhaps be true. But do they not know of any dog against that cat?

Moor (*with an affected carelessness*). The town was murmuring much of a certain — poh — why, I have actually forgotten the name.

Fiesco (*rising*). Blockhead! That name is as easy to be remembered as 'twas difficult to achieve. Has Genoa more such names than one?

Moor. No — it cannot have two Counts of Lavagna.

Fiesco (*seating himself*). That is something. And what do they whisper about my gayeties?

Moor (*fixing his eyes upon him*). Hear me, Count of Lavagna! Genoa must think highly of you. They cannot imagine why a descendant of the first family — with such talents and genius — full of spirit and popularity —

master of four millions — his veins enriched with princely blood — a nobleman like Fiesco, whom, at the first call, all hearts would fly to meet ——

FIESCO (*turns away contemptuously*). To hear such things from such a scoundrel!

MOOR. Many lamented that the chief of Genoa should slumber over the ruin of his country. And many sneered. Most men condemned you. All bewailed the state which thus had lost you. A Jesuit pretended to have smelt out the fox that lay disguised in sheep's clothing.

FIESCO. One fox smells out another. What say they to my passion for the Countess Imperiali?

MOOR. What I would rather be excused from repeating.

FIESCO. Out with it — the bolder the more welcome. What are their murmurings?

MOOR. 'Tis not a murmur. At all the coffee-houses, billiard-tables, hotels, and public walks — in the market-place, at the Exchange, they proclaim aloud ——

FIESCO. What? I command thee!

MOOR (*retreating*). That you are a fool!

FIESCO. Well, take this sequin for these tidings. Now have I put on a fool's cap that these Genoese may have wherewith to rack their wits. Next I will shave my head, that they may play Merry Andrew to my Clown. How did the manufacturers receive my presents?

MOOR (*humorously*). Why, Mr. Fool, they looked like poor knaves ——

FIESCO. Fool? Fellow, art thou mad?

MOOR. Pardon! I had a mind for a few more sequins.

FIESCO (*laughing, gives him another sequin*). Well. "Like poor knaves."

MOOR. Who receive pardon at the very block. They are yours both soul and body.

FIESCO. I'm glad of it. They turn the scale among the populace of Genoa.

MOOR. What a scene it was! Zounds! I almost acquired a relish for benevolence. They caught me round the neck like madmen. The very girls seemed in love with my black visage, that's as ill-omened as the

moon in an eclipse. Gold, thought I, is omnipotent: it makes even a Moor look fair.

FIESCO. That thought was better than the soil which gave it birth. These words are favorable; but do they bespeak actions of equal import?

MOOR. Yes — as the murmuring of the distant thunder foretells the approaching storm. The people lay their heads together — they collect in parties — break off their talk whenever a stranger passes by. Throughout Genoa reigns a gloomy silence. This discontent hangs like a threatening tempest over the republic. Come, wind, then hail and lightning will burst forth.

FIESCO. Hush! — hark! What is that confused noise?

MOOR (*going to the window*). It is the tumult of the crowd returning from the senate-house.

FIESCO. To-day is the election of a procurator. Order my carriage! It is impossible that the sitting should be over. I'll go thither. It is impossible it should be over if things went right. Bring me my sword and cloak — where is my golden chain?

MOOR. Sir, I have stolen and pawned it.

FIESCO. That I am glad to hear.

MOOR. But, how! Are there no more sequins for me?

FIESCO. No. You forgot the cloak.

MOOR. Ah! I was wrong in pointing out the thief.

FIESCO. The tumult comes nearer. Hark! 'Tis not the sound of approbation. Quick! Unlock the gates; I guess the matter. Doria has been rash. The state balances upon a needle's point. There has assuredly been some disturbance at the senate-house.

MOOR (*at the window*). What's here! They're coming down the street of Balbi — a crowd of many thousands — the halberds glitter — ah, swords too! Halloo! Senators! They come this way.

FIESCO. Sedition is on foot. Hasten amongst them; mention my name; persuade them to come hither. (*Exit* MOOR *hastily*.) What reason, laboring like a careful ant, with difficulty scrapes together, the wind of accident collects in one short moment.

SCENE V.

FIESCO, ZENTURIONE, ZIBO, *and* ASSERATO, *rushing in.*

ZIBO. Count, impute it to our anger that we enter thus unannounced.

ZENT. I have been mortally affronted by the duke's nephew in the face of the whole senate.

ASSERATO. Doria has trampled on the golden book of which each noble Genoese is a leaf.

ZENT. Therefore come we hither. The whole nobility are insulted in me; the whole nobility must share my vengeance. To avenge my own honor I should not need assistance.

ZIBO. The whole nobility are outraged in his person; the whole nobility must rise and vent their rage in fire and flames.

ASSERATO. The rights of the nation are trodden under foot; the liberty of the republic has received a deadly blow.

FIESCO. You raise my expectation to the utmost.

ZIBO. He was the twenty-ninth among the electing senators, and had drawn forth a golden ball to vote for the procurator. Of the eight-and-twenty votes collected, fourteen were for me, and as many for Lomellino. His and Doria's were still wanting —

ZENT. Wanting! I gave my vote for Zibo. Doria — think of the wound inflicted on my honor — Doria ——

ASSERATO (*interrupting him*). Such a thing was never heard of since the sea washed the walls of Genoa.

ZENT. (*continues, with great heat*). Doria drew a sword, which he had concealed under a scarlet cloak — stuck it through my vote — called to the assembly ——

ZIBO. "Senators, 'tis good-for-nothing — 'tis pierced through. Lomellino is procurator."

ZENT. "Lomellino is procurator." And threw his sword upon the table.

ASSERATO. And called out, "'Tis good-for-nothing!" and threw his sword upon the table.

FIESCO (*after a pause*). On what are you resolved?

ZENT. The republic is wounded to its very heart. On what are we resolved?

FIESCO. Zenturione, rushes may yield to a breath, but the oak requires a storm. I ask, on what are you resolved?

ZIBO. Methinks the question shall be, on what does Genoa resolve?

FIESCO. Genoa! Genoa! name it not. 'Tis rotten, and crumbles wherever you touch it. Do you reckon on the nobles? Perhaps because they put on grave faces, look mysterious when state affairs are mentioned — talk not of them! Their heroism is stifled among the bales of their Levantine merchandise. Their souls hover anxiously over their India fleet.

ZENT. Learn to esteem our nobles more justly. Scarcely was Doria's haughty action done when hundreds of them rushed into the street tearing their garments. The senate was dispersed ——

FIESCO (*sarcastically*). Like frighted pigeons when the vulture darts upon the dovecot.

ZENT. No! (*fiercely*) — like powder-barrels when a match falls on them.

ZIBO. The people are enraged. What may we not expect from the fury of the wounded boar!

FIESCO (*laughing*). The blind, unwieldy monster, which at first rattles its heavy bones, threatening, with gaping jaws, to devour the high and low, the near and distant, at last stumbles at a thread — Genoese, 'tis in vain! The epoch of the masters of the sea is past — Genoa is sunk beneath the splendor of its name. Its state is such as once was Rome's, when, like a tennis-ball, she leaped into the racket of young Octavius. Genoa can be free no longer; Genoa must be fostered by a monarch; therefore do homage to the mad-brained Gianettino.

ZENT. (*vehemently*). Yes, when the contending elements are reconciled, and when the north pole meets the south. Come, friends.

FIESCO. Stay! stay! Upon what project are you brooding, Zibo?

ZIBO. On nothing.

FIESCO (*leading them to a statue*). Look at this figure.

ZENT. It is the Florentine Venus. Why point to her?

FIESCO. At least she pleases you.

ZIBO. Undoubtedly, or we should be but poor Italians. But why this question now?

FIESCO. Travel through all the countries of the globe, and among the most beautiful of living female models, seek one which shall unite all the charms of this ideal Venus.

ZIBO. And then take for our reward?

FIESCO. Then your search will have convicted fancy of deceit ——

ZENT. (*impatiently*). And what shall we have gained?

FIESCO. Gained? The decision of the long-protracted contest between art and nature.

ZENT. (*eagerly*). And what then?

FIESCO. Then, then? (*Laughing.*) Then your attention will have been diverted from observing the fall of Genoa's liberty. [*Exeunt all but* FIESCO.

SCENE VI.

FIESCO *alone.* (*The noise without increases.*)

FIESCO. 'Tis well! 'tis well. The straw of the republic has caught fire — the flames have seized already on palaces and towers. Let it go on! May the blaze be general! Let the tempestuous wind spread wide the conflagration!

SCENE VII.

FIESCO, MOOR, *entering in haste.*

MOOR. Crowds upon crowds!

FIESCO. Throw open wide the gates. Let all that choose enter.

MOOR. Republicans! Republicans, indeed! They drag their liberty along, panting, like beasts of burden, beneath the yoke of their magnificent nobility.

FIESCO. Fools! who believe that Fiesco of Lavagna will carry on what Fiesco of Lavagna did not begin. The tumult comes opportunely; but the conspiracy must be my own. They are rushing hither ——

MOOR (*going out*). Halloo! halloo! You are very obligingly battering the house down. (*The people rush in; the doors broken down.*)

SCENE VIII.

FIESCO, *twelve* ARTISANS.

ALL ART. Vengeance on Doria! Vengeance on Gianettino!

FIESCO. Gently! gently! my countrymen! Your waiting thus upon me bespeaks the warmth of your affection; but I pray you have mercy on my ears!

ALL (*with impetuosity*). Down with the Dorias! Down with them, uncle and nephew!

FIESCO (*counting them with a smile*). Twelve is a mighty force!

SOME OF THEM. These Dorias must away! the state must be reformed!

1ST ART. To throw our magistrates down stairs! The magistrates!

2D ART. Think, Count Lavagna — down stairs! because they opposed them in the election ——

ALL. It must not be endured! it shall not be endured!

3D ART. To take a sword into the senate!

1ST ART. A sword? — the sign of war — into the chamber of peace!

2D ART. To come into the senate dressed in scarlet! Not like the other senators, in black.

1ST ART. To drive through our capital with eight horses!

ALL. A tyrant! A traitor to the country and the government!

2D ART. To hire two hundred Germans from the Emperor for his body-guard.

1ST ART. To bring foreigners in arms against the natives — Germans against Italians — soldiers against laws!

ALL. 'Tis treason! — 'tis a plot against the liberty of Genoa!

1ST ART. To have the arms of the republic painted on his coach!

2D ART. The statue of Andreas placed in the centre of the senate-house!

ALL. Dash them to pieces — both the statue and the man ——

FIESCO. Citizens of Genoa, why this to me?

1ST ART. You should not suffer it. You should keep him down.

2D ART. You are a wise man, and should not suffer it. You should direct us by your counsel.

1ST ART. You are a better nobleman. You should chastise them and curb their insolence.

FIESCO. Your confidence is flattering. Can I merit it by deeds?

ALL (*clamorously*). Strike! Down with the tyrant! Make us free!

FIESCO. But — will you hear me?

SOME. Speak, Count!

FIESCO (*seating himself*). Genoese, — the empire of the animals was once thrown into confusion; parties struggled with parties, till at last a bull-dog seized the throne. He, accustomed to drive the cattle to the knife of the butcher, prowled in savage manner through the state. He barked, he bit, and gnawed his subjects' bones. The nation murmured; the boldest joined together, and killed the princely monster. Now a general assembly was held to decide upon the important question, which form of government was best. There were three different opinions. Geneose, what would be your decision?

1ST ART. For the people — everything in common ——

FIESCO. The people gained it. The government was democratical; each citizen had a vote, and everything was submitted to a majority. But a few weeks passed ere man declared war against the new republic. The state assembled. Horse, lion, tiger, bear, elephant, and rhinoceros, stepped forth, and roared aloud, "To arms!" The rest were called upon to vote. The lamb, the hare, the stag, the ass, the tribe of insects, with the birds and timid fishes, cried for peace. See, Genoese! The cowards were more numerous than the brave; the foolish than the wise. Numbers prevailed — the beasts laid down their

arms, and man exacted contributions from them. The democratic system was abandoned. Genoese, what would you next have chosen?

1st and 2d Art. A select government!

Fiesco. That was adopted. The business of the state was all arranged in separate departments. Wolves were the financiers, foxes their secretaries, doves presided in the criminal courts, and tigers in the courts of equity. The laws of chastity were regulated by goats; hares were the soldiers; lions and elephants had charge of the baggage. The ass was the ambassador of the empire, and the mole appointed inspector-general of the whole administration. Genoese, what think you of this wise distribution? Those whom the wolf did not devour the fox pillaged; whoever escaped from him was knocked down by the ass. The tiger murdered innocents, whilst robbers and assassins were pardoned by the doves. And at the last, when each had laid down his office, the mole declared that all were well discharged. The animals rebelled. "Let us," they cried unanimously, "choose a monarch endowed with strength and skill, and who has only one stomach to appease." And to one chief they all did homage. Genoese — to one — but (*rising and advancing majestically*) — that one was — the lion!

All (*shouting, and throwing up their hats*). Bravo! Bravo! Well managed, Count Lavagna!

1st Art. And Genoa shall follow that example. Genoa, also, has its lion!

Fiesco. Tell me not of that lion; but go home and think upon him. (*The* Artisans *depart tumultuously.*) It is as I would have it. The people and the senate are alike enraged against Doria; the people and the senate alike approve Fiesco. Hassan! Hassan! I must take advantage of this favorable gale. Hoa! Hassan! Hassan! I must augment their hatred — improve my influence. Hassan! Come hither! Whoreson of hell, come hither!

Scene IX.

Fiesco, Moor *entering hastily.*

Moor. My feet are quite on fire with running. What is the matter now?

FIESCO. Hear my commands!

MOOR (*submissively*). Whither shall I run first?

FIESCO. I will excuse thy running this time. Thou shalt be dragged. Prepare thyself. I intend to publish thy attempted assassination, and deliver thee up in chains to the criminal tribunal.

MOOR (*taking several steps backward*). Sir! — that's contrary to agreement.

FIESCO. Be not alarmed. 'Tis but a farce. At this moment 'tis of the utmost consequence that Gianettino's attempt against my life should be made public. Thou shalt be tried before the criminal tribunal.

MOOR. Must I confess it, or deny?

FIESCO. Deny. They will put thee to the torture. Thou must hold out against the first degree. This, by the by, will serve to expiate thy real crime. At the second thou mayest confess.

MOOR (*shaking his head with a look of apprehension*). The devil is a sly rogue. Their worships might perhaps desire my company a little longer than I should wish; and, for sheer farce sake, I may be broken on the wheel.

FIESCO. Thou shalt escape unhurt, I give thee my honor as a nobleman. I shall request, as satisfaction, to have thy punishment left to me, and then pardon thee before the whole republic.

MOOR. Well — I agree to it. They will draw out my joints a little; but that will only make them the more flexible.

FIESCO. Then scratch this arm with thy dagger, till the blood flows. I will pretend that I have just now seized thee in fact. 'Tis well. (*Hallooing violently*). Murder! Murder! Guard the passages! Make fast the gates! (*He drags the* MOOR *out by the throat; servants run across the stage hastily.*)

SCENE X.

LEONORA *and* ROSA *enter hastily, alarmed.*

LEONORA. Murder! they cried — murder! The noise came this way.

ROSA. Surely 'twas but a common tumult, such as happens every day in Genoa.

LEONORA. They cried murder! and I distinctly heard Fiesco's name. In vain you would deceive me. My heart discovers what is concealed from my eyes. Quick! Hasten after them. See! Tell me whither they carry him.

ROSA. Collect your spirits, madam. Arabella is gone.

LEONORA. Arabella will catch his dying look. The happy Arabella! Wretch that I am? 'twas I that murdered him. If I could have engaged his heart he would not have plunged into the world, nor rushed upon the daggers of assassins. Ah! she comes. Away! Oh, Arabella, speak not to me!

SCENE XI.

The former, ARABELLA.

ARABELLA. The Count is living and unhurt. I saw him gallop through the city. Never did he appear more handsome. The steed that bore him pranced haughtily along, and with its proud hoof kept the thronging multitude at a distance from its princely rider. He saw me as I passed, and with a gracious smile, pointing thither, thrice kissed his hand to me. (*Archly.*) What can I do with those kisses, madam?

LEONORA (*highly pleased*). Idle prattler! Restore them to him.

ROSA. See now, how soon your color has returned!

LEONORA. His heart he is ready to fling at every wench, whilst I sigh in vain for a look! Oh woman! woman! [*Exeunt.*

SCENE XII.— *The Palace of* ANDREAS.

GIANETTINO *and* LOMELLINO *enter hastily.*

GIANET. Let them roar for their liberty as a lioness for her young. I am resolved.

LOMEL. But — most gracious prince!

GIANET. Away to hell with thy buts, thou three-hours procurator! I will not yield a hair's breadth? Let Genoa's towers shake their heads, and the hoarse sea bellow *No* to it. I value not the rebellious multitude!

LOMEL. The people are indeed the fuel; but the nobility fan the flame. The whole republic is in a ferment, people and patricians.

GIANET. Then will I stand upon the mount like Nero, and regale myself with looking upon the paltry flames.

LOMEL. Till the whole mass of sedition falls into the hands of some enterprising leader, who will take advantage of the general devastation.

GIANET. Poh! Poh! I know but one who might be dangerous, and he is taken care of.

LOMEL. His highness comes.

Enter ANDREAS — (*both bow respectfully*).

ANDREAS. Signor Lomellino, my niece wishes to take the air.

LOMEL. I shall have the honor of attending her.

[*Exit* LOMELLINO.

SCENE XIII.

ANDREAS *and* GIANETTINO.

ANDREAS. Nephew, I am much displeased with you.

GIANET. Grant me a hearing, most gracious uncle!

ANDREAS. That would I grant to the meanest beggar in Genoa if he were worthy of it. Never to a villain, though he were my nephew. It is sufficient favor that I address thee as an uncle, not as a sovereign!

GIANET. One word only, gracious sir!

ANDREAS. Hear first what thou hast done; then answer me. Thou hast pulled down an edifice which I have labored for fifty years to raise — that which should have been thy uncle's mausoleum, his only pyramid — the affections of his countrymen. This rashness Andreas pardons thee ——

GIANET. My uncle and my sovereign ——

ANDREAS. Interrupt me not. Thou hast injured that most glorious work of mine, the constitution, which I

brought down from heaven for Genoa, which cost me so many sleepless nights, so many dangers, and so much blood. Before all Genoa thou hast cast a stain upon my honor, in violating my institutions. Who will hold them sacred if my own blood despise them? This folly thy uncle pardons thee.

GIANET. (*offended*). Sir, you educated me to be the Duke of Genoa.

ANDREAS. Be silent. Thou art a traitor to the state, and hast attacked its vital principle. Mark me, boy! That principle is — *subordination*. Because the shepherd retired in the evening from his labor, thoughtest thou the flock deserted? Because Andreas' head is white with age, thoughtest thou, like a villain, to trample on the laws?

GIANET. (*insolently*). Peace, Duke! In my veins also boils the blood of that Andreas before whom France has trembled.

ANDREAS. Be silent! I command thee. When I speak the sea itself is wont to pay attention. Thou hast insulted the majesty of justice in its very sanctuary. Rebel! dost thou know what punishment that crime demands? Now answer! (GIANETTINO *appears struck, and fixes his eyes on the ground without speaking*). Wretched Andreas! In thy own heart hast thou fostered the canker of thy renown. I built up a fabric for Genoa which should mock the lapse of ages, and am myself the first to cast a firebrand into it. Thank my gray head, which would be laid in the grave by a relation's hand — thank my unjust love that, on the scaffold, I pour not out thy rebellious blood to satisfy the violated laws. [*Exit.*

SCENE XIV.

GIANETTINO *looks after the* DUKE, *speechless with anger,* LOMELLINO *entering, breathless and terrified.*

LOMEL. What have I seen! What have I heard! Fly, prince! Fly quickly! All is lost.

GIANET. (*with inward rage*). What was there to lose?

LOMEL. Genoa, prince: I come from the market-place. The people were crowding round a Moor who was dragged

along bound with cords. The Count of Lavagna, with above three hundred nobles, followed to the criminal court. The Moor had been employed to assassinate Fiesco, and in the attempt was seized.

GIANET. (*stamping violently on the ground*). What, are all the devils of hell let loose at once?

LOMEL. They questioned him most strictly concerning his employer. The Moor confessed nothing. They tried the first degree of torture. Still he confessed nothing. They put him to the second. Then he spoke — he spoke. My gracious lord, how could you trust your honor to such a villain?

GIANET. (*fiercely*). Ask me no question?

LOMEL. Hear the rest! Scarcely was the word Doria uttered — I would sooner have seen my name inscribed in the infernal register than have heard yours thus mentioned — scarcely was it uttered when Fiesco showed himself to the people. You know the man — how winningly he pleads — how he is wont to play the usurer with the hearts of the multitude. The whole assembly hung upon his looks, breathless with indignation. He spoke little, but bared his bleeding arm. The crowd contended for the falling drops as if for sacred relics. The Moor was given up to his disposal — and Fiesco — a mortal blow for us! Fiesco pardoned him. Now the confined anger of the people burst forth in one tumultuous clamor. Each breath annihilated a Doria, and Fiesco was borne home amidst a thousand joyful acclamations.

GIANET. (*with a ferocious laugh*). Let the flood of tumult swell up to my very throat. The emperor! That sound alone shall strike them to the earth, so that not a murmur shall be heard in Genoa.

LOMEL. Bohemia is far from hence. If the emperor come speedily he may perhaps be present at your funeral feast.

GIANET. (*drawing forth a letter with a great seal*). 'Tis fortunate that he is here already. Art thou surprised at this? And didst thou think me mad enough to brave the fury of enraged republicans had I not known they were betrayed and sold?

LOMEL (*with astonishment*). I know not what to think!

GIANET. But I have thought of something which thou couldst not know. My plan is formed, Ere two days are past twelve senators must fall. Doria becomes sovereign, and the Emperor Charles protects him. Thou seemest astonished ——

LOMEL. Twelve senators! My heart is too narrow to comprehend a twelvefold murder.

GIANET. Fool that thou art! The throne will absolve the deed. I consulted with the ministers of Charles on the strong party which France still has in Genoa, and by which she might a second time seize on it unless they should be rooted out. This worked upon the emperor—he approved my projects—and thou shalt write what I will dictate to thee.

LOMEL. I know not yet your purpose.

GIANET. Sit down and write ——

LOMEL. But what am I to write? (*Seats himself.*)

GIANET. The names of the twelve candidates for death — Francis Zenturione.

LOMEL. (*writes*). In gratitude for his vote he leads the funeral procession.

GIANET. Cornelio Calva.

LOMEL. Calva.

GIANET. Michael Zibo.

LOMEL. To cool him after his disappointment in the procuratorship.

GIANET. Thomas Asserato and his three brothers. (LOMELLINO *stops.*)

GIANET. (*forcibly*). And his three brothers ——

LOMEL. (*writes*). Go on.

GIANET. Fiesco of Lavagna.

LOMEL. Have a care! Have a care! That black stone will yet prove fatal to you.

GIANET. Scipio Bourgognino.

LOMEL. He may celebrate elsewhere his wedding ——

GIANET. Ay, where I shall be director of the nuptials. Raphael Sacco.

LOMEL. I should intercede for his life until he shall have paid my five thousand crowns. (*Writes.*) Death strikes the balance.

GIANET. Vincent Calcagno.

LOMEL. Calcagno. The twelfth I write at my own risk, unless our mortal enemy be overlooked.

GIANET. The end crowns all — Joseph Verrina.

LOMEL. He is the very head of the viper that threatens us. (*Rises and presents the paper to* GIANETTINO.) Two days hence death shall make a splendid feast, at which twelve of the chief of Genoa's nobles will be present.

GIANET. (*signs the paper*). 'Tis done. Two days hence will be the ducal election. When the senate shall be assembled for that purpose these twelve shall, on the signal of a handkerchief, be suddenly laid low. My two hundred Germans will have surrounded the senate-house. At that moment I enter and claim homage as the Duke. (*Rings the bell.*)

LOMEL. And what of Andreas?

GIANET (*contemptuously*). He is an old man. (*Enter a servant.*) If the Duke should ask for me say I am gone to mass. (*Exit servant.*) I must conceal the devil that's within beneath a saintly garb.

LOMEL. But, my lord, the paper?

GIANET. Take it, and let it be circulated among our party. This letter must be dispatched by express to Levanto. 'Tis to inform Spinola of our intended plan, and bid him reach the capital early in the morning. (*Going.*)

LOMEL. Stop, prince. There is an error in our calculation. Fiesco does not attend the senate.

GIANET. (*looking back*). Genoa will easily supply one more assassin. I'll see to that. [*Exeunt different ways.*

SCENE XV. — *An Ante-chamber in* FIESCO'S *Palace.*

FIESCO, *with papers before him, and* MOOR.

FIESCO. Four galleys have entered the harbor, dost say?

MOOR. Yes, they're at anchor in the port.

FIESCO. That's well. Whence are these expresses?

MOOR. From Rome, Placentia, and France.

FIESCO (*opens the letters and runs over them*). Wel-

come! welcome news! (*In high spirits.*) Let the messengers be treated in a princely manner.

MOOR. Hem! (*Going.*).

FIESCO. Stop, stop! Here's work for thee in plenty.

MOOR. Command me. I am ready to act the setter or the bloodhound.

FIESCO. I only want at present the voice of the decoy-bird. To-morrow early two thousand men will enter the city in disguise to engage in my service. Distribute thy assistants at the gates, and let them keep a watchful eye upon the strangers that arrive. Some will be dressed like pilgrims on their journey to Loretto, others like mendicant friars, or Savoyards, or actors; some as peddlers and musicians; but the most as disbanded soldiers coming to seek a livelihood in Genoa. Let every one be asked where he takes up his lodging. If he answer at the Golden Snake, let him be treated as a friend and shown my habitation. But remember, sirrah, I rely upon thy prudence.

MOOR. Sir, as securely as upon my knavery. If a single head escape me, pluck out my eyes and shoot at sparrows with them. (*Going.*)

FIESCO. Stop! I've another piece of business for thee. The arrival of the galleys will excite suspicion in the city. If any one inquire of thee about them, say thou hast heard it rumored that thy master intends to cruise against the Turks. Dost thou understand me?

MOOR. Yes, yes — the beards of the Mussulmen at the masthead, but the devil for a steersman. (*Going.*)

FIESCO. Gently — one more precaution. Gianettino has new reasons to hate me and lay snares against my life. Go — sound the fellows of thy trade; see if thou canst not smell out some plot on foot against me. Visit the brothels — Doria oftens frequents them. The secrets of the cabinet are sometimes lodged within the folds of a petticoat. Promise these ladies golden customers. Promise them thy master. Let nothing be too sacred to be used in gaining the desired information.

MOOR. Ha! luckily I am acquainted with one Diana Buononi, whom I have served above a year as procurer.

The other day I saw the Signor Lomellino coming out of her house.

FIESCO. That suits my purpose well. This very Lomellino is the key to all Doria's follies. To-morrow thou shalt go thither. Perhaps he is to-night the Endymion of this chaste Diana.

MOOR. One more question, my lord. Suppose the people ask me — and that they will, I'll pawn my soul upon it — suppose they ask, "What does Fiesco think of Genoa?" Would you still wear the mask? — or — how shall I answer them?

FIESCO. Answer? Hum! The fruit is ripe. The pains of labor announce the approaching birth. Answer that Genoa lies upon the block, and that thy master's name is — John Louis Fiesco ——

MOOR (*with an air of satisfaction*). That, by my rogue's honor, shall be done to your heart's content. Now be wide awake, friend Hassan! First to a tavern! My feet have work enough cut out for them. I must coax my stomach to intercede with my legs. (*Hastening away — returns.*) Oh, apropos! My chattering made me almost forget one circumstance. You wished to know what passed between Calcagno and your wife. A refusal, sir — that's all. [*Runs off.*

SCENE XVI.

FIESCO *alone.*

FIESCO. I pity thee, Calcagno. Didst thou think I should, upon so delicate a point, have been thus careless had I not relied in perfect security on my wife's virtue and my own deserts? Yet I welcome this passion. Thou art a good soldier. It shall procure me thy arm for the destruction of Doria. (*Walking up and down.*) Now, Doria, to the scene of action! All the machines are ready for the grand attempt — the instruments are tuned for the terrific concert. Naught is wanting but to throw off the mask, and show Fiesco to the patriots of Genoa. (*Some persons are heard approaching.*) Ha! Visitors! Who can be coming to disturb me?

Scene XVII.

Fiesco, Verrina, Romano, *with a picture;* Sacco, Bourgognino, Calcagno.

Fiesco (*receiving them with great affability*). Welcome, my worthy friends! What important business brings you all hither? Are you, too, come, my dear brother, Verrina? I should almost have forgotten you, had you not oftener been present to my thoughts than to my sight. I think I have not seen you since my last entertainment.

Verrina. Do not count the hours, Fiesco! Heavy burdens have in that interval weighed down my aged head. But enough of this——

Fiesco. Not enough to satisfy the anxiety of friendship. You must inform me farther when we are alone. (*Addressing* Bourgognino.) Welcome, brave youth! Our acquaintance is yet green; but my affection for thee is already ripe. Has your esteem for me improved?

Bourg. 'Tis on the increase.

Fiesco. Verrina, it is reported that this brave young man is to be your son-in-law. Receive my warmest approbation of your choice. I have conversed with him but once; and yet I should be proud to call him my relation.

Verrina. That judgment makes me of my daughter vain.

Fiesco (*to the others*). Sacco, Calcagno — all unfrequent visitors — I should fear the absence of Genoa's noblest ornaments were a proof that I had been deficient in hospitality. And here I greet a fifth guest, unknown to me, indeed, but sufficiently recommended by this worthy circle.

Romano. He, my lord, is simply a painter, by name Julio Romano, who lives by theft and counterfeit of Nature's charms. His pencil is his only escutcheon; and he now comes hither (*bowing profoundly*) to seek the manly outlines of a Brutus.

Fiesco. Give me your hand, Romano! I love the mistress of your soul with a holy fire. Art is the right hand of Nature. The latter only gave us being, but 'twas

the former made us men. What are the subjects of your labor?

ROMANO. Scenes from the heroic ages of antiquity. At Florence is my dying Hercules, at Venice my Cleopatra, the raging Ajax at Rome, where, in the Vatican, the heroes of former times rise again to light.

FIESCO. And what just now employs you?

ROMANO. Alas! my lord, I've thrown away my pencil. The lamp of genius burns quicker than the lamp of life. Beyond a certain moment the flame flickers and dies. This is my last production.

FIESCO (*in a lively manner*). It could not come more opportune. I feel to-day a more than usual cheerfulness. A sentiment of calm delight pervades my being, and fits it to receive the impression of Nature's beauties. Let us view your picture. I shall feast upon the sight. Come, friends, we will devote ourselves entirely to the artist. Place your picture.

VERRINA (*apart to the others*). Now, Genoese, observe!

ROMANO (*placing the picture*). The light must fall upon it thus. Draw up that curtain — let fall the other — right. (*Standing on one side*). It is the story of Virginia and Appius Claudius. (*A long pause; all contemplate the picture.*)

VERRINA (*with enthusiasm*). Strike, aged father! Dost thou tremble, tyrant? How pale you stand there, Romans! Imitate him, senseless Romans! The sword yet glitters! Imitate *me*, senseless Genoese! Down with Doria! Down with him! (*Striking at the picture.*)

FIESCO (*to the painter, smiling*). Could you desire greater applause? Your art has transformed this old man into a youthful enthusiast.

VERRINA (*exhausted*). Where am I! What has become of them! They vanished like bubbles. You here, Fiesco! and the tyrant living!

FIESCO. My friend, amidst this admiration you have overlooked the parts most truly beauteous. Does this Roman's head thus strike you? Look there! Observe that damsel — what soft expression! What feminine delicacy! How sweetly touched are those pale lips! How exquisite that dying look! Inimitable! Divine, Romano!

And that white, dazzling breast, that heaves with the last pulse of life. Draw more such beauties, Romano, and I will give up Nature to worship thy creative fancy.

BOURG. Is it thus, Verrina, your hopes are answered?

VERRINA. Take courage, son! The Almighty has rejected the arm of Fiesco. Upon ours he must rely.

FIESCO (*to* ROMANO). Well — 'tis your last work, Romano. Your powers are exhausted. Lay down your pencil. Yet, whilst I am admiring the artist, I forget to satiate on the work. I could stand gazing on it, regardless of an earthquake. Take away your picture — the wealth of Genoa would scarcely reach the value of this Virginia. Away with it.

ROMANO. Honor is the artist's noblest reward. I present it to you. (*Offers to go away.*)

FIESCO. Stay, Romano! (*He walks majestically up and down the room, seeming to reflect on something of importance. Sometimes he casts a quick and penetrating glance at the others; at last he takes* ROMANO *by the hand, and leads him to the picture.*) Come near, painter. (*With dignified pride.*) Proudly stand'st thou there because, upon the dead canvas, thou canst simulate life, and immortalize great deeds with small endeavor. Thou canst dilate with the poet's fire on the empty puppet-show of fancy, without heart and without the nerve of life-inspiring deeds; depose tyrants on canvas, and be thyself a miserable slave! Thou canst liberate Republics with a dash of the pencil, yet not break thy own chains! (*In a loud and commanding tone.*) Go! Thy work is a mere juggle. Let the semblance give place to reality! (*With haughtiness, overturning the picture.*) I have done what thou — hast only painted. (*All struck with astonishment;* ROMANO *carries away the picture in confusion.*)

SCENE XVIII.

The former, except ROMANO.

FIESCO. Did you suppose the lion slept because he ceased to roar? Did your vain thoughts persuade you that none but you could feel the chains of Genoa? That

none but you durst break them? Before you knew thei weight, Fiesco had already broken them. (*He opens a escritoire, takes out a parcel of letters, and throws then on the table.*) These bring soldiers from Parma; — these French money; — these, four galleys from the Pope What now is wanting to rouse the tyrant in his lair Tell me, what think you wanting? (*All stand silen with astonishment.*) Republicans! you waste your tim in curses when you should overthrow the tyrant. (*A but* VERRINA *throw themselves at* FIESCO'S *feet.*)

VERRINA. Fiesco, my spirit bends to thine, but m knee cannot. Thy soul is great; but — rise, Genoese (*They rise.*)

FIESCO. All Genoa was indignant at the effeminat Fiesco; all Genoa cursed the profligate Fiesco. Genoese my amours have blinded the cunning despot. My wil excesses served to guard my plans from the danger of a imprudent confidence. Concealed beneath the cloak o luxury the infant plot grew up. Enough — I'm know sufficiently to Genoa in being known to you. I have at tained my utmost wish.

BOURG. (*throwing himself indignantly into a chair*) Am I, then, nothing?

FIESCO. But let us turn from thought to action. Al the engines are prepared — I can storm the city by se and land. Rome, France, and Parma cover me; th nobles are disaffected; the hearts of the populace ar mine; I have lulled to sleep the tyrants; the state is rip for revolution. We are no longer in the hands of Fo tune. Nothing is wanting. Verrina is lost in thought

BOURG. Patience! I have a word to say, which wil more quickly rouse him than the trumpet of the las day. (*To* VERRINA — *calls out to him emphatically.* Father! Awake! Thy Bertha will despair.

VERRINA. Who spoke those words? Genoese, t arms!

FIESCO. Think on the means of forwarding our plan Night has advanced upon our discourse; Genoa is wrappe in sleep; the tyrant sinks exhausted beneath the sins o the day. Let us watch o'er both.

BOURG. Let us, before we part, consecrate our heroi

union by an embrace! (*They form a circle, with joined arms.*) Here unite five of the bravest hearts in Genoa to decide their country's fate. (*All embrace eagerly.*) When the universe shall fall asunder, and the eternal sentence shall cut in twain the bonds of consanguinity and love, then may this fivefold band of heroes still remain entire! (*They separate.*)

VERRINA. When shall we next assemble?

FIESCO. At noon to-morrow I'll hear your sentiments.

VERRINA. 'Tis well — at noon to-morrow. Good-night, Fiesco! Come, Bourgognino, you will hear something marvellous.

[*Exeunt* VERRINA *and* BOURGOGNINO.

FIESCO (*to the others*). Depart by the back gates, that Doria's spies may not suspect us.

[*Exeunt* SACCO *and* CALCAGNO.

SCENE XIX.

FIESCO, *alone.*

FIESCO (*walking up and down in meditation*). What a tumult is in my breast! What a concourse of dark, uncertain images! Like guilty wretches stealing out in secret to do some horrid deed, with trembling steps and blushing faces bent toward the ground, these flattering phantoms glide athwart my soul. Stay! stay! — let me examine you more closely. A virtuous thought strengthens the heart of man, and boldly meets the day. Ha! I know you — robed in the livery of Satan — avaunt! (*A pause; he continues with energy.*) Fiesco, the patriot! the Duke Fiesco! Peace! On this steep precipice the boundaries of virtue terminate: here heaven and hell are separated. Here have heroes stumbled, here have they fallen, and left behind a name loaded with curses — here, too, have heroes paused, here checked their course, and risen to immortality. (*More vehemently.*) To know the hearts of Genoa mine! To govern with a master's hand this formidable state! Oh, artifice of sin, that masks each devil with an angel's face! Fatal ambition! Everlasting tempter! Won by thy charms, angels abandoned heaven, and death sprung from thy embraces. (*Shud-*

dering.) Thy syren voice drew angels from their cele tial mansions — man thou ensnarest with beauty, riche power. (*After a pause, in a firm tone.*) To gain diadem is great — to reject it is divine! (*Resolutely* Perish the tyrant! Let Genoa be free — and I (*mu affected*) will be its happiest citizen.

ACT III.

SCENE I. — *Midnight. A dreary wilderness.*

VERRINA *and* BOURGOGNINO *entering.*

BOURG. (*stands still*). Whither are you leading m father. The heavy grief that hung upon your brow wh first you bade me follow you still seems to labor in yo panting breast. Break this dreadful silence! Speak. will go no further.

VERRINA. This is the place.

BOURG. You could not choose a spot more awf Father, if the deed you purpose be like the place — fath — my hair will stand on end with horror.

VERRINA. And yet 'tis cheerfulness itself to the gloo that enwraps my soul. Follow me to yon churchyar where corruption preys on the mouldering remnants mortality, and death holds his fearful banquet — whe shrieks of damned souls delight the listening fiends, ar sorrow weeps her fruitless tears into the never-filling ur Follow me, my son, to where the condition of this wor is changed; and God throws off his attributes of mer — there will I speak to thee in agony, and thou sha hear with despair.

BOURG. Hear! what? I conjure you, father.

VERRINA. Youth! I fear. Youth, thy blood is war and crimson — thy heart is soft and tender — suc natures are alive to human kindness — this warmth feeling melts my obdurate wisdom. If the frost of ag or sorrow's leaden pressure had chilled the springtic vigor of thy spirits — if black congealed blood ha closed the avenues of thy heart against the approaches humanity — then would thy mind be attuned to t

language of my grief, and thou wouldst look with admiration on my project.

BOURG. I will hear it, and embrace it as my own.

VERRINA. Not so, my son — Verrina will not wound thy heart with it. O Scipio, heavy burdens lie on me. A thought more dark and horrible than night, too vast to be contained within the breast of man! Mark me — *my* hand alone shall execute the deed; but my mind cannot alone support the weight of it. If I were proud, Scipio, I might say greatness unshared is torture. It was a burden to the Deity himself, and he created angels to partake his counsels. Hear, Scipio!

BOURG. My soul devours thy words.

VERRINA. Hear! But answer nothing — nothing, young man! Observe me — not a word — Fiesco must die.

BOURG. (*struck with astonishment*). Die! Fiesco!

VERRINA. Die — I thank thee, God, 'tis out at last — Fiesco must die. My son — die by my hand. Now, go. There are deeds too high for human judgment. They appeal alone to heaven's tribunal. Such a one is this. Go! I neither ask thy blame nor approbation. I know my inward struggles, and that's enough. But hear! These thoughts might weary out thy mind even to madness. Hear! Didst thou observe yesterday with what pride he viewed his greatness reflected from our wondering countenances? The man whose smiles deceived all Italy, will he endure equals in Genoa? Go! 'Tis certain that Fiesco will overthrow the tyrant. 'Tis as certain he will become a tyrant still more dangerous.

[*Exit hastily.* BOURGOGNINO *looks after him with speechless surprise, then follows slowly.*

SCENE II. — *An apartment in* FIESCO'S *house. In the middle of the back scene a glass door, through which is seen a view of the sea and Genoa. Daybreak.*

FIESCO *at the window.*

FIESCO. What do I see! The moon hath hid its face. The morn is rising fiery from the sea. Wild fancies have beset my sleep, and kept my soul convulsed

by one idea. Let me inhale the pure, refreshing breeze. (*He opens a window; the city and ocean appear red with the tint of morning.* FIESCO *walking up and down the room with energy.*) I the greatest man in Genoa! And should not lesser souls bow down before the greater? But is not this to trample upon virtue? (*Musing.*) Virtue? The elevated mind is exposed to other than ordinary temptations — shall it then be governed by the ordinary rules of virtue? Is the armor which encases the pigmy's feeble frame suited to the giant? (*The sun rises over Genoa.*) This majestic city mine! (*Spreading out his arms as if to embrace it.*) To flame above it like the god of day! To rule over it with a monarch mind! To hold in subjection all the raging passions, all the insatiable desires in this fathomless ocean! 'Tis certain, though the cunning of the thief ennoble not the theft, yet doth the prize ennoble the thief. It is base to filch a purse — daring to embezzle a million, — but it is immeasurably great to steal a diadem. As guilt extends its sphere, the infamy decreaseth. (*A pause, then with energy.*) To obey! or to command! A fearful dizzying gulf — that absorbs whate'er is precious in the eyes of men. The trophies of the conqueror — the immortal works of science and of art — the voluptuous pleasures of the epicure — the whole wealth encompassed by the seas. To obey! or to command! To be, or not to be! The space between is as wide as from the lowest depths of hell to the throne of the Almighty. (*In an elevated tone.*) From that awful height to look down securely upon the impetuous whirlpool of mankind, where blind fortune holds capricious sway! To quaff at the fountain-head unlimited draughts from the rich cup of pleasure! To hold that armed giant law beneath my feet in leading-strings, and see it struggle with fruitless efforts against the sacred power of majesty! To tame the stubborn passions of the people, and curb them with a playful rein, as a skilful horseman guides the fiery steed! With a breath — one single breath — to quell the rising pride of vassals, whilst the prince, with the motion of his sceptre, can embody even his wildest dreams of fancy! Ah! What thoughts are these which transport the astounded

mind beyond its boundaries! Prince! To be for one moment prince comprises the essence of a whole existence. 'Tis not the mere stage of life — but the part we play on it that gives the value. The murmurs which compose the thunder's roar might singly lull an infant to repose — but united their crash can shake the eternal vault of heaven. I am resolved. (*Walking up and down majestically.*)

Scene III.

Fiesco; Leonora, *entering with a look of anxiety.*

Leonora. Pardon me, count. I fear I interrupt your morning rest.

Fiesco (*steps back with astonishment*). Indeed, madam, you do surprise me not a little.

Leonora. That never happens to those who love.

Fiesco. Charming countess, you expose your beauty to the rude breath of morning.

Leonora. I know not why I should preserve its small remains for grief to feed on.

Fiesco. Grief, my love? I thought that to be free from cares of state was happiness ——

Leonora. It may be so. Yet do I feel that my weak heart is breaking amidst this happiness. I come, sir, to trouble you with a trifling request, if you can spare a moment's time to hear me. These seven months past I have indulged the pleasing dream of being Countess of Lavagna. It now has passed away and left a painful weight upon my mind. Amid the pleasures of my innocent childhood I must seek relief to my disordered spirits. Permit me, therefore, to return to the arms of my beloved mother ——

Fiesco (*with astonishment*). Countess!

Leonora. My heart is a poor trembling thing which you should pity. Even the least remembrance of my visionary joy might wound my sickly fancy. I therefore restore the last memorials of your kindness to their rightful owner. (*She lays some trinkets on the table.*) This, too, that like a dagger struck my heart (*presenting a*

letter). This, too (*going to rush out of the door in tears*), and I will retain nothing but the wound.

FIESCO (*agitated, hastens after and detains her*). Leonora! For God's sake, stay!

LEONORA (*falls into his arms exhausted*). To be your wife was more than I deserved. But she who was your wife deserved at least respect. How bitter is the tongue of calumny. How the wives and maidens of Genoa now look down upon me! "See," they say, "how droops the haughty one whose vanity aspired to Fiesco!" Cruel punishment of my pride! I triumphed over my whole sex when Fiesco led me to the altar ——

FIESCO. Really, Madonna! All this is most surprising ——

LEONORA (*aside*). Ah! he changes color — now I revive.

FIESCO. Wait only two days, countess — then judge my conduct ——

LEONORA. To be sacrificed! Let me not speak it in thy chaste presence, oh, thou virgin day! To be sacrificed to a shameless wanton! Look on me, my husband! Ah, surely those eyes that make all Genoa tremble, must hide themselves before a weeping woman ——

FIESCO (*extremely confused*). No more, signora! No more ——

LEONORA (*with a melancholy look of reproach*). To rend the heart of a poor helpless woman! Oh, it is so worthy of the manly sex. Into his arms I threw myself, and on his strength confidingly reposed my feminine weakness. To him I trusted the heaven of my hopes. The generous man bestowed it on a ——

FIESCO (*interrupting her, with vehemence*). No, my Leonora! No!

LEONORA. My Leonora! Heaven, I thank thee! These were the angelic sounds of love once more. I ought to hate thee, faithless man! And yet I fondly grasp the shadow of thy tenderness. Hate! said I? Hate Fiesco? Oh, believe it not! Thy perfidy may bid me die, but cannot bid me hate thee. I did not know my heart ——
(*The* MOOR *is heard approaching.*)

FIESCO. Leonora! grant me one trifling favor.

LEONORA. Everything, Fiesco — but indifference.

FIESCO. Well, well (*significantly*). Till Genoa be two days older, inquire not! condemn me not! (*Leads her politely to another apartment.*)

SCENE IV.

FIESCO; *the* MOOR, *entering hastily.*

FIESCO. Whence come you thus out of breath?

MOOR. Quick, my lord!

FIESCO. Has anything run into the net?

MOOR. Read this letter. Am I really here? Methinks Genoa is become shorter by twelve streets, or else my legs have grown that much longer! You change color? Yes, yes — they play at cards for heads, and yours is the chief stake. How do you like it?

FIESCO (*throws the letter on the table with horror*). Thou woolly-pated rascal! How camest thou by that letter?

MOOR. Much in the same way as your grace will come by the republic. An express was sent with it towards Levanto. I smelt out the game; waylaid the fellow in a narrow pass, despatched the fox, and brought the poultry hither ——

FIESCO. His blood be on thy head! As for the letter, 'tis not to be paid with gold.

MOOR. Yet I will be content with silver for it — (*seriously, and with a look of importance*). Count of Lavagna! 'twas but the other day I sought your life. To-day (*pointing to the letter*) I have preserved it. Now I think his lordship and the scoundrel are even. My further service is an act of friendship — (*presents another letter*) number two!

FIESCO (*receives it with astonishment*). Art thou mad?

MOOR. Number two — (*with an arrogant air — his arms akimbo*) the lion has not acted foolishly in pardoning the mouse. Ah! 'twas a deed of policy. Who else could e'er have gnawed the net with which he was surrounded? Now, sir, how like you that?

FIESCO. Fellow, how many devils hast thou in pay?

MOOR. But one, sir, at your service; and he is in your grace's keeping.

FIESCO. What! Doria's own signature! Whence dost thou bring this paper?

MOOR. Fresh from the hands of my Diana. I went to her last night, tempted her with your charming words, and still more charming sequins. The last prevailed. She bade me call early in the morning. Lomellino had been there as you predicted, and paid the toll to his contraband heaven with this deposit.

FIESCO (*indignantly*). Oh, these despicable woman-slaves! They would govern kingdoms, and cannot keep a secret from a harlot. By these papers I learn that Doria and his party have formed a plot to murder me, with eleven senators, and to place Gianettino on the throne.

MOOR. Even so — and that upon the morning of the ducal election, the third of this month.

FIESCO (*vehemently*). The night of our enterprise shall smother that morning in its very birth. Speed thee, Hassan. My affairs are ripe. Collect our fellows. We will take bloody lead of our adversaries. Be active, Hassan!

MOOR. I have a budget full of news beside. Two thousand soldiers are safely smuggled into the city. I've lodged them with the Capuchins, where not even a prying sunbeam can espy them. They burn with eagerness to see their leader. They are fine fellows.

FIESCO. Each head of them shall yield thee a ducat. Is there no talk about my galleys?

MOOR. Oh, I've a pleasant story of them, my lord. Above four hundred adventurers, whom the peace 'twixt France and Spain has left without employ, besought my people to recommend them to your grace to fight against the infidels. I have appointed them to meet this evening in the palace-court.

FIESCO (*pleased*). I could almost embrace thee, rascal. A masterly stroke! Four hundred, said'st thou? Genoa is in my power. Four hundred crowns are thine ——

MOOR (*with an air of confidence*). Eh, Fiesco? We two will pull the state in pieces, and sweep away the laws

as with a besom. You know not how many hearty fellows I have among the garrison — lads that I can reckon on as surely as on a trip to hell. Now I've so laid my plans that at each gate we have among the guard at least six of our creatures, who will be enough to overcome the others by persuasion or by wine. If you wish to risk a blow to-night, you'll find the sentinels all drenched with liquor.

FIESCO. Peace, fellow! Hitherto I have moved the vast machine alone; shall I now, at the very goal, be put to shame by the greatest rascal under the sun? Here's my hand upon it, fellow — whate'er the *Count* remains indebted to thee, the *Duke* shall pay.

MOOR. And here, too, is a note from the Countess Imperiali. She beckoned to me from her window, when I went up received me graciously, and asked me ironically if the Countess of Lavagna had not been lately troubled with the spleen. Does your grace, said I, inquire but for one person?

FIESCO (*having read the letter throws it aside*). Well said. What answer made she?

MOOR. She answered, that she still lamented the fate of the poor bereaved widow—that she was willing to give her satisfaction, and meant to forbid your grace's attentions.

FIESCO (*with a sneer*). Which of themselves may possibly cease sometime before the day of judgment. Is that all thy business, Hassan?

MOOR (*ironically*). My lord, the affairs of the ladies are next to those of state.

FIESCO. Without a doubt, and these especially. But for what purpose are these papers?

MOOR. To remove one plague by another. These powders the signora gave me, to mix one every day with your wife's chocolate.

FIESCO (*starting*). Gave thee?

MOOR. Donna Julia, Countess Imperiali.

FIESCO (*snatching them from him eagerly*). If thou liest, rascal, I'll hang thee up alive in irons at the weathercock of the Lorenzo tower, where the wind shall whirl *thee nine* times round with every blast. The powders?

MOOR (*impatiently*). I am to give your wife mixed with her chocolate. Such were the orders of Donna Julia Imperiali.

FIESCO (*enraged*). Monster! monster! This lovely creature! Is there room for so much hell within a female bosom? And I forgot to thank thee, heavenly Providence, that has rendered it abortive — abortive through a greater devil. Wondrous are thy ways! (*To the* MOOR.) Swear to me to obey, and keep this secret.

MOOR. Very well. The latter I can afford — she paid me ready money.

FIESCO. This note invites me to her. I'll be with you, madam! — and find means to lure you hither, too. Now haste thee, with all thy speed, and call together the conspirators.

MOOR. This order I anticipated, and therefore at my own risk appointed every one to come at ten o'clock precisely.

FIESCO. I hear the sound of footsteps. They are here. Fellow, thy villany deserves a gallows of its own, on which no son of Adam was ever yet suspended. Wait in the ante-chamber till I call for thee.

MOOR. The Moor has done his work — the Moor may go. [*Exit.*

SCENE V.

FIESCO, VERRINA, BOURGOGNINO, CALCAGNO, SACCO.

FIESCO (*meeting them*). The tempest is approaching: the clouds rush together. Advance with caution. Let all the doors be locked.

VERRINA. Eight chambers have I made fast behind. Suspicion cannot come within a hundred steps of us.

BOURG. Here is no traitor, unless our fear become one.

FIESCO. Fear cannot pass my threshold. Welcome be whose mind remains the same as yesterday. Be seated. (*They seat themselves.*)

BOURG. (*walking up and down*). I care not to sit in cold deliberation when action calls upon me.

FIESCO. Genoese, this hour is eventful.

VERRINA. Thou hast challenged us to consider a plan

for dethroning the tyrant. Demand of us — we are here to answer thee.

FIESCO. First, then, a question which, as it comes so late, you may think strange. Who is to fall? (*A pause.*)

BOURG. (*leaning over* FIESCO'S *chair, with an expressive look*). The tyrants.

FIESCO. Well spoken. The tyrants. I entreat you weigh well the importance of the word. Is he who threatens the overthrow of liberty — or he who has it in his power — the greater tyrant?

VERRINA. The first I hate, I fear the latter. Let Andreas Doria fall!

CALCAGNO (*with emotion*). Andreas? The old Andreas! who perhaps to-morrow may pay the debt of nature ——

SACCO. Andreas? That mild old man!

FIESCO. Formidable is that old man's mildness, O my friend — the brutality of Gianettino only deserves contempt. "Let Andreas fall!" There spoke thy wisdom, Verrina.

BOURG. The chain of iron, and the cord of silk, alike are bonds. Let Andreas perish!

FIESCO (*going to the table*). The sentence, then is passed upon the uncle and the nephew. Sign it! (*They all sign.*) The question who is settled. How must be next determined. Speak first, Calcagno.

CALCAGNO. We must execute it either as soldiers or assassins. The first is dangerous, because we must have many confidants. 'Tis also doubtful, because the peoples' hearts are not all with us. To act the second our five good daggers are sufficient. Two days hence high mass will be performed in the Lorenzo Church — both the Dorias will be present. In the house of God even a tyrant's cares are lulled to sleep. I have done.

FIESCO (*turning away*). Calcagno, your plan is politic, but 'tis detestable. Raphael Sacco, yours?

SACCO. Calcagno's reasons please me, but the means he chooses my mind revolts at. Better were it that Fiesco should invite both the uncle and nephew to a feast, where, pressed on all sides by the vengeance of the re-

public, they must swallow death at the dagger's point, or in a bumper of good Cyprian. This method is at least convenient.

FIESCO (*with horror*). Ah, Sacco! What if the wine their dying tongues shall taste become for us torments of burning pitch in hell! Away with this advice! Speak thou, Verrina.

VERRINA. An open heart shows a bold front. Assassination degrades us to banditti. The hero advances sword in hand. I propose to give aloud the signal of revolt, and boldly rouse the patriots of Genoa to vengeance. (*He starts from his seat, the others do the same.*)

BOURG. (*embracing him*). And with armed hand wrest Fortune's favors from her. This is the voice of honor, and is mine.

FIESCO. And mine. Shame on you, Genoese! (*to* SACCO *and* CALCAGNO). Fortune has already done too much for us, let something be our own. Therefore open revolt! And that, Genoese, this very night —— (VERRINA *and* BOURGOGNINO *astonished — the others terrified.*)

CALCAGNO. What! To-night! The tyrants are yet too powerful, our force too small.

SACCO. To-night! And nought prepared? The day is fast declining.

FIESCO. Your doubts are reasonable, but read these papers. (*He gives them* GIANNETTINO'S *papers, and walks up and down with a look of satisfaction, whilst they read them eagerly.*) Now, farewell, thou proud and haughty star of Genoa, that didst seem to fill the whole horizon with thy brightness. Knowest thou not that the majestic sun himself must quit the heavens, and yield his sceptre to the radiant moon? Farewell, Doria, beauteous star!

> Patroclus to the shades is gone,
> And he was more than thou.

BOURG. (*after reading the papers*). This is horrible.

CALCAGNO. Twelve victims at a blow!

VERRINA. To-morrow in the senate-house!

BOURG. Give me these papers, and I will ride with them through Genoa, holding them up to view. The very

stones will rise in mutiny, and even the dogs will howl against the tyrant.

ALL. Revenge! Revenge! Revenge! This very night!

FIESCO. Now you have reached the point. At sunset I will invite hither the principal malcontents — those that stand upon the bloody list of Gianettino! Besides the Sauli, the Gentili, Vivaldi, Vesodimari, all mortal enemies of the house of Doria; but whom the tyrant forgot to fear. They, doubtless, will embrace my plan with eagerness.

BOURG. I doubt it not.

FIESCO. Above all things, we must render ourselves masters of the sea. Galleys and seamen I have ready. The twenty vessels of the Dorias are dismantled, and may be easily surprised. The entrance of the inner harbor must be blocked up, all hope of flight cut off. If we secure this point, all Genoa is in our power.

VERRINA. Doubtless.

FIESCO. Then we must seize the strongest posts in the city, especially the gate of St. Thomas, which, leading to the harbor, connects our land and naval forces. Both the Dorias must be surprised within their palaces, and killed. The bells must toll, the citizens be called upon to side with us, and vindicate the liberties of Genoa. If Fortune favor us, you shall hear the rest in the senate.

VERRINA. The plan is good. Now for the distribution of our parts.

FIESCO (*significantly*). Genoese, you chose me, of your own accord, as chief of the conspiracy. Will you obey my further orders?

VERRINA. As certainly as they shall be the best.

FIESCO. Verrina, dost thou know the principle of all warlike enterprise? Instruct him, Genoese. It is subordination. If your will be not subjected to mine — observe me well — if I be not the head of the conspiracy, I am no more a member.

VERRINA. A life of freedom is well worth some hours of slavery. We obey.

FIESCO. Then leave me now. Let one of you reconnoitre the city and inform me of the strength or weakness

of the several posts. Let another find out the watchword. A third must see that the galleys are in readiness. A fourth conduct the two thousand soldiers into my palace-court. I myself will make all preparations here for the evening, and pass the interval perhaps in play. At nine precisely let all be at my palace to hear my final orders. (*Rings the bell.*)

VERRINA. I take the harbor.

BOURG. I the soldiers.

CALCAGNO. I will learn the watchword.

SACCO. I will reconnoitre Genoa. [*Exeunt.*

SCENE VI.

FIESCO, MOOR.

FIESCO (*seated at a desk, and writing*). Did they not struggle against the word *subordination* as the worm against the needle which transfixes it? But 'tis too late, republicans.

MOOR (*entering*). My lord ——

FIESCO (*giving him a paper*). Invite all those whose names are written here to see a play this evening at my palace.

MOOR. Perhaps to act a part, and pay the admittance with their heads.

FIESCO (*in a haughty and contemptuous manner*). When that is over I will no longer detain thee here in Genoa. (*Going, throws him a purse.*) This is thy last employment. [*Exit.*

SCENE VII.

MOOR, *alone.*

MOOR (*taking up the purse slowly, and looking after* FIESCO *with surprise*). Are we, then, on these terms? "I will detain thee in Genoa no longer." That is to say, translated from the Christian language into my heathen tongue, "When I am duke I shall hang up my friend the Moor upon a Genoese gallows." Hum! He fears, because I know his tricks, my tongue may bring his honor into danger when he is duke. When he is duke?

Hold, master count! That event remains to be considered. Ah! old Doria, thy life is in my hands. Thou art lost unless I warn thee of thy danger. Now, if I go to him and discover the plot, I save the Duke of Genoa no less than his existence and his dukedom, and gain at least this hatful of gold for my reward. (*Going, stops suddenly.*) But stay, friend Hassan, thou art going on a foolish errand. Suppose this scene of riot is prevented, and nothing but good is the result. Pshaw! what a cursed trick my avarice would then have played me! Come, devil, help me to make out what promises the greatest mischief; to cheat Fiesco, or to give up Doria to the dagger. If Fiesco succeed then Genoa may prosper. Away! That must not be. If this Doria escape, then all remains as it was before, and Genoa is quiet. That's still worse! Ay, but to see these rebels' heads upon the block! Hum! On the other hand 'twould be amusing to behold the illustrious Dorias in this evening's massacre the victims of a rascally Moor. No. This doubtful question a Christian might perhaps resolve, but 'tis too deep a riddle for my Moorish brains. I'll go propose it to some learned man. [*Exit.*

Scene VIII.

An apartment in the house of the Countess Imperiali. Julia *in dishabille.* Gianettino *enters, agitated.*

Gianet. Good-evening, sister.

Julia (*rising*). It must be something extraordinary which brings the crown-prince of Genoa to his sister!

Gianet. Sister, you are continually surrounded by butterflies and I by wasps. How is it possible that we should meet? Let's be seated.

Julia. You almost excite my curiosity.

Gianet. When did Fiesco visit you last?

Julia. A strange question. As if I burdened my memory with such trifles!

Gianet. I must know — positively.

Julia. Well, then, he was here yesterday.

Gianet. And behaved without reserve?

JULIA. As usual.

GIANET. As much a coxcomb as ever.

JULIA (*offended*). Brother!

GIANET. (*more vehemently*). I say — as much a cox comb ——

JULIA (*rises, with indignation*). Sir! What do yo take me for?

GIANET. (*keeps his seat — sarcastically*). For a mer piece of woman-flesh, wrapped up in a great — grea patent of nobility. This between ourselves — there i no one by to hear us.

JULIA (*enraged*). Between ourselves — you are a impertinent jackanapes, and presume upon the credit o your uncle. No one by to hear us, indeed!

GIANET. Sister! sister! don't be angry. I'm onl merry because Fiesco is still as much a coxcomb as ever That's all I wanted to know. Your servant —— (*Going.*

SCENE IX.

The former, LOMELLINO, *entering.*

LOMEL. (*to* JULIA, *respectfully*). Pardon my bold ness, gracious lady. (*To* GIANETTINO.) Certain affair which cannot be delayed —— (GIANETTINO *takes hi aside;* JULIA *sits down angrily at the pianoforte an plays an allegro.*)

GIANET. (*to* LOMELLINO). Is everything prepared fo to-morrow?

LOMEL. Everything, prince — but the courier, who wa despatched this morning to Levanto, is not yet returned nor is Spinola arrived. Should he be intercepted! I'n much alarmed ——

GIANET. Fear nothing. You have that list at hand

LOMEL. (*embarrassed*). My lord — the list? I do no know — I must have left it at home in my other pocket.

GIANET. It does not signify — would that Spinol were but here. Fiesco will be found dead in his bed. have taken measures for it.

LOMEL. But it will cause great consternation.

GIANET. In that lies our security. Common crime but move the blood and stir it to revenge: atrociou

deeds freeze it with terror, and annihilate the faculties of man. You know the fabled power of Medusa's head — they who but looked on it were turned to stone. What may not be done, my boy, before stones are warmed to animation?

LOMEL. Have you given the countess any intimation of it?

GIANET. That would never do! We must deal more cautiously with her attachment to Fiesco. When she shares the sweets, the cost will soon be forgotten. Come, I expect troops this evening from Milan, and must give orders at the gates for their reception. (*To* JULIA.) Well, sister, have you almost thrummed away your anger?

JULIA. Go! You're a rude unmannered creature.

(GIANET., *going, meets* FIESCO.)

SCENE X.

The former; FIESCO.

GIANET. (*stepping back*). Ha!

FIESCO (*with politeness*). Prince, you spare me a visit which I was just now about to pay.

GIANET. And I, too, count, am pleased to meet you here.

FIESCO (*approaching* JULIA *courteously*). Your charms, signora, always surpass expectation.

JULIA. Fie! that in another would sound ambiguous — but I'm shocked at my dishabille — excuse me, count— (*going*).

FIESCO. Stay, my beauteous lady. Woman's beauty is ne'er so charming as when in the toilet's simplest garb (*laughingly*). An undress is her surest robe of conquest. Permit me to loosen these tresses ——

JULIA. Oh, how ready are you men to cause confusion!

FIESCO (*with a smile to* GIANET). In dress, as in the state — is it not so? (*To* JULIA.) This ribbon, too, is awkwardly put on. Sit down, fair countess — your Laura's skill may strike the eye, but cannot reach the heart.

Let me play the chambermaid for once. (*She sits dow he arranges her dress.*)

GIANET. (*aside to* LOMEL). Poor frivolous fellow!

FIESCO (*engaged about her bosom*). Now see — this prudently conceal. The senses should always be bli messengers, and not know the secret compact betwe nature and fancy.

JULIA. That is trifling.

FIESCO. Not at all; for, consider, the prettiest novel loses all its zest when once become familiar. Our sens are but the rabble of our inward republic. The nob live by them, but elevate themselves above their lo degenerate tastes. (*Having adjusted her toilet, he lea her to a glass.*) Now, by my honor! this must on t morrow be Genoa's fashion — (*politely*) — may I ha the honor of leading you so abroad, countess?

JULIA. The cunning flatterer! How artfully he la his plans to ensnare me. No! I have a headache, a will stay at home.

FIESCO. Pardon me, countess. You *may* be cruel, but surely you will not. To-day a company Florentine comedians arrive at my palace. Most of t Genoese ladies will be present this evening at their pe formance, and I am uncertain whom to place in the chi box without offending others. There is but one exp dient. (*Making a low bow.*) If you would condescen signora ——

JULIA (*blushing, retires to a side apartment*). Laur

GIANET. (*approaching* FIESCO). Count, you rememb an unpleasant circumstance ——

FIESCO (*interrupting him*). 'Tis my wish, prince, should both forget it. The actions of men are regulat by their knowledge of each other. It is my fault th you knew me so imperfectly.

GIANET. I shall never think of it without cravi your pardon from my inmost soul ——

FIESCO. Nor I without forgiving you from my heart core. (JULIA *returns, her dress a little altered.*)

GIANET. Count, I just now recollect that you a going to cruise against the Turks ——

FIESCO. This evening we weigh anchor. On th

account I had some apprehensions from which my friend Doria's kindness may deliver me.

GIANET. (*obsequiously*). Most willingly. Command my utmost influence!

FIESCO. The circumstance might cause a concourse toward the harbor, and about my palace, which the duke your uncle might misinterpret.

GIANET. (*in a friendly manner*). I'll manage that for you. Continue your preparations, and may success attend your enterprise!

FIESCO (*with a smile*). I'm much obliged to you.

SCENE XI.

The former — A GERMAN *of the body-guard.*

GIANET. What now?

GERMAN. Passing by the gate of St. Thomas I observed a great number of armed soldiers hastening towards the harbor. The galleys of the Count Fiesco were preparing for sea.

GIANET. Is that all? Report it no further.

GERMAN. Very well. From the convent of the Capuchins, too, suspicious rabble are pouring, and steal toward the market-place. From their gait and appearance I should suppose them soldiers.

GIANET. (*angrily*). Out upon this fool's zeal! (*To* LOMEL., *aside.*) These are undoubtedly my Milanese.

GERMAN. Does your grace command that they should be arrested?

GIANET. (*aloud to* LOMEL.). Look to them, Lomellino. (*To the* GERMAN.) Begone! 'Tis all well. (*Aside to* LOMEL.) Bid that German beast be silent.

[*Exeunt* LOMEL. *and* GERMAN.

FIESCO (*in another part of the room with* JULIA — *looks toward* GIANET.). Our friend Doria seems displeased. May I inquire the reason?

GIANET. No wonder. These eternal messages.

[*Exit hastily.*

FIESCO. The play awaits us, too, signora. May I offer you my hand?

JULIA. Stay, let me take my cloak. 'Tis no tragedy I hope, count? It would haunt me in my dreams.

FIESCO (*sarcastically*). 'Twill excite immoderate laughter. [*He hands her out — the curtain falls.*

ACT IV.

SCENE I. — *Night. The court of* FIESCO'S *palace. The lamps lighted. Persons carrying in arms. A wing of the palace illuminated. A heap of arms on one side of the stage.*

BOURGOGNINO, *leading a band of soldiers.*

BOURG. Halt! Let four sentinels be stationed at the great gate. Two at every door of the palace. (*The sentinels take their posts.*) Let every one that chooses enter, but none depart. If any one attempts to force his way run him through. (*Goes with the rest into the palace. The sentinels walk up and down. A pause.*)

SCENE II.

ZENTURIONE *entering.*

SENTINELS AT THE GATE (*call out*). Who goes there?

ZENT. A friend of Lavagna. (*Goes across the court to the palace on the right.*)

SENTINEL THERE. Back! (ZENT. *starts, and goes to the door on the left.*)

SENTINEL ON THE LEFT. Back!

ZENT. (*stands still with surprise. A pause. Then to the* SENTINEL *on the left*). Friend, which is the way to the theatre?

SENTINEL. Don't know.

ZENT. (*walks up and down with increasing surprise — then to the* SENTINEL *on the right*). Friend, when does the play begin?

SENTINEL. Don't know.

ZENT. (*astonished, walks up and down. Perceives the weapons; alarmea*). Friend, what mean these?

SENTINEL. Don't know.

ZENT. (*wraps himself up in his cloak, alarmed*). Strange!

SENTINELS AT THE GATE (*calling out*). Who goes there?

SCENE III.

The former, ZIBO *entering.*

ZIBO. A friend of Lavagna.

ZENT. Zibo, where are we?

ZIBO. What mean you?

ZENT. Look around you, Zibo.

ZIBO. Where? What?

ZENT. All the doors are guarded!

ZIBO. Here are arms——

ZENT. No one that will answer——

ZIBO. 'Tis strange!

ZENT. What is it o'clock?

ZIBO. Past eight.

ZENT. How bitter cold it is!

ZIBO. Eight was the hour appointed.

ZENT. (*shaking his head*). 'Tis not all as it should be here.

ZIBO. Fiesco means to jest with us——

ZENT. To-morrow will be the ducal election. Zibo, all's not right here, depend upon it.

ZIBO. Hush! hush!

ZENT. The right wing of the palace is full of lights.

ZIBO. Do you hear nothing?

ZENT. A confused murmuring within — and——

ZIBO. The sound of clattering arms——

ZENT. Horrible! horrible!

ZIBO. A carriage — it stops at the gate!

SENTINELS AT THE GATE (*calling out*). Who goes there?

SCENE IV.

The former, four of the ASSERATO *family.*

ASSERATO (*entering*). A friend of Fiesco.

ZIBO. They are the four Asserati.

ZENT. Good evening, friends!
ASSERATO. We are going to the play.
ZIBO. A pleasant journey to you!
ASSERATO. Are you not going also?
ZENT. Walk on. We'll just take a breath of air first.
ASSERATO. 'Twill soon begin. Come. (*Going.*)
SENTINEL. Back!
ASSERATO. What can this mean?
ZENT. (*laughing*). To keep you from the palace.
ASSERATO. Here's some mistake ——
ZIBO. That's plain enough. (*Music is heard in the right wing.*)
ASSERATO. Do you hear the symphony? The comedy is going to begin.
ZENT. I think it has begun, and we are acting our parts as fools.
ZIBO. I'm not over warm — I'll return home.
ASSERATO. Arms here, too?
ZIBO. Poh! Mere play-house articles.
ZENT. Shall we stand waiting, like ghosts upon the banks of Acheron? Come, let us to a tavern! (*All six go towards the gate.*)
SENTINELS (*calling loudly*). Back! Back!
ZENT. Death and the devil! We are caught.
ZIBO. My sword shall open a passage!
ASSERATO. Put it up! The count's a man of honor.
ZIBO. We are sold! betrayed! The comedy was a bait, and we're caught in a trap.
ASSERATO. Heaven forbid! And yet I tremble for the event.

SCENE V.

The former — VERRINA, SACCO, *and* NOBLES.

SENTINELS. Who goes there?
VERRINA. Friends of the house. (*Seven* NOBLES *enter with him.*)
ZIBO. These are his confidants. Now all will be explained.
SACCO (*in conversation with* VERRINA). 'Tis as I told

you; Lascaro is on guard at the St. Thomas' gate, the best officer of Doria, and blindly devoted to him.

VERRINA. I'm glad of it.

ZIBO (*to* VERRINA). Verrina, you come opportunely to clear up the mystery.

VERRINA. How so? What mean you?

ZENT. We are invited to a comedy.

VERRINA. Then we are going the same way.

ZENT. (*impatiently*). Yes — the way of all flesh. You see the doors are guarded. Why guard the doors?

ZIBO. Why these sentinels?

ZENT. We stand here like criminals beneath the gallows.

VERRINA. The count will come himself.

ZENT. 'Twere well if he came a little faster. My patience begins to fail. (*All the* NOBLES *walk up and down in the background.*)

BOURG. (*coming out of the palace, to* VERRINA). How goes it in the harbor?

VERRINA. They're all safe on board.

BOURG. The palace is full of soldiers.

VERRINA. 'Tis almost nine.

BOURG. The count is long in coming.

VERRINA. And yet too quick to gain his wishes. Bourgognino! There is a thought that freezes me.

BOURG. Father, be not too hasty.

VERRINA. It is impossible to be too hasty where delay is fatal. I must commit a second murder to justify the first.

BOURG. But — when must Fiesco fall?

VERRINA. When Genoa is free Fiesco dies!

SENTINELS. Who goes there?

SCENE VI.

The former, FIESCO.

FIESCO. A friend! (*The* NOBLES *bow — the* SENTINELS *present their arms.*) Welcome, my worthy guests! You must have been displeased at my long absence. Pardon me. (*In a low voice to* VERRINA.) Ready?

VERRINA (*in the same manner*). As you wish.
FIESCO (*to* BOURGOGNINO). And you?
BOURG. Quite prepared.
FIESCO (*to* SACCO). And you?
SACCO. All's right.
FIESCO. And Calcagno?
BOURG. Is not yet arrived.
FIESCO (*aloud to the* SENTINELS). Make fast the gates! (*He takes off his hat, and steps forward with dignity towards the assembly.*) My friends — I have invited you hither to a play — not as spectators, but to allot to each a part therein.

Long enough have we borne the insolence of Gianettino Doria, and the usurpation of Andreas. My friends, if we would deliver Genoa, no time is to be lost. For what purpose, think you, are those twenty galleys which beset our harbor? For what purpose the alliances which the Dorias have of late concluded? For what purpose the foreign forces which they have collected even in the heart of Genoa? Murmurs and execrations avail no longer. To save all we must dare all. A desperate disease requires a desperate remedy. Is there one base enough in this assembly to own an equal for his master? (*Murmurs.*) Here is not one whose ancestors did not watch around the cradle of infant Genoa. What! — in Heaven's name! — what, I ask you, have these two citizens to boast of that they could urge their daring flight so far above our head? (*Increasing murmurs.*) Every one of you is loudly called upon to fight for the cause of Genoa against its tyrants. No one can surrender a hair's-breadth of his rights without betraying the soul of the whole state. (*Interrupted by violent commotions he proceeds.*)

You feel your wrongs — then everything is gained. I have already paved your way to glory — Genoese, will you follow? I am prepared to lead you. Those signs of war which you just now beheld with horror should awaken your heroism. Your anxious shuddering must warm into a glorious zeal that you may unite your efforts with this patriotic band to overthrow the tyrant. Sucess will crown the enterprise, for all our preparations

are well arranged. The cause is just, for Genoa suffers. The attempt will render us immortal, for it is vast and glorious ——

ZENT. (*vehemently, and agitated*). Enough! Genoa shall be free! Be this our shout of onset against hell itself!

ZIBO. And may he who is not roused by it pant at the slavish oar till the last trumpet break his chains ——

FIESCO. Spoken like men. Now you deserve to know the danger that hung over yourselves and Genoa. (*Gives them the papers of the* MOOR.) Lights, soldiers! (*The nobles crowd about the lights, and read*—FIESCO *aside to* VERRINA.) Friend, it went as I could wish.

VERRINA. Be not too certain. Upon the left I saw countenances that grew pale, and knees that tottered.

ZENT. (*enraged*). Twelve senators! Infernal villany! Seize each a sword! (*All, except two, eagerly take up the weapons that lie in readiness.*)

ZIBO. Thy name, too, Bourgognino, is written there.

BOURG. Ay, and if Heaven permit, it shall be written to-day upon the throat of Gianettino.

ZENT. Two swords remain ——

ZIBO. Ah! What sayest thou?

ZENT. Two amongst us have not taken swords.

ASSERATO. My brothers cannot bear the sight of blood — pray spare them!

ZENT. (*vehemently*). What! Not a tyrant's blood! Tear them to pieces — cowards! Let such bastards be driven from the republic! (*Some of the assembly attack the two* ASSERATI.)

FIESCO (*restraining them*). Cease! Shall Genoa owe its liberty to slaves? Shall our pure gold be debased by this alloy? (*He disengages them.*) Gentlemen, you must be content to take up your abode within my palace until our business be decided. (*To the sentinels.*) These are your prisoners; you answer for their safety! Guard them with loaded arms. (*They are led off — a knocking heard at the gate.*)

SENTINEL. Who is there?

CALCAGNO (*without, eagerly*). Open the gate! A friend! for God's sake, open!

BOURG. It is Calcagno — heavens! What can this mean?

FIESCO. Open the gate, soldiers.

SCENE VII.

The former — CALCAGNO, *out of breath.*

CALCAGNO. All is lost! all is lost! Fly, every one that can!

BOURG. What's lost? Have they flesh of brass? Are our swords made of rushes?

FIESCO. Consider, Calcagno! An error now is fatal.

CALCAGNO. We are betrayed! Your Moor, Lavagna, is the rascal! I come from the senate-house. He had an audience of the duke.

VERRINA (*with a resolute tone, to the sentinels*). Soldiers! let me rush upon your halberts! I will not perish by the hangman's hands. (*The assembly show marks of confusion.*)

FIESCO (*with firmness*). What are you about? 'Sdeath, Calcagno! Friends, 'tis a false alarm. (*To* CALCAGNO, *aside.*) Woman that thou art to tell these boys this tale. Thou, too, Verrina? and thou, Bourgognino? Whither wouldst thou go?

BOURG. Home — to kill my Bertha — and then return to fall with thee.

FIESCO (*bursting into a loud laugh*). Stay! stay! Is this the valor that should punish tyrants? Well didst thou play thy part, Calcagno. Did none of you perceive that this alarm was my contrivance? Speak, Calcagno? Was it not my order that you should put these Romans to this trial?

VERRINA. Well, if you can laugh I'll believe you — or never more think you man.

FIESCO. Shame on you, men! to fail in such a boyish trial! Resume your arms — you must fight like lions to atone for this disgrace. (*Aside to* CALCAGNO.) Were you there yourself?

CALCAGNO (*low*). I made my way among the guards to hear, as was my business, the watchword from the duke, As I was returning the Moor was brought ——

FIESCO (*aloud*). So the old man is gone to bed — we'll drum him out of his feathers. (*Low.*) Did he talk long with the duke?

CALCAGNO (*low*). My sudden fright and your impending danger drove me away in haste ——

FIESCO (*aloud*). See how our countrymen still tremble.

CALCAGNO (*aloud*). You should have carried on the jest. (*Low.*) For God's sake, friend, what will this artifice avail us?

FIESCO. 'Twill gain us time, and dissipate the first panic. (*Aloud.*) Ho! bring wine here! (*Low.*) Did the duke turn pale? (*Aloud.*) Well, brothers, let us drink success to this night's entertainment. (*Low.*) Did the duke turn pale?

CALCAGNO. The Moor's first word must have been conspiracy; for the old man started back as pale as ashes.

FIESCO (*confused*). Hum! the devil is an artful counsellor. Calcagno — the Moor was cunning, he betrayed nothing till the knife was at his throat. Now he is indeed their savior. (*Wine is brought, he drinks to the assembly.*) Comrades, success! (*A knocking is heard*)

SENTINELS. Who is without?

A VOICE. The guard of the duke's. (*The* NOBLES *rush about the court in despair.*)

FIESCO (*stepping forward*). Oh, my friends! Be not alarmed! I am here — quick, remove these arms — be men. I entreat you — this visit makes me hope that Andreas still doubts our plot. Retire into the palace: recall your spirits. Soldiers, throw open the gate! (*They retire, the gates are opened.*)

SCENE VIII.

FIESCO (*as if coming from the palace*). *Three* GERMAN SOLDIERS *bringing the* MOOR, *bound.*

FIESCO. Who calls me?

GERMANS. Bring us to the count!

FIESCO. The count is here, who wants me?

GERMAN (*presenting his arms*). Greeting from the duke! — he delivers up to your grace this Moor in chains,

who had basely slandered you: the rest this note w
tell.

FIESCO (*takes it with an air of indifference*). Have
not threatened thee already with the galleys? (*To*
GERMAN.) Very well, my friend, my respects to t
duke.

MOOR (*hallooing after them*). Mine, too — and tell t
duke had he not employed an ass for his messenger
would have learned that two thousand soldiers are co
cealed within these palace walls.

[*Exeunt* GERMANS, *the* NOBLES *retu*

SCENE IX.

FIESCO, *the* CONSPIRATORS, MOOR (*looking at them
unconcerned*).

THE CONSPIRATORS (*shuddering at the sight of*
MOOR). Ha! what means this?

FIESCO (*after reading the note with suppressed ange*
Genoese, the danger is past — but the conspiracy
likewise at an end ——

VERRINA (*astonished*). What! Are the Dorias dea

FIESCO (*violently agitated*). By heavens! I was p
pared to encounter the whole force of the republic, b
not this blow. This old nerveless man, with his pen, an
hilates three thousand soldiers (*his hands sink dow*
Doria overcomes Fiesco!

BOURG. Speak, count, we are amazed!

FIESCO (*reading*). "Lavagna, your fate resemb
mine; benevolence is rewarded with ingratitude. T
Moor informs me of a plot: I send him back to you
chains, and shall sleep to-night without a guard." (
drops the paper — the rest look at each other.)

VERRINA. Well, Fiesco?

FIESCO (*with dignity*). Shall Doria surpass me
magnanimity? Shall the race of Fiesco want this c
virtue? No, by my honor — disperse — I'll go and o
the whole——

VERRINA (*stopping him*). Art thou mad? Was, th
our enterprise some thievish act of villany? Was it n
our country's cause? Was Andreas the object of t

hatred, and not the tyrant? Stay! I arrest thee as a traitor to thy country.

CONSPIRATORS. Bind him! throw him down!

FIESCO (*snatching up his sword, and making way through them*). Gently! Who will be the first to throw the cord around the tiger? See, Genoese, — I stand here at liberty, and might force my way with ease, had I the will — but I will stay — I have other thoughts ——

BOURG. Are they thoughts of duty?

FIESCO (*haughtily*). Ha! boy! learn first to know thy own — and towards me restrain that tongue! Be appeased, Genoese, — our plans remain unaltered. (*To the* MOOR, *whose cords he cuts with a sword*). Thou hast the merit of causing a noble act — fly! ——

CALCAGNO (*enraged*). What? Shall that scoundrel live,— he who has betrayed us all?

FIESCO. Live — though he has frightened you all. Rascal, begone! See that thou turn thy back quickly on Genoa; lest some one immolate thee to the manes of his courage.

MOOR. So, then, the devil does not forsake his friends. Your servant, gentlemen! I see that Italy does not produce my halter; I must seek it elsewhere.

[*Exit, laughing.*

SCENE X.

FIESCO, CONSPIRATORS. *Enter* SERVANT.

SERVANT. The Countess Imperiali has already asked three times for your grace.

FIESCO. Ha! then the comedy must indeed begin! Tell her I come directly. Desire my wife to hasten to the concert-room, and there remain concealed behind the tapestry. (*Exit* SERVANT.) In these papers your several stations are appointed: let each but act his part, the plan is perfect. Verrina will lead the forces to the harbor, and when the ships are seized will fire a shot as a signal for the general attack. I now leave you upon important business; when you hear the bell come all together to my concert-room. Meanwhile enjoy my Cyprian wine within. (*They depart into the palace.*)

Scene XI.

Leonora, Arabella, *and* Rosa.

Leonora. Fiesco promised to meet me here, a comes not. 'Tis past eleven. The sound of arms a men rings frightfully through the palace, and no Fie comes.

Rosa. You are to conceal yourself behind the tap try — what can the count intend?

Leonora. He directs and I obey. Why should fear? And yet I tremble, Arabella, and my heart be fearfully with apprehension. For heaven's sake, damse do not leave me.

Arabella. Fear nothing; our timidity subdues c curiosity.

Leonora. Where'er I turn my eyes strange shap appear with hollow and distracted countenances. Who soever I address trembles like a criminal, and withdra into the thickest gloom of night, that fearful refuge o guilty conscience. Whate'er they answer falls from t trembling tongue in doubtful accents. Oh, Fiesco! wh horrid business dost thou meditate? Ye heaver powers! watch over my Fiesco!

Rosa (*alarmed*). Oh, heavens! what noise is th without?

Arabella. It is the soldier who stands there sentinel. (*The* Sentinel *without calls*, "*Who g there?*")

Leonora. Some one approaches. Quick! behind t curtain. (*They conceal themselves.*)

Scene XII.

Julia *and* Fiesco, *in conversation.*

Julia (*much agitated*). Forbear, count! Your p sion meets no longer an indifferent ear, but fires t raging blood — where am I? Naught but seduci night is here! Whither has your artful tongue lured r unguarded heart?

Fiesco. To this spot where timid love grows bo and where emotions mingle unrestrained.

JULIA. Hold, Fiesco! For Heaven's sake no more! 'Tis the thick veil of night alone which covers the burning blushes on my cheeks, else wouldst thou pity me.

FIESCO. Rather, Julia, thy blushes would inflame my passions, and urge them to their utmost height. (*Kisses her hand eagerly.*)

JULIA. Thy countenance is glowing as thy words! Ah! and my own, too, burns with guilty fire. Hence, I entreat thee, hence — let us seek the light! The tempting darkness might lead astray the excited senses, and in the absence of the modest day might stir them to rebellion. Haste, I conjure thee, leave this solitude!

FIESCO (*more pressing*). Why so alarmed, my love? Shall the mistress fear her slave?

JULIA. O man, eternal paradox! then are you truly conquerors, when you bow as captives before our self-conceit. Shall I confess, Fiesco? It was my vice alone that could protect my virtue — my pride alone defied your artifices — thus far, my principles prevailed, and all your arts were foiled — but in despair of every other suit you made appeal to Julia's passion — and here my principles deserted me ——

FIESCO (*with levity*). And what loss was that?

JULIA (*with emotion*). If I betray the safeguards of my honor, that thou mayest cover me with shame at will, what have I less to lose than all? Wouldst thou know more, scoffer? Shall I confess that the whole secret wisdom of our sex is but a sorry precaution for the defence of this weak fortress, which in the end is the sole object of assault by all your vows and protestations, and which (I blush to own it) is so willingly surrendered — so often betrayed to the enemy upon the first wavering of virtue? That woman's whole art is enlisted in fortifying a defenceless position, just as in chess the pieces move and form a breastwork round the defenceless king? — surprise the latter — check-mate! and the whole board is thrown into confusion. (*After a pause — with earnestness*), behold the picture of our boasting weakness. Be generous, Fiesco!

FIESCO. And yet, my Julia — where could'st thou bestow this treasure better than on my endless passion?

JULIA. Certainly, nowhere better, and nowhere worse? Tell me, Fiesco, how long will this endless passion endure? But, alas! I've risked too much already now to hesitate at staking my last. I trusted boldly to my charms to captivate thee — to preserve thy love, I fear they'll prove too weak. Fie upon me! — what am I uttering? (*Hides her face with her hands.*)

FIESCO. Two sins in one breath. Mistrust in my taste, and treason against the sovereignty of your charms? Which of the two is the most difficult to forgive?

JULIA (*in a tremulous, imploring tone*). Falsehood is the armory of hell! Fiesco needs not this to gain his Julia. (*She sinks exhausted on a sofa: after a pause — energetically.*) Hear, Fiesco! One word more. When we know our virtue to be in safety, we are heroines; in its defence, no more than children; (*fixing her eyes on him wildly*) — furies, when we avenge it. Hear me! Should'st thou strike me to the heart with coldness ——

FIESCO (*assuming an angry tone*). Coldness? coldness? Heavens! What does the insatiable vanity of woman look for, if she even doubt the man who lies prostrate at her feet? Ha! my spirit is awakened; my eyes at length are opened. (*With an air of coldness.*) What was this mighty sacrifice? Man dearly purchases a woman's highest favors by the slightest degradation! (*Bowing ceremoniously.*) Take courage, madam! you are safe.

JULIA (*with astonishment*). Count! what sudden change is this?

FIESCO (*with great indifference*). True, madam! You judge most rightly; we both have risked our honor. (*Bowing ceremoniously.*) I will await the pleasure of your company among my guests. (*Going.*)

JULIA (*stops him*). Stay! art thou mad? Must I, then, declare a passion which the whole race of men, upon their knees, should not extort from my inflexible pride? Alas! in vain the darkness strives to hide the blushes which betray my guilt. Fiesco — I wound the pride of all my sex — my sex will all detest me — Fiesco — I adore thee — (*falls at his feet*).

FIESCO (*steps back without raising her, laughing with*

exultation). That I am sorry for, signora — (*rings the bell — draws the tapestry, and discovers* LEONORA). Here is my wife — an angel of a woman! (*Embracing her.*)

JULIA (*with a shriek*). Unheard-of treachery!

SCENE XIII.

The CONSPIRATORS, *entering in a body* — LADIES *on the other side* — FIESCO, JULIA, *and* LEONORA.

LEONORA. Oh, my husband, that was too cruel!

FIESCO. A wicked heart deserved no less. I owed this satisfaction to your tears. (*To the company.*) No, my friends — I am not wont on every slight occasion to kindle into passion. The follies of mankind amuse me long ere they excite my anger; but this woman merits my whole resentment. Behold the poison which she had mingled for my beloved Leonora. (*Shows the poison to the company —they start with horror.*)

JULIA (*biting her lips with rage*). Good! Good! Very good, sir! (*Going.*)

FIESCO (*leads her back by the arm*). You must have patience, madam; something else remains. My friends, perhaps, would gladly learn why I debased my reason with the farce of love for Genoa's silliest coquette.

JULIA (*starting up*). It is not to be borne. But tremble! Doria rules in Genoa, and I am Doria's sister ——

FIESCO. Poor, indeed, if that be your only sting! Know that Fiesco of Lavagna has changed the diadem of your illustrious brother for a halter, and means this night to hang the thief of the republic. (*She is struck with terror — he continues with a sarcastic laugh.*) Ha! that was unexpected. And do you see, madam, 'twas for this purpose that I tried to blind the eyes of the Dorias. For this I assumed a mock passion — *pointing to* JULIA.) For this I cast away this precious jewel — (*pointing to* LEONORA); and by shining bait ensnared my prey. I thank you for your complaisance, signora — (*to* JULIA;) and resign the trappings of my assumed character. (*Delivers her the miniature with a bow.*)

LEONORA (*to* FIESCO, *in a supplicating tone*). She

weeps, my Lodovico. May your Leonora, tremblin entreat you?

JULIA (*enraged, to* LEONORA). Silence, detest woman!

FIESCO (*to a* SERVANT). Be polite to my frien escort this lady. She has a mind to see my priso chamber — take care that none approach to incommo her. The night air is blowing somewhat keenly, t storm which rives the house of Doria may, perchan ruffle the lady's head-dress.

JULIA. Curses on thee, black, detested hypocrit (*Enraged, to* LEONORA.) Rejoice not at thy triumpl He will destroy thee also, and himself — and then d spair! (*Rushing out!*)

FIESCO (*to the guests*). You were witnesses; let yo report in Genoa preserve my honor. (*To the* CONSPIR TORS.) Call on me as soon as the cannon gives t signal. (*All the guests retire.*)

SCENE XIV.

LEONORA *and* FIESCO.

LEONORA (*approaching with anxiety*). Fiesco! Fiesc I understand but half your meaning; yet I begin tremble.

FIESCO (*significantly*). Leonora! I once saw y yield the place of honor to another. I saw you, in t presence of the nobles, receive the second complimen Leonora, that sight tormented me. I resolved it shou be so no longer. Henceforth it ceases. Do you hear t warlike noise which echoes through my palace? Wh you suspect is true. Retire to rest, countess, to-morro you shall awake Duchess of Genoa.

LEONORA (*clasping her hands together, and throwin herself into a chair*). O God! My very fears! I a undone!

FIESCO (*seriously, and with dignity*). Let me spe out, my love. Two of my ancestors wore the tri crown. The blood of the Fiescos flows not pure unle beneath the purple. Shall your husband only reflect borrowed splendor? (*In a more energetic manner*

What! shall he owe his rank alone to capricious chance, which, from the ashes of mouldering greatness, has patched together a John Louis Fiesco? No, Leonora, I am too proud to accept from others what my own powers may achieve. This night the hereditary titles of my ancestors shall return to deck their tombs — Lavagna's counts exist no longer — a race of princes shall begin.

LEONORA (*mournfully, and giving way to imagination*). I see my husband fall, transfixed by deadly wounds. (*In a hollow voice.*) I see them bear my husband's mangled corpse towards me. (*Starting up.*) The first — the only ball has pierced Fiesco's heart.

FIESCO (*tenderly seizing her hand*). Be calm, my love. The only ball will not strike me.

LEONORA (*looking steadfastly at him*). Does Fiesco so confidently challenge Heaven? If, in the scope of countless possibilities, one chance alone were adverse, that one might happen, and I should lose my husband. Think that thou venturest Heaven, Fiesco; and though a million chances were in thy favor, wouldst thou dare tempt the Almighty by risking on a cast thy hopes of everlasting happiness? No, my husband! When thy whole being is at stake each throw is blasphemy.

FIESCO. Be not alarmed. Fortune and I are better friends.

LEONORA. Ah! say you so, Fiesco? You, who have watched the soul-convulsing game, which some call pastime? Have you not seen the sly deceiver, Fortune, how she leads on her votary with gradual favors, till, heated with success, he rushes headlong and stakes his all upon a single cast? Then in the decisive moment she forsakes him, a victim of his rashness — and stood you then unmoved? Oh, my husband, think not that thou hast but to show thyself among the people to be adored. 'Tis no slight task to rouse republicans from their slumber and turn them loose, like the unbridled steed, just conscious of his hoofs. Trust not those traitors. They among them who are most discerning, even while they instigate thy valor, fear it; the vulgar worship thee with senseless and unprofitable adoration. Whichever way I look Fiesco is undone.

FIESCO (*pacing the room in great emotion*). To be irresolute is the most certain danger. He that aspires to greatness must be daring.

LEONORA. Greatness, Fiesco! Alas! thy towering spirit ill acords with the fond wishes of my heart. Should fortune favor thy attempt — shouldst thou obtain dominion — alas! I then shall be but the more wretched. Condemned to misery shouldst thou fail — if thou succeed, to misery still greater. Here is no choice but evil. Unless he gain the ducal power, Fiesco perishes — if I embrace the duke I lose my husband.

FIESCO. I understand you not.

LEONORA. Ah! my Fiesco, in the stormy atmosphere that surrounds a throne the tender plant of love must perish. The heart of man, e'en were that heart Fiesco's, is not vast enough for two all-powerful idols — idols so hostile to each other. Love has tears, and can sympathize with tears. Ambition has eyes of stone, from which no drop of tenderness can e'er distil. Love has but one favored object, and is indifferent to all the world beside. Ambition, with insatiable hunger, rages amid the spoil of nature, and changes the immense world into one dark and horrid prison-house. Love paints in every desert an elysium. And when thou wouldest recline upon my bosom, the cares of empires, or rebellious vassals, would fright away repose. If I should throw myself into thy arms, thy despot fears would hear a murderer rushing forth to strike thee, and urge thy trembling flight through all the palace. Nay, black suspicion would at last o'erwhelm domestic concord. If thy Leonora's tenderness should offer thee a refreshing draught, thou wouldst with horror push away the goblet, and call it poison ——

FIESCO (*starting*). Leonora, cease! These thoughts are dreadful.

LEONORA. And yet the picture is not finished. Let love be sacrificed to greatness — and even peace of mind — if Fiesco but remained unchanged. O God! that thought is racking torture. Seldom do angels ascend the throne — still seldomer do they descend it such. Can he know pity who is raised above the common fears of man? Will he speak the accents of compassion who at every

wish can launch a bolt of thunder to enforce it. (*She stops, then timidly advances, and takes his hand with a look of tender reproach.*) Princes, Fiesco — these abortions of ambition and weakness — who presume to sit in judgment 'twixt the godhead and mortality. Wicked servants — worse rulers.

FIESCO (*walking about much agitated*). Leonora, cease! The bridge is raised behind me ——

LEONORA (*with a look of tenderness*). And why, my husband? Deeds alone are irrevocable. Thou once didst swear (*fondly clinging to him, and somewhat archly*) that all thy projects vanished before my beauty. Thou hast foresworn thyself, dissembler — or else my charms have permaturely withered. Ask thy own heart where lies the blame? (*More ardently, and throwing her arms round him.*) Return, Fiesco! Conquer thyself! Renounce! Love shall indemnify thee. O Fiesco, if my heart cannot appease thy insatiate passions, the diadem will be found still poorer. Come, I'll study the inmost wishes of this soul. I will melt into one kiss of love all the charms of nature, to retain forever in these heavenly bonds the illustrious captive. As thy heart is infinite, so shall be my passion. To be a source of happiness to a being who places all its heaven in thee, Fiesco? Ought that to leave any void in thy heart.

FIESCO (*with great emotion*). Leonora — what hast thou done? (*He falls, overcome, on her neck.*) I shall never more dare to meet the eyes of Genoa's citizens.

LEONORA (*with lively expression*). Let us fly, Fiesco! let us with scorn reject these gaudy nothings, and pass our future days only in the retreats of love! (*She presses him to her breast with rapture.*) Our souls, serene as the unclouded sky, shall never more be blackened by the poisonous breath of sorrow; our lives shall flow harmoniously as the music of the murmuring brook. (*A cannon-shot is heard* — FIESCO *disengages himself* — *all the conspirators enter.*)

SCENE XV.

CONSPIRATORS. The hour is come!

FIESCO (*to* LEONORA, *firmly*). Farewell! forever —

unless Genoa to-morrow be laid prostrate at thy feet. (*Going to rush out.*)

BOURG. (*cries out*). The countess faints! (LEONORA *in a swoon — all run to support her.*)

FIESCO (*kneeling before her, in a tone of despair*). Leonora! Save her! For heaven's sake save her! (ROSA *and* ARABELLA *run to her assistance.*) She lives — she opens her eyes (*jumps up resolutely*). Now to close Doria's! (*Conspirators rush out.*)

ACT V.

SCENE I. — *After midnight. The great street of Genoa. A few lamps, which gradually become extinguished. In the background is seen the Gate of St. Thomas, which is shut. Men pass over the stage with lanterns. The patrol go their round. Afterwards, everything is quiet except the waves of the sea, which are heard at a distance, rather tempestuous.*

FIESCO (*armed, before the Doria Palace*), *and* ANDREAS.

FIESCO. The old man has kept his word. The lights are all extinguished in the palace — the guards dismissed — I'll ring. (*Rings at the gate.*) Ho! Halloo! Awake, Doria! Thou art betrayed. Awake! Halloo! Halloo!

ANDREAS (*appearing at the balcony*). Who rings there?

FIESCO (*in a feigned voice*). Ask not, but follow me! Duke, thy star has set; Genoa is in arms against thee! Thy executioners are near, and canst thou sleep, Andreas?

ANDREAS (*with dignity*). I remember when the raging sea contended with my gallant vessel — when her keel cracked and the wind split her topmast. Yet Andreas Doria then slept soundly. Who sends these executioners!

FIESCO. A man more terrible than your raging sea — John Louis Fiesco.

ANDREAS (*laughs*). You jest, my friend. Come in

the daytime to play your tricks. Midnight suits them badly.

FIESCO. Dost thou then despise thy monitor?

ANDREAS. I thank him and retire to rest. Fiesco, wearied with his rioting, sleeps, and has no time to think of Doria.

FIESCO. Wretched old man! Trust not the artful serpent! Its back is decked with beauteous colors; but when you would approach to view it you are suddenly entwined within its deadly folds. You despised the perfidious Moor. Do not despise the counsels of a friend. A horse stands ready saddled for you; fly, while you have time!

ANDREAS. Fiesco has a noble mind. I never injured him, and he will not betray me.

FIESCO. Fiesco has a noble mind and yet betrays thee. He gives thee proof of both.

ANDREAS. There is a guard, which would defy Fiesco's power, unless he led against them legions of spirits.

FIESCO (*scornfully*). That guard I should be glad to see to despatch it with a message for eternity.

ANDREAS (*in an elevated manner*). Vain scoffer! Knowest thou not that Andreas has seen his eightieth year, and that Genoa beneath his rule is happy? (*Leaves the balcony.*)

FIESCO (*looks after him with astonishment*). Must I then destroy this man before I have learnt how difficult it is to equal him? (*He walks up and down some time in meditation*). 'Tis past, Andreas. I have repaid the debt *of* greatness. Destruction take thy course! (*He hastens into a remote street. Drums are heard on all sides. A hot engagement at the St. Thomas' Gate. The gate is forced, and opens a prospect in the harbor, in which lie several ships with lights on board.*)

SCENE II.

GIANETTINO (*in a scarlet mantle*). LOMELLINO — (*Servants going before them with torches*).

GIANET. (*stops*). Who was it that commanded the alarm to be beat?

LOMEL. A cannon was fired on board one of the galleys.

GIANET. The slaves perhaps have risen in mutiny. (*Firing heard at the gate of St. Thomas.*)

LOMEL. Hark! A shot!

GIANET. The gate is open. The guards are in confusion. (*To the servants.*) Quick, rascals! Light us to the harbor. (*Proceeding hastily towards the gate.*)

SCENE III.

The former; BOURGOGNINO, *with some* CONSPIRATORS, *coming from the gate of St. Thomas.*

BOURG. Sebastian Lascaro was a brave soldier.

ZENT. He defended himself like a bear till he fell.

GIANET. (*steps back startled*). What do I hear? (*to his servants*). Stop!

BOURG. Who goes there with torches?

LOMEL. (*to* GIANET). Prince, they are enemies. Turn to the left.

BOURG. (*calls to them peremptorily*). Who goes there with the torches?

ZENT. Stand! Your watchword?

GIANET. (*draws his sword fiercely*). Loyalty and Doria!

BOURG. (*foaming with rage*). Violator of the republic and of my bride! (*To the* CONSPIRATORS, *rushing upon* GIANET.) Brothers, this shortens our labor. His devils themselves deliver him into our hands — *runs him through with his sword*).

GIANET. (*falling*). Murder! Murder! Murder! Revenge me, Lomellino ——

LOMEL. and SERVANTS (*flying*). Help! Murder! Murder!

ZENT. (*halloing with vehemence*). Doria is down. Stop the Count Lomellino! (LOMEL. *is taken*).

LOMEL. (*kneeling*). Spare but my life, I'll join your party.

BOURG. (*looking at* GIANET). Is this monster yet alive? Let the coward fly. (LOMEL. *escapes.*)

ZENT. St. Thomas' gate our own! Gianettino slain! Haste some of you and tell Fiesco.

GIANET. (*heaving himself from the ground in agony*). Fiesco! Damnation! (*Dies.*)

BOURG. (*pulling the sword out of* GIANET.'s *body*). Freedom to Genoa, and to my Bertha. Your sword, Zenturione. Take to my bride this bloody weapon — her dungeon is thrown open. I'll follow thee, and bring the bridal kiss. (*They separate through different streets.*)

SCENE IV.

ANDREAS DORIA, GERMANS.

GERMAN. The storm drove that way. Mount your horse, duke!

ANDREAS. Let me cast a parting look at Genoa's towers! No; it is not a dream. Andreas is betrayed.

GERMAN. The enemy is all around us. Away! Fly! Beyond the boundaries!

ANDREAS (*throwing himself upon the dead body of his nephew*). Here will I die. Let no one talk of flight. Here lies the prop of my old age — my career is ended. (CALCAGNO *appears at a distance, with* CONSPIRATORS.)

GERMAN. Danger is near. Fly, prince! (*Drums beat.*)

ANDREAS. Hark, Germans, hark! These are the Genoese whose chains I broke. (*Hiding his face.*) Do *your* countrymen thus recompense their benefactors?

GERMAN. Away! Away! while we stay here, and notch their swords upon our German bones. (CALCAGNO *comes nearer.*)

ANDREAS. Save yourselves! Leave me! and go, declare the horrid story to the shuddering nations that Genoa slew its father ——

GERMAN. Slew! 'Sdeath, that shall not be. Comrades, stand firm! Surround the duke! (*They draw their swords.*) Teach these Italian dogs to reverence his gray head ——

CALCAGNO (*calls out*). Who goes there? What have *we here?*

GERMAN. German blows — (*retreat fighting, and carry off the body of* GIANET.)

SCENE V.

LEONORA, *in male attire,* ARABELLA *following — they walk along timidly.*

ARABELLA. Come, my lady, pray let us hasten onward.

LEONORA. This way the tumult rages — hark! was not that a dying groan? Ah, they surround him! At Fiesco's breast they point their fatal muskets — at my breast they point them. Hold! hold! It is my husband! (*Throws her arms up in agony.*)

ARABELLA. For heaven's sake, my lady!

LEONORA (*with wild enthusiasm, calling on all sides*). O my Fiesco! my Fiesco! His firmest friends desert him. The faith of rebels is unsteady (*shuddering*). Rebels! Heaven? Is Fiesco, then, a chief of rebels?

ARABELLA. No, signora. He is the great deliverer of Genoa.

LEONORA (*emphatically*). Ha! that would indeed be glorious! And shall Leonora tremble? — shall the bravest republican be wedded to the most timid woman? Go, Arabella! When men contend for empires even a woman's soul may kindle into valor. (*Drums again heard.*) I'll rush among the combatants.

ARABELLA (*clasping her hands together*). All gracious heaven!

LEONORA. Softly! What strikes my foot? Here is a hat — and here a mantle! A sword, too! (*she lifts it up*) — a heavy sword, my Arabella; but I can carry it, and the sword shall not disgrace its bearer. (*The alarm-bell sounds.*)

ARABELLA. Hark! hark! How terrible it sounds yonder, from the tower of the Dominicans! God have mercy on us!

LEONORA (*enthusiastically*). Rather say, how delightful! In the majestic sound of this alarm-bell my Fiesco speaks to Genoa. (*Drums are heard louder.*) Ha! did flutes so sweetly strike my ear. Even these drums are animated by Fiesco. My heart beats higher. All

Genoa is roused; the very mercenaries follow his name with transport — and shall his wife be fearful? (*Alarm-bells from three other towers.*) No — my hero shall embrace a heroine. My Brutus clasp within his arms a Roman wife. I'll be his Portia. (*Putting on* GIANETTINO'S *hat and throwing his scarlet mantle round her.*)

ARABELLA. My gracious lady, how wildly do you rave. (*Alarm-bells and drums are heard.*)

LEONORA. Cold-blooded wretch; canst thou see and hear all this, and yet not rave? The very stones are ready to weep that they have not feet to run and join Fiesco. These palaces upbraid the builder, who had laid their foundations so firmly in the earth that they cannot fly to join Fiesco. The very shores, were they able, would forsake their office in order to follow his glorious banner, though by so doing they abandoned Genoa to the mercy of the ocean. What might shake death himself out of his leaden sleep has not power to rouse thy courage? Away! I'll find my way alone.

ARABELLA. Great God! You will not act thus madly?

LEONORA (*with heroic haughtiness*). Weak girl! I will. (*With great animation.*) Where the tumult rages the most fiercely. Where Fiesco himself leads on the combat. Methinks I hear them ask, "Is that Lavagna, the unconquered hero, who with his sword decides the fate of Genoa? Is that Lavagna?" Yes, I will say; yes, Genoese, that is Lavagna; and that Lavagna is my husband!

SACCO (*entering with* CONSPIRATORS). Who goes there — Doria or Fiesco?

LEONORA (*with enthusiasm*). Fiesco and liberty. (*Retires into another street. A tumult,* ARABELLA *lost in the crowd.*)

SCENE VI.

SACCO, *with a number of followers.* CALCAGNO, *meeting him with others.*

CALCAGNO. Andreas has escaped.

SACCO. Unwelcome tidings to Fiesco.

CALCAGNO. Those Germans fight like furies! They

planted themselves around the old man like rocks. I could not even get a glimpse of him. Nine of our men are done for; I myself was slightly wounded. Zounds! If they thus serve a foreign tyrant, how will they guard the princes of their country?

SACCO. Numbers have flocked already to our standard, and all the gates are ours.

CALCAGNO. I hear they still are fighting desperately at the citadel.

SACCO. Bourgognino is amongst them. Where is Verrina?

CALCAGNO. He guards, like Cerberus, the passage between Genoa and the sea — an anchovy could scarcely pass him.

SACCO. I'll rouse the suburbs ——

CALCAGNO. I'll away to the market-place. Drummers, strike up! (*They march off, drums beating.*)

SCENE VII.

MOOR. *A troop of* THIEVES, *with lighted matches.*

MOOR. Now I'll let you into a secret, my boys; 'twas I that cooked this soup, but the devil a spoonful do they give me. Well, I care not. This hubbub is just to my taste. We'll set about burning and plundering. While they are squabbling for a dukedom we'll make a bonfire in the churches that shall warm the frozen apostles. (*They disperse themselves among the neighboring houses.*)

SCENE VIII.

BOURGOGNINO — BERTHA, *disguised as a boy.*

BOURG. Rest here, dear youth; thou art in safety. Dost thou bleed?

BERTHA (*in a feigned voice*). No; not at all.

BOURG. (*with energy*). Rise, then, I'll lead thee where thou mayst gain wounds for Genoa — wounds beautiful like these. (*Uncovering his arm.*)

BERTHA (*starting*). Heavens!

BOURG. Art thou frightened, youth? Too early didst thou put on the man. What age hast thou?

BERTHA. Fifteen years.

BOURG. That is unfortunate! For this night's business thou art five years too young. Who is thy father?

BERTHA. The truest citizen in Genoa.

BOURG. Gently, boy! That name belongs alone to the father of my betrothed bride. Dost thou know the house of Verrina?

BERTHA. I should think so.

BOURG. (*eagerly*). And knowest thou his lovely daughter?

BERTHA. Her name is Bertha.

BOURG. Go, quickly! Carry her this ring. Say it shall be our wedding-ring; and tell her the blue crest fights bravely. Now farewell! I must hasten yonder. The danger is not yet over. (*Some houses are seen on fire.*)

BERTHA (*in a soft voice*). Scipio!

BOURG. (*struck with astonishment*). By my sword! I know that voice.

BERTHA (*falling upon his neck*). By my heart! I am well known here.

BOURG. Bertha! (*Alarm-bells sound in the suburbs — a tumult* — BOURGOGNINO *and* BERTHA *embrace, and are lost in the crowd.*) *

* In lieu of this scene Schiller substituted the following, during his stay at Leipzig in 1785, for the use of the theatre there: —

A subterranean vault, lighted by a single lamp. The background remains quite dark. BERTHA *is discovered sitting on a stone in the foreground: a black veil covers her face. After a pause she rises and walks to and fro.*

BERTHA. Still no sound? No sign of human footstep? No approach of my deliverers. Horrible suspense! Fearful and hopeless as that of one buried alive beneath the sod of the churchyard. And for what dost thou wait, poor deceived one? An inviolable oath immures thee in this dungeon. Gianettino Doria must fall, and Genoa be freed, or Bertha left to pine away her miserable existence — such was my father's oath. Fearful prison-house to which there is no key but the death-groan of a well-guarded tyrant. (*Looking round the vault.*) How awful is this stillness! terrible as the silence of the grave! How fearfully the darkness creeps from yonder vaults! My lamp, too, is flickering in its socket. (*Walking up and down energetically.*) Oh, come, come, my beloved, 'tis horrible to die here. (*A pause — then she starts up and rushes to and fro, wringing her hands in deep despair.*) He has forsaken me. He has broken his oath. He has forgotten his Bertha. The living think not of the dead, and this vault is my tomb. Hope no more, wretched one. Hope flourishes only where the eye of the Almighty pervades — into this dungeon it never penetrates. (*Again a pause; she becomes still more alarmed.*)

Or have my deliverers perished? Perchance the bold attempt has failed,

SCENE IX.

FIESCO *and* ZIBO *from different sides. Attendants.*

FIESCO (*in great anger*). Who set fire to those houses?

ZIBO. The citadel is taken.

FIESCO. Who set those houses on fire?

ZIBO (*to the attendants*). Despatch a guard to apprehend the villains. (*Some soldiers go.*)

FIESCO. Will they make me an incendiary? Hasten with the engines! (*Attendants go.*) But are you sure that Gianettino has fallen?

ZIBO. So they say.

FIESCO (*wildly*). They say so only! Who say? Declare, upon your honor, has he escaped?

ZIBO (*doubtfully*). If I may trust my eyes against the assertion of a nobleman, then — Gianettino lives.

the danger has overwhelmed the courageous youth. O unhappy Bertha, perhaps even now their ghosts are wandering through these vaults, and weep over thy vain hopes. (*Shuddering.*) Heavens! if they are dead I am irrevocably lost, irrevocably abandoned to a horrible death. (*Leans against the wall for support. After a pause she continues despondingly.*) And if my beloved one still lives — if he should return to keep his word, to fetch his bride away in triumph, and find all here lonely and silent, and the inanimate corpse no longer sensible to his transports — when his burning kisses shall in vain endeavor to restore the life which has fled from these lips, and his tears flow on me hopelessly — when my father shall sink weeping on the body of his daughter, and the voice of his lamentations echo through the regions of my prison-house. Oh, then repeat not to them my complaints, ye walls! Tell them that I suffered like a heroine, and that my last sigh was forgiveness. (*Sinks exhausted on the stone — pause — a confused sound of drums and bells is heard from behind the stage in various directions.* BERTHA *starts to her feet.*) Hark! what means this? Am I awake, or do I dream? How dreadfully the bells clang! That is no sound of ringing to prayers. (*The noise comes nearer and increases; she rushes to and fro alarmed.*) Louder and louder yet! Heavens, they are alarm-bells! they are alarm-bells! Have enemies surprised the city? Is Genoa in flames? A wild and dreadful din, like the trampling of myriads! What's that? (*Some one knocks loudly at the door.*) They come this way — they draw the bolts — (*rushing towards the background*). Men! Men! Liberty! Deliverance! (BOURGOGNINO *enters hastily with a drawn sword, followed by several torch-bearers.*)

BOURG. (*calling out loudly*). Thou art free, Bertha! The tyrant is dead! This sword has passed through his heart.

BERTHA (*running into his arms*). My deliverer! my angel!

BOURG. Dost thou hear the alarm-bells, and the roll of the drums? Fiesco has conquered, Genoa is free, and thy father's curse annihilated.

BERTHA. Oh, heavens! This dreadful uproar, these alarm-bells, then, were for me?

BOURG. For thee, Bertha! They are our marriage chimes. Leave this horrid dungeon and follow me to the altar.

BERTHA. To the altar, Bourgognino? Now, at this midnight hour? While this awful tumult is raging as though the whole globe were crushing

FIESCO (*starting*). Zibo, your eyes may cost your head ——

ZIBO. 'Tis but eight minutes since I saw him in the crowd dressed in his scarlet cloak and yellow plume.

FIESCO (*wildly*). Heaven and hell! Zibo! Bourgognino shall answer for it with his head. Hasten, Zibo! secure the barriers. Sink all the boats that he may not escape by sea. This diamond, Zibo — the richest in all Italy — this diamond shall reward the man who brings me tidings of Gianettino's death. (ZIBO *hastens away.*) Fly, Zibo!

SCENE X.

FIESCO, SACCO, *the* MOOR, SOLDIERS.

SACCO. We found this Moor throwing a lighted match into the convent of the Jesuits.

to atoms! (VERRINA *enters unperceived, and remains standing silently at the entrance.*)

BOURG. In this beautiful, glorious night, in which all Genoa celebrates its freedom, as a bond of love, this sword, still dyed with the tyrant's blood, shall be my wedding gear — this hand, still warm from the heroic deed, the priest shall lay in thine. Fear not, my love, and follow me to the church. (VERRINA *approaches, steps between both, and embraces them.*)

VERRINA. God bless you, my children!

BERTHA AND BOURG. (*falling at his feet*). O my father!

VERRINA (*lays his hands on them both—a pause—then he turns solemnly to* BOURGOGNINO). Never forget how dearly thou hast won her. Never forget that thy marriage dates from the day of Genoa's freedom. (*Turning towards* BERTHA *in a grave and dignified manner.*) Thou art the daughter of Verrina, and 'twas thy husband slew the tyrant. (*After a pause he beckons them to rise, and says, with suppressed emotion.*) The priest awaits you.

BERTHA AND BOURG. (*together*). How, my father? Will you not accompany us thither?

VERRINA (*very gravely*). A terrible duty calls me elsewhere; my prayers shall accompany you. (*Drums and trumpets, intermixed with acclamations, are heard in the distance.*) What means this shouting?

BOURG. They are proclaiming Fiesco duke. The populace adore him, and with eager acclamations brought him the purple; the nobles looked on with dismay, but dared not refuse their sanction.

VERRINA (*laughs bitterly*). You see, my son, I must away with speed to be the first to tender the oath of allegiance to the new monarch.

BOURG. (*holds him back alarmed*). What is your purpose! I'll go with you.

BERTHA (*hanging anxiously on* BOURGOGNINO). Heavens! what means this, Bourgognino? What is my father meditating?

VERRINA. My son, I have converted all my possessions into gold, and have conveyed it on board thy ship. Take thy bride and embark without delay. Perhaps I shall soon follow, perhaps never. Hasten to Marseilles, and (*embracing them with emotion*) God be with you.

BOURG. (*determinedly*). Verrina, I must stay; the danger is not yet past.

VERRINA (*leading him towards* BERTHA). Look to thy bride, thou proud, insatiable one. Thou hast despatched thy tyrant, leave me to deal with mine. [*Exeunt.*

FIESCO. Thy treachery was overlooked when it concerned myself alone. The halter awaits the incendiary. Take him away and hang him at the church-door.

MOOR. Plague on it! that's an awkward piece of business. Is there no way out of it?

FIESCO. No.

MOOR. Send me awhile to the galleys ——

FIESCO (*beckoning to the attendants*). To the gallows.

MOOR (*impudently*). Then I'll turn Christian.

FIESCO. The church refuses the dregs of infidelity.

MOOR (*in an insinuating manner*). At least send me drunk into eternity!

FIESCO. Sober.

MOOR. Don't hang me up, however, beside a Christian church!

FIESCO. A man of honor keeps his word. I promised thee a gallows of thy own.

SACCO. No more prating, heathen! we've business of more consequence.

MOOR. But, stay! Perhaps the rope may break?

FIESCO (*to* SACCO). Let it be double.

MOOR. Well, if it must be so, the devil may make ready for an extra guest. (*Soldiers lead him off, and hang him at a little distance.*)

SCENE XI.

FIESCO — LEONORA *appearing at a distance, in the scarlet cloak of* GIANETTINO.

FIESCO (*perceiving her, rushes forward — then stops*). Do I know that crest and mantle? (*Rushes on furiously.*) Yes, I know them. (*Runs her through with his sword.*) If thou hast three lives then rise again. (LEONORA *falls with a hollow groan, the march of victory is heard, with drums, horns, and hautboys.*)

SCENE XII.

FIESCO, CALCAGNO, ZENTURIONE, ZIBO: SOLDIERS, *with drums and colors.*

FIESCO (*advancing towards them in triumph*). Genoese — the die is cast. Here lies the viper of my soul, the

abhorred food of my resentment. Lift high your swords! Gianettino is no more!

CALCAGNO. And I come to inform you that two-thirds of Genoa have declared for our party, and swear obedience to Fiesco's standard.

ZIBO. By me Verrina sends his greeting to you from the admiral's galley, with the dominion of the sea.

ZENT. By me the governor of the city sends his keys and staff of office.

SACCO. And in me (*kneeling*) the less and greater senate of the republic kneel down before their master, and supplicate for favor and protection.

CALCAGNO. Let me be the first to welcome the illustrious conquerer within the walls. Bow your colors! Hail, Duke of Genoa!

ALL (*taking off their hats*). Hail! Hail, Duke of Genoa! (*March of triumph* — FIESCO *stands the whole time with his head sunk upon his breast, in a meditating posture.*)

CALCAGNO. The people and the senate wait to see their gracious sovereign invested in the robes of dignity. Great duke, permit us to follow you in triumph to the senate-house.

FIESCO. First allow me to listen to the dictates of my heart. I was obliged to leave a most dear person in anxious apprehension — a person who will share with me the glory of this night. (*To the company.*) Will you, my friends, attend me to your amiable duchess! (*Going.*)

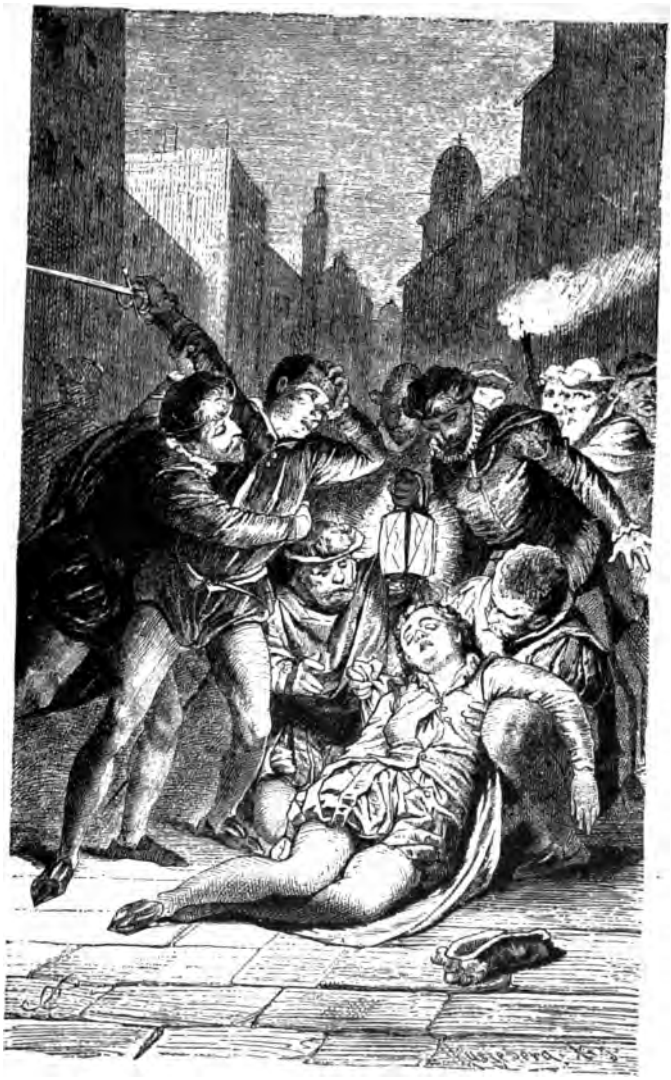
CALCAGNO. Shall this murderous villain lie here, and hide his infamy in obscurity?

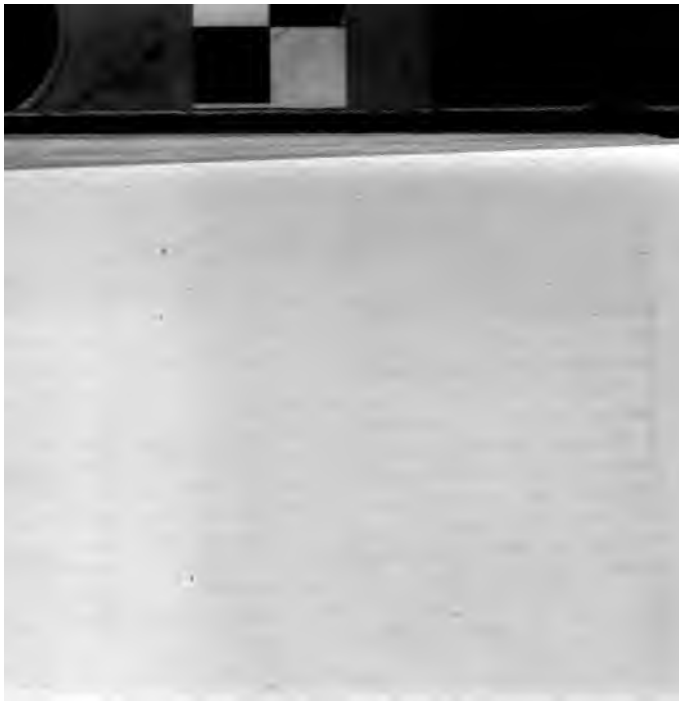
ZENT. Plant his head upon a halberd.

ZIBO. Let his mangled carcass sweep the streets! (*They hold lights toward the body.*)

CALCAGNO (*terrified and in a low voice*). Look, Genoese! By heavens, this is not the face of Gianettino! (*All look at the body.*)

FIESCO (*fixes his eyes upon it with an eager look, which he withdraws slowly — then, with convulsive wildness, exclaims*). No! ye devils! That is not the face of Gianettino — Oh, malicious fiend! Genoa is mine, say you? Mine? (*Rushing forward with a dreadful shriek.*) Oh,





trickery of hell! It is my wife! (*He sinks to the ground in agony — The* CONSPIRATORS *stand around in groups, shuddering — a dead silence.*)

FIESCO (*Raising himself exhausted — in a faint voice*). But tell me truly, Genoese, have I indeed slain my wife? I conjure you look not so ghastly upon this illusion! Heaven be praised! there are fates which man has not to fear, because he is but man. This must be one of them. He who is denied the joys of heaven can scarce be doomed to bear the pains of hell. This dread infliction would be even more. God be praised! It must be so. And this is naught but the chimera of a disordered brain.

SCENE XIII.

The former — ARABELLA *enters weeping.*

ARABELLA. Let them kill me! What have I now to dread? Have pity on me, Genoese. 'Twas here I left my dearest mistress, and nowhere can I find her.

FIESCO (*approaching her — with a low and trembling voice.*) Was Leonora thy mistress?

ARABELLA (*with pleasure*). Are you there, my most gracious and dear good lord? Be not displeased with us. We could no longer restrain her.

FIESCO (*in alarm*). Restrain her! Wretch! From what?

ARABELLA. From following ——

FIESCO (*violently*). Ha! From following what?

ARABELLA. The tumult ——

FIESCO. What was her dress?

ARABELLA. A scarlet mantle.

FIESCO (*in a transport of rage*). Get thee to the abyss of hell! The mantle?

ARABELLA. Lay here upon the ground.

SOME OF THE CONSPIRATORS (*talking apart*). 'Twas here that Gianettino was killed.

FIESCO (*ready to faint, to* ARABELLA). Thy mistress is found — (ARABELLA *advances anxiously* — FIESCO *casts his eyes round the whole circle — then, with a faltering voice*) — 'Tis true — 'Tis true — And I am the

instrument of this horrid deed. (*Madly.*) Back! back! ye human forms! Oh! (*gnashing his teeth wildly, and looking up toward heaven*) had I but this created orb between my teeth — I feel as though I could tear the universe to fragments, till nature's face was hideous as the pain that gnaws my soul! (*To the others, that stand around, trembling.*) See, how they stand aghast there, miserable creatures! blessing themselves and rejoicing that they are not as I am. I alone feel the blow. (*Wildly.*) I! — why I? Why not these as well? Why is my sorrow denied the balm of being shared with others?

CALCAGNO (*timidly*). Most gracious duke!

FIESCO (*rushes on him with a look of fiendlike joy*). Ha! Welcome! Here, Heaven be thanked, is one whom the same thunderbolt has struck! (*Pressing* CALCAGNO *furiously in his arms.*) Brother of my sorrows! Welcome to your share of destruction! She's dead. Didst thou not also love her? (*Forcing him toward the dead body.*) Behold her and despair! She's dead. (*Fixing his eyes earnestly on one part of the stage.*) Oh, that I could stand upon the brink of the infernal gulf, and view below all hell's variety of torments! — could hear the horrid shrieks of damned souls! (*Approaching the body, trembling.*) Here lies my murdered wife. Nay — that says too little — the wife that I myself have murdered. Oh! 'Tis the cunningest of hell's devices — first I was allured to the topmost pinnacle of joy — to the very threshold of heaven — then — in an instant hurled headlong down — and then — oh that my breath could send a pestilence to hell! And then was made the murderer of my wife — fool that I was to trust two erring eyes? Oh, fiends, this is your masterpiece of torture! (*All the* CONSPIRATORS *lean upon their swords much afflicted — a pause.*)

FIESCO (*exhausted, and looking mournfully round the circle*). Yes, by heavens! They who feared not to draw their swords against their prince are shedding tears! (*With dejection.*) Speak! Do you weep over this havoc caused by treacherous death, or do you bewail the fall of your leader's spirit? (*Turning toward the dead body in*

an affecting posture.) Where iron-hearted warriors were melted into tears, Fiesco uttered only imprecations of despair. (*Kneels down, weeping, by her side.*) Pardon me, Leonora — the decrees of heaven are immutable; they yield not to mortal anger. (*With a melancholy tenderness.*) O Leonora, years ago my fancy painted that triumphant hour when I should present thee to Genoa as her duchess — methought I saw the lovely blush that tinged thy modest cheek — the timid heaving of thy beauteous bosom beneath the snowy gauze — I heard the gentle murmurs of thy voice, which died away in rapture! (*More lively.*) Ah, how intoxicating to my soul were the proud acclamations of the people! How did my love rejoice to see its triumph marked in the sinking envy of its rivals! Leonora! The hour which should confirm these hopes is come. Thy Fiesco is Duke of Genoa — and yet the meanest beggar would not exchange his poverty for my greatness and my sufferings. (*More affected.*) He has a wife to share his troubles — with whom can I share my splendor? (*He weeps bitterly, and throws himself on the dead body. Compassion marked upon the countenances of all.*)

CALCAGNO. She was, indeed, a most excellent lady.

ZIBO. This event must be concealed from the people. 'Twould damp the ardor of our party and elevate the enemy with hope.

FIESCO (*rises, collected and firm*). Here me, Genoese! Providence, if rightly I interpret its designs, has struck me with this wound only to try my heart for my approaching greatness. The blow was terrible. Since I have felt it, I fear neither torture nor pleasure. Come! Genoa, you say, awaits me — I will give to Genoa a prince more truly great than Europe ever saw. Away! — for this unhappy princess I will prepare a funeral so splendid that life shall lose its charms, and cold corruption glitter like a bride. Follow your duke!

[*Exeunt, with music and colors.*

Scene XIV.

Andreas, Lomellino.

Andreas. Yonder they go, with shouts of exultation.

Lomel. They are intoxicated with success. The gates are deserted and all are hastening toward the senate-house.

Andreas. It was my nephew only whom Genoa could not brook. My nephew is no more. Hear, Lomellino!

Lomel. What, duke — still — do you still hope?

Andreas (*sternly*). And dost thou tremble for my life, and mock me with the name of duke the while thou wouldst forbid me hope.

Lomel. My gracious lord, a raging nation lies in Fiesco's scale; what counterpoise in yours?

Andreas (*with dignity and animation*). Heaven!

Lomel. (*shrugging up his shoulders*). The times are past, my lord, when armies fought under the guidance of celestial leaders. Since gunpowder was invented angels have ceased to fight.

Andreas. Wretch that thou art! Wouldst thou bereave an aged head of its support, its God. (*In an earnest and commanding tone.*) Go! Make it known throughout Genoa that Andreas Doria is still alive. Say that Andreas entreats the citizens, his children, not to drive him, in his old age, to dwell with foreigners, who ne'er would pardon the exalted state to which he raised his country. Say this — and further say, Andreas begs but so much ground within his fatherland as may contain his bones.

Lomel. I obey; but I despair of success. (*Going.*)

Andreas. Stay; take with thee this snowy lock, and say it was the last upon my head. Say that I plucked it on that night when ungrateful Genoa tore itself from my heart. For fourscore years it hung upon my temples, and now has left my bald head, chilled with the winter of age. The lock is weak, but 'twill suffice to fasten the purple on that young usurper.

[*Exit* — Lomellino *hastens into another street* — *Shouts are heard, with trumpets and drums.*

SCENE XV.

VERRINA (*coming from the harbor*), BERTHA, *and* BOURGOGNINO.

VERRINA. What mean these shouts?

BOURG. They proclaim Fiesco duke.

BERTHA (*to* BOURGOGNINO, *timidly*). Scipio! My father's looks are dreadful ——

VERRINA. Leave me, my children. O Genoa! Genoa!

BOURG. The populace adore him, and with transports hailed him as their duke. The nobles looked on with horror, but dared not oppose it.

VERRINA. My son, I have converted all my possessions into gold, and conveyed it on board thy vessel. Take thy wife with thee, and set sail immediately. Perhaps I soon shall follow. Perhaps — never more. Hasten to Marseilles, and — (*embracing them mournfully and with energy*) — may the Almighty guide you, [*Exit hastily.*

BERTHA. I beseech thee, say, on what dreadful project does my father brood?

BOURG. Didst thou understand thy father?

BERTHA. He bade us fly. Merciful Heaven! Fly on our bridal day!

BOURG. He spoke it, and we must obey.

[*Exeunt towards the harbor.*

SCENE XVI.

VERRINA, *and* FIESCO (*in the ducal habit*), *meeting.*

FIESCO. Welcome, Verrina! I was anxious to meet thee.

VERRINA. I also sought Fiesco.

FIESCO. Does Verrina perceive no alteration in his friend?

VERRINA (*with reserve*). I wish for none.

FIESCO. But do you see none?

VERRINA (*without looking at him*). I should hope not!

FIESCO. I ask, do you perceive none?

VERRINA (*after a slight glance*). None!

FIESCO. See, then, how idle is the observation that power makes a tyrant. Since we parted I am become the Duke of Genoa, and yet Verrina (*pressing him to his bosom*) finds my embrace still glowing as before.

VERRINA. I grieve that I must return it coldly. The sight of majesty falls like a keen-edged weapon, cutting off all affection between the duke and me. To John Louis Fiesco belonged the territory of my heart. Now he has conquered Genoa I resume that poor possession.

FIESCO (*with astonishment*). Forbid it, Heaven! That price is too enormous even for a dukedom.

VERRINA (*muttering*). Hum! Is liberty then out of fashion, that republics are so lightly thrown away upon the first that offers himself?

FIESCO (*bites his lips*). Verrina, say this to no one but Fiesco.

VERRINA. Oh, of course! Great indeed must be that mind which can hear the voice of truth without offence. But alas! the cunning gamester has failed in one single card. He calculated all the chances of envious opposition, but unfortunately overlooked one antagonist — the patriot — (*very significantly*). But perhaps the oppressor of liberty has still in store some scheme for banishing patriotic virtue. I swear by the living God that posterity shall sooner collect my mouldering bones from off the wheel than from a sepulchre within that country which is governed by a duke.

FIESCO (*taking him tenderly by the hand*). Not even when that duke is thy brother? Not if he should make his principality the treasury of that benevolence which was restrained by his domestic poverty? Not even then, Verrina.

VERRINA. No — not even then! We pardon not the robber because he made gifts of his plunder, nor does such generosity suit Verrina. I might permit my fellow-citizens to confer a benefit on me — because I should hope some day to make them an adequate return. That which a prince confers is bounty; but bounty undeserved I would receive alone from God.

FIESCO (*angrily*). It were as easy to tear Italy from

the bosom of the ocean as to shake this stubborn enthusiast from his prejudices.

VERRINA. Well mayst thou talk of tearing: thou hast torn the republic from Doria, as a lamb from the jaws of the wolf, only that thou mightest devour it thyself. But enough of this — just tell me, duke, what crime the poor wretch committed whom you ordered to be hung up at the church of the Jesuits?

FIESCO. The scoundrel set fire to the city.

VERRINA. Yet the scoundrel left the laws untouched.

FIESCO. Verrina presumes upon my friendship.

VERRINA. Away with friendship! I tell thee I no longer love thee. I swear to thee that I hate thee — hate thee like the serpent of Paradise, that first disturbed the happiness of creation, and brought upon mankind unbounded sorrow. Hear me, Fiesco, I speak to thee not as a subject to his master, not as a friend to his friend, but as man to man — (*with bitterness and vehemence*). Thou hast committed a crime against the majesty of the eternal God in permitting virtue to lead thy hands to wickedness, and in suffering the patriots of Genoa to violate their country. Fiesco, had thy villany deceived me also! — Fiesco, by all the horrors of eternity! with my own hands I would have strangled myself, and on thy head spurted the venom of my departing soul. A princely crime may break the scale of human justice, but thou hast insulted heaven, and the last judgment will decide the cause. (FIESCO *remains speechless, looking at him with astonishment.*) Do not attempt to answer me. Now we have done. (*After walking several times up and down.*) Duke of Genoa, in the vessels of yesterday's tyrant, I have seen a miserable race who, at every stroke of their oars, ruminate upon their long-expiated guilt, and weep their tears into the ocean, which, like a rich man, is too proud to count them. A good prince begins his reign with acts of mercy. Wilt thou release the galley-slaves?

FIESCO (*sharply*). Let them be the first fruits of my tyranny. Go, and announce to them their deliverance.

VERRINA. You will enjoy but half the pleasure unless you see their happiness. Perform this deed thyself.

The great are seldom witnesses of the evils which they cause. And shall they, too, do good by stealth and in obscurity? Methinks the duke is not too great to sympathize with a beggar.

FIESCO. Man, thou art dreadful; yet I know not why I must follow thee. (*Both go toward the sea.*)

VERRINA (*stops, much affected*). But once more embrace me, Fiesco. Here is no one by to see Verrina weep, or to behold a prince give way to feeling — (*he embraces him eagerly*). Surely never beat two greater hearts together — we loved each other so fraternally — (*weeping violently on* FIESCO's *neck*). Fiesco! Fiesco! Thou makest a void in my bosom which all mankind, thrice numbered, could not fill up.

FIESCO (*much affected*). Be still, my friend.

VERRINA. Throw off this hateful purple, and I will be so. The first prince was a murderer, and assumed the purple to hide the bloody stains of his detested deeds. Hear me, Fiesco! I am a warrior, little used to weeping — Fiesco — these are my first tears — throw off this purple!

FIESCO. Peace.

VERRINA (*more vehemently*). Fiesco, place on the one side all the honors of this great globe, on the other all its tortures; they should not make me kneel before a mortal — Fiesco (*falling on his knee*), this is the first bending of my knee — throw off this purple!

FIESCO. Rise, and no longer irritate me!

VERRINA (*in a determined tone*). I rise then, and will no longer irritate thee. (*They stand on a board leading to a galley.*) The prince must take precedence.

FIESCO. Why do you pull my cloak? It falls ——

VERRINA (*with bitter irony*). If the purple falls the duke must after it. (*He pushes him into the sea.*)

FIESCO (*calls out of the waves*). Help, Genoa! Help! Help thy duke! (*Sinks.*)

SCENE XVII.

CALCAGNO, SACCO, ZIBO, ZENTURIONE, *Conspirators, People.*

CALCAGNO (*crying out*). Fiesco! Fiesco! Andreas is returned — half Genoa joins Andreas. Where is Fiesco?

VERRINA (*in a firm tone*). Drowning.

ZENT. Does hell or madness prompt thy answer?

VERRINA. Drowned — if that sound better. I go to join Andreas. (*The* CONSPIRATORS *stand in groups, astonished. The curtain falls.*)

WORKS OF FREDERICK SCHILLER.

SCHILLER'S EARLY DRAMAS.

CONTENTS.

	PAGE
Love and Intrigue	5
Wallenstein's Camp	111
The Piccolomini	155
The Death of Wallenstein	276

LOVE AND INTRIGUE.

A TRAGEDY.

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

PRESIDENT VON WALTER, *Prime Minister in the Court of a German Prince.*
FERDINAND, *his son; a Major in the Army; in love with Louisa Miller.*
BARON VON KALB, *Court Marshal (or Chamberlain).*
WORM, *Private Secretary to the President.*
MILLER, *the Town Musician, and Teacher of Music.*
MRS. MILLER, *his wife.*
LOUISA, *the daughter of Miller, in love with Ferdinand.*
LADY MILFORD, *the Prince's Mistress.*
SOPHY, *attendant on Lady Milford.*
An old Valet in the service of the Prince.
Officers, Attendants, etc.

ACT I.

SCENE I.

MILLER — MRS. MILLER.

MILLER (*walking quickly up and down the room*). Once for all! The affair is becoming serious. My daughter and the baron will soon be the town-talk — my house lose its character — the president will get wind of it, and — the short and long of the matter is, I'll show the younker the door.

MRS. MILL. You did not entice him to your house — did not thrust your daughter upon him!

MILL. Didn't entice him to my house — didn't thrust the girl upon him! Who'll believe me? I was master of my own house. I ought to have taken more care of my daughter. I should have bundled the major out at once, or have gone straight to his excellency, his papa, and disclosed all. The young baron will get off merely

with a snubbing, I know that well enough, and all the blame will fall upon the fiddler.

MRS. MILL. (*sipping her coffee*). Pooh! nonsense! How can it fall upon you? What have people to do with you? You follow your profession, and pick up pupils wherever you can find them.

MILL. All very fine, but please to tell me what will be the upshot of the whole affair? He can't marry the girl — marriage is out of the question, and to make her his — God help us! "Good-by t'ye!" No, no — when such a sprig of nobility has been nibbling here and there and everywhere, and has glutted himself with the devil knows what all, of course it will be a relish to my young gentleman to get a mouthful of sweet water. Take heed! Take heed! If you were dotted with eyes, and could place a sentinel for every hair of your head, he'll bamboozle her under your very nose; add one to her reckoning, take himself off, and the girl's ruined for life, left in the lurch, or, having once tasted the trade, will carry it on. (*Striking his forehead.*) Oh, horrible thought!

MRS. MILL. God in his mercy protect us!

MILL. We shall want his protection. You may well say that. What other object can such a scapegrace have? The girl is handsome — well made — can show a pretty foot. How the upper story is furnished matters little. That's blinked in you women if nature has not played the niggard in other respects. Let this harum-scarum but turn over this chapter — ho! ho! his eyes will glisten like Rodney's when he got scent of a French frigate; then up with all sail and at her, and I don't blame him for it — flesh is flesh. I know that very well.

MRS. MILL. You should only read the beautiful billy-doux which the baron writes to your daughter. Gracious me! Why it's as clear as the sun at noonday that he loves her purely for her virtuous soul.

MILL. That's the right strain! We beat the sack, but mean the ass's back. He who wishes to pay his respects to the flesh needs only a kind heart for a go-between. What did I myself? When we've once so far cleared the ground that the affections cry ready! slap!

the bodies follow their example, the appetites are obedient, and the silver moon kindly plays the pimp.

MRS. MILL. And then only think of the beautiful books that the major has sent us. Your daughter always prays out of them.

MILL. (*whistles*). Prays! You've hit the mark. The plain, simple food of nature is much too raw and indigestible for this maccaroni gentleman's stomach. It must be cooked for him artificially in the infernal pestilential pitcher of your novel-writers. Into the fire with the rubbish! I shall have the girl taking up with — God knows what all — about heavenly fooleries that will get into her blood, like Spanish flies, and scatter to the winds the handful of Christianity that cost her father so much trouble to keep together. Into the fire with them I say! The girl will take the devil's own nonsense into her head; amidst the dreams of her fool's paradise she'll not know her own home, but forget and feel ashamed of her father, the music-master; and, lastly, I shall lose a worthy, honest son-in-law who might have nestled himself so snugly into my connections. No! damn it! (*Jumps up in a passion.*) I'll break the neck of it at once, and the major — yes, yes, the major! shall be shown where the carpenter made the door. (*Going.*)

MRS. MILL. Be civil, Miller! How many a bright shilling have his presents ——

MILL. (*comes back, and goes up to her*). The blood-money of my daughter? To Beelzebub with thee, thou infamous bawd! Sooner will I vagabondize with my violin and fiddle for a bit of bread — sooner will I break to pieces my instrument and carry dung on the sounding-board than taste a mouthful earned by my only child at the price of her soul and future happiness. Give up your cursed coffee and snuff-taking, and there will be no need to carry your daughter's face to market. I have always had my bellyful and a good shirt to my back before this confounded scamp put his nose into my crib.

MRS. MILL. Now don't be so ready to pitch the house out of window. How you flare up all of a sudden. I only meant to say that we shouldn't offend the major, because he is the son of the president.

MILL. There lies the root of the mischief. For that reason — for that very reason the thing must be put a stop to this very day! The president, if he is a just and upright father, will give me his thanks. You must brush up my red plush, and I will go straight to his excellency. I shall say to him, — "Your excellency's son has an eye to my daughter; my daughter is not good enough to be your excellency's son's wife, but too good to be your excellency's son's strumpet, and there's an end of the matter. My name is Miller."

SCENE II.

Enter SECRETARY WORM.

MRS. MILL. Ah! Good morning, Mr. Seckertary! Have we indeed the pleasure of seeing you again?

WORM. All on my side — on my side, cousin Miller! Where a high-born cavalier's visits are received mine can be of no account whatever.

MRS. MILL. How can you think so, Mr. Seckertary? His lordship the baron, Major Ferdinand, certainly does us the honor to look in now and then; but, for all that, we don't undervalue others.

MILL. (*vexed*). A chair, wife, for the gentleman! Be seated, kinsman.

WORM (*lays aside hat and stick, and seats himself*). Well, well — and how then is my future — or past — bride? I hope she'll not be — may I not have the honor of seeing — Miss Louisa?

MRS. MILL. Thanks for inquiries, Mr. Seckertary, but my daughter is not at all proud.

MILL. (*angry, jogs her with his elbow*). Woman!

MRS. MILL. Sorry she can't have that honor, Mr. Seckertary. My daughter is now at mass.

WORM. I am glad to hear it, — glad to hear it. I shall have in her a pious, Christian wife!

MRS. MILL. (*smiling in a stupidly affected manner*). Yes — but, Mr. Seckertary ——

MILL. (*greatly incensed, pulls her ears*). Woman!

MRS. MILL. If our family can serve you in any other way — with the greatest pleasure, Mr. Seckertary ——

WORM (*frowning angrily*). In any other way? Much obliged! much obliged! — hm! hm! hm!

MRS. MILL. But, as you yourself must see, Mr. Seckertary ——

MILL. (*in a rage, shaking his fist at her*). Woman!

MRS. MILL. Good is good, and better is better, and one does not like to stand between fortune and one's only child (*with vulgar pride*). You understand me, Mr. Seckertary?

WORM. Understand. Not exac ——. Oh, yes. But what do you really mean?

MRS. MILL. Why — why — I only think — I mean — (*coughs*). Since then Providence has determined to make a great lady of my daughter ——

WORM (*jumping from his chair*). What's that you say? what?

MILL. Keep your seat, keep your seat, Mr. Secretary! The woman's an out-and-out fool! Where's the great lady to come from? How you show your donkey's ears by talking such stuff.

MRS. MILL. Scold as long as you will. I know what I know, and what the major said he said.

MILL. (*snatches up his fiddle in anger*). Will you hold your tongue? Shall I throw my fiddle at your head? What can you know? What can he have said? Take no notice of her clack, kinsman! Away with you to your kitchen! You'll not think me first cousin of a fool, and that I'm looking out so high for the girl? You'll not think that of me, Mr. Secretary?

WORM. Nor have I deserved it of you, Mr. Miller! You have always shown yourself a man of your word, and my contract to your daughter was as good as signed. I hold an office that will maintain a thrifty manager; the president befriends me; the door to advancement is open to me whenever I may choose to take advantage of it. You see that my intentions towards Miss Louisa are serious; if you have been won over by a fop of rank ——

MRS. MILL. Mr. Seckertary! more respect, I beg ——

MILL. Hold your tongue, I say. Never mind her, kinsman. Things remain as they were. The answer I gave you last harvest, I repeat to-day. I'll not force my

daughter. If you suit her, well and good; then it's for her to see that she can be happy with you. If she shakes her head — still better — be it so, I should say — then you must be content to pocket the refusal, and part in good fellowship over a bottle with her father. 'Tis the girl who is to live with you — not I. Why should I, out of sheer caprice, fasten a husband upon the girl for whom she has no inclination? That the evil one may haunt me down like a wild beast in my old age — that in every drop I drink — in every bit of bread I bite, I might swallow the bitter reproach: Thou art the villain who destroyed his child's happiness!

MRS. MILL. The short and the long of it is — I refuse my consent downright; my daughter's intended for a lofty station, and I'll go to law if my husband is going to be talked over.

MILL. Shall I break every bone in your body, you millclack?

WORM (*to* MILLER). Paternal advice goes a great way with the daughter, and I hope you know me, Mr. Miller?

MILL. Plague take you! 'Tis the girl must know you. What an old crabstick like me can see in you is just the very last thing that a dainty young girl wants. I'll tell you to a hair if you're the man for an orchestra — but a woman's heart is far too deep for a music-master. And then, to be frank with you — you know that I'm a blunt, straightforward fellow — you'll not give thank'ye for my advice. I'll persuade my daughter to no one — but from you Mr. See — I would dissuade her! A lover who calls upon the father for help — with permission — is not worth a pinch of snuff. If he has anything in him, he'll be ashamed to take that old-fashioned way of making his deserts known to his sweetheart. If he hasn't the courage, why he's a milksop, and no Louisas were born for the like of him. No! he must carry on his commerce with the daughter behind the father's back. He must manage so to win her heart, that she would rather wish both father and mother at Old Harry than give him up — or that she come herself, fall at her father's feet, and implore either for death on the rack, or the only one of her *heart*. *That*'s the fellow for me! that I call love! and

he who can't bring matters to that pitch with a petticoat may — stick the goose feather in his cap.

WORM (*seizes hat and stick and hurries out of the room*). Much obliged, Mr. Miller!

MILL. (*going after him slowly*). For what? for what? You haven't taken anything, Mr. Secretary! (*Comes back.*) He won't hear, and off he's gone. The very sight of that quill-driver is like poison and brimstone to me. An ugly, contraband knave, smuggled into the world by some lewd prank of the devil — with his malicious little pig's eyes, foxy hair, and nut-cracker chin, just as if Nature, enraged at such a bungled piece of goods, had seized the ugly monster by it, and flung him aside. No! rather than throw away my daughter on a vagabond like him, she may — God forgive me!

MRS. MILL. The wretch! — but you'll be made to keep a clean tongue in your head!

MILL. Ay, and you too, with your pestilential baron — you, too, must put my bristles up. You're never more stupid than when you have the most occasion to show a little sense. What's the meaning of all that trash about your daughter being a great lady? If it's to be cried out about the town to-morrow, you need only let that fellow get scent of it. He is one of your worthies who go sniffing about into people's houses, dispute upon everything, and, if a slip of the tongue happen to you, skurry with it straight to the prince, mistress, and minister, and then there's the devil to pay.

SCENE III.

Enter LOUISA *with a book in her hand.*

LOUISA. Good morning, dear father!

MILL. (*affectionately*). Bless thee, my Louisa! I rejoice to see thy thoughts are turned so diligently to thy Creator. Continue so, and his arm will support thee.

LOUISA. Oh! I am a great sinner, father! Was he not here, mother?

MRS. MILL. Who, my child?

LOUISA. Ah! I forgot that there are others in the

world besides him — my head wanders so. Was he not here? Ferdinand?

MILL. (*with melancholy, serious voice*). I thought my Louisa had forgotton that name in her devotions?

LOUISA (*after looking at him steadfastly for some time*). I understand you, father. I feel the knife which stabs my conscience; but it comes too late. I can no longer pray, father. Heaven and Ferdinand divide my bleeding soul, and I fear — I fear — (*after a pause*). Yet no, no, good father. The painter is best praised when we forget him in the contemplation of his picture. When in the contemplation of his masterpiece, my delight makes me forget the Creator, — is not that, father, the true praise of God?

MILL. (*throws himself in displeasure on a chair*). There we have it! Those are the fruits of your ungodly reading.

LOUISA (*uneasy, goes to the window*). Where can he be now? Ah! the high-born ladies who see him — listen to him —— I am a poor forgotten maiden. (*Startles at that word, and rushes to her father.*) But no, no! forgive me. I do not repine at my lot. I ask but little — to think on him — that can harm no one. Ah! that I might breathe out this little spark of life in one soft fondling zephyr to cool his cheek! That this fragile floweret, youth, were a violet, on which he might tread, and I die modestly beneath his feet! I ask no more, father! Can the proud, majestic day-star punish the gnat for basking in its rays?

MILL. (*deeply affected, leans on the arm of his chair, and covers his face*). My child, my child, with joy would I sacrifice the remnant of my days hadst thou never seen the major.

LOUISA (*terrified.*) How; how? What did you say? No, no! that could not be your meaning, good father. You know not that Ferdinand is mine! You know not that God created him for me, and for my delight alone! (*After a pause of recollection.*) The first moment that I beheld him — and the blood rushed into my glowing cheeks — every pulse beat with joy; every throb told me, every breath whispered, "'Tis he!" And my heart,

recognizing the long-desired one, repeated "'Tis he!" And the whole world was as one melodious echo of my delight! Then — oh! then was the first dawning of my soul! A thousand new sentiments arose in my bosom, as flowers arise from the earth when spring approaches. I forgot there was a world, yet never had I felt that world so dear to me! I forgot there was a God, yet never had I so loved him!

MILL. (*runs to her and clasps her to his bosom*). Louisa! my beloved, my admirable child! Do what thou wilt. Take all — all — my life — the baron — God is my witess — him I can never give thee! [*Exit.*

LOUISA. Nor would I have him now, father! Time on earth is but a stinted dewdrop in the ocean of eternity. 'Twill swiftly glide in one delicious dream of Ferdinand. I renounce him for this life! But then, mother — then when the bounds of separation are removed — when the hated distinctions of rank no longer part us — when men will be only men — I shall bring nothing with me save my innocence! Yet often has my father told me that at the Almighty's coming riches and titles will be worthless; and that hearts alone will be beyond all price. Oh! then shall I be rich! There, tears will be reckoned for triumphs, and purity of soul be preferred to an illustrious ancestry. Then, then, mother, shall I be noble! In what will he then be superior to the girl of his heart?

MRS. MILL (*starts from her seat*). Louisa! the baron! He is jumping over the fence! Where shall I hide myself?

LOUISA (*begins to tremble*). Oh! do not leave me, mother!

MRS. MILL. Mercy! What a figure I am. I am quite ashamed! I cannot let his lordship see me in this state! [*Exit.*

SCENE IV.

LOUISA — FERDINAND. (*He flies towards her — she falls back into her chair, pale and trembling. He remains standing before her — they look at each other for some moments in silence. A pause.*)

FERDINAND. So pale, Louisa?

LOUISA (*rising, and embracing him*). It is nothing — nothing now that you are here — it is over.

FERD. (*takes her hand and raises it to his lips*). And does my Louisa still love me? My heart is yesterday's; is thine the same? I flew hither to see if thou wert happy, that I might return and be so too. But I find thee whelmed in sorrow!

LOUISA. Not so, my beloved, not so!

FERD. Confess, Louisa! you are not happy. I see through your soul as clearly as through the transparent lustre of this brilliant. No spot can harbor here unmarked by me — no thought can cloud your brow that does not reach your lover's heart. Whence comes this grief? Tell me, I beseech you! Ah! could I feel assured this mirror still remained unsullied, there'd seem to me no cloud in all the universe! Tell me, dear Louisa, what afflicts you?

LOUISE (*looking at him with anxiety for a few moments*). Ferdinand! couldst thou but know how such discourse exalts the tradesman's daughter ——

FERD. (*surprised*). What say'st thou? Tell me, girl! how camest thou by that thought? Thou art my Louisa! who told thee thou couldst be aught else? See, false one, see, for what coldness I must chide thee! Were indeed thy whole soul absorbed by love for me, never hadst thou found time to draw comparisons! When I am with thee, my prudence is lost in one look from thine eyes: when I am absent in a dream of thee! But thou — thou canst harbor prudence in the same breast with love! Fie on thee! Every moment bestowed on this sorrow was a robbery from affection and from me!

LOUISA (*pressing his hand and shaking her head with a melancholy air*). Ferdinand, you would lull my apprehensions to sleep; you would divert my eyes from the

precipice into which I am falling. I can see the future! The voice of honor — your prospects, your father's anger — my nothingness. (*Shuddering and suddenly drops his hands.*) Ferdinand! a sword hangs over us! They would separate us!

FERD. (*jumps up*). Separate us! Whence these apprehensions, Louisa? Who can rend the bonds that bind two hearts, or separate the tones of one accord? True, I am a nobleman — but show me that my patent of nobility is older than the eternal laws of the universe — or my escutcheon more valid than the handwriting of heaven in my Louisa's eyes? "This woman is for this man?" I am son of the prime minister. For that very reason, what but love can soften the curses which my father's extortions from the country will entail upon me?

LOUISA. Oh! how I fear that father!

FERD. I fear nothing — nothing but that your affection should know bounds. Let obstacles rise between us, huge as mountains, I will look upon them as a ladder by which to fly into the arms of my Louisa! The tempest of opposing fate shall but fan the flame of my affection: dangers will only serve to make Louisa yet more charming. Then speak no more of terrors, my love! I myself — I will watch over thee carefully as the enchanter's dragon watches over buried gold. Trust thyself to me! thou shalt need no other angel. I will throw myself between thee and fate — for thee receive each wound. For thee will I catch each drop distilled from the cup of joy, and bring thee in the bowl of love. (*Embracing her affectionately.*) This arm shall support my Louisa through life. Fairer than it dismissed thee, shall heaven receive thee back, and confess with delight that love alone can give perfection to the soul.

LOUISA (*disengaging herself from him, greatly agitated*). No more! I beseech thee, Ferdinand! no more! Couldst thou know. Oh! leave me, leave me! Little dost thou feel how these hopes rend my heart in pieces like fiends! (*Going.*)

FERD (*detaining her*). Stay, Louisa! stay! Why this agitation? Why those anxious looks?

LOUISA. I had forgotten these dreams, and was happy.

Now — now — from this day is the tranquillity of my heart no more. Wild impetuous wishes will torment my bosom! Go! God forgive thee! Thou hast hurled a firebrand into my young peaceful heart which nothing can extinguish! (*She breaks from him, and rushes from the apartment, followed by* FERDINAND.)

SCENE V. — *A Chamber in the* PRESIDENT'S *House.*

The PRESIDENT, *with the grand order of the cross about his neck, and a star at his breast* — SECRETARY WORM.

PRESIDENT. A serious attachment, say you? No, no, Worm; that I never can believe.

WORM. If your excellency pleases, I will bring proofs of my assertions.

PRES. That he has a fancy for the wench — flatters her — and, if you will, pretends to love her — all this is very possible—nay — excusable—but —and the daughter of a musician, you say?

WORM. Of Miller, the music-master.

PRES. Handsome? But that, of course.

WORM (*with warmth*). A most captivating and lovely blondine, who, without saying too much, might figure advantageously beside the greatest beauties of the court.

PRES. (*laughs*). It's very plain, Worm, that you have an eye upon the jade yourself — I see that. But listen, Worm. That my son has a passion for the fair sex gives me hope that he will find favor with the ladies. He may make his way at court. The girl is handsome, you say; I am glad to think my son has taste. Can he deceive the silly wench by holding out honorable intentions — still better; it will show that he is shrewd enough to play the hypocrite when it serves his purpose. He may become prime minister — if he accomplishes his purpose! Admirable! that will prove to me that fortune favors him. Should the farce end with a chubby grandchild — incomparable! I will drink an extra bottle of Malaga to the prospects of my pedigree, and cheerfully pay the wench's lying-in expenses.

WORM. All I wish is that your excellency may not have to drink that bottle to drown your sorrow.

PRES. (*sternly*). Worm! remember that what I once believe, I believe obstinately — that I am furious when angered. I am willing to pass over as a joke this attempt to stir my blood. That you are desirous of getting rid of your rival, I can very well comprehend, and that, because you might have some difficulty in supplanting the son, you endeavor to make a cat's-paw of the father, I can also understand — I am even delighted to find that you are master of such excellent qualifications in the way of roguery. Only, friend Worm, pray don't make me, too, the butt of your knavery. Understand me, have a care that your cunning trench not upon my plans!

WORM. Pardon me, your excellency! If even — as you suspect — jealousy is concerned, it is only with the eye, and not with the tongue.

PRES. It would be better to dispense with it altogether. What can it matter to you, simpleton, whether you get your coin fresh from the mint, or it comes through a banker? Console yourself with the example of our nobility. Whether known to the bridegroom or not, I can assure you that, amongst us of rank, scarcely a marriage takes place but what at least half a dozen of the guests — or the footmen — can state the geometrical area of the bridegroom's paradise.

WORM (*bowing*). My lord! Upon this head I confess myself a plebeian.

PRES. And, besides, you may soon have the satisfaction of turning the laugh most handsomely against your rival. At this very moment it is under consideration in the cabinet, that, upon the arrival of the new duchess, Lady Milford shall apparently be discarded, and, to complete the deception, form an alliance. You know, Worm, how greatly my influence depends upon this lady — how my mightiest prospects hang upon the passions of the prince. The duke is now seeking a partner for Lady Milford. Some one else may step in — conclude the bargain for her ladyship, win the confidence of the prince, and make himself indispensable, to my cost. Now, to retain the prince in the meshes of my family, I have resolved that my Ferdinand shall marry Lady Milford. Is that clear to you?

WORM. Quite dazzling! Your excellency has at least convinced me that, compared with the president, the father is but a novice. Should the major prove as obedient a son as you show yourself a tender father, your demand may chance to be returned with a protest.

PRES. Fortunately I have never yet had to fear opposition to my will when once I have pronounced, "It shall be so!" But now, Worm, that brings us back to our former subject! I will propose Lady Milford to my son this very day. The face which he puts upon it shall either confirm your suspicions or entirely confute them.

WORM. Pardon me, my lord! The sullen face which he most assuredly will put upon it may be placed equally to the account of the bride you offer to him as of her from whom you wish to separate him. I would beg of you a more positive test! Propose to him some perfectly unexceptionable woman. Then, if he consents, let Secretary Worm break stones on the highway for the next three years.

PRES. (*biting his lips*). The devil!

WORM. Such is the case, you may rest assured! The mother—stupidity itself—has, in her simplicity, betrayed all to me.

PRES. (*pacing the room, and trying to repress his rage*). Good! this very morning, then!

WORM. Yet, let me entreat your excellency not to forget that the major — is my master's son ——

PRES. No harm shall come to him, Worm.

WORM. And that my service in ridding you of an unwelcome daughter-in-law ——

PRES. Should be rewarded by me helping you to a wife? That too, Worm!

WORM (*bowing with delight*). Eternally your lordship's slave. (*Going.*)

PRES. (*threatening him*). As to what I have confided to you, Worm! If you dare but to whisper a syllable ——

WORM. (*laughs*). Then your excellency will no doubt expose my forgeries! [*Exit.*

PRES. Yes, yes, you are safe enough! I hold you in

the fetters of your own knavery, like a trout on the hook!

Enter SERVANT.

SERVANT. Marshal Kalb ——

PRES. The very man I wished to see. Introduce him. [*Exit* SERVANT.

SCENE VI.

MARSHAL KALB, *in a rich but tasteless court-dress, with Chamberlain's keys, two watches, sword, three-cornered hat, and hair dressed à la Herisson. He bustles up to the* PRESIDENT, *and diffuses a strong scent of musk through the whole theatre* — PRESIDENT.

MARSHAL. Ah! good morning, my dear baron! Quite delighted to see you again — pray forgive my not having paid my respects to you at an earlier hour — the most pressing business — the duke's bill of fare — invitation cards — arrangements for the sledge party to-day — ah! — besides it was necessary for me to be at the levee, to inform his highness of the state of the weather.

PRES. True, marshal! Such weighty concerns were not to be neglected!

MARSHAL. Then a rascally tailor, too, kept me waiting for him!

PRES. And yet ready to the moment?

MARSHAL. Nor is that all! One misfortune follows at the heels of the other to-day! Only hear me!

PRES. (*absent*). Can it be possible?

MARSHAL. Just listen! Scarce had I quitted my carriage, when the horses became restive, and began to plunge and rear — only imagine! — splashed my breeches all over with mud! What was to be done? Fancy, my dear baron, just fancy yourself for a moment in my predicament! There I stood! the hour was late! a day's journey to return — yet to appear before his highness in this — good heavens! What did I bethink me of? I pretended to faint! They bundle me into my carriage! I drive home like mad — change my dress — hasten back — and only think! — in spite of all this I was the

first person in the antechamber! What say you to that?

PRES. A most admirable impromptu of mortal wit — but tell me, Kalb, did you speak to the duke?

MARSHAL (*importantly*). Full twenty minutes and a half.

PRES. Indeed? Then doubtless you have important news to impart to me?

MARSHAL (*seriously, after a pause of reflection*). His highness wears a Merde d'Oye beaver to-day.

PRES. God bless me! — and yet, marshal, I have even greater news to tell you. Lady Milford will soon become my daughter-in-law. That, I think will be new to you?

MARSHAL. Is it possible! And is it already agreed upon?

PRES. It is settled, marshal — and you would oblige me by forthwith waiting upon her ladyship, and preparing her to receive Ferdinand's visit. You have full liberty, also, to circulate the news of my son's approaching nuptials.

MARSHAL. My dear friend! With consummate pleasure! What can I desire more? I fly to the baroness this moment. Adieu! (*Embracing him.*) In less than three-quarters of an hour it shall be known throughout the town. [*Skips off.*

PRES. (*smiling contemptuously*). How can people say that such creatures are of no use in the world? Now, then, Master Ferdinand must either consent or give the whole town the lie. (*Rings* — WORM *enters.*) Send my son hither. (WORM *retires; the* PRESIDENT *walks up and down, full of thought.*)

SCENE VII.

PRESIDENT — FERDINAND.

FERD. In obedience to your commands, sir ——

PRES. Ay, if I desire the presence of my son, I must command it — Ferdinand, I have observed you for some time past, and find no longer that open vivacity of youth which once so delighted me. An unusual sorrow broods upon your features; you shun your father; you shun so-

ciety. For shame, Ferdinand! At your age a thousand irregularities are easier forgiven than one instant of idle melancholy. Leave this to me, my son! Leave the care of your future happiness to my direction, and study only to co-operate with my designs — come, Ferdinand, embrace me!

FERD. You are most gracious to-day, father!

PRES. "To-day," you rogue? and your "to-day" with such a vinegar look? (*Seriously.*) Ferdinand! For whose sake have I trod that dangerous path which leads to the affections of the prince? For whose sake have I forever destroyed my peace with Heaven and my conscience? Hear me, Ferdinand — I am speaking to my son. For whom have I paved the way by the removal of my predecessor? a deed which the more deeply gores my inward feelings the more carefully I conceal the dagger from the world! Tell me, Ferdinand, for whose sake have I done all this?

FERD. (*recoiling with horror*). Surely not for mine, father, not for mine? Surely not on me can fall the bloody reflection of this murder? By my Almighty Maker, it were better never to have been born than to be the pretext for such a crime!

PRES. What sayest thou? How? But I will attribute these strange notions to thy romantic brain, Ferdinand; let me not lose my temper — ungrateful boy! Thus dost thou repay me for my sleepless nights? Thus for my restless anxiety to promote thy good? Thus for the never-dying scorpion of my conscience? Upon me must fall the burden of responsibility; upon me the curse, the thunderbolt of the Judge. Thou receivest thy fortune from another's hand — the crime is not attached to the inheritance.

FERD. (*extending his right hand towards heaven*). Here I solemnly abjure an inheritance which must ever remind me of a parent's guilt!

PRES. Hear me, sirrah! and do not incense me! Were you left to your own direction you would crawl through life in the dust.

FERD. Oh! better, father, far, far better, than to crawl about a throne!

PRES. (*repressing his anger*). So! Then compulsion must make you sensible of your good fortune! To that point, which, with the utmost striving a thousand others fail to reach, you have been exalted in your very sleep. At twelve you received a commission; at twenty a command. I have succeeded in obtaining for you the duke's patronage. He bids you lay aside your uniform, and share with me his favor and his confidence. He spoke of titles — embassies — of honors bestowed but upon few. A glorious prospect spreads itself before you! The direct path to the place next the throne lies open to you! Nay, to the throne itself, if the actual power of ruling is equivalent to the mere symbol. Does not that idea awaken your ambition?

FERD. No! My ideas of greatness and happiness differ widely from yours. Your happiness is but seldom known, except by the misery of others. Envy, terror, hatred are the melancholy mirrors in which the smiles of princes are reflected. Tears, curses, and the wailings of despair, the horrid banquet that feasts your supposed elect of fortune; intoxicated with these they rush headlong into eternity, staggering to the throne of judgment. My ideas of happiness teach me to look for its fountain in myself! All my wishes lie centered in my heart!

PRES. Masterly! Inimitable! Admirable! The first schooling I have received these thirty years! Pity that the brain at fifty should be so dull at learning! But — that such talent may not rust, I will place one by your side on whom you can practise your harlequinade follies at pleasure. You will resolve — resolve this very day — to take a wife.

FERD. (*starting back amazed*). Father!

PRES. Answer me not. I have made proposals, in your name, to Lady Milford. You will instantly determine upon going to her, and declaring yourself her bridegroom.

FERD. Lady Milford! father?

PRES. I presume she is not unknown to you!

FERD. (*passionately*). To what brothel is she unknown through the dukedom? But pardon me, dearest father! It is ridiculous to imagine that your proposal can be

serious. Would you call yourself father of that infamous son who married a licensed prostitute?

PRES. Nay, more. I would ask her hand myself, if she would take a man of fifty. Would not you call yourself that infamous father's son?

FERD. No! as God lives! that would I not!

PRES. An audacity, by my honor! which I pardon for its excessive singularity.

FERD. I entreat you, father, release me from a demand which would render it insupportable to call myself your son.

PRES. Are you distracted, boy? What reasonable man would not thirst after a distinction which makes him, as one of a trio, the equal and co-partner of his sovereign?

FERD. You are quite an enigma to me, father! "A distinction," do you call it? A distinction to share that with a prince, wherein he places himself on a level with the meanest of his subjects? (*The* PRESIDENT *bursts into a loud laugh.*) You may scoff — I must submit to it in a father. With what countenance should I support the gaze of the meanest laborer, who at least receives an undivided person as the portion of his bride? With what countenance should I present myself before the world? before the prince? nay, before the harlot herself, who seeks to wash out in my shame the brandmarks of her honor?

PRES. Where in the world couldst thou collect such notions, boy?

FERD. I implore you, father, by heaven and earth! By thus sacrificing your only son you can never become so happy as you will make him miserable! If my life can be a step to your advancement, dispose of it. My life you gave me; and I will never hesitate a moment to sacrifice it wholly to your welfare. But my honor, father! If you deprive me of this, the giving me life was a mere trick of wanton cruelty, and I must equally curse the parent and the pander.

PRES. (*tapping him on the shoulder in a friendly manner*). That's as it should be, my dear boy! Now I see that you are a brave and noble fellow, and worthy of the

11874

first woman in the dukedom. You shall have her. This very day you shall be affianced to the Countess of Ostheim.

FERD. (*in new disorder*). Is this, then, destined to be the hour of my destruction?

PRES. (*regarding him with an eye of suspicion*). In this union, I imagine, you can have no objection on the score of honor?

FERD. None, father, none whatever. Frederica of Ostheim would make any other the happiest of men. (*Aside, in the greatest agitation.*) His kindness rends in pieces that remnant of my heart which his cruelty left unwounded.

PRES. (*his eye still fixed upon him*). I expect your gratitude, Ferdinand!

FERD. (*rushes towards him and kisses his hands*). Father, your goodness awakens every spark of sentiment in my bosom. Father! receive my warmest thanks for your kind intentions. Your choice is unexceptionable! But I cannot — I dare not — pity me, father, I never can love the countess.

PRES. (*draws back*). Ha! ha! now I've caught you, young gentleman! The cunning fox has tumbled into the trap. Oh, you artful hypocrite! It was not then *honor* which made you refuse Lady Milford? It was not the woman, but the nuptials which alarmed you! (FERDINAND *stands petrified for a moment; then recovers himself and prepares to quit the chamber hastily.*) Whither now? Stay, sir. Is this the respect due to your father? (FERDINAND *returns slowly.*) Her ladyship expects you. The duke has my promise! Both court and city believe all is settled. If thou makest me appear a liar, boy! If, before the duke — the lady — the court and city — thou shouldst make me appear a liar! — tremble, boy! — or when I have gained information of certain circumstances — how now? Why does the color so suddenly forsake your cheeks?

FERD. (*pale and trembling*). How? What? Nothing — it is nothing, my father!

PRES. (*casting upon him a dreadful look*). Should there be cause. If I should discover the source whence

this obstinacy proceeds! Boy! boy! the very suspicion drives me distracted! Leave me this moment. 'Tis now the hour of parade. As soon as the word is given, go thou to her ladyship. At my nod a dukedom trembles; we shall see whether a disobedient son dare dispute my will! (*Going, returns.*) Remember, sir! fail not to wait on Lady Milford, or dread my anger! [*Exit.*

FERD. (*awakens, as if from a dream*). Is he gone? Was that a father's voice? Yes, I will go — I will see her — I will say such things to her — hold such a mirror before her eyes. Then, base woman, shouldst thou still demand my hand — in the presence of the assembled nobles, the military, and the people — gird thyself with all the pride of thy native Britain — I, a German youth, will spurn thee! [*Exit.*

ACT II.

SCENE I. — *A room in* LADY MILFORD'S *house. On the right of the stage stands a sofa, on the left a pianoforte.*

LADY MILFORD, *in a loose but elegant négligée, is running her hand over the keys of the pianoforte as* SOPHY *advances from the window.*

SOPHY. The parade is over, and the officers are separating, but I see no signs of the major.

LADY M. (*rises and walks up and down the room in visible agitation*). I know not what ails me to-day, Sophy! I never felt so before — you say you do not see him! It is evident enough that he is by no means impatient for this meeting — my heart feels oppressed as if by some heavy crime. Go! Sophy, order the most spirited horse in the stable to be saddled for me — I must away into the open air where I may look on the blue sky and hear the busy hum of man. I must dispel this gloominess by change and motion.

SOPHY. If you feel out of spirits, my lady, why not invite company! Let the prince give an entertainment here, or have the ombre table brought to you. If the

prince and all his court were at *my* beck and call I would let no whim or fancy trouble me!

LADY M. (*throwing herself on the couch*). Pray, spare me. I would gladly give a jewel in exchange for every hour's respite from the infliction of such company! I always have my rooms tapestried with these creatures! Narrow-minded, miserable beings, who are quite shocked if by chance a candid and heartfelt word should escape one's lips! and stand aghast as though they saw an apparition; slaves, moved by a single puppet-wire, which I can govern as easily as the threads of my embroidery! What can I have in common with such insipid wretches, whose souls, like their watches, are regulated by machinery? What pleasure can I have in the society of people whose answers to my questions I know beforehand? How can I hold communion with men who dare not venture on an opinion of their own lest it should differ from mine! Away with them — I care not to ride a horse that has not spirit enough to champ the bit! (*Goes to the window.*)

SOPHY. But surely, my lady, you except the prince, the handsomest, the wittiest, and the most gallant man in all his duchy.

LADY M. (*returning*). Yes, in *his* duchy, that was well said — and it is only a royal duchy, Sophy, that could in the least excuse my weakness. You say the world envies me! Poor thing! It should rather pity me! Believe me, of all who drink of the streams of royal bounty there is none more miserable than the sovereign's favorite, for he who is great and mighty in the eyes of others comes to *her* but as the humble suppliant! It is true that by the talisman of his greatness he can realize every wish of my heart as readily as the magician calls forth the fairy palace from the depths of the earth! He can place the luxuries of both Indies upon my table, turn the barren wilderness to a paradise, can bid the broad rivers of his land play in triumphal arches over my path, or expend all the hard-earned gains of his subjects in a single *feu-de-joie* to my honor. But can he school his heart to respond to one great or ardent emotion? *Can* he extort one noble thought from his weak and

indigent brain? Alas! my heart is thirsting amid all this ocean of splendor; what avail, then, a thousand virtuous sentiments when I am only permitted to indulge in the pleasures of the senses.

SOPHY (*regarding her with surprise*). Dear lady, you amaze me! how long is it since I entered your service?

LADY M. Do you ask because *this* is the first day on which you have learnt to know me? I have sold my honor to the prince, it is true, but my heart is still my own — a heart, dear Sophy, which even yet may be worth the acceptance of an honorable man — a heart over which the pestilential blast of courtly corruption has passed as the breath which for a moment dims the mirror's lustre. Believe me my spirit would long since have revolted against this miserable thraldom could my ambition have submitted to see another advanced to my place.

SOPHY. And could a heart like yours so readily surrender itself to mere ambition?

LADY M. (*with energy*). Has it not already been avenged? nay, is it not even at this very moment making me pay a heavy atonement (*with emphasis laying her hand on* SOPHY'S *shoulder*)? Believe me, Sophy, woman has but to choose between ruling and serving, but the utmost joy of power is a worthless possession if the mightier joy of being slave to the man we love be denied us.

SOPHY. A truth, dear lady, which I could least of all have expected to hear from your lips!

LADY M. And wherefore, Sophy? Does not woman show, by her childish mode of swaying the sceptre of power, that she is only fit to go in leading-strings! Have not my fickle humors — my eager pursuit of wild dissapation — betrayed to you that I sought in these to stifle the still wilder throbbings of my heart?

SOPHY (*starting back with surprise*). This from you, my lady?

LADY M. (*continuing with increasing energy*). Appease these throbbings. Give me the man in whom my thoughts are centered — the man I adore, without whom life were

worse than death. Let me but hear from *his* lips that the tears of love with which my eyes are bedewed outvie the gems that sparkle in my hair, and I will throw at the feet of the prince his heart and his dukedom, and flee to the uttermost parts of the earth with the man of my love!

SOPHY (*looking at her in alarm*). Heavens! my lady! control your emotion ——

LADY M. (*in surprise*). You change color! To what have I given utterance? Yet, since I have said thus much, let me say still more — let my confidence be a pledge of your fidelity, — I will tell you all.

SOPHY (*looking anxiously around*). I fear my lady — I dread it — I have heard enough!

LADY M. This alliance with the major — you, like the rest of the world, believe to be the result of a court intrigue — Sophy, blush not — be not ashamed of me — it is the work of — my love!

SOPHY. Heavens! As I suspected!

LADY M. Yes, Sophy, they are all deceived. The weak prince — the diplomatic baron — the silly marshal — each and all of these are firmly convinced that this marriage is a most infallible means of preserving me to the prince, and of uniting us still more firmly! But this will prove the very means of separating us forever, and bursting asunder these execrable bonds. The cheater cheated — outwitted by a weak woman. Ye yourselves are leading me to the man of my heart — this was all I sought. Let him but once be mine — be but mine — then, oh, then, a long farewell to all this despicable pomp!

SCENE II. — *An old valet of the* DUKE'S, *with a casket of jewels. The former.*

VALET. His serene highness begs your ladyship's acceptance of these jewels as a nuptial present. They have just arrived from Venice.

LADY M. (*opens the casket and starts back in astonishment*). What did these jewels cost the duke?

VALET. Nothing!

LADY M. *Nothing!* Are you beside yoursel (*retreating a step or two.*) Old man! you fix on me a lo as though you would pierce me through. Did you s these precious jewels cost nothing?

VALET. Yesterday seven thousand children of t land left their homes to go to America — they pay f all.

LADY M. (*sets the casket suddenly down, and paces and down the room; after a pause, to the* VALET). Wh distresses you, old man? you are weeping!

VALET (*wiping his eyes, and trembling violently* Yes, for these jewels. My two sons are among t number.

LADY M. But they went not by compulsion?

VALET (*laughing bitterly*). Oh! dear no! they we all volunteers! There were certainly some few forwa lads who pushed to the front of the ranks and inquir of the colonel at what price the prince sold his subjec per yoke, upon which our gracious ruler ordered the re ments to be marched to the parade, and the malconten to be shot. We heard the report of the muskets, and sa brains and blood spurting about us, while the whole bar shouted — "Hurrah for America!"

LADY M. And I heard nothing of all this! sa nothing!

VALET. No, most gracious lady, because you ro off to the bear-hunt with his highness just at the mome the drum was beating for the march. 'Tis a pity yo ladyship missed the pleasure of the sight — here, cryi children might be seen following their wretched father - there, a mother distracted with grief was rushing forwa to throw her tender infant among the bristling bayone — here, a bride and bridegroom were separated with t sabre's stroke — and there, graybeards were seen to star in despair, and fling their very crutches after their so in the New World — and, in the midst of all this, t drums were beating loudly, that the prayers and lament tions might not reach the Almighty ear.

LADY M. (*rising in violent emotion*). Away wi these jewels — their rays pierce my bosom like the flam of hell. Moderate your grief, old man. Your childr

shall be restored to you. You shall again clasp them to your bosom.

VALET (*with warmth*). Yes, heaven knows! We shall meet again! As they passed the city gates they turned round and cried aloud: "God bless our wives and children — long life to our gracious sovereign. At the day of judgment we shall all meet again!"

LADY M. (*walks up and down the room in great agitation*). Horrible! most horrible! — and they would persuade me that I had dried up all the tears in the land. Now, indeed, my eyes are fearfully opened! Go — tell the prince that I will thank him in person! (*As the valet is going she drops the purse into his hat.*) And take this as a recompense for the truth you have revealed to me.

VALET (*throws the purse with contempt on the table*). Keep it, with your other treasures. [*Exit.*

LADY M. (*looking after him in astonishment*). Sophy, follow him, and inquire his name. His sons shall be restored to him. (SOPHY *goes.* LADY MILFORD *becomes absorbed in thought. Pause. Then to* SOPHY *as she returns.*) Was there not a report that some town on the frontier had been destroyed by fire, and four hundred families reduced to beggary? (*She rings.*)

SOPHY. What has made your ladyship just think of that? Yes — such was certainly the fact, and most of these poor creatures are either compelled to serve their creditors as bondsmen, or are dragging out their miserable days in the depths of the royal silver mines.

Enter a SERVANT. What are your ladyship's commands?

LADY M. (*giving him the case of jewels*). Carry this to my treasurer without delay. Let the jewels be sold and the money distributed among the four hundred families who were ruined by the fire.

SOPHY. Consider, my lady, the risk you run of displeasing his highness.

LADY M. (*with dignity*). Should I encircle my brows with the curses of his subjects? (*Makes a sign to the servant, who goes away with the jewel case.*) Wouldst thou have me dragged to the earth by the dreadful

weight of the tears of misery? Nay! Sophy, it is better far to wear false jewels on the brow, and to have the consciousness of a good deed within the breast!

SOPHY. But diamonds of such value! Why not rather give some that are less precious? Truly, my lady, it is an unpardonable act.

LADY M. Foolish girl! For this deed more brilliants and pearls will flow for me in one moment than kings ever wore in their richest diadems! Ay, and infinitely more beautiful!

SERVANT *enters.* Major von Walter!

SOPHY (*running hastily to the help of* LADY MILFORD, *who seems fainting*). Heavens, my lady, you change color!

LADY M. The first man who ever made me tremble. (*To the* SERVANT.) I am not well — but stay — what said the major? — how? —— O Sophy! I look sadly ill, do I not?

SOPHY. I entreat you, my lady, compose yourself.

SERVANT. Is it your ladyship's wish that I should deny you to the major?

LADY M. (*hesitating*). Tell him — I shall be happy to see him. (*Exit* SERVANT.) What shall I say to him, Sophy? how shall I receive him? I will be silent — alas! I fear he will despise my weakness. He will — ah, me! what sad forebodings oppress my heart! You are going Sophy! stay, yet — no, no — he comes — yes, stay, stay with me ——

SOPHY. Collect yourself, my lady, the major ——

SCENE III.— FERDINAND VON WALTER. *The former.*

FERD. (*with a slight bow*). I hope I do not interrupt your ladyship?

LADY M. (*with visible emotion*). Not at all, baron — not in the least.

FERD. I wait on your ladyship, at the command of my father.

LADY M. Therein I am his debtor.

FERD. And I am charged to announce to you that our marriage is determined on. Thus far I fulfil the commission of my father.

LADY M. (*changing color and trembling*). And not of your own heart?

FERD. Ministers and panders have no concern with hearts.

LADY M. (*almost speechless with emotion*). And you yourself — have you nothing to add?

FERD. (*looking at* SOPHY). Much! my lady, much!

LADY M. (*motions to* SOPHY *to withdraw*). May I beg you to take a seat by my side?

FERD. I will be brief, lady.

LADY M. Well!

FERD. I am a man of honor!

LADY M. Whose worth I know how to appreciate.

FERD. I am of noble birth!

LADY M. Noble as any in the land!

FERD. A soldier!

LADY M. (*in a soft, affectionate manner*). Thus far you have only enumerated advantages which you share in common with many others. Why are you so silent regarding those noble qualities which are peculiarly your own?

FERD. (*coldly*). Here they would be out of place.

LADY M. (*with increasing agitation*). In what light am I to understand this prelude?

FERD. (*slowly, and with emphasis*). As the protest of the voice of honor — should you think proper to enforce the possession of my hand!

LADY M. (*starting with indignation*) Major von Walter! What language is this?

FERD. (*calmly*). The language of my heart — of my unspotted name — and of this true sword.

LADY M. Your sword was given to you by the prince.

FERD. 'Twas the state which gave it, by the hands of the prince. God bestowed on me an honest heart. My nobility is derived from a line of ancestry extending through centuries.

LADY M. But the authority of the prince ——

FERD. (*with warmth*). Can he subvert the laws of humanity, or stamp glory on our actions as easily as he stamps value on the coin of his realm? He himself is

not raised above the laws of honor, although he may stifle its whispers with gold — and shroud his infamy in robes of ermine! But enough of this, lady! — it is too late now to talk of blasted prospects — or of the desecration of ancestry — or of that nice sense of honor — girded on with my sword — or of the world's opinion. All these I am ready to trample under foot as soon as you have proved to me that the reward is not inferior to the sacrifice.

LADY M. (*in extreme distress turning away*). Major! I have not deserved this!

FERD. (*taking her hand*). Pardon me, lady — we are without witnesses. The circumstance which brings us together to-day — and only to-day — justifies me, nay, compels me, to reveal to you my most secret feelings. I cannot comprehend, lady, how a being gifted with so much beauty and spirit — qualities which a man cannot fail to admire — could throw herself away on a prince incapable of valuing aught beyond her mere person — and yet not feel some visitings of shame, when she steps forth to offer her heart to a man of honor!

LADY M. (*looking at him with an air of pride*). Say on, sir, without reserve.

FERD. You call yourself an Englishwoman — pardon me, lady, I can hardly believe you. The free-born daughter of the freest people under heaven — a people too proud to imitate even foreign virtues — would surely never have sold herself to foreign vices! It is not possible, lady, that you should be a native of Britain, unless indeed your heart be as much below as the sons of Britannia vaunt theirs to be above all others!

LADY M. Have you done, sir?

FERD. Womanly vanity — passions — temperament — a natural appetite for pleasure — all these might, perhaps, be pleaded in extenuation — for virtue often survives honor — and many who once trod the paths of infamy have subsequently reconciled themselves to society by the performance of noble deeds, and have thus thrown a halo of glory round their evil doings — but if this were so, whence comes the monstrous extortion that now oppresses the people with a weight never before

known? This I would ask in the name of my fatherland — and now, lady, I have done!

LADY M. (*with gentleness and dignity*). This is the first time, Baron von Walter, that words such as these have been addressed to me — and you are the only man to whom I would in return have vouchsafed an answer. Your rejection of my hand commands my esteem. Your invectives against my heart have my full forgiveness, for I will not believe you sincere, since he who dares hold such language to a woman, that could ruin him in an instant — must either believe that she possesses a great and noble heart — or must be the most desperate of madmen. That you ascribe the misery of this land to me may He forgive, before whose throne you, and I, and the prince shall one day meet! But, as in my person you have insulted the daughter of Britain, so in vindication of my country's honor you must hear my exculpation.

FERD. (*leaning on his sword*). Lady, I listen with interest.

LADY M. Hear, then, that which I have never yet breathed to mortal, and which none but yourself will ever learn from my lips. I am not the low adventurer you suppose me, sir! Nay! did I listen to the voice of pride, I might even boast myself to be of royal birth; I am descended from the unhappy Thomas Norfolk, who paid the penalty of his adherence to the cause of Mary, Queen of Scots, by a bloody death on the scaffold. My father, who, as royal chamberlain, had once enjoyed his sovereign's confidence, was accused of maintaining treasonable relations with France, and was condemned and executed by a decree of the Parliament of Great Britain. Our estates were confiscated, and our family banished from their native soil. My mother died on the day of my father's execution, and I — then a girl of fourteen — fled to Germany with one faithful attendant. A casket of jewels, and this crucifix, placed in my bosom by my dying mother, were all my fortune!

[FERD., *absorbed in thought, surveys* LADY MILFORD *with looks of compassion and sympathy.*

LADY M. (*continuing with increased emotion*). With-

out a name — without protection or property—a foreigner and an orphan, I reached Hamburg. I had learnt nothing but a little French, and to run my fingers over the embroidery frame, or the keys of my harpsichord. But, though I was ignorant of all useful arts, I had learnt full well to feast off gold and silver, to sleep beneath silken hangings, to bid attendant pages obey my voice, and to listen to the honeyed words of flattery and adulation. Six years passed away in sorrow and in sadness — the remnant of my scanty means was fast melting away — my old and faithful nurse was no more — and — and then it was that fate brought your sovereign to Hamburg. I was walking beside the shores of the Elbe, wondering, as I gazed on its waters, whether they or my sorrows were the deeper, when the duke crossed my path. He followed me, traced me to my humble abode, and, casting himself at my feet, vowed that he loved me. (*She pauses, and, after struggling with her emotion, continues in a voice choked by tears.*) All the images of my happy childhood were revived in hues of delusive brightness — while the future lowered before me black as the grave. My heart panted for communion with another — and I sank into the arms opened to receive me! (*Turning away.*) And now you condemn me!

FERD. (*greatly agitated, follows her and leads her back*). Lady! heavens! what do I hear! What have I done? The guilt of my conduct is unveiled in all its deformity! It is impossible you should forgive me.

LADY M. (*endeavoring to overcome her emotion*). Hear me on! The prince, it is true, overcame my unprotected youth, but the blood of the Howards still glowed within my veins, and never ceased to reproach me; that I, the descendant of royal ancestors, should stoop to be a prince's paramour! Pride and destiny still contended in my bosom, when the duke brought me hither, where scenes the most revolting burst upon my sight! The voluptuousness of the great is an insatiable hyena — the craving of whose appetite demands perpetual victims. Fearfully had it laid this country waste— separating bridegroom and bride — and tearing asunder even the holy bonds of marriage. Here it had destroyed the

tranquil happiness of a whole family—there the blighting pest had seized on a young and inexperienced heart, and expiring victims called down bitter imprecations on the heads of the undoers. It was then that I stepped forth between the lamb and the tiger, and, in a moment of dalliance, extorted from the duke his royal promise that this revolting licentiousness should cease.

FERD. (*pacing the room in violent agitation*). No more, lady! No more!

LADY M. This gloomy period was succeeded by one still more gloomy. The court swarmed with French and Italian adventurers—the royal sceptre became the plaything of Parisian harlots, and the people writhed and bled beneath their capricious rule. Each had her day. I saw them sink before me, one by one, for I was the most skilful coquette of all! It was then that I seized and wielded the tyrant's sceptre whilst he slumbered voluptuously in my embrace—then, Walter, thy country, for the first time, felt the hand of humanity, and reposed in confidence on my bosom. (*A pause, during which she gazes upon him with tenderness.*) Oh! that the man, by whom, of all others, I least wish to be misunderstood, should compel me to turn braggart and parade my unobtrusive virtues to the glare of admiration! Walter, I have burst open the doors of prisons—I have cancelled death-warrants and shortened many a frightful eternity upon the galleys. Into wounds beyond my power to heal I have at least poured soothing balsam. I have hurled mighty villains to the earth, and oft with the tears of a harlot saved the cause of innocence from impending ruin. Ah! young man, how sweet were then my feelings! How proudly did these actions teach my heart to support the reproaches of my noble blood! And now comes the man who alone can repay me for all that I have suffered—the man, whom perhaps my relenting destiny created as a compensation for former sorrows—the man, whom with ardent affection, I already clasped in my dreams.

FERD. (*interupting her*). Hold, lady, hold! You exceed the bounds of our conference! You undertook to clear yourself from reproach, and you make me a criminal!

Spare me, I beseech you! Spare a heart already overwhelmed by confusion and remorse!

LADY M. (*grasping his hand*). You must hear me, Walter! hear me now or never. Long enough has the heroine sustained me; now you must feel the whole weight of these tears! Mark me, Walter! Should an unfortunate — impetuously, irresistibly attracted towards you — clasp you to her bosom full of unutterable, inextinguishable love — should this unfortunate — bowed down with the consciousness of shame — disgusted with vicious pleasures — heroically exalted by the inspiration of virtue — throw herself — thus into your arms (*embracing him in an eager and supplicating manner*); should she do this, and you still pronounce the freezing word "*Honor!*" Should she pray that through you she might be saved — that through you she might be restored to her hopes of heaven! (*Turning away her head, and speaking in a hollow, faltering voice.*) Or should she, her prayer refused, listen to the voice of despair, and to escape from your image plunge herself into yet more fearful depths of infamy and vice ——

FERD. (*breaking from her in great emotion*). No, by heaven! This is more than I can endure! Lady, I am compelled — Heaven and earth compels me — to make the honest avowal of my sentiments and situation.

LADY M. (*hastening from him*). Oh! not now! By all that is holy I entreat you — spare me in this dreadful moment when my lacerated heart bleeds from a thousand wounds. Be your decision life or death — I dare not — I will not hear it!

FERD. I entreat you, lady! I insist! What I have to say will mitigate my offence, and warmly plead your forgiveness for the past. I have been deceived in you, lady. I expected — nay, I wished to find you deserving my contempt. I came determined to insult you, and to make myself the object of your hate. Happy would it have been for us both had my purpose succeeded! (*He pauses; then proceeds in a gentle and faltering voice.*) Lady, I love! — I love a maid of humble birth — Louisa Miller is her name, the daughter of a music-master. (LADY M. *turns away pale and greatly agitated.*) I

know into what an abyss I plunge myself; but, though prudence bids me conceal my passion, honor overpowers its precepts. I am the criminal — I first destroyed the golden calm of Louisa's innocence — I lulled her heart with aspiring hopes, and surrendered it, like a betrayer, a prey to the wildest of passions. You will bid me remember my rank — my birth — my father — schemes of aggrandisement. But in vain — I love! My hopes become more fervent as the breach widens between nature and the mere conventions of society — between my resolution and worldly prejudices! We shall see whether love or interest is victorious. (LADY M. *during this has retired to the extreme end of the apartment, and covers her face with both hands.* FERDINAND *approaches her.*) Have you aught to answer, lady?

LADY M. (*in a tone of intense suffering*). Nothing! Nothing! but that you destroy yourself and me — and, with us yet a third.

FERD. A third?

LADY M. Never can you marry Louisa; never can you be happy with me. We shall all be the victims of your father's rashness. I can never hope to possess the heart of a husband who has been forced to give me his hand.

FERD. Forced, lady? Forced? And yet given? Will you enforce a hand without a heart? Will you tear from a maiden a man who is the whole world to her? Will you tear a maiden from a man who has centered all his hopes of happiness on her alone? Will you do this, lady? you who but a moment before were the lofty, noble-minded daughter of Britain?

LADY M. I will because I must! (*earnestly and firmly*). My passions, Walter, overcome my tenderness for you. My honor has no alternative. Our union is the talk of the whole city. Every eye, every shaft of ridicule is bent against me. 'Twere a stain which time could never efface should a subject of the prince reject my hand! Appease your father if you have the power! Defend yourself as you best may! my resolution is taken. The mine is fired and I abide the issue.

[*Exit.* FERDINAND *remains in speechless astonishment for some moments; then rushes wildly out.*

SCENE IV.—*Miller's House.*

MILLER MEETING LOUISA AND MRS. MILLER.

MILLER. Ay! ay! I told you how it would be!

LOUISA (*hastening to him with anxiety*). What, father? What?

MILLER (*running up and down the room*). My cloak, there. Quick, quick! I must be beforehand with him. My cloak, I say! Yes, yes! this was just what I expected!

LOUISA. For God's sake, father! tell me?

MRS. M. What is the matter, Miller? What alarms you?

MILLER (*throwing down his wig*). Let that go to the friezer. What is the matter, indeed? And my beard, too, is nearly half an inch long. What's the matter? What do you think, you old carrion. The devil has broke loose, and you may look out for squalls.

MRS. M. There, now, that's just the way! When anything goes wrong it is always my fault.

MILLER. Your fault? Yes, you brimstone fagot! and whose else should it be? This very morning when you were holding forth about that confounded major, did I not say then what would be the consequence? That knave, Worm, has blabbed.

MRS. M. Gracious heavens! But how do you know?

MILLER. How do I know? Look yonder! a messenger of the minister is already at the door inquiring for the fiddler.

LOUISA (*turning pale, and sitting down*). Oh! God! I am in agony!

MILLER. And you, too, with that languishing air? (*laughs bitterly*). But, right! Right! There is an old saying that where the devil keeps a breeding-cage he is sure to hatch a handsome daughter.

MRS. M. But how do you know that Louisa is in question? You may have been recommended to the duke; he may want you in his orchestra.

MILLER (*jumping up, and seizing his fiddlestick*). May the sulphurous rain of hell consume thee! Orchestra,

indeed! Ay, where you, you old procuress, shall howl the treble whilst my smarting back groans the base. (*Throwing himself upon a chair.*) Oh! God in heaven!

LOUISA (*sinks on the sofa, pale as death*). Father! Mother! Oh! my heart sinks within me.

MILLER (*starting up with anger*). But let me only lay hands on that infernal quill-driver! I'll make him skip — be it in this world or the next; if I don't pound him to a jelly, body and soul; if I don't write all the Ten Commandments, the seven Penitential Psalms, the five books of Moses, and the whole of the Prophets upon his rascally hide so distinctly that the blue hieroglyphics shall be legible at the day of judgment — if I don't, may I ——

MRS. M. Yes, yes, curse and swear your hardest! That's the way to frighten the devil! Oh, dear! Oh, dear! Oh, gracious heavens! What shall we do? Who can advise us? Speak, Miller, speak; this silence distracts me! (*She runs screaming up and down the room.*)

MILLER. I will instantly to the minister! I will open my mouth boldly, and tell him all from beginning to end. You knew it before me, and ought to have given me a hint of what was going on! The girl might yet have been advised. It might still have been time to save her! But, no! There was something for your meddling and making, and you must needs add fuel to the fire. Now you have made your bed you may lie on it. As you have brewed so you may drink; I shall take my daughter under my arm and be off with her over the borders.

SCENE V.

MILLER, MRS. MILLER, LOUISA, FERDINAND.

FERD. (*rushes in, terrified, and out of breath*). Has my father been here?

LOUISA (*starts back in horror*). His father? Gracious heaven!

MRS. M. (*wringing her hands*). The minister here? Then it's all over with us!

MILLER (*laughs bitterly*). Thank God! Thank God! Now comes our benefit!

All speaking together.

FERD. (*rushing towards* LOUISA, *and clasping her in his arms*). Mine thou art, though heaven and hell were placed between us!

LOUISA. I am doomed! Speak, Ferdinand! Did you not utter that dreaded name? Your father?

FERD. Be not alarmed! the danger has passed! I have thee again! again thou hast me! Let me regain my breath on thy dear bosom. It was a dreadful hour!

LOUISA. What was a dreadful hour? Answer me, Ferdinand! I die with apprehension!

FERD. (*drawing back, gazing upon her earnestly, then in a solemn tone*). An hour, Louisa, when another's form stepped between my heart and thee — an hour in which my love grew pale before my conscience — when Louisa ceased to be all in all to Ferdinand!

[LOUISA *sinks back upon her chair, and conceals her face.*

(FERDINAND *stands before her in speechless agitation, then turns away from her suddenly and exclaims*), Never, never! Baroness, 'tis impossible! you ask too much! Never can I sacrifice this innocence at your shrine. No, by the eternal God! I cannot recall my oath, which speaks to me from thy soul-thrilling eyes louder than the thunders of heaven! Behold, lady! Inhuman father, look on this! Would you have me destroy this angel? Shall my perfidy kindle a hell in this heavenly bosom? (*turning towards her with firmness*). No! I will bear her to thy throne, Almighty Judge! Thy voice shall declare if my affection be a crime. (*He grasps her hand, and raises her from the sofa.*) Courage, my beloved! — thou hast conquered — and I come forth a victor from the terrible conflict!

LOUISA. No, no, Ferdinand, conceal nothing from me! Declare boldly the dreadful decree! You named your father! You spoke of the baroness! The shivering of death seizes my heart! 'Tis said she is about to be married!

FERD. (*quite overcome, throws himself at her feet*). Yes, and to me, dear unfortunate. Such is my father's will!

LOUISA (*after a deep pause, in a tremulous voice, but*

with assumed resignation). Well! Why am I thus affrighted? Has not my dear father often told me that you never could be mine? But I was obstinate, and believed him not. (*A second pause; she falls weeping into her father's arms.*) Father, thy daughter is thine own again! Father, forgive me! 'Twas not your child's fault that the dream was so heavenly — the waking so terrible!

MILLER. Louisa! Louisa! O merciful heaven! she has lost her senses! My daughter! My poor child! Curses upon thy seducer! Curses upon the pandering mother who threw thee in his way!

MRS. M. (*weeping on* LOUISA'S *neck*). Daughter, do I deserve this curse? God forgive you, major! What has this poor lamb done that you bring this misery upon her?

FERD. (*with resolution*). I will unravel the meshes of these intrigues. I will burst asunder these iron chains of prejudice. As a free-born man will I make my choice, and crush these insect souls with the colossal force of my love! [*Going.*

LOUISA (*rises trembling from the sofa, and attempts to follow him*). Stay, oh, stay! Whither are you going? Father! Mother! He deserts us in this fearful hour!

MRS. M. (*hastens towards him, and detains him*). The president is coming hither? He will ill-use my child! He will ill-use us all, — and yet, major, you are going to leave us.

MILLER (*laughs hysterically*). Leave us. Of course he is! What should hinder him? The girl has given him all she had. (*Grasping* FERDINAND *with one hand, and* LOUISA *with the other.*) Listen to me, young gentleman. The only way out of my house is over my daughter's body. If you possess one single spark of honor await your father's coming; tell him, deceiver, how you stole her young and inexperienced heart; or, by the God who made me! (*thrusting* LOUISA *towards him with violence and passion*) you shall crush before my eyes this trembling worm whom love for you has brought to shame and infamy!

FERD. (*returns, and walks to and fro in deep thought*).

'Tis true, the President's power is great — parental authority is a mighty word — even crimes claim respect when concealed within its folds. He may push that authority far — very far! But love goes beyond it. Hear me, Louisa; give me thy hand! (*clasping it firmly*). As surely as I hope for Heaven's mercy in my dying hour, I swear that the moment which separates these hands shall also rend asunder the thread that binds me to existence!

LOUISA. You terrify me! Turn from me! Your lips tremble! Your eyes roll fearfully!

FERD. Nay, Louisa! fear nothing! It is not madness which prompts my oath! 'tis the choicest gift of Heaven, decision, sent to my aid at that critical moment, when an oppressed bosom can only find find relief in some desperate remedy. I love thee, Louisa! Thou shalt be mine! 'Tis resolved! And now for my father!

[*He rushes out, and is met by the* PRESIDENT.

SCENE VI.

MILLER, MRS. MILLER, LOUISA, FERDINAND, PRESIDENT, *with* SERVANTS.

PRES. (*as he enters*). So! here he is! (*All start in terror.*)

FERD. (*retiring a few paces*). In the house of innocence!

PRES. Where a son learns obedience to his father!

FERD. Permit me to ——

PRES. (*interrupting him, turns to* MILLER). The father, I presume?

MILLER. I am Miller, the musician.

PRES. (*to* MRS. MILLER). And you, the mother?

MRS. M. Yes, alas! her unfortunate mother!

FERD. (*to* MILLER.) Father, take Louisa to her chamber — she is fainting.

PRES. An unnecessary precaution! I will soon arouse her. (*To* LOUISA.) How long have you been acquainted with the President's son?

LOUISA (*with timidity*). Of the President's son I have

never thought. Ferdinand von Walter has paid his addresses to me since November last.

FERD. And he adores her!

PRES. (*to* LOUISA). Has he given you any assurance of his love?

FERD. But a few minutes since, the most solemn, and God was my witness.

PRES. (*to his son angrily*). Silence! You shall have opportunity enough of confessing your folly. (*To* LOUISA.) I await your answer.

LOUISA. He swore eternal love to me.

FERD. And I will keep my oath.

PRES. (*to* FERDINAND). Must I command your silence? (*To* LOUISA). Did you accept his rash vows?

LOUISA (*with tenderness*). I did, and gave him mine in exchange.

FERD. (*resolutely*). The bond is irrevocable——

PRES. (*to* FERDINAND). If you dare to interrupt me again I'll teach you better manners. (*To* LOUISA, *sneeringly*.) And he paid handsomely every time, no doubt?

LOUISA. I do not understand your question.

PRES. (*with an insulting laugh*). Oh, indeed! Well, I only meant to hint that — as everything has its price — I hope you have been more provident than to bestow your favors gratis — or perhaps you were satisfied with merely participating in the pleasure? Eh? how was it?

FERD. (*infuriated*). Hell and confusion! What does this mean?

LOUISA (*to* FERDINAND, *with dignity and emotion*). Baron von Walter, now you are free!

FERD. Father! virtue though clothed in a beggar's garb commands respect!

PRES (*laughing aloud*). A most excellent joke! The father is commanded to honor his son's strumpet!

LOUISA. Oh! Heaven and earth! (*Sinks down in a swoon.*)

FERD. (*drawing his sword*). Father, you gave me life, and, till now, I acknowledged your claim on it. That debt is cancelled. (*Replaces his sword in the scabbard, and points to* LOUISA.) There lies the bond of filial duty torn to atoms!

MILLER (*who has stood apart trembling, now comes forward, by turns gnashing his teeth in rage, and shrinking back in terror*). Your excellency, the child is the father's second self. No offence, I hope! Who strikes the child hits the father — blow for blow — that's our rule here. No offence, I hope!

MRS. M. God have mercy on us! Now the old man has begun — we shall all catch it with a vengeance!

PRES. (*who has not understood what* MILLER *said*). What? is the old pander stirred up? We shall have something to settle together presently, Mr. Pander!

MILLER. You mistake me, my lord. My name is Miller, at your service for an adagio — but, as to lady-birds, I cannot serve you. As long as there is such an assortment at court, we poor citizens can't afford to lay in stock! No offence, I hope!

MRS. M. For Heaven's sake, man, hold your tongue! would you ruin both wife and child?

FERD. (*to his father*). You play but a sorry part here, my lord, and might well have dispensed with these witnesses.

MILLER (*coming nearer, with increasing confidence*). To be plain and above board — No offence, I hope — your excellency may have it all your own way in the Cabinet — but this is my house. I'm your most obedient, very humble servant when I wait upon you with a petition, but the rude, unmannerly intruder I have the right to bundle out — no offence, I hope!

PRES. (*pale with anger, and approaching* MILLER). What? What's that you dare to utter?

MILLER (*retreating a few steps*). Only a little bit of my mind sir — no offence, I hope!

PRES. (*furiously*). Insolent villain! Your impertinence shall procure you a lodging in prison. (*To his servants*). Call in the officers of justice! Away! (*Some of the attendants go out. The* PRESIDENT *paces the stage with a furious air.*) The father shall to prison; the mother and her strumpet daughter to the pillory! Justice shall lend her sword to my rage! For this insult will I have ample amends. Shall such contemptible creatures thwart my plans, and set father and

son against each other with impunity? Tremble, miscreants! I will glut my hate in your destruction — the whole brood of you — father, mother, and daughter shall be sacrificed to my vengeance!

FERD. (*to* MILLER, *in a collected and firm manner*). Oh! not so! Fear not, friends! I am your protector. (*Turning to the* PRESIDENT, *with deference*). Be not so rash, father! For your own sake let me beg of you no violence. There is a corner of my heart where the name of father has never yet been heard. Oh! press not into that!

PRES. Silence, unworthy boy! Rouse not my anger to greater fury!

MILLER (*recovering from a stupor*). Wife, look you to your daughter! I fly to the duke. His highness' tailor — God be praised for reminding me of it at this moment — learns the flute of me — I cannot fail of success. (*Is hastening off.*)

PRES. To the duke, will you? Have you forgotten that I am the threshold over which you must pass, or failing, perish? To the duke, you fool? Try to reach him with your lamentations, when, reduced to a living skeleton, you lie buried in a dungeon five fathoms deep, where light and sound never enter; where darkness goggles at hell with gloating eyes! There gnash thy teeth in anguish; there rattle thy chains in despair, and groan, "Woe is me! This is beyond human endurance!"

SCENE VII.

Officers of Justice — the former.

FERD. (*flies to* LOUISA, *who, overcome with fear, faints in his arms.*) Louisa! —— Help, for God's sake! Terror overpowers her!

[MILLER, *catching up his cane and putting on his hat, prepares for defense.* MRS. MILLER *throws herself on her knees before the* PRESIDENT.

PRES. (*to the officers, showing his star*). Arrest these offenders in the duke's name. Boy, let go that strumpet! Fainting or not — when once her neck is

fitted with the iron collar the mob will pelt her till she revives.

MRS. MILLER. Mercy, your excellency! Mercy! mercy!

MILLER (*snatching her from the ground with violence*). Kneel to God, you howling fool, and not to — villains — since I must to prison any way!

PRES. (*biting his lips.*) You may be out in your reckoning, scoundrel! There are still gallows to spare! (*To the officers.*) Must I repeat my orders?

[*They approach* LOUISA — FERDINAND *places himself before her.*

FERD. (*fiercely*). Touch her who dare! (*He draws his sword and flourishes it.*) Let no one presume to lay a finger on her, whose life is not well insured. (*To the* PRESIDENT.) As you value your own safety, father, urge me no further!

PRES. (*to the officers in a threatening voice*). At your peril, cowards! (*They again attempt to seize* LOUISA.)

FERD. Hell and furies! Back, I say! (*Driving them away.*) Once more, father, I warn you — have some thought for your own safety! Drive me not to extremity!

PRES. (*enraged to the officers*). Scoundrels! Is this your obedience? (*The officers renew their efforts.*)

FERD. Well, if it must be so (*attacking and wounding several of them*), Justice forgive me!

PRES. (*exasperated to the utmost*). Let me see whether I, too, must feel your weapon! (*He seizes* LOUISA *and delivers her to an officer.*)

FERD. (*laughing bitterly*). Father! father! Your conduct is a galling satire upon Providence, who has so ill understood her people as to make bad statesmen of excellent executioners!

PRES. (*to the officers*). Away with her!

FERD. Father, if I cannot prevent it, she must stand in the pillory — but by her side will also stand the son of the president. Do you still insist?

PRES. The more entertaining will be the exhibition. Away with her!

FERD. I will pledge the honor of an officer's sword for her. Do you still insist?

PRES. Your sword is already familiar with disgrace. Away! away! You know my will.

FERD. (*wrests* LOUISA *from the officer and holds her with one arm, with the other points his sword at her bosom.*) Father, rather than tamely see my wife branded with infamy I will plunge this sword into her bosom. Do you still insist?

PRES. Do it, if the point be sharp enough!

FERD. (*releases* LOUISA, *and looks wildly towards heaven*). Be thou witness, Almighty God, that I have left no human means untried to save her! Forgive me now if I have recourse to hellish means. While you are leading her to the pillory (*speaking loudly in the* PRESIDENT'S *ear*), I will publish throughout the town a pleasant history of how a president's chair may be gained!

[*Exit.*

PRES. (*as if thunder-struck*). How? What said he? Ferdinand! Release her instantly! (*Rushes after his son.*)

ACT III.

SCENE I.

Room at the President's. Enter PRESIDENT *and* WORM.

PRES. That was an infernal piece of business!

WORM. Just what I feared, your excellency. Opposition may inflame the enthusiast, but never converts him.

PRES. I had placed my whole reliance upon the success of this attempt. I made no doubt but if the girl were once publicly disgraced, he would be obliged as an officer and a gentleman to resign her.

WORM. An admirable idea!—had you but succeeded in disgracing her.

PRES. And yet—when I reflect on the matter coolly—I ought not to have suffered myself to be overawed. It was a threat which he never could have meant seriously.

WORM. Be not too certain of that! There is no folly too gross for excited passion! You say that the

baron has always looked upon government with an eye of disapprobation. I can readily believe it. The principles which he brought with him from college are ill-suited to our atmosphere. What have the fantastic visions of personal nobility and greatness of soul to do in court, where 'tis the perfection of wisdom to be great and little by turns, as occasion demands? The baron is too young and too fiery to take pleasure in the slow and crooked paths of intrigue. That alone can give impulse to his ambition which seems glorious and romantic!

PRES. (*impatiently*). But how will these sagacious remarks advance our affairs?

WORM. They will point out to your excellency where the wound lies, and so, perhaps, help you to find a remedy. Such a character — pardon the observation — ought never to have been made a confidant, or should never have been roused to enmity. He detests the means by which you have risen to power! Perhaps it is only the *son* that has hitherto sealed the lips of the *betrayer!* Give him but a fair opportunity for throwing off the bonds imposed upon him by nature! only convince him, by unrelenting opposition to his passion, that you are no longer an affectionate father, and that moment the duties of a patriot will rush upon him with irresistible force! Nay, the high-wrought idea of offering so unparalleled a sacrifice at the shrine of justice might of itself alone have charms sufficient to reconcile him to the ruin of a parent!

PRES. Worm! Worm! To what a horrible abyss do you lead me!

WORM. Never fear, my lord, I will lead you back in safety! May I speak without restraint?

PRES. (*throwing himself into a seat*). Freely, as felon with felon.

WORM. Forgive me, then. It seems to me that you have to ascribe all your influence as president to the courtly art of intrigue; why not resort to the same means for attaining your ends as a father? I well remember with what seeming frankness you invited your predecessor to a game at piquet, and caroused half the night with him over bumpers of Burgundy; and yet it was the

same night on which the great mine you had planned to annihilate him was to explode. Why did you make a public exhibition of enmity to the major? You should by no means have let it appear that you knew anything of his love affair. You should have made the girl the object of your attacks and have preserved the affection of your son; like the prudent general who does not engage the prime of the enemy's force but creates disaffection among the ranks?

PRES. How could this have been effected?

WORM. In the simplest manner — even now the game is not entirely lost! Forget for a time that you are a father. Do not contend against a passion which opposition only renders more formidable. Leave me to hatch, from the heat of their own passions, the basilisk which shall destroy them.

PRES. I am all attention.

WORM. Either my knowledge of human character is very small, or the major is as impetuous in jealousy as in love. Make him suspect the girl's constancy, — whether probable or not does not signify. One grain of leaven will be enough to ferment the whole mass.

PRES. But where shall we find that grain?

WORM. Now, then, I come to the point. But first explain to me how much depends upon the major's compliance. How far is it of consequence that the romance with the music-master's daughter should be brought to a conclusion and the marriage with Lady Milford effected?

PRES. How can you ask me, Worm? If the match with Lady Milford is broken off I stand a fair chance of losing my whole influence; on the other hand, if I force the major's consent, of losing my head.

WORM (*with animation*). Now have the kindness to listen to me. The major must be entangled in a web. Your whole power must be employed against his mistress. We must make her write a love-letter, address it to a third party, and contrive to drop it cleverly in the way of the major.

PRES. Absurd proposal! As if she would consent to sign her own death-warrant.

WORM. She must do so if you will but let me follow my own plan. I know her gentle heart thoroughly; she has but two vulnerable sides by which her conscience can be attacked; they are her father and the major. The latter is entirely out of the question; we must, therefore, make the most of the musician.

PRES. In what way?

WORM. From the description your excellency gave me of what passed in his house nothing can be easier than to terrify the father with the threat of a criminal process. The person of his favorite, and of the keeper of the seals, is in some degree the representative of the duke himself, and he who offends the former is guilty of treason towards the latter. At any rate I will engage with these pretences to conjure up such a phantom as shall scare the poor devil out of his seven senses.

PRES. But recollect, Worm, the affair must not be carried so far as to become serious.

WORM. Nor shall it. It shall be carried no further than is necessary to frighten the family into our toils. The musician, therefore, must be quietly arrested. To make the necessity yet more urgent, we may also take possession of the mother; — and then we begin to talk of criminal process, of the scaffold, and of imprisonment for life, and make the daughter's letter the sole condition of the parent's release.

PRES. Excellent! Excellent! Now I begin to understand you!

WORM. Louisa loves her father — I might say even to adoration! The danger which threatens his life, or at least his freedom — the reproaches of her conscience for being the cause of his misfortunes — the impossibility of ever becoming the major's wife — the confusion of her brain, which I take upon myself to produce — all these considerations make our plan certain of success. She must be caught in the snare.

PRES. But my son — will he not instantly get scent of it? Will it not make him yet more desperate?

WORM. Leave that to me, your excellency! The old folks shall not be set at liberty till they and their daughter have taken the most solemn oath to keep the whole

transaction secret, and never to confess the deception.

PRES. An oath! Ridiculous! What restraint can an oath be?

WORM. None upon us, my lord, but the most binding upon people of their stamp. Observe, how dexterously by this measure we shall both reach the goal of our desires. The girl loses at once the affection of her lover, and her good name; the parents will lower their tone, and, thoroughly humbled by misfortune, will esteem it an act of mercy, if, by giving her my hand, I re-establish their daughter's reputation.

PRES. (*shaking his head and smiling*). Artful villain! I confess myself outdone — no devil could spin a finer snare! The scholar excels his master. The next question is, to whom must the letter be addressed — with whom to accuse her of having an intrigue?

WORM. It must necessarily be some one who has all to gain or all to lose by your son's decision in this affair.

PRES. (*after a moment's reflection*) I can think of no one but the marshal.

WORM (*shrugs his shoulders*). The marshal! He would certainly not be my choice were I Louisa Miller.

PRES. And why not? What a strange notion! A man who dresses in the height of fashion — who carries with him an atmosphere of eau de mille fleurs and musk — who can garnish every silly speech with a handful of ducats — could all this possibly fail to overcome the delicacy of a tradesman's daughter? No, no, my good friend, jealousy is not quite so hard of belief. I shall send for the marshal immediately. (*Rings.*)

WORM. While your excellency takes care of him, and of the fiddler's arrest, I will go and indite the aforesaid letter.

PRES. (*seats himself at his writing-table*). Do so; and, as soon as it is ready, bring it hither for my perusal.

[*Exit* WORM.

[*The* PRESIDENT, *having written, rises and hands the paper to a servant who enters.*

See this arrest executed without a moment's delay, and

let Marshal von Kalb be informed that I wish to see him immediately.

SERV. The marshal's carriage has just stopped at your lordship's door.

PRES. So much the better — as for the arrest, let it be managed with such precaution that no disturbance arise.

SERV. I will take care, my lord.

PRES. You understand me? The business must be kept quite secret.

SERV. Your excellency shall be obeyed.

[*Exit* SERVANT.

SCENE II.

The PRESIDENT — MARSHALL KALB.

MARSHAL (*hastily*). I have just looked in, *en passant*, my dear friend! How are you? How do you get on? We are to have the grand opera Dido to-night! Such a conflagragation! — a whole town will be in flames! — you will come to the blaze of course — eh?

PRES. I have conflagration enough in my own house, one that threatens the destruction of all I possess. Be seated, my dear marshal. You arrive very opportunely to give me your advice and assistance in a certain business which will either advance our fortunes or utterly ruin us both!

MARSHAL. Don't alarm me so, my dear frind!

PRES. As I said before, it must exalt or ruin us entirely! You know my project respecting the major and Lady Milford — you are not ignorant how necessary this union is to secure both our fortunes! Marshal, our plans threaten to come to naught. My son refuses to marry her!

MARSHAL. Refuses! Refuses to marry her? But, my goodness! I have published the news through the whole town. The union is the general topic of conversation.

PRES. Then you will be talked of by all the town as a spreader of false reports, — in short, Ferdinand loves another.

MARSHAL. Pooh! you are joking! As if that were an obstacle?

PRES. With such an enthusiast a most insurmountable one!

MARSHAL. Can he be mad enough to spurn his good-fortune? Eh?

PRES. Ask him yourself and you'll hear what he will answer.

MARSHAL. But, *mon Dieu!* what can he answer?

PRES. That he will publish to the world the crime by which we rose to power — that he will denounce our forged letters and receipts — that he will send us both to the scaffold. That is what he can answer.

MARSHAL. Are you out of your mind?

PRES. Nay, that is what he has already answered? He was actually on the point of putting these threats into execution; and it was only by the most abject submission that I could persuade him to abandon his design. What say you to this, marshal?

MARSHAL (*with a look of bewildered stupidity*). I am at my wits' end!

PRES. That might have blown over. But my spies have just brought me notice that the grand cupbearer, Von Bock, is on the point of offering himself as a suitor to her ladyship.

MARSHAL. You drive me distracted! Whom did you say? Von Bock? Don't you know that we are mortal enemies? And don't you know why?

PRES. The first word that I ever heard of it!

MARSHAL. My dear count! You shall hear — your hair will stand on end! You must remember the famous court ball — it is now just twenty years ago. It was the first time that English country-dances were introduced — you remember how the hot wax trickled from the great chandelier on Count Meerschaum's blue and silver domino. Surely, you cannot have forgotten that affair!

PRES. Who could forget so remarkable a circumstance!

MARSHAL. Well, then, in the heat of the dance Princess Amelia lost her garter. The whole ball, as you may imagine, was instantly thrown into confusion. Von

Bock and myself — we were then fellow-pages — crept through the whole saloon in search of the garter. At length I discovered it. Von Bock perceives my good-fortune — rushes forward — tears it from my hands, and, just fancy — presents it to the princess, and so cheated me of the honor I had so fortunately earned. What do you think of that?

PRES. 'Twas most insolent!

MARSHAL. I thought I should have fainted upon the spot. A trick so malicious was beyond the powers of mortal endurance. At length I recovered myself; and, approaching the princess, said, — "Von Bock, 'tis true, was fortunate enough to present the garter to your highness; but he who first discovered that treasure finds his reward in silence, and is dumb!"

PRES. Bravo, marshal! Admirably said! Most admirable!

MARSHAL. And is dumb! But till the day of judgment will I remember his conduct — the mean, sneaking sycophant! And as if that were not aggravation enough, he actually, as we were struggling on the ground for the garter, rubbed all the powder from one side of my peruke with his sleeve, and ruined me for the rest of the evening.

PRES. This is the man who will marry Lady Milford, and consequently soon take the lead at court.

MARSHAL. You plunge a dagger in my heart! But why must he? Why should he marry her? Why he? Where is the necessity?

PRES. Because Ferdinand refuses her, and there is no other candidate.

MARSHAL. But is there no possible method of obtaining your son's consent? Let the measure be ever so extravagant or desperate — there is nothing to which I should not willingly consent in order to supplant the hated Von Bock.

PRES. I know but one means of accomplishing this, and that rests entirely with you.

MARSHAL. With me? Name it, my dear count, name it!

PRES. You must set Ferdinand and his mistress against each other.

MARSHAL. Against each other? How do you mean? —and how would that be possible.

PRES. Everything is ours could we make him suspect the girl.

MARSHAL. Ah, of theft, you mean?

PRES. Pshaw! —he would never believe that! No, no —I mean that she is carrying on an intrigue with another.

MARSHAL. And this other, who is he to be?

PRES. Yourself!

MARSHAL. How? Must I be her lover? Is she of noble birth?

PRES. What signifies that? What an idea! —she is the daughter of a musician.

MARSHAL. A plebeian? —that will never do!

PRES. What will never do? Nonsense, man! Who in the name of wonder would think of asking a pair of rosy cheeks for their owner's pedigree?

MARSHAL. But consider, my dear count, a married man! And my reputation at court!

PRES. Oh! that's quite another thing! I beg a thousand pardons, marshal; I was not aware that a man of unblemished morals held a higher place in your estimation than a man of power! Let us break up our conference.

MARSHAL. Be not so hasty, count. I did not mean to say that.

PRES. (*coldly.*) No —no! You are perfectly right. I, too, am weary of office. I shall throw up the game, tender my resignation to the duke, and congratulate Von Bock on his accession to the premiership. This duchy is not all the world.

MARSHAL. And what am I to do? It is very fine for you to talk thus! You are a man of learning! But I — *mon Dieu!* What shall I be if his highness dismisses me?

PRES. A stale jest! — a thing out of fashion!

MARSHAL. I implore you, my dearest, my most valued friend. Abandon those thoughts. I will consent to everything!

PRES. Will you lend your name to an assignation to which this Louisa Miller shall invite you in writing?

MARSHAL. Well, in God's name let it be so!

PRES. And drop the letter where the major cannot fail to find it.

MARSHAL. For instance, on the parade, where I can let it fall as if accidentally in drawing out my handkerchief.

PRES. And when the baron questions you will you assume the character of a favored rival?

MARSHAL. *Mort de ma vie!* I'll teach him manners! I'll cure him of interfering in my amours!

PRES. Good! Now you speak in the right key. The letter shall be written immediately! Come in the evening to receive it, and we will talk over the part you are to play.

MARSHAL. I will be with you the instant I have paid sixteen visits of the very highest importance. Permit me, therefore, to take my leave without delay. (*Going.*)

PRES. (*rings*). I reckon upon your discretion, marshal.

MARSHAL (*calls back*). Ah, *mon Dieu!* you know me! [*Exit* MARSHAL.

SCENE III. *The* PRESIDENT *and* WORM.

WORM. The music-master and his wife have been arrested without the least disturbance. Will your excellency read this letter?

PRES. (*having read it*). Excellent! Excellent, my dear secretary! poison like this would convert health itself into jaundiced leprosy. The marshal, too, has taken the bait. Now then away with my proposals to the father, and then lose no time with the daughter.

[*Exeunt on different sides.*

SCENE IV. — *Room in* MILLER'S *House.*

LOUISA *and* FERDINAND.

LOUISA. Cease, I implore you! I expect no more days of happiness. All my hopes are levelled with the dust.

FERD. All mine are exalted to heaven! My father's

passions are roused! He will direct his whole artillery against us! He will force me to become an unnatural son. I will not answer for my filial duty. Rage and despair will wring from me the dark secret that my father is an assassin! The son will deliver the parent into the hands of the executioner. This is a moment of extreme danger, and extreme danger alone could prompt my love to take so daring a leap! Hear me, Louisa! A thought, vast and immeasurable as my love, has arisen in my soul — *Thou*, Louisa, and *I*, and *Love!* Lies not a whole heaven within this circle? Or dost thou feel that there is still something wanting?

Louisa. Oh! cease! No more! I tremble to think what you would say.

Ferd. If we have no longer a claim upon the world, why should we seek its approbation? Why venture where nothing can be gained and all may be lost? Will thine eyes sparkle less brightly reflected by the Baltic waves than by the waters of the Rhine or the Elbe? Where Louise loves me there is my native land! Thy footsteps will make the wild and sandy desert far more attractive than the marble halls of my ancestors. Shall we miss the pomp of cities? Be we where we may, Louisa, a sun will rise and a sun will set — scenes before which the most glorious achievements of art grow pale and dim! Though we serve God no more in his consecrated churches, yet the night shall spread her solemn shadows round us; the changing moon shall hear our confession, and a glorious congregation of stars join in our prayers! Think you our talk of love can ever be exhausted! Oh, no! One smile from Louisa were a theme for centuries — the dream of life will be over ere I can exhaust the charms of a single tear.

Louisa. And hast thou no duty save that of love?

Ferd. (*embracing her*). None so sacred as thy peace of mind!

Louisa (*very seriously*). Cease, then, and leave me. I have a father who possesses no treasure save one only daughter. To-morrow he will be sixty years old — that he will fall a victim to the vengeance of the President is most certain!

FERD. (*interrupting her*). He shall accompany us. Therefore no more objections, my beloved. I will go and convert my valuables into gold, and raise money on my father's credit! It is lawful to plunder a robber, and are not his treasures the price for which he has sold his country? This night, when the clock strikes one, a carriage will stop at your door — throw yourself into it, and we fly!

LOUISA. Pursued by your father's curse! a curse, unthinking one, which is never pronounced in vain even by murderers — which the avenging angel hears when uttered by a malefactor in his last agony — which, like a fury, will fearfully pursue the fugitives from shore to shore! No, my beloved! If naught but a crime can preserve you to me, I still have courage to resign you!

FERD. (*mutters gloomily*). Indeed!

LOUISA. Resign you? Oh! horrible beyond all measure is the thought. Horrible enough to pierce the immortal spirit and pale the glowing cheeks of joy! Ferdinand! To resign you! Yet how can one resign what one never possessed? Your heart is the property of your station. My claim was sacrilege, and, shuddering, I withdraw it!

FERD. (*with convulsed features, and biting his underlip*). You withdraw it!

LOUISA. Nay! look upon me, dearest Ferdinand. Gnash not your teeth so bitterly! Come, let my example rouse your slumbering courage. Let me be the heroine of this moment. Let me restore to a father his lost son. I will renounce a union which would sever the bonds by which society is held together, and overthrow the landmarks of social order. I am the criminal. My bosom has nourished proud and foolish wishes, and my present misery is a just punishment. Oh! leave me then the sweet, the consoling idea that mine is the sacrifice. Canst thou deny me this last satisfaction? (FERDINAND, *stupefied with agitation and anger, seizes a violin and strikes a few notes upon it; and then tears away the strings, dashes the instrument upon the ground, and, stamping it to pieces, bursts into a loud laugh.*) Walter! God in Heaven! What mean you? Be not thus un-

manned! This hour requires fortitude; it is the hour of separation! You have a heart, dear Walter; I know that heart — warm as life is your love — boundless and immeasurable — bestow it on one more noble, more worthy — she need not envy the most fortunate of her sex! (*Striving to repress her tears.*) You shall see me no more! Leave the vain disappointed girl to bewail her sorrow in sad and lonely seclusion; where her tears will flow unheeded. Dead and gone are all my hopes of happiness in this world; yet still shall I inhale ever and anon the perfumes of the faded wreath! (*Giving him her trembling hand, while her face is turned away.*) Baron Walter, farewell!

FERD. (*recovering from the stupor in which he was plunged*). Louisa, I fly! Do you indeed refuse to follow me?

LOUISA (*who has retreated to the further end of the apartment, conceals her countenance with her hands*). My duty bids me stay, and suffer.

FERD. Serpent! thou liest — some other motive chains thee here!

LOUISA (*in a tone of the most heartfelt sorrow*). Encourage that belief. Haply it may make our parting more supportable.

FERD. What? Oppose freezing duty to fiery love! And dost thou think to cheat me with that delusion? Some rival detains thee here, and woe be to thee and him should my suspicions be confirmed! [*Exit.*

SCENE V.

LOUISA (*she remains for some time motionless in the seat upon which she has thrown herself. At length she rises, comes forward, and looks timidly around*). Where can my parents be? My father promised to return in a few minutes; yet full five dreadful hours have passed since his departure. Should any accident —— good Heavens! What is come over me? Why does my heart palpitate so violently? (*Here* WORM *enters, and remains standing unobserved in the background.*) It can be nothing real. 'Tis but the terrible delusion of my

over-heated blood. When once the soul is wrapped in terror the eye behold spectres in every shadow.

Scene VI.

Louisa *and* Worm.

Worm (*approaches her*). Good evening, miss.

Louisa. Heavens! who speaks! (*Perceives him, and starts back in terror.*) Ha! Dreadful! dreadful! I fear some dire misfortune is even now realizing the forebodings of my soul! (*To* Worm, *with a look of disdain.*) Do you seek the president? He is no longer here.

Worm. 'Tis you I seek, miss!

Louisa. I wonder, then, that you did not direct your steps towards the market-place.

Worm. What should I do there?

Louisa. Release your betrothed from the pillory.

Worm. Louisa, you cherish some false suspicion ——

Louisa (*sharply interrupting him*). What is your business with me?

Worm. I come with a message from your father.

Louisa (*agitated*). From my father? Oh! Where is my father?

Worm. Where he would fain not be!

Louisa. Quick, quick, for God's sake! Oh! my foreboding heart! Where is my father!

Worm. In prison, if you needs must know!

Louisa (*with a look towards heaven*). This, too! This, too! In prison, said you? And why in prison?

Worm. It is the duke's order.

Louisa. The duke's?

Worm. Who thinking his own dignity offended by the insults offered to the person of his representative ——

Louisa. How? How? Oh ye Almighty Powers!

Worm. —— Has resolved to inflict the most exemplary punishment.

Louisa. This was still wanting! This! Yes, in truth. I now feel that my heart does love another besides Ferdinand! That could not be allowed to escape! The prince's dignity offended? Heavenly Providence! Save,

oh! save my sinking faith! (*After a moment's pause, she turns to* WORM.) And Ferdinand?

WORM. Must choose between Lady Milford's hand and his father's curse and disinheritance.

LOUISA. Terrible choice! — and yet — yet is he the happier of the two. He has no father to lose — and yet to have none is misery enough! My father imprisoned for treason — my Ferdinand compelled to choose between Lady Milford's hand or a parent's curse and disinheritance! Truly admirable! for even villany so perfect is perfection! Perfection? No! something is still wanting to complete that. Where is my mother?

WORM. In the house of correction.

LOUISA (*with a smile of despair*). Now the measure is full! It is full, and I am free — released from all duties — all sorrows — all joys! Released even from Providence! I have nothing more to do with it! (*A dreadful pause.*) Have you aught else to communicate? Speak freely — now I can hear anything with indifference.

WORM. All that has happened you already know.

LOUISA. But not that which is yet to happen! (*Another pause, during which she surveys* WORM *from head to foot.*) Unfortunate man! you have entered on a melancholy employment, which can never lead you to happiness. To cause misery to others is sad enough — but to be the messenger of evil is horrible indeed — to be the first to shriek the screech-owl's song, to stand by when the bleeding heart trembles upon the iron shaft of necessity, and the Christian doubts the existence of a God — Heaven protect me! Wert thou paid a ton of gold for every tear of anguish which thou must witness, I would not be a wretch like thee! What is there yet to happen?

WORM. I know not.

LOUISA. You pretend not to know? This light-shunning embassy trembles at the sound of words, but the spectre betrays itself in your ghastly visage. What is there yet to happen? You said the duke will inflict upon him a most exemplary punishment. What call you exemplary?

WORM. Ask me no more.

LOUISA. Terrible man! Some hangman must have schooled thee! Else thou hadst not so well learned to prolong the torture of thy victim before giving the finishing stroke to the agonized heart! Speak! What fate awaits my father? Death thou canst announce with a laughing sneer — what then must that be which thou dost hesitate to disclose? Speak out! Let me at once receive the overwhelming weight of thy tidings! What fate awaits my father?

WORM. A criminal process.

LOUISA. But what is that? I am an ignorant, innocent girl, and understand but little of your fearful terms of law. What mean you by a criminal process?

WORM. Judgment upon life or death.

LOUISA (*firmly*). Ah! I thank you.

[*Exit hastily by a side door.*

WORM (*alarmed*). What means this? Should the simpleton perchance — confusion! Surely she will not — I must follow her. I am answerable for her life. (*As he is going towards the door,* LOUISA *returns, wrapped in a cloak.*)

LOUISA. Your pardon, Mr. Secretary, I must lock the door.

WORM. Whither in such haste?

LOUISA (*passing him*). To the duke.

WORM (*alarmed, detains her*). How? Whither?

LOUISA. To the duke. Do you not hear? Even to that very duke whose will is to decide upon my father's life or death. Yet no? — 'tis not his will that decides, but the will of wicked men who surround his throne. He lends naught to this process, save the shadow of his majesty, and his royal signature.

WORM (*with a burst of laughter*). To the duke!

LOUISA. I know the meaning of that sneering laugh — you would tell me that I shall find no compassion there. But though I may meet (God preserve me!) with nothing but scorn — scorn at my sorrows — yet will I to the duke. I have been told that the great never know what misery is; that they fly from the knowledge of it. But I will teach the duke what misery is; I will paint to him, in

all the writhing agonies of death, what misery is; I will cry aloud in wailings that shall creep through the very marrow of his bones, what misery is; and, while at my picture his hairs shall stand on end like quills upon the porcupine, will I shriek into his affrighted ear, that in the hour of death the sinews of these mighty gods of earth shall shrivel and shrink, and that at the day of judgment beggars and kings shall be weighed together in the same balance. (*Going.*)

WORM (*ironically*). By all means go to the duke! You can really do nothing more prudent; I advise you heartily to the step. Only go, and I give you my word that the duke will grant your suit.

LOUISA (*stopping suddenly*). What said you? Do you yourself advise the step? (*Returns hastily*). What am I about to do? Something wicked surely, since this man approves it — how know you that the prince will grant my suit?

WORM. Because he will not have to grant it unrewarded.

LOUISA. Not unrewarded? And what price does he set on his humanity?

WORM. The person of the fair suppliant will be payment enough!

LOUISA (*stopping for a moment in mute dismay — in a feeble voice*). Almighty God!

WORM. And I trust that you will not think your father's life over-valued when 'tis purchased at so gracious a price.

LOUISA (*with great indignation*). True, oh! true! The great are entrenched from truth behind their own vices, safely as behind the swords of cherubims. The Almighty protect thee, father! Your child can die — but not sin for thee.

WORM. This will be agreeable news for the poor disconsolate old man. "My Louisa," says he, "has bowed me down to the earth; but my Louisa will raise me up again." I hasten to him with your answer. (*Affects to be about to depart.*)

LOUISA (*flies after him and holds him back*). Stay! stay! one moment's patience! How nimble this Satan

is, when his business is to drive humanity distracted! I have bowed him to the earth! I must raise him up again! Speak to me! Counsel me! What can I, what must I do?

WORM. There is but one means of saving him!

LOUISA. What is that means?

WORM. And your father approves of it——

LOUISA. My father? Oh! name that means.

WORM. It is easy for you to execute.

LOUISA. I know of nothing harder than infamy!

WORM. Suppose you were to release the major from his engagement?

LOUISA. Release him! Do you mock me? Do you call that a choice to which force compelled me?

WORM. You mistake me, dear girl! The major must resign you willingly, and be the first to retract his engagement.

LOUISA. That he will never do.

WORM. So it appears. Should we, do you think, have had recourse to you were it not that you alone are able to help us?

LOUISA. I cannot compel him to hate me.

WORM. We will try! Be seated.

LOUISA (*drawing back*). Man! What is brooding in thy artful brain?

WORM. Be seated. Here are paper, pens, and ink. Write what I dictate.

LOUISA (*sitting down in the greatest uneasiness*). What must I write? To whom must I write?

WORM. To your father's executioner.

LOUISA. Ah! How well thou knowest to torture souls to thy purpose. (*Takes a pen.*)

WORM (*dictating to her*). "My dear Sir. (LOUISA *writes with a trembling hand,*) three days, three insupportable days, have already passed — already passed — since last we met."

LOUISA (*starts, and lays down her pen*). To whom is the letter?

WORM. To your father's executioner.

LOUISA. Oh! my God!

WORM. "But for this you must blame the major —

the major — who watches me all day with the vigilance of an Argus."

LOUISA (*starting up*). Villany! Villany beyond all precedent! To whom is the letter?

WORM. To your father's executioner.

LOUISA (*paces to and fro, wringing her hands*). No, no, no! This is tyrannical! Oh Heaven! If mortals provoke thee, punish them like mortals; but wherefore must I be placed between two precipices? Wherefore am I hurled by turns from death to infamy, from infamy to death? Wherefore is my neck made the footstool of this blood-sucking fiend? No; do what thou wilt, I will never write that!

WORM (*seizing his hat*). As you please, miss! It rests entirely on your own pleasure!

LOUISA. Pleasure, say'st thou? On my own pleasure? Go, barbarian! Suspend some unfortunate over the pit of hell; then make your demands, and ask your victim if it be his pleasure to grant your request! Oh! Thou knowest but too well that the bonds of nature bind our hearts as firmly as chains! But all is now alike indifferent. Dictate! I cease to think! Artifices of hell, I yield to ye! (*She resumes her seat at the table.*)

WORM. "With the vigilance of an Argus." Have you written it?

LOUISA. Proceed, proceed!

WORM. "The president was here yesterday. It was amusing to see how warm the poor major was in defence of my honor."

LOUISA. Excellent! Excellent! Oh! Admirable! Quick! quick, go on!

WORM. "I had recourse to a swoon — a swoon — that I might not laugh aloud" ——

LOUISA. Oh, Heavens!

WORM. "But the mask which I have worn so long is becoming insupportable — insupportable. Oh! if I could but rid myself of him."

LOUISA (*rises, and walks a few turns with her head bent down, as if she sought something upon the floor: then returns to her place, and continues to write*). "Rid myself of him."

WORM. "He will be on duty to-morrow — observe when he leaves me, and hasten to the usual place." Have you written "the usual place?"

LOUISA. Everything, everything!

WORM. "To the usual place, to meet your devotedly attached Louisa."

LOUISA. Now then, the address?

WORM. "To Marshal Von Kalb."

LOUISA. Eternal Providence! A name as foreign to my ear as these scandalous lines are to my heart! (*She rises, and for some moments surveys the writing with a vacant gaze. At length she hands it to* WORM, *speaking in a voice trembling and exhausted.*) Take it, sir! What I now put into your hands is my good name. It is Ferdinand — it is the whole joy of my life! You have it, and now I am a beggar ——

WORM. Oh! Not so! Despair not, dear girl! You inspire me with the most heartfelt pity! Perhaps — who knows? I might even now overlook certain parts of your conduct — yes! Heaven is my witness, how deeply I compassionate your sorrows!

LOUISA (*giving him a piercing look*). Do not explain yourself! You are on the point of asking something more terrible than all.

WORM (*attempting to kiss her hand*). What if I asked this little hand? Would that be terrible, Louisa?

LOUISA (*with great indignation*). Yes! for I should strangle you on the bridal night: and for such a deed I would joyfully yield my body to be torn on the rack! (*She is going, but comes hurriedly back.*) Is all settled between us, sir? May the dove be released?

WORM. A trifle yet remains, maiden! You must swear, by the holy sacrament, to acknowledge this letter for your free and voluntary act.

LOUISA. Oh God! Oh God! And wilt thou grant thine own seal to confirm the works of hell? (WORM *leads her away.*)

ACT IV.

SCENE I. *Saloon in the* PRESIDENT'S *House.*

FERDINAND VON WALTER *enters in great excitement with an open letter in his hand, and is met by a* SERVANT.

FERD. Is the marshal here?

SERV. My lord, his highness the president is inquiring for you.

FERD. Fire and fury! I ask is the marshal here?

SERV. His honor is engaged at the faro-table, above stairs.

FERD. Tell his honor, in the name of all the devils in hell, to make his appearance this instant!

[*Exit* SERVANT.

SCENE II.

FERD. (*hastily reading the letter, at one moment seeming petrified with astonishment, at the next pacing the room with fury*). Impossible! quite impossible! A form so heavenly cannot hide so devilish a heart. And yet! — and yet! Though all the angels of heaven should descend on earth and proclaim her innocence — though heaven and earth, the Creator and the created, should, with one accord, vouch for her innocence — it is her hand, her own hand! Treachery, monstrous, infernal treachery, such as humanity never before witnessed! This, then, was the reason she so resolutely opposed our flight! This it was — Oh, God! Now I awake from my dream! Now the veil is lifted! This, then, is why she surrendered with so much seeming heroism her claims on my affection, and all but cheated me with her saint-like demeanor! (*He traverses the chamber rapidly, and then remains for some moments in deep thought.*) To fathom my heart to its very core! To reciprocate every lofty sentiment, every gentle emotion, every fiery ebullition! To sympathize with every secret breathing of my soul! To study me even in her tears! To mount with me to the sublimest heights of passion — to brave with me, undaunted, each fearful precipice! God of heaven! And was all this deceit? mere grimace? Oh, if falsehood can assume so

lovely an appearance of truth why has no devil yet lied himself back into heaven?

When I unfolded to her the dangers which threatened our affection, with what convincing artifice did the false one turn pale! With what overpowering dignity did she repulse my father's licentious scoffs! yet at that very moment the deceiver was conscious of her guilt! Nay, did she not even undergo the fiery ordeal of truth? Forsooth, the hypocrite fainted! What must now be thy language, sensibility, since coquettes faint? How wilt thou vindicate thyself, innocence?—for even strumpets faint?

She knows her power over me—she has seen through my very heart! My soul shone conspicuous in my eyes at the blush of her first kiss. And that she should have felt nothing! or perhaps felt only the triumph of her art; whilst my happy delirium fancied that in her I embraced a whole heaven, my wildest wishes were hushed! No thought but of her and eternity was present to my mind. Oh, God! and yet she felt nothing? Nothing? but that her artifice had triumphed! That her charms were flattered! Death and vengeance! Nothing, but that I was betrayed!

Scene III.

Ferdinand, *the* Marshal.

Marshal (*tripping into the room*). I am told, my dear baron, that you have expressed a wish ——

Ferd. (*muttering to himself*). To break your rascally neck. (*Aloud.*) Marshal, this letter must have dropped out of your pocket on parade. (*With a malicious smile.*) And I have been the fortunate finder.

Marshal. You?

Ferd. By a singular coincidence! Now, balance thy account with heaven!

Marshal. You quite alarm me, baron!

Ferd. Read it, sir, read it! (*Turning from him.*) If I am not good enough for a lover perhaps I may do for a pimp. (*While the* Marshal *reads,* Ferdinand *goes to the wall and takes down the pistols.*)

KALB (*throws the letter upon the table, and rushes off*). Confusion!

FERD. (*leads him back by the arm*). Wait a little, my dear marshal! The intelligence contained in that letter appears to be agreeable! The finder must have his reward. (*Showing him the pistols.*)

MARSHAL (*starts back in alarm*). Have you lost your senses, baron?

FERD. (*in a terrible voice*). I have more than enough left to rid the world of such a scoundrel as you! Choose one of these instantly! (*He forces a pistol into the* MARSHAL'S *hand, and then draws out his handkerchief.*) And now take the other end of this handkerchief! It was given me by the strumpet herself!

MARSHAL. What, shoot over the handkerchief? Baron, are you mad? What can you be thinking of?

FERD. Lay hold of it, I say! or you will be sure to miss your aim, coward! How the coward trembles! You should thank God, you pitiful coward, that you have a chance for once of getting something in your empty brain-box. (*The* MARSHAL *takes to his heels.*) Gently, gently! I'll take care of that. (*Overtakes him and bolts the door.*

MARSHAL. Surely you will not fight in the chamber?

FERD. As if you were worth the trouble of a walk beyond the boundaries! The report, my dear fellow, will be louder, and, for the first time, you will make some noise in the world. Now, then, take hold!

MARSHAL (*wiping his forehead*). Yet consider, I entreat. Would you risk your precious life, young and promising as you are, in this desperate manner?

FERD. Take hold, I say! I have nothing more to do in this world!

MARSHAL. But I have much, my dearest, most excellent friend!

FERD. Thou, wretch — thou? What hast thou to do, but to play the stop-gap, where honest men keep aloof! To stretch or shrink seven times in an instant, like the butterfly on a pin? To be privy registrar in chief and clerk of the jordan? To be the cap-and-bell buffoon on which your master sharpens his wit? Well, well, let it be so.

I will carry you about with me, as I would a marmot of rare training. You shall skip and dance, like a tamed monkey, to the howling of the damned; fetch, carry, and serve; and with your courtly arts enliven the wailings of everlasting despair!

MARSHAL. Anything you please, dear major! Whatever you please! Only take away the pistols!

FERD. How he stands there, poor trembling wretch! There he stands, a blot on the sixth day of creation. He looks as if he were a piratical counterfeit of the Almighty original. Pity, eternal pity! that an atom of brains should lie wasting in so barren a skull! That single atom bestowed upon a baboon might have made him a perfect man, whereas it is now a mere useless fragment. And that she should share her heart with a thing like this! Monstrous! Incredible! A wretch more formed to wean from sin than to excite it!

MARSHAL. Praised be Heaven! he is getting witty.

FERD. I will let him live! That toleration which spares the caterpillar shall be extended to him! Men shall look on him in wonder, and, shrugging their shoulders, admire the wise dispensation of Providence, which can feed its creatures with husks and scourings; which spreads the table for the raven on the gallows, and for the courtier in the slime of majesty. We wonder at the wisdom of Providence, which even in the world of spirits maintains its staff of venomous reptiles for the dissemination of poison. (*Relapsing into rage.*) But such vermin shall not pollute my rose; sooner will I crush it to atoms (*seizing the* MARSHAL *and shaking him roughly*), thus —— and thus —— and thus ——

MARSHAL. Oh! God, that I were away from here! hundreds of miles away in the asylum for maniacs at Paris! Anywhere but near this man!

FERD. Villain! If she be no longer pure! Villain! If thou hast profaned where I worshipped! (*with increased fury*). If thou hast polluted, where I believed myself the god! (*Pausing suddenly; then in a solemn terrible voice.*) It were better for thee, villain, to flee to hell, than to encounter my wrath in heaven! Confess! To what extent has your unhallowed love proceeded?

MARSHAL. Let me go! I will confess everything.

FERD. Oh! it must be more rapturous even to be her licentious paramour than to burn with the purest flame for any other! Would she surrender her charms to unlicensed pleasure she might dissolve the soul itself to sin, and make voluptuousness pass for virtue (*pressing his pistol against the* MARSHAL'S *breast*). To what extremities have you proceeded? Confess this instant or I fire!

MARSHAL. There is nothing at all in it, I assure you! There is not a syllable of truth in the whole business! Have but a moment's patience! You are deceived, indeed you are!

FERD. (*furiously*). And dare you remind me of that, villain? To what extremities have you proceeded? Confess, or you are a dead man!

MARSHAL. *Mon Dieu!* My God! You mistake my words! Only listen for a moment. When a father——

FERD. (*still more enraged*). No doubt! He threw his daughter into your arms? And how far have you proceeded? Confess, or I will murder you!

MARSHAL. You rave! You will not listen! I never saw her! I don't know her! I know nothing at all about her!

FERD. (*drawing back*). You never saw her? You don't know her? Know nothing at all about her? Louisa is lost to me forever on thy account, and yet in one breath hast thou denied her thrice. Go, wretch, go (*he gives him a blow with the pistol, and thrusts him out of the chamber*); powder were thrown away on such a miscreant. [*Exit* MARSHAL.

SCENE IV.

FERD. (*after a long silence, during which his countenance declares him to be agitated by some dreadful idea*). Forever lost? Yes, false unfortunate, both are lost! Ay, by the Almighty God! if I am lost, thou art so too. Judge of the world, ask her not from me! She is mine. For her sake I renounced the whole world — abandoned all thy glorious creation. Leave me the maid, great Judge of the world! Millions of souls pour out their plaints to thee — turn on them thine eye of compassion, but

leave me, Almighty Judge — leave me to myself. (*Clasping his hands in agony.*) Can the bountiful, the munificent Creator be covetous of one miserable soul, and that soul the worst of his creation? The maiden is mine! Once I was her god, but now I am her devil!

(*Fixes his eyes with terrible expression.*)

An eternity passed with her upon the rack of everlasting perdition! Her melting eye-balls riveted on mine! Our blazing locks entwined together! Our shrieks of agony dissolving into one! And then to renew to her my vows of love, and chant unceasingly her broken oaths! God! God! The union is dreadful — and eternal! (*As he is about to rush off, the* PRESIDENT *meets him.*)

SCENE V.

FERDINAND, *the* PRESIDENT.

FERD. (*starting back*). Ha! my father.

PRES. I am glad to meet with you, Ferdinand! I come to bring you some pleasant news — something that will certainly surprise you, my dear son. Shall we be seated?

FERD. (*after gazing upon him for some time with a vacant stare*). My father! (*Going to him with emotion, and grasping his hand.*) My father! (*Kissing it, and falling at his feet.*) Oh, father!

PRES. What is the matter? Rise, my son. Your hand burns and trembles!

FERD. (*wildly*). Forgive my ingratitude, father! I am a lost man! I have misinterpreted your kindness! Your meaning was so truly — truly paternal! Oh! you had a prophetic soul! Now it is too late! Pardon! pardon! Your blessing, my dear father!

PRES. (*feigning astonishment*). Arise, my son! Recollect that your words to me are riddles!

FERD. This Louisa, dear father! Oh! You underderstand mankind! Your anger was so just, so noble, so truly the zeal of a father! had not its very earnestness led you to mistake the way. This Louisa!

PRES. Spare me, dear boy! Curses on my severity! I come to entreat your forgiveness ——

FERD. Forgiveness from me! Curse me rather. Your disapproval was wisdom! Your severity was heavenly mercy! This Louisa, father ——

PRES. Is a noble, a lovely girl! I recall my too rash suspicions! She has won my entire esteem!

FERD. (*starting up*). What? You, too? Father, even you? And is she not, father, the very personification of innocence? And is it not so natural to love this maiden?

PRES. Say, rather, 'twere a crime not to love her.

FERD. Incredible! wonderful! And you, too, who can so thoroughly see through the heart! And you, who saw her faults with the eyes of hatred! Oh, unexampled hypocrisy! This Louisa, father!

PRES. Is worthy to be my daughter! Her virtues supply the want of ancestry, her beauty the want of fortune. My prudential maxims yield to the force of your attachment. Louisa shall be yours!

FERD. Naught but this wanting! Father, farewell! (*Rushes out of the apartment.*)

PRES. (*following him*). Stay, my son, stay! Whither do you fly?

SCENE VI. — *A magnificent Saloon in* LADY MILFORD'S *House.*

Enter LADY MILFORD *and* SOPHIA.

LADY M. You have seen her then? Will she come?

SOPHIA. Yes, in a moment! She was in *dishabille*, and only requested time to change her dress.

LADY M. Speak not of her. Silence! I tremble like a criminal at the prospect of beholding that fortunate woman whose heart sympathizes thus cruelly with my own. And how did she receive my invitation?

SOPHIA. She seemed surprised, became thoughtful, fixed her eyes on me steadfastly, and for a while remained silent. I was already prepared for her excuses, when she returned me this answer with a look that quite

astonished me; "Tell your mistress that she commands what I myself intended to request to-morrow."

LADY M. Leave me, Sophia! Pity me! I must blush if she is but an ordinary woman — despair if she is more!

SOPHIA. But, my lady! it is not in this spirit that a rival should be received! Remember who you are! Summon to your aid your birth, your rank, your power! A prouder soul should heighten the gorgeous splendor of your appearance.

LADY M. (*in a fit of absence*). What is the simpleton babbling about?

SOPHIA (*maliciously*). Or, is it, perhaps, by chance that to-day, in particular, you are adorned with your most costly brilliants? by chance that you are to-day arrayed in your most sumptuous robes? that your antechamber is crowded with guards and pages; and that the tradesman's daughter is to be received in the most stately apartment of the palace?

LADY M. (*angry and nettled*). This is outrageous! Insupportable! Oh that woman should have such argus-eyes for woman's weakness! How low, how irretrievably low must I have fallen when such a creature has power to fathom me!

LADY MILFORD, SOPHIA, *a* SERVANT.

SERVANT (*entering*). Ma'mselle Miller waits.

LADY M. (*to* SOPHIA). Hence with you! Leave the room instantly! (*Imperiously, as the latter hesitates.*) Must I repeat my orders? (SOPHIA *retires* — LADY MILFORD *takes a few turns hastily.*) So; 'tis well that I have been excited! I am in the fitter mood for this meeting. (*To the* SERVANT.) Let her approach.

[*Exit* SERVANT. LADY MILFORD *throws herself upon the sofa, and assumes a negligent but studied attitude.*

Scene VII.

Lady Milford, Louisa.

Louisa *enters timidly, and remains standing at a great distance from* Lady Milford, *who has turned her back towards her, and for some time watches her attentively in the opposite looking-glass. After a pause* ——

Louisa. Noble lady, I await your commands.

Lady M. (*turning towards* Louisa, *and making a slight and distant motion with her head.*) Oh! Are you there? I presume the young lady — a certain ——. Pray what is your name?

Louisa (*somewhat sensitively*). My father's name is Miller. Your ladyship expressed a wish to see his daughter.

Lady M. True, true! I remember. The poor musician's daughter, of whom we were speaking the other day. (*Aside, after a pause.*) Very interesting, but no beauty! (*To* Louisa.) Come nearer, my child. (*Again aside.*) Eyes well practised in weeping. Oh! How I love those eyes! (*Aloud.*) Nearer — come nearer! Quite close! I really think, my good child, that you are afraid of me!

Louisa (*with firmness and dignity*). No, my lady — I despise the opinion of the multitude!

Lady M. (*aside*). Well, to be sure! She has learnt this boldness from him. (*To* Louisa.) You have been recommended to me, miss! I am told that you have been decently educated, and are well disposed. I can readily believe it; besides, I would not, for the world, doubt the word of so warm an advocate.

Louisa. And yet I remember no one, my lady, who would be at the trouble to seek your ladyship's patronage for me!

Lady M. (*significantly*). Does that imply my unworthiness, or your humility?

Louisa. Your words are beyond my comprehension, lady.

Lady M. More cunning than I should have expected

from that open countenance. (*To* LOUISA.) Your name is Louisa, I believe? May I inquire your age?

LOUISA. Sixteen, just turned.

LADY M. (*starting up*). Ha! There it is! Sixteen! The first pulsation of love! The first sweet vibration upon the yet unsounded harp! Nothing is more fascinating. (*To* LOUISA.) Be seated, lovely girl — I am anxious about you. (*To herself.*) And he, too, loves for the first time! What wonder, if the ruddy morning beams should meet and blend? (*To* LOUISA, *taking her hand affectionately.*) 'Tis settled: I will make your fortune. (*To herself.*) Oh! there is nothing in it: nothing, but the sweet transient vision of youth! (*To* LOUISA, *patting her on the cheek.*) My Sophy is on the point of leaving me to be married: you shall have her place. But just sixteen? Oh! it can never last.

LOUISA (*kissing her hand respectfully*). Receive my thanks, lady, for your intended favors, and believe me not the less grateful though I may decline to accept them.

LADY M. (*relapsing into disdain and anger*). Only hear the great lady! Girls of your station generally think themselves fortunate to obtain such promotion. What is your dependence, my dainty one? Are these fingers too delicate for work? — or is it your pretty baby-face that makes you give yourself these airs?

LOUISA. My face, lady, is as little of my own choice as my station!

LADY M. Perhaps you believe that your beauty will last forever? Poor creature! Whoever put that into your head — be he who he may — has deceived both you and himself! The colors of those cheeks are not burnt in with fire: what your mirror passes off upon you as solid and enduring is but a slight tinselling, which, sooner or later, will rub off in the hands of the purchaser. What then will you do?

LOUISA. Pity the purchaser, lady, who bought a diamond because it appeared to be set in gold.

LADY M. (*affecting not to hear her*). A damsel of your age has ever two mirrors, the real one, and her admirer. The flattering complaisance of the latter counterbalances

the rough honesty of the former. What the one proclaims frightful pock-marks, the other declares to be dimples that would adorn the Graces. The credulous maid believes only so much of the former as is confirmed by the latter, and hies from one to the other till she confounds their testimonies, and concludes by fancying them to be both of one opinion. Why do you stare at me so?

LOUISA. Pardon me, lady! I was just then pitying those gorgeous sparkling brilliants, which are unconscious that their possessor is so strenuous a foe to vanity.

LADY M. (*reddening*). No evasion, miss. Were it not that you depend upon personal attractions, what in the world could induce you to reject a situation, the only one where you can acquire polish of manners and divest yourself of your plebeian prejudices?

LOUISA. And with them, I presume, my plebeian innocence!

LADY M. Preposterous objection! The most dissolute libertine dares not to disrespect our sex, unless we ourselves encourage him by advances. Prove what you are; make manifest your virtue and honor, and I will guarantee your innocence from danger.

LOUISA. Of that, lady, permit me to entertain a doubt! The palaces of certain ladies are but too often made a theatre for the most unbridled licentiousness. Who will believe that a poor musician's daughter could have the heroism to plunge into the midst of contagion and yet preserve herself untainted? Who will believe that Lady Milford would perpetually hold a scorpion to her breast, and lavish her wealth to purchase the advantage of every moment feeling her cheeks dyed with the crimson blush of shame? I will be frank, lady! — while I adorned you for some assignation, could you meet my eye unabashed? Could you endure my glance when you returned? Oh! better, far better, would it be that oceans should roll between us — that we should inhabit different climes! Beware, my lady! — hours of temperance, moments of satiety might intrude; the gnawing worm of remorse might plant its sting in your bosom, and then — what a torment would it be for you to read in the counte-

nance of your handmaid that calm serenity with which virtue ever rewards an uncorrupted heart! (*Retiring a few steps.*) Once more, gracious lady, I entreat your pardon!

LADY M. (*extremely agitated*). Insupportable, that she should tell me this! Still more insupportable, that what she tells is true! (*Turning to* LOUISA, *and looking at her steadfastly.*) Girl! girl! this artifice does not blind me. Mere opinions do not speak out so warmly. Beneath the cloak of these sentiments lurks some far dearer interest. 'Tis that which makes my service particularly distasteful — which gives such energy to your language. (*In a threatening voice.*) What it is I am determined to discover.

LOUISA (*with calm dignity*). And what if you do discover it? Suppose the contemptuous trampling of your foot should rouse the injured worm, which its Creator has furnished with a sting to protect it against misusage. I fear not your vengeance, lady! The poor criminal extended on the rack can look unappalled even on the dissolution of the world. My misery is so exquisite that even sincerity cannot draw down upon me any further infliction! (*After a pause.*) You say that you would raise me from the obscurity of my station. I will not examine the motives of this suspicious favor. I will only ask, what could induce you to think me so foolish as to blush at my station? What could induce you to become the architect of my happiness, before you knew whether I was willing to receive that happiness at your hands? I had forever renounced all claims upon the pleasures of the world. I had forgiven fortune that she had dealt with me so niggardly. Ah! why do you remind me of all this. If the Almighty himself hides his glory from the eyes of his creatures, lest the highest seraph should be overwhelmed by a sense of his own insignificance, why should mortals be so cruelly compassionate? Lady, lady! why is your vaunted happiness so anxious to excite the envy and wonder of the wretched? Does your bliss stand in need of the exhibition of despair for entertainment? Oh! rather grant me that blindness which alone can reconcile me to my barbarous lot! The insect feels itself as happy in a drop

of water as though that drop was a paradise: so happy, and so contented! till some one tells it of a world of water, where navies ride and whales disport themselves! But you wish to make me happy, say you? (*After a pause, she advances towards* LADY MILFORD, *and asks her suddenly.*) Are you happy, lady? (LADY MILFORD *turns from her hastily, and overpowered.* LOUISA *follows her, and lays her hand upon her bosom.*) Does this heart wear the smile of its station? Could we now exchange breast for breast, and fate for fate — were I, in childlike innocence, to ask you on your conscience — were I to ask you as a mother — would you really counsel me to make the exchange?

LADY M. (*greatly excited, throwing herself on the sofa*). Intolerable! Incomprehensible! No, Louisa, no! This greatness of thought is not your own, and your conceptions are too fiery, too full of youth, to be inspired by your father. Deceive me not! I detect another teacher ——

LOUISA (*looking piercingly at her*). I cannot but wonder, my lady, that you should have only just discovered that other teacher, and yet have previously shown so much anxiety to patronize me!

LADY M. (*starting up*). 'Tis not to be borne! Well, then, since I cannot escape you, I know him — know everything — know more than I wish to know! (*Suddenly restraining herself, then continuing with a violence which by degrees increases to frenzy.*) But dare, unhappy one! — dare but still to love, or be beloved by him! What did I say? Dare but to think of him, or to be one of his thoughts! I am powerful, unhappy one! — dreadful in my vengeance! As sure as there is a God in heaven thou art lost forever!

LOUISA (*undaunted*). Past all redemption, my lady, the moment you succeed in compelling him to love you!

LADY M. I understand you — but I care not for his love! I will conquer this disgraceful passion. I will torture my own heart; but thine will I crush to atoms! Rocks and chasms will I hurl between you. I will rush, like a fury, into the heaven of your joys. My name shall

affright your loves as a spectre scares an assassin. That young and blooming form in his embrace shall wither to a skeleton. I cannot be blest with him — neither shalt thou. Know, wretched girl, that to blast the happiness of others is in itself a happiness!

LOUISA. A happiness, my lady, which is already beyond your reach! Seek not to deceive your own heart! You are incapable of executing what you threaten! You are incapable of torturing a being who has done you no wrong — but whose misfortune it is that her feelings have been sensible to impressions like your own. But I love you for these transports, my lady!

LADY M. (*recovering herself*). Where am I? What have I done? What sentiments have I betrayed? To whom have I betrayed them? Oh, Louisa, noble, great, divine soul, forgive the ravings of a maniac! Fear not, my child! I will not injure a hair of thy head! Name thy wishes! Ask what thou wilt! I will serve thee with all my power; I will be thy friend — thy sister! Thou art poor; look (*taking off her brilliants*), I will sell these jewels — sell my wardrobe — my carriages and horses — all shall be thine — grant me but Ferdinand!

LOUISA (*draws back indignantly*). Does she mock my despair? — or is she really innocent of participation in that cruel deed? Ha! then I may yet assume the heroine, and make my surrender of him pass for a sacrifice! (*Remains for a while absorbed in thought, then approaches* LADY MILFORD, *seizes her hand, and gazes on her with a fixed and significant look.*) Take him, lady! I here voluntarily resign the man whom hellish arts have torn from my bleeding bosom! Perchance you know it not, my lady! but you have destroyed the paradise of two lovers; you have torn asunder two hearts which God had linked together; you have crushed a creature not less dear to him than yourself, and no less created for happiness; one by whom he was worshipped as sincerely as by you; but who, henceforth, will worship him no more. But the Almighty is ever open to receive the last groan of the trampled worm. He will not look on with indifference when creatures in his keeping are murdered. Now Ferdinand is yours. Take him, lady, take him!

Rush into his arms! Drag him with you to the altar! But forget not that the spectre of a suicide will rush between you and the bridal kiss. God be merciful! No choice is left me! (*Rushes out of the chamber.*)

Scene VIII.

Lady Milford *alone, in extreme agitation, gazing on the door by which* Louisa *left. At length she recovers from her stupor.*

Lady M. What was that? What preys so on my heart? What said the unhappy one? Still, O heaven, the dreadful, damning words ring in my ears! "Take him! Take him!" What should I take, unfortunate? the bequest of your dying groan — the fearful legacy of your despair? Gracious heaven! am I then fallen so low? Am I so suddenly hurled from the towering throne of my pride that I greedily await what a beggar's generosity may throw me in the last struggle of death? "Take him! Take him!" And with what a tone was it uttered! — with what a look! What! Amelia! is it for this thou hast overleaped the bounds of thy sex? For this didst thou vaunt the glorious title of a free-born Briton, that thy boasted edifice of honor might sink before the nobler soul of a despised and lowly maiden? No, proud unfortunate! No! Amelia Milford may blush for shame, — but shall never be despised. I, too, have courage to resign. (*She walks a few paces with a majestic gait.*) Hide thyself, weak, suffering woman! Hence, ye sweet and golden dreams of love! Magnanimity alone be now my guide. These lovers are lost, or Amelia must withdraw her claim, and renounce the prince's heart. (*After a pause, with animation.*) It is determined! The dreadful obstactle is removed — broken are the bonds which bound me to the duke — torn from my bosom this raging passion. Virtue, into thy arms I throw myself. Receive thy repentant daughter. Ha! how happy do I feel! How suddenly relieved my heart, and how exalted! Glorious as the setting sun, will I this day descend from the pinnacle of my greatness; my grandeur shall expire with my love, and my own heart be the only

sharer of my proud exile! (*Going to her writing-table with a determined air.*) It must be done at once — now, on the spot — before the recollection of Ferdinand renews the cruel conflict in my bosom! (*She seats herself, and begins to write*).

SCENE IX.

LADY MILFORD, *an* ATTENDANT, SOPHIA, *afterwards the* MARSHAL, *and then* SERVANTS.

SERVANT. Marshal Von Kalb is in the ante-chamber, and brings a message from his highness.

LADY M. (*not hearing him in the eagerness of writing*). How the illustrious puppet will stare! The idea is singular enough, I own, the presuming to astonish his serene numskull. In what confusion will his court be thrown! The whole country will be in a ferment.

SERVANT *and* SOPHIA. Marshal Von Kalb, my lady!

LADY M. (*turning round*). Who? the marshal? So much the better! Such creatures were designed by nature to carry the ass' panniers. [*Exit* SERVANT.

SOPHIA (*approaching anxiously*). If I were not fearful, my lady, that you would think it presumption. (LADY MILFORD *continuing to write eagerly.*) Louisa Miller rushed madly to the hall — you are agitated — you speak to yourself. (LADY MILFORD *continues writing.*) I am quite alarmed. What can have happened?

(*The* MARSHAL *enters, making repeated bows at* LADY MILFORD'S *back; as she takes no notice of him, he comes nearer, stands behind her chair, touches the hem of her dress, and imprints a kiss on it, saying in a tremulous voice.*)

His serene highness ——

LADY M. (*while she peruses hastily what she has written*). He will tax me with black ingratitude! "I was poor and forsaken! He raised me from misery! From misery." Detestable exchange! Annul my bond, seducer! The blush of my eternal shame repays my debt with interest.

MARSHAL (*after endeavoring in vain to catch her eye*). Your ladyship seems somewhat absent. I take the liberty

of permitting myself the boldness (*very loud*) — his serene highness, my lady, has sent me to inquire whether you mean to honor this evening's gala with your presence, or the theatre?

LADY M. (*rising, with a laugh*). One or the other, sweet sir. In the meantime take this paper to your duke for his dessert. (*To* SOPHIA.) Do you, Sophia, give directions to have my carriage brought to the door without delay, and call my whole household together in this saloon.

SOPHIA (*goes out in great astonishment*). Heavens! What do I forebode? What will this end in?

MARSHAL. You seem excited, my lady!

LADY M. The greater the chance of my letting you into a little truth. Rejoice, my Lord Marshal! There is a place vacant at court. A fine time for panders. (*As the* MARSHAL *throws a look of suspicion upon the paper.*) Read it, read it! 'Tis my desire that the contents should be made public. (*While he reads it, the domestics enter, and range themselves in the background.*)

MARSHAL (*reading*). "Your highness — an engagement, broken by you so lightly, can no longer be binding on me. The happiness of your subjects was the condition of my love. For three years the deception has lasted. The veil at length falls from my eyes! I look with disgust on favors which are stained with the tears of your subjects. Bestow the love which I can no longer accept upon your weeping country, and learn from a British princess compassion to your German people. Within an hour I shall have quitted your dominions.

"JOANNA NORFOLK."

SERVANTS (*exclaiming to each other in astonishment*). Quitted the dominions!

MARSHAL (*replaces the letter upon the table in terror*). God forbid, my dear and most excellent lady! The bearer of such a letter would be as mad as the writer!

LADY M. That is your concern, you pink of a courtier! Alas! I am sorry to know that you, and such as you, would choke even in the utterance of what others dare to do. My advice is that you bake the letter in a

venison pasty, so that his most serene highness may find it on his plate!

MARSHAL. God preserve me! What presumption! Ponder well, I entreat you. Reflect on the disgrace which you will bring down upon yourself, my lady!

LADY M. (*turning to the assembled domestics, and addressing them in the deepest emotion*). You seem amazed, good people; and anxiously awaiting the solution of this riddle? Draw nearer, my friends! You have served me truly and affectionately; have looked into my eyes rather than my purse. My pleasure was your study, my approbation your pride! Woe is me, that the remembrance of your fidelity must be the record of my unworthiness! Unhappy fate, that the darkest season of my life should have been the brightest of yours! (*Her eyes suffused with tears.*) We must part, my children. Lady Milford has ceased to exist, and Joanna of Norfolk is too poor to repay your love. What little wealth I have my treasurer will share among you. This palace belongs to the duke. The poorest of you will quit it far richer than his mistress! Farewell, my children! (*She extends her hand, which they all in turn kiss, with marks of sorrow and affection.*) I understand you, my good people! Farewell! forever farewell! (*Struggling with her feelings.*) I hear the carriage at the door. (*She tears herself away, and is hurrying out when the* MARSHAL *arrests her progress.*) How, now? Pitiful creature, art thou still there?

MARSHAL (*who all this while has been gazing in vacant astonishment at the letter*). And must *I* be the person to put this letter into the most august hands of his most serene highness?

LADY M. Pitiful creature, even thou! Thou must deliver into his most august hands, and convey to his most august ears, that, as I cannot go barefoot to Loretto, I will support myself by the labor of my hands, that I may be purified from the disgrace of having condescended to rule him. (*She hurries off—the rest silently disperse.*)

ACT V.

SCENE I. — *Twilight; a room in* MILLER'S *house.*

LOUISA *sits silent and motionless in a dark corner of the room, her head reclining upon her hand. After a long pause,* MILLER *enters with a lantern, the light of which he casts anxiously round the chamber, without observing* LOUISA, *he then puts his hat on the table, and sets down the lantern.*

LOUISA, MILLER.

MILL. She is not here either. No, she is not here! I have wandered through every street; I have sought her with every acquaintance; I have inquired at every door! No one has seen my child! (*A silence of some moments.*) Patience, poor unhappy father! Patience till morning; then perhaps the corpse of your only one may come floating to shore. Oh, God in heaven! What though my heart has hung too idolatrously upon this daughter, yet surely the punishment is severe! Heavenly Father! Surely it is severe! I will not murmur, Heavenly Father; but the punishment is indeed severe! (*Throws himself sorrowfully into a chair.*)

LOUISA (*without moving from her seat*). Thou dost well, wretched old man! Learn betimes to lose.

MILL. (*starts up eagerly*). Ah! art thou there, my child? Art thou there? But wherefore thus alone, and without a light?

LOUISA. Yet am I not alone. When all things around me are dark and gloomy then have I the companionship which most I love.

MILL. God defend thee, my child! The worm of conscience alone wakes and watches with the owl; none shun the light but criminals and evil spirits.

LOUISA. And eternity, father, which speaks to the soul in solitude!

MILL. Louisa, my child! What words are these?

LOUISA (*rises, and comes forward*). I have fought a hard fight — you know it, father! but God gave me the strength! The fight is over! Father, our sex is called timid and weak; believe it no more! We tremble at a

spider, but the black monster, corruption, we hug to our arms in sport! This for your edification, father. Your Louisa is merry.

MILL. I had rather you wept. It would please me better.

LOUISA. How I will outwit him, father! How I shall cheat the tyrant! Love is more crafty than malice, and bolder — he knew not that, the man of the unlucky star! Oh! they are cunning so long as they have but to do with the head; but when they have to grapple with the heart the villains are at fault. He thought to seal his treachery with an oath! Oaths, father, may bind the living, but death dissolves even the iron bonds of the sacrament! Ferdinand will learn to know his Louisa. Father, will you deliver this letter for me? Will you do me the kindness?

MILL. To whom, my child?

LOUISA. Strange question! Infinitude and my heart together had not space enough for a single thought but of him. To whom else should I write?

MILL. (*anxiously*). Hear me, Louisa! I must read this letter!

LOUISA. As you please, father! but you will not understand it. The characters lie there like inanimate corpses, and live but for the eye of love.

MILL (*reading*). "You are betrayed, Ferdinand! An unparalleled piece of villany has dissolved the union of our hearts; but a dreadful vow binds my tongue, and your father has spies stationed upon every side. But, if thou hast courage, my beloved, I know a place where oaths no longer bind, and where spies cannot enter." (MILLER *stops short, and gazes upon her steadfastly.*)

LOUISA. Why that earnest look, father? Read what follows.

MILL. "But thou must be fearless enough to wander through a gloomy path with no other guides than God and thy Louisa. Thou must have no companion but love; leave behind all thy hopes, all thy tumultuous wishes — thou wilt need nothing on this journey bnt thy heart. Darest thou come; then set out as the bell tolls twelve from the Carmelite Tower. Dost thou fear;

then erase from the vocabulary of thy sex's virtues the word courage, for a maiden will have put thee to shame." (MILLER *lays down the letter and fixes his eyes upon the ground in deep sorrow. At length he turns to* LOUISA, *and says, in a low, broken voice*) Daughter, where is that place?

LOUISA. Don't you know it, father? Do you really not know it? 'Tis strange! I have described it unmistakably! Ferdinand will not fail to find it.

MILL. Pray speak plainer!

LOUISA. I can think of no pleasing name for it just now! You must not be alarmed, father, if the name I give it has a terrible sound. That place, ——Oh! why has no lover invented a name for it! He would have chosen the softest, the sweetest — that place, my dear father — but you must not interrupt me — that place is— the grave!

MILL. (*staggering to a seat*). Oh, God!

LOUISA (*hastens to him, and supports him*). Nay, father, be not alarmed! These are but terrors which hover round an empty word! Take away the name and the grave will seem to be a bridal-bed over which Aurora spreads her golden canopy and spring strews her fairest flowers. None but a groaning sinner pictures death as a skeleton; to others he is a gentle, smiling boy, blooming as the god of love, but not so false — a silent, ministering spirit who guides the exhausted pilgrim through the desert of eternity, unlocks for him the fairy palace of everlasting joy, invites him in with friendly smiles, and vanishes forever!

MILL. What meanest thou, my child? Surely, thou wilt not lay guilty hands on thine own life?

LOUISA. Speak not thus, father! To quit a community from which I am already rejected, to fly voluntarily to a place from which I cannot much longer be absent, is that a sin?

MILL. Suicide is the most horrible of sins, my child. 'Tis the only one that can never be repented, since death arrives at the moment the crime is committed.

LOUISA (*stands motionless with horror*). That is dreadful! But my death will not be so sudden, father. I will

spring into the river, and while the waters are closing over me, cry to the Almighty for mercy and forgiveness!

MILL. That is to say, you will repent the theft as soon as the treasure is secure! Daughter! Daughter! beware how you mock your God when you most need his help! Oh! you have gone far, far astray! You have forgotten the worship of your Creator, and he has withdrawn his protecting hand from you!

LOUISA. Is it, then, a crime to love, father?

MILL. So long as thou lovest God thou wilt never love man to idolatry. Thou hast bowed me down low, my only one! low! very low! perhaps to the grave! Yet will I not increase the sadness of thy heart. Daughter! I gave vent to my feelings as I entered. I thought myself alone! Thou hast overheard me! and why should I longer conceal the truth. Thou wert my idol! Hear me, Louisa, if there is yet room in thy heart for a father's feelings. Thou wert my all! Of thine own thou hast nothing more to lose, but I have my all at stake! My life depends on thee! My hairs are turning gray, Louisa; they show that the time is drawing nigh with me when fathers look for a return of the capital invested in the hearts of their children. Wilt thou defraud me of this, Louisa? Wilt thou away and bear with thee all the wealth of thy father?

LOUISA (*kissing his hand in the deepest emotion*). No, father, no! I go from this world deeply in your debt, and will repay you with usury in the world to come.

MILL. Beware, my child, lest thy reckoning should be false! (*very earnestly and solemnly*). Art thou certain that we shall meet in that world to come? Lo! how the color fades from thy cheek! My child must feel that I can scarcely overtake her in that other world if she hurries there before me. (LOUISA *throws herself shuddering into his arms, he clasps her warmly to his bosom, and continues in a tone of fervent adjuration.*) Oh! Louisa! Louisa! Fallen, perhaps already lost, daughter! Treasure in thy heart the solemn counsels of a father! I cannot eternally watch over thee! I may snatch the dagger from thy hands; but thou canst let out life with

a bodkin. I may remove poison from thy reach; but thou canst strangle thyself with a necklace. Louisa! Louisa! I can only warn thee. Wilt thou rush boldly forward till the perfidious phantom which lured thee on vanishes at the awful brink of eternity? Wilt thou dare approach the throne of the Omniscient with the lie on thy lips? "At thy call am I here, Creator!" while thy guilty eyes are in search only of their mortal idol! And when thou shalt see this perishable god of thine own creation, a worm like thee, writhing at the Almighty's feet; when thou shalt hear him in the awful moment give the lie to thy guilty daring, and blast thy delusive hopes of eternal mercy, which the wretch implores in vain for himself; what then! (*Louder and more fervently*), What, then, unhappy one? (*He clasps her still closer to his bosom, and gazes upon her with wild and piercing looks; then suddenly disengages himself.*) I can do no more! (*Raising his right hand towards heaven.*) Immortal Judge, I can do no more to save this soul from ruin! Louisa, do what thou wilt. Offer up a sacrifice at the altar of this idolized youth that shall make thy evil genius howl for transport and thy good angels forsake thee in despair. Go on! Heap sin upon sin, — add to them this, the last, the heaviest, — and, if the scale be still too light throw in my curse to complete the measure. Here is a knife; pierce thy own heart, and (*weeping aloud and rushing away*), and with it, thy father's!

LOUISA (*following and detaining him*). Stay! stay! Oh! father, father! — to think that affection should wound more cruelly than a tyrant's rage! What shall I? — I cannot! — what must I do?

MILL. If thy lover's kisses burn hotter than thy father's tears —— then die!

LOUISA (*after a violent internal struggle, firmly*). Father! Here is my hand! I will — God! God! what am I doing! What would I? — father, I swear. Woe is me! Criminal that I am where'er I turn! Father, be it so! Ferdinand. God, look down upon the act! Thus I destroy the last memorial of him. (*Tearing the letter.*)

MILL. (*throwing himself in ecstasy upon her neck*). There spoke my daughter! Look up, my child! Thou

hast lost a lover, but thou hast made a father happy. (*Embracing her, and alternately laughing and crying.*) My child! my child! I was not worthy to live so blest a moment! God knows how I, poor miserable sinner, became possessed of such an angel! My Louisa! My paradise! Oh! I know but little of love; but that to rend its bonds must be a bitter grief I can well believe!

LOUISA. But let us hasten from this place, my father! Let us fly from the city, where my companions scoff at me, and my good name is lost forever — let us away, far away, from a spot where every object tells of my ruined happiness,— let us fly if it be possible!

MILL. Whither thou wilt, my daughter! The bread of the Lord grows everywhere, and He will grant ears to listen to my music. Yes! we will fly and leave all behind. I will set the story of your sorrows to the lute, and sing of the daughter who rent her own heart to preserve her father's. We will beg with the ballad from door to door, and sweet will be the alms bestowed by the hand of weeping sympathy!

SCENE II.

The former; FERDINAND.

LOUISA (*who perceives him first, throws herself shrieking into* MILLER'S *arms*). God! There he is! I am lost!

MILL. Who? Where?

LOUISA (*points, with averted face, to the* MAJOR, *and presses closer to her father*). 'Tis he! 'Tis he! himself! Look round, father, look round! — he comes to murder me!

MILL. (*perceives him and starts back*). How, baron? You here?

FERD. (*approaches slowly, stands opposite to* LOUISA, *and fixes a stern and piercing look upon her. After a pause, he says*), Stricken conscience, I thank thee! Thy confession is dreadful, but swift and true, and spares me the torment of an explanation! Good evening, Miller!

MILL. For God's sake! baron, what seek you? What brings you hither? What means this surprise?

FERD. I knew a time when the day was divided into seconds, when eagerness for my presence hung upon the weights of the tardy clock, and when every pulse-throb was counted until the moment of my coming. How is it that I now surprise?

MILL. Oh, leave us, leave us, baron! If but one spark of humanity still linger in your bosom;—if you seek not utterly to destroy her whom you profess to love, fly from this house, stay not one moment longer. The blessing of God deserted us when your foot first crossed its threshold. You have brought misery under a roof where all before was joy and happiness. Are you not yet content? Do you seek to deepen the wound which your fatal passion has planted in the heart of my only child?

FERD. Strange father, I have come to bring joyful tidings to your daughter.

MILL. Perchance fresh hopes, to add to her despair. Away, away, thou messenger of ill! Thy looks belie thy words.

FERD. At length the goal of my hopes appears in view! Lady Milford, the most fearful obstacle to our love, has this moment fled the land. My father sanctions my choice. Fate grows weary of persecuting us, and our propitious stars now blaze in the ascendant—I am come to fulfil my plighted troth, and to lead my bride to the altar.

MILL. Dost thou hear him, my child? Dost thou hear him mock at thy cheated hopes? Oh, truly, baron! It is so worthy of the deceiver to make a jest of his own crime!

FERD. You think I am jesting? By my honor I am not! My protestations are as true as the love of my Louisa, and I will keep them as sacred as she has kept her oaths. Nothing to me is more sacred. Can you still doubt? Still no joyful blush upon the cheek of my fair bride? 'Tis strange! Falsehood must needs be here the current coin, since truth finds so little credit. You mistrust my words, it seems? Then read this written testimony. (*He throws* LOUISA *her letter to the* MARSHAL. *She opens it, and sinks upon the floor pale as death.*)

MILL. (*not observing this*). What can this mean, baron? I do not understand you.

FERD. (*leads him to* LOUISA). But your daughter has understood me well.

MILL. (*throws himself on his knees beside her*). Oh, God! my child!

FERD. Pale as a corpse! 'Tis thus your daughter pleases me the best. Your demure and virtuous daughter was never half so lovely as with that deathlike paleness. The blast of the day of judgment, which strips the varnish from every lie, has wafted the painted colors from her cheek, or the juggler might have cheated even the angels of light. This is her fairest countenance. Now for the first time do I see it in its truth. Let me kiss it. (*He approaches her.*)

MILL. Back! Away, boy! Trifle not with a father's feelings. I could not defend her from your caresses, but I can from your insults.

FERD. What wouldst thou, old man? With thee I have naught to do. Engage not in a game so irrevocably lost. Or hast thou, too, been wiser than I thought? Hast thou employed the wisdom of thy sixty years in pandering to thy daughter's amours, and disgraced those hoary locks with the office of a pimp? Oh! if it be not so, wretched old man, then lay thyself down and die. There is still time. Thou mayest breathe thy last in the sweet delusion, "I was a happy father!" Wait but a moment longer and thine own hand will dash to her infernal home this poisonous viper; thou wilt curse the gift, and him who gave it, and sink to the grave in blasphemy and despair. (*To* LOUISA.) Speak, wretched one, speak! Didst thou write this letter?

MILL. (*to* LOUISA, *impressively*). For God's sake, daughter, forget not! forget not!

LOUISA. Oh, father — that letter!

FERD. Oh! that it should have fallen into the wrong hands. Now blessed be the accident! It has effected more than the most consummate prudence, and will at the day of judgment avail more than the united wisdom of sages. Accident, did I say? Oh! Providence directs when a sparrow falls, why not when a devil is un-

masked? But I will be answered! Didst thou write that letter?

MILL. (*to* LOUISA, *in a tone of entreaty*). Be firm, my child, be firm! But a single "Yes," and all will be over.

FERD. Excellent! excellent! The father, too, is deceived! All, all are deceived by her! Look, how the perfidious one stands there; even her tongue refuses participation in her last lie. I adjure thee by that God so terrible and true — didst thou write that letter?

LOUISA (*after a painful struggle, with firmness and decision*). I did!

FERD. (*stands aghast*). No! As my soul liveth, thou hast lied. Even innocence itself, when extended on the rack, confesses crime which it never committed — I ask too passionately. Is it not so, Louisa? Thou didst but confess, because I asked passionately?

LOUISA. I confessed the truth!

FERD. No, I tell thee! No! no! Thou didst not write that letter! It is not like thy hand! And, even though it were, why should it be more difficult to counterfeit a writing than to undo a heart? Tell me truly, Louisa! Yet no, no, do not! Thou mightest say yes again, and then I were lost forever. A lie, Louisa! A lie! Oh! if thou didst but know one now — if thou wouldst utter it with that open angelic mien — if thou wouldst but persuade mine ear and eye, though it should deceive my heart ever so monstrously! Oh, Louisa! Then might truth depart in the same breath — depart from our creation, and the sacred cause itself henceforth bow her stiff neck to the courtly arts of deception.

LOUISA. By the Almighty God! by Him who is so terrible and true! I did!

FERD. (*after a pause, with the expression of the most heartfelt sorrow*). Woman! Woman! With what a face thou standest now before me! Offer Paradise with that look, and even in the regions of the damned thou wilt find no purchaser. Didst thou know what thou wert to me, Louisa? Impossible! No! thou knewest not that thou wert my all — all! 'Tis a poor insignificant

word! but eternity itself can scarcely circumscribe it. Within it systems of worlds can roll their mighty orbs. All! and to sport with it so wickedly. Oh, 'tis horrible.

LOUISA. Baron von Walter, you have heard my confession! I have pronounced my own condemnation! Now go! Fly from a house where you have been so unhappy.

FERD. 'Tis well! 'tis well! You see I am calm; calm, too, they say, is the shuddering land through which the plague has swept. I am calm. Yet ere I go, Louisa, one more request! It shall be my last. My brain burns with fever! I need refreshment! Will you make me some lemonade? [*Exit* LOUISA.

SCENE III.

FERDINAND *and* MILLER.

They both pace up and down without speaking, on opposite sides of the room, for some minutes.

MILL. (*standing still at length, and regarding the* MAJOR *with a sorrowful air*). Dear baron, perhaps it may alleviate your distress to say that I feel for you most deeply.

FERD. Enough of this, Miller. (*Silence again for some moments.*) Miller, I forget what first brought me to your house. What was the occasion of it?

MILL. How, baron? Don't you remember? You came to take lessons on the flute.

FERD. (*suddenly*). And I beheld his daughter! (*Another pause.*) You have not kept your faith with me, friend! You were to provide me with repose for my leisure hours; but you betrayed me and sold me scorpions. (*Observing* MILLER'S *agitation.*) Tremble not, good old man! (*falling deeply affected on his neck*) — the fault was none of thine!

MILL. (*wiping his eyes*). Heaven knows, it was not!

FERD. (*traversing the room, plunged in the most gloomy meditation*). Strange! Oh! beyond conception strange, are the Almighty's dealings with us! How often do terrific weights hang upon slender, almost invisible threads! Did man but know that he should eat death in a particu-

lar apple! Hem! Could he but know that! (*He walks a few more turns; then stops suddenly, and grasps* MILLER'S *hand with strong emotion.*) Friend, I have paid dearly for thy lessons — and thou, too, hast been no gainer — perhaps mayst even lose thy all. (*Quitting him dejectedly.*) Unhappy flute-playing, would that it never entered my brain!

MILL. (*striving to repress his feelings*). The lemonade is long in coming. I will inquire after it, if you will excuse me.

FERD. No hurry, dear Miller! (*Muttering to himself.*) At least to her father there is none. Stay here a moment. What was I about to ask you? Ay, I remember! Is Louisa your only daughter? Have you no other child?

MILL. (*warmly*). I have no other, baron, and I wish for no other. That child is my only solace in this world, and on her have I embarked my whole stock of affection.

FERD. (*much agitated*). Ha! Pray see for the drink, good Miller! [*Exit* MILLER.

SCENE IV.

FERDINAND *alone.*

FERD. His only child! Dost thou feel that, murderer? His only one! Murderer, didst thou hear, his only one? The man has nothing in God's wide world but his instrument and that only daughter! And wilt thou rob him of her?

Rob him? Rob a beggar of his last pittance? Break the lame man's crutch, and cast the fragments at his feet? How? Have I the heart to do this? And when he hastens home, impatient to reckon in his daughter's smiles the whole sum of his happiness; and when he enters the chamber, and there lies the rose — withered — dead — crushed — his last, his only, his sustaining hope. Ha! And when he stands before her, and all nature looks on in breathless horror, while his vacant eye wanders hopelessly through the gloom of futurity, and seeks God, but finds him nowhere, and then returns disappointed and despairing! Great God! and has not my father, too, an only

son? an only child, but not his only treasure. (*After a pause.*) Yet stay! What will the old man lose? She who could wantonly jest with the most sacred feelings of love, will she make a father happy? She cannot! She will not! And I deserve thanks for crushing this viper ere the parent feels its sting.

Scene V.

Miller *returning, and* Ferdinand.

Mill. You shall be served instantly, baron! The poor thing is sitting without, weeping as though her heart would break! Your drink will be mingled with her tears.

Ferd. 'Twere well for her were it only with tears! We were speaking of my lessons, Miller. (*Taking out a purse.*) I remember that I am still in your debt.

Mill. How? What? Go along with you, baron! What do you take me for? There is time enough for payment. Do not put such an affront on me; we are not together for the last time, please God.

Ferd. Who can tell? Take your money. It is for life or death.

Mill. (*laughing*). Oh! for the matter of that, baron! As regards that I don't think I should run much risk with you!

Ferd. You would run the greatest. Have you never heard that youths have died. That damsels and youths have died, the children of hope, the airy castles of their disappointed parents? What is safe from age and worms has often perished by a thunderbolt. Even your Louisa is not immortal.

Mill. God gave her to me.

Ferd. Hear me! I say to you your Louisa is not immortal. That daughter is the apple of your eye; you hang upon her with your whole heart and soul. Be prudent, Miller! None but a desperate gamester stakes his all upon a single cast. The merchant would be called a madman who embarked his whole fortune in one ship. Think upon this, and remember that I warned you. But why do you not take your money?

MILL. How, baron, how? All that enormous purse? What can you be thinking of?

FERD. Upon my debt! There! (*Throws a heavy purse on the table; some gold drops out.*) I cannot hold the dross to eternity.

MILL. (*astonished*). Mercy on us! what is this? The sound was not of silver! (*Goes to the table and cries out in astonishment.*) In heaven's name, baron, what means this? What are you about? You must be out of your mind! (*Clasping his hands.*) There it lies! or I am bewitched. 'Tis damnable! I feel it now; the beauteous, shining, glorious heap of gold! No, Satan, thou shalt not catch my soul with this!

FERD. Have you drunk old wine, or new, Miller?

MILL. (*violently*). Death and furies! Look yourself, then. It is gold!

FERD. And what of that?

MILL. Let me implore you, baron! In the name of all the saints in heaven, I entreat you! It is gold!

FERD. An extraordinary thing, it must be admitted.

MILL. (*after a pause; addressing him with emotion*). Noble sir, I am a plain, straightforward man — do you wish to tempt me to some piece of knavery? — for, heaven knows, that so much gold cannot be got honestly!

FERD. (*moved*). Make yourself quite easy, dear Miller! You have well earned the money. God forbid that I should use it to the corruption of your conscience!

MILL. (*jumping about like a madman*). It is mine, then! Mine indeed! Mine with the knowledge and consent of God! (*Hastening to the door.*) Daughter, wife, hurrah, come hither! (*Returning.*) But, for heaven's sake, how have I all at once deserved this awful treasure? How am I to earn it? How repay it, eh?

FERD. Not by your music lessons, Miller! With this gold do I pay you for (*stops suddenly, and shudders*) —— I pay you — (*after a pause, with emotion*) — for my three months' unhappy dream of your daughter!

MILL (*taking his hand and pressing it affectionately*). Most gracious sir! were you some poor and low-born citizen, and my daughter refused your love, I would pierce her heart with my own hands. (*Returning to the*

gold in a sorrowful tone.) But then I shall have all, and you nothing — and I should have to give up all this glorious heap again, eh?

FERD. Let not that thought distress you, friend. I am about to quit this country, and in that to which I am journeying such coin is not current.

MILL. (*still fixing his eyes in transport on the money*). Mine, then, it remains? Mine? Yet it grieves me that you are going to leave us. Only just wait a little and you shall see how I'll come out! I'll hold up my head with the best of them. (*Puts on his hat with an air, and struts up and down the room.*) I'll give my lessons in the great concert-room, and won't I smoke away at the best *puyke varinas* — and, when you catch me again fiddling at the penny-hop, may the devil take me!

FERD. Stay, Miller! Be silent, and gather up your gold. (*Mysteriously.*) Keep silence only for this one evening, and do me the favor henceforward to give no more music lessons.

MILL. (*still more vehemently grasping his hand, full of inward joy*). And my daughter, baron! my daughter! (*Letting go.*) No, no! Money does not make the man — whether I feed on vegetables or on partridges, enough is enough, and this coat will do very well as long as the sunbeams don't peep in at the elbows. To me money is mere dross. But my girl shall benefit by the blessing; whatever wish I can read in her eyes shall be gratified.

FERD. (*suddenly interrupting him*). Oh! silence! silence!

MILL. (*still more warmly*). And she shall learn to speak French like a born native, and to dance minuets, and to sing, so that people shall read of her in the newspapers; and she shall wear a cap like the judge's daughter, and a *kideburri*,* as they call it; and the fiddler's daughter shall be talked of for twenty miles round.

FERD. (*seizing his hand in extreme agitation*). No more! no more! For God's sake be silent! Be silent but for this one night; 'tis the only favor I ask of you.

* Meaning, no doubt, *Cul de Paris*, a bustle.

SCENE VI.

LOUISA *with a glass of lemonade; the former.*

LOUISA (*her eyes swelled with weeping, and trembling voice, while she presents the glass to* FERDINAND). Tell me, if it be not to your taste.

FERD. (*takes the glass, places it on the table, and turns to* MILLER). Oh! I had almost forgotten! Good Miller, I have a request to make. Will you do me a little favor?

MILL. A thousand with pleasure! What are your commands?

FERD. My father will expect me at table. Unfortunately I am in very ill humor. 'Twould be insupportable to me just now to mix in society. Will you go to my father and excuse my absence?

LOUISA (*terrified, interrupts him hastily*). Oh, let me go!

MILL. Am I to see the president himself?

FERD. Not himself. Give your message to one of the servants in the ante-chamber. Here is my watch as a credential that I sent you. I shall be here when you return. You will wait for an answer.

LOUISA (*very anxiously*). Cannot I be the bearer of your message?

FERD. (*to* MILLER, *who is going*). Stay — one thing more! Here is a letter to my father, which I received this evening enclosed in one to myself. Perhaps on business of importance. You may as well deliver it at the same time.

MILL. (*going*). Very well, baron!

LOUISA (*stopping him, and speaking in a tone of the most exquisite terror*). But, dear father, I could do all this very well! Pray let me go!

MILL. It is night, my child! and you must not venture out alone! [*Exit.*

FERD. Light your father down, Louisa. (LOUISA *takes a candle and follows* MILLER. FERDINAND *in the meantime approaches the table and throws poison into the lemonade*). Yes! she must die! The higher powers look down, and nod their terrible assent. The vengeance of

heaven subscribes to my decree. Her good angels forsake her, and leave her to her fate!

SCENE VII.

FERDINAND *and* LOUISA.

LOUISA *re-enters slowly with the light, places it on the table, and stops on the opposite side of the room, her eyes fixed on the ground, except when she raises them to him with timid, stolen glances. He stands opposite, looking steadfastly on the earth — a long and deep silence.*

LOUISA. If you will accompany me, Baron von Walter, I will try a piece on the harpsichord! (*She opens the instrument.* FERDINAND *makes no answer. A pause.*)

LOUISA. You owe me a revenge at chess. Will you play a game with me, Baron von Walter? (*Another pause.*)

LOUISA. I have begun the pocketbook, baron, which I promised to embroider for you. Will you look at the design? (*Still a pause.*)

LOUISA. Oh! I am very wretched!

FERD. (*without changing his attitude*). That may well be!

LOUISA. It is not my fault, Baron von Walter, that you are so badly entertained!

FERD. (*with an insulting laugh*). You are not to blame for my bashful modesty ——

LOUISA. I am quite aware that we are no longer fit companions. I confess that I was terrified when you sent away my father. I believe, Baron von Walter, that this moment is equally insupportable to us both. Permit me to ask some of my acquaintances to join us.

FERD. Yes, pray do so! And I too will go and invite some of mine.

LOUISA (*looking at him with surprise*). Baron von Walter!

FERD. (*very spitefully*). By my honor, the most fortunate idea that in our situation could ever enter mortal

brain? Let us change this wearisome duet into sport and merriment, and by the aid of certain gallantries, revenge ourselves on the caprices of love.

LOUISA. You are merry, Baron von Walter!

FERD. Oh! wonderfully so! The very street-boys would hunt me through the market-place for a merry-andrew! In fact, Louisa, your example has inspired me — you shall be my teacher. They are fools who prate of endless affection — never-ending sameness grows flat and insipid — variety alone gives zest to pleasure. Have with you, Louisa, we are now of one mind. We will skip from amour to amour, whirl from vice to vice; you in one direction, I in another. Perhaps I may recover my lost tranquillity in some brothel. Perhaps, when our merry race is run, and we become two mouldering skeletons, chance again may bring us together with the most pleasing surprise, and we may, as in a melodrama, recognize each other by a common feature of disease — that mother whom her children can never disavow. Then, perhaps, disgust and shame may create that union between us which could not be effected by the most tender love.

LOUISA. Oh, Walter! Walter! Thou art already unhappy — wilt thou deserve to be so?

FERD. (*muttering passionately through his teeth*). Unhappy? Who told thee so? Woman, thou art too vile to have any feelings of thine own; how, then, canst thou judge of the feelings of others? Unhappy, did she say? — ha! that word would call my anger from the grave! She knew that I must become unhappy. Death and damnation! she knew it, and yet betrayed me! Look to it, serpent! That was thy only chance of forgiveness. This confession has condemmed thee. Till now I thought to palliate thy crime with thy simplicity, and in my contempt thou hadst well nigh escaped my vengeance (*seizing the glass hastily*). Thou wert not thoughtless, then — thou wert not simple — thou wert nor more nor less than a devil! (*He drinks.*) The drink is bad, like thy soul! Taste it!

LOUISA. Oh, heavens! 'Twas not without reason that I dreaded this meeting.

FRED. (*imperiously*). Drink! I say.

[LOUISA, *offended, takes the glass and drinks. The moment she raises the cup to her lips,* FERDINAND *turns away with a sudden paleness, and recedes to the further corner of the chamber.*]

LOUISA. The lemonade is good.

FERD. (*his face averted and shuddering.*) Much good may it do thee!

LOUISA (*sets down the glass*). Oh! could you but know, Walter, how cruelly you wrong me!

FERD. Indeed!

LOUISA. A time will come, Walter——

FERD. (*advancing*). Oh! we have done with time.

LOUISA. When the remembrance of this evening will lie heavy on your heart!

FERD. (*begins to walk to and fro more vehemently, and to become more agitated; he throws away his sash and sword.*) Farewell the prince's service!

LOUISA. My God! what mean you!

FERD. I am hot, and oppressed. I would be more at ease.

LOUISA. Drink! drink! it will cool you.

FERD. That it will, most effectually. The strumpet, though, is kind-hearted! Ay, ay, so are they all!

LOUISA (*rushing into his arms with the deepest expression of love*). That to thy Louisa, Ferdinand?

FERD. (*thrusting her from him*). Away! away! Hence with those soft and melting eyes! they subdue me. Come to me, snake, in all thy monstrous terrors! Spring upon me, scorpion! Display thy hideous folds, and rear thy proud coils to heaven! Stand before my eyes, hateful as the abyss of hell e'er saw thee! but not in that angel form! Take any shape but that! Tis too late. I must crush thee like a viper, or despair! Mercy on thy soul!

LOUISA. Oh! that it should come to this!

FERD. (*gazing on her*). So fair a work of the heavenly artist! Who would believe it? Who can believe it? (*Taking her hand and elevating it.*) I will not arraign thy ordinations, oh! incomprehensible Creator! Yet wherefore didst thou pour thy poison into such beauteous

vessels? Can crime inhabit so fair a region? Oh! 'tis strange! 'tis passing strange!

LOUISA. To hear this, and yet be compelled to silence!

FERD. And that soft, melodious voice! How can broken chords discourse such harmony? (*Gazing rapturously upon her figure.*) All so lovely! so full of symmetry! so divinely perfect! Throughout the whole such signs that 'twas the favorite work of God! By heaven, as though all mankind had been created but to practise the Creator, ere he modelled this his masterpiece! And that the Almighty should have failed in the soul alone? Is it possible that this monstrous abortion of nature should have escaped as perfect? (*Quitting her hastily.*) Or did God see an angel's form rising beneath his chisel, and balance the error by giving her a heart wicked in proportion?

LOUISA. Alas for this criminal wilfulness! Rather than confess his own rashness, he accuses the wisdom of heaven!

FERD. (*falls upon her neck, weeping bitterly*). Yet once more, my Louisa! Yet once again, as on the day of our first kiss, when you faltered forth the name of Ferdinand, and the first endearing "Thou!" trembled on thy burning lips. Oh! a harvest of endless and unutterable joys seemed to me at that moment to be budding forth. There lay eternity like a bright May-day before our eyes; thousands of golden years, fair as brides, danced around our souls. Then was I so happy! Oh! Louisa! Louisa! Louisa! Why hast thou used me thus?

LOUISA. Weep, Walter, weep! Your compassion will be more just towards me than your wrath.

FERD. You deceive yourself. These are not nature's tears! not that warm delicious dew which flows like balsam on the wounded soul, and drives the chilled current of feeling swiftly along its course. They are solitary ice-cold drops! the awful, eternal farewell of my love! (*With fearful solemnity, laying his hand on her head.*) They are tears for thy soul, Louisa! tears for the Deity, whose inexhaustible beneficence has here missed its aim,

and whose noblest work is cast away thus wantonly. Oh! methinks the whole universe should clothe itself in black, and weep at the fearful example now passing in its centre. 'Tis but a common sorrow when mortals fall and Paradise is lost; but, when the plague extends its ravages to angels, then should there be wailing throughout the whole creation!

LOUISA. Drive me not to extremities, Walter. I have fortitude equal to most, but it must not be tried by a more than human test. Walter! one word, and then — we part forever. A dreadful fatality has deranged the language of our hearts. Dared I unclose these lips, Walter, I could tell thee things! I could —— But cruel fate has alike fettered my tongue and my heart, and I must endure in silence, even though you revile me as a common strumpet.

FERD. Dost thou feel well, Louisa?

LOUISA. Why that question?

FERD. It would grieve me shouldst thou be called hence with a lie upon thy lips.

LOUISA. I implore you, Walter ——

FERD. (*in violent agitation*). No! no! That revenge were too satanic! No! God forbid! I will not extend my anger beyond the grave! Louisa, didst thou love the marshal? Thou wilt leave this room no more!

LOUISA (*sitting down*). Ask what you will. I shall give no answer.

FERD. (*in a solemn voice*). Take heed for thy immortal soul! Louisa! Didst thou love the marshal? Thou wilt leave this room no more!

LOUISA. I shall give no answer.

FERD. (*throwing himself on his knees before her in the deepest emotion*). Louisa! Didst thou love the marshal? Before this light burns out — thou wilt stand — before the throne of God!

LOUISA (*starting from her seat in terror*). Merciful Jesus! what was that? And I feel so ill! (*She falls back into her chair.*)

FERD. Already? Oh, woman, thou eternal paradox! thy delicate nerves can sport with crimes at which man-

hood trembles; yet one poor grain of arsenic destroys them utterly!

LOUISA. Poison! poison! Oh! Almighty God!

FERD. I fear it is so! Thy lemonade was seasoned in hell! Thou hast pledged death in the draught!

LOUISA. To die! To die! All-merciful God! Poison in my drink! And to die! Oh! have mercy on my soul, thou Father in heaven!

FERD. Ay, be that thy chief concern: I will join thee in that prayer.

LOUISA. And my mother! My father, too! Saviour of the world! My poor forlorn father! Is there then no hope? And I so young, and yet no hope? And must I die so soon?

FERD. There is no hope! None! — you are already doomed! But be calm. We shall journey together.

LOUISA. Thou too, Ferdinand? Poison, Ferdinand! From thee! Oh! God forgive him! God of mercy, lay not this crime on him!

FERD. Look to your own account. I fear it stands but ill.

LOUISA. Ferdinand! Ferdinand! Oh! I can be no longer silent. Death — death absolves all oaths. Ferdinand! Heaven and earth contain nothing more unfortunate than thou! I die innocent, Ferdinand!

FERD. (*terrified*). Ah! What do I hear? Would she rush into the presence of her Maker with a lie on her lips?

LOUISA. I lie not! I do not lie! In my whole life I never lied but once! Ugh! what an icy shivering creeps through my veins! When I wrote that letter to the marshal.

FERD. Ha! That letter! Blessed be to God! Now I am myself again!

LOUISA (*her voice every moment becomes more indistinct. Her fingers tremble with a convulsive motion*). That letter. Prepare yourself for a terrible disclosure! My hand wrote what my heart abhorred. It was dictated by your father! (*Ferdinand stands like a statue petrified with horror. After a long silence, he falls upon the floor as if struck by lightning.*) Oh! that sorrowful act! ——

Ferdinand — I was compelled — forgive me — thy Louisa would have preferred death — but my father — his life in danger! They were so crafty in their villany.

FERD. (*starting furiously from the ground*). God be thanked! The poison spares me yet! (*He seizes his sword.*)

LOUISA (*growing weaker by degrees*). Alas! what would you? He is thy father!

FERD. (*in the most ungovernable fury*). A murderer — the murderer of his son; he must along with us that the Judge of the world may pour his wrath on the guilty alone. (*Hastening away*).

LOUISA. My dying Redeemer pardoned his murderers, — may God pardon thee and thy father! (*She dies.*)

FERD. (*turns quickly round, and perceives her in the convulsions of death, throws himself distractedly on the body*). Stay! stay! Fly not from me, angel of light! (*Takes her hand, but lets it fall again instantly.*) Cold! cold and damp! her soul has flown! (*Starting up suddenly.*) God of my Louisa! Mercy! Mercy for the most accursed of murderers! Such was her dying prayer! How fair, how lovely even in death! The pitying destroyer has touched gently on those heavenly features. That sweetness was no mask — the hand of death even has not removed it! (*After a pause.*) But how is this? why do I feel nothing. Will the vigor of my youth save me? Thankless care! That shall it not. (*He seizes the glass.*)

SCENE VIII.

FERDINAND, *the* PRESIDENT, WORM, *and* SERVANTS, *who all rush in alarm into the room. Afterwards* MILLER, *with a crowd, and* OFFICERS *of justice, who assemble in the background.*

PRES. (*an open letter in his hand*). My son! what means this? I never can believe ——

FERD. (*throwing the glass at his feet*). Convince thyself, murderer! (*The* PRESIDENT *staggers back. All stand speechless. A dreadful pause.*)

PRES. My son! Why hast thou done this?

FERD. (*without looking at him*). Why, to be sure! I ought first to have asked the statesman whether the trick suited his cards. Admirably fine and skilful, I confess, was the scheme of jealousy to break the bond of our hearts! The calculation shows a master-mind; 'twas pity only that indignant love would not move on wires like thy wooden puppets.

PRES. (*looking round the circle with rolling eyes*). Is there no one here who weeps for a despairing father?

MILL. (*calling behind the scenes*). Let me in! For God's sake, let me in!

FERD. She is now a saint in heaven! Her cause is in the hands of another! (*He opens the door for* MILLER, *who rushes in, followed by officers of justice and a crowd of people.*)

MILL. (*in the most dreadful alarm*). My child! My child! Poison, they cry — poison has been here! My daughter! Where art thou?

FERD. (*leading him between the* PRESIDENT *and* LOUISA'S *corpse*). I am innocent. Thank this man for the deed.

MILL. (*throwing himself on the body*). Oh, Jesus!

FRED. In few words, father! — they begin to be precious to me. I have been robbed of my life by villanous artifice — robbed of it by you! How I may stand with God I tremble to think, but a deliberate villain I have never been! Be my final judgment what it will, may it not fall on thee! But I have committed murder! (*In a loud and fearful voice.*) A murder whose weight thou canst not hope that I should drag alone before the judgment-seat of God. Here I solemnly bequeath to thee the heaviest, the bloodiest part; how thou mayst answer it be that thy care! (*Leading him to* LOUISA.) Here, barbarian! Feast thine eyes on the terrible fruits of thy intrigues! Upon this face thy name is inscribed in the convulsions of death, and will be registered by the destroying angel! May a form like this draw thy curtain when thou sleepest, and grasp thee with its clay-cold hand! May a form like this flit before thy soul when thou diest, and drive away thy expiring

prayer for mercy! May a form like this stand by thy grave at the resurrection, and before the throne of God when he pronounces thy doom! (*He faints, the servants receive him in their arms.*)

PRES. (*extending his arms convulsively towards heaven*). Not from me, Judge of the world. Ask not these souls from me, but from him! (*Pointing to* WORM.)

WORM (*starting*). From me?

PRES. Accursed villain, from thee! From thee, Satan! Thou gavest the serpent's counsel! thine be the responsibility; their blood be not on my head, but on thine!

WORM. On mine! on mine! (*laughing hysterically.*) Oh! Excellent! Now I understand the gratitude of devils. On mine, thou senseless villain! Was he *my* son? Was *I* thy master? Mine the responsibility? Ha! by this sight which freezes the very marrow in my bones! Mine it shall be! I will brave destruction, but thou shalt perish with me. Away! away! Cry murder in the streets! Awaken justice! Bind me, officers! Lead me hence! I will discover secrets which shall make the hearer's blood run cold. (*Going.*)

PRES. (*detaining him*). Surely, madman, thou wilt not dare?

WORM (*tapping him on the shoulder*). I will, though, comrade, I will! I am mad, 'tis true; but my madness is thy work, and now I will act like a madman! Arm in arm with thee will I to the scaffold! Arm in arm with thee to hell! Oh! how it tickles my fancy, villain, to be damned with thee! (*The officers carry him off.*)

MILL. (*who has lain upon* LOUISA'S *corpse in silent anguish, starts suddenly up, and throws the purse before the* MAJOR'S *feet.*) Poisoner, take back thy accursed gold! Didst thou think to purchase my child with it? (*Rushes distractedly out of the chamber.*)

FERD. (*in a voice scarcely audible*). Follow him! He is desperate. The gold must be taken care of for his use; 'tis the dreadful acknowlegment of my debt to him. Louisa, I come! Farewell! On this altar let me breathe my last.

PRES. (*recovering from his stupor*). Ferdinand! my

son! Not one last look for a despairing father? (FERDINAND *is laid by the side of* LOUISA.)

FERD. My last must sue to God for mercy on myself.

PRES. (*falling down before him in the most dreadful agony*). The Creator and the created abandon me! Not one last look to cheer me in the hour of death! (FERDINAND *stretches out his trembling hand to him, and expires.*)

PRES. (*springing up*). He forgave me! (*To the* OFFICERS.) Now, lead on, sirs! I am your prisoner.

[*Exit, followed by the* OFFICERS; *the curtain falls.*

WALLENSTEIN'S CAMP,

TRANSLATED BY JAMES CHURCHILL.

THE PICCOLOMINI,

AND

THE DEATH OF WALLENSTEIN,

BY S. T. COLERIDGE.

INCLUDING SCENES AND PASSAGES HITHERTO OMITTED.

"Upon the whole there can be no doubt that this trilogy forms, in its original tongue, one of the most splendid specimens of tragic art the world has witnessed; and none at all, that the execution of the version from which we have quoted so largely, places Mr. Coleridge in the very first rank of poetical translators. He is, perhaps, the solitary example of a man of very great original genius submitting to *all* the labors, and reaping *all* the honors of this species of literary exertion." — *Blackwood*, 1823.

THE Camp of Wallenstein is an introduction to the celebrated tragedy of that name; and, by its vivid portraiture of the state of the general's army, gives the best clue to the spell of his gigantic power. The blind belief entertained in the unfailing success of his arms, and in the supernatural agencies by which that success is secured to him; the unrestrained indulgence of every passion, and utter disregard of all law, save that of the camp; a hard oppression of the peasantry and plunder of the country, have all swollen the soldiery with an idea of interminable sway. But as we have translated the whole, we shall leave these reckless marauders to speak for themselves.

Of Schiller's opinion concerning the Camp, as a necessary introduction to the tragedy, the following passage taken from the prologue to the first representation, will give a just idea, and may also serve as a motto to the work: —

> "Not he it is, who on the tragic scene
> Will now appear — but in the fearless bands
> Whom his command alone could sway, and whom
> His spirit fired, you may his shadow see,
> Until the bashful Muse shall dare to bring
> Himself before you in a living form;
> For power it was that bore his heart astray
> His Camp, alone, elucidates his crime."

THE CAMP OF WALLENSTEIN.

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

Sergeant-Major } of a regiment of
Trumpeter, } Terzky's carabineers.
Artilleryman,
Sharpshooters.
Mounted Yagers, of Holk's corps.
Dragoons, of Butler's regiment.
Arquebusiers, of Tiefenbach's regiment.
Cuirassier, of a Walloon regiment.
Cuirassier, of a Lombard regiment.
Croats.
Hulans.
Recruit.
Citizen.
Peasant.
Peasant Boy.
Capuchin.
Regimental Schoolmaster.
Sutler-Woman.
Servant Girl.
Soldiers' Boys.
Musicians.

(SCENE. — *The Camp before Pilsen, in Bohemia.*)

SCENE I.

Sutlers' tents — in front, a Slop-shop. Soldiers of all colors and uniforms thronging about. Tables all filled. Croats and Hulans cooking at a fire. Sutler-woman serving out wine. Soldier-boys throwing dice on a drum-head. Singing heard from the tent.

Enter a Peasant and his Son.

SON.

Father, I fear it will come to harm,
So let us be off from this soldier swarm;
But boist'rous mates will ye find in the shoal —
'Twere better to bolt while our skins are whole.

FATHER.

How now, boy! the fellows wont eat us, though
They may be a little unruly, or so.
See, yonder, arriving a stranger train,
Fresh comers are they from the Saal and Mayne;

Much booty they bring of the rarest sort —
'Tis ours, if we cleverly drive our sport.
A captain, who fell by his comrade's sword,
This pair of sure dice to me transferred;
To-day I'll just give them a trial to see
If their knack's as good as it used to be.
You must play the part of a pitiful devil,
For these roaring rogues, who so loosely revel,
Are easily smoothed, and tricked, and flattered,
And, free as it came, their gold is scattered.
But we — since by bushels our all is taken,
By spoonfuls must ladle it back again;
And, if with their swords they slash so highly,
We must look sharp, boy, and do them slyly.

[*Singing and shouting in the tent.*

Hark, how they shout! God help the day!
'Tis the peasant's hide for their sport must pay.
Eight months in our beds and stalls have they
Been swarming here, until far around
Not a bird or a beast is longer found,
And the peasant, to quiet his craving maw,
Has nothing now left but his bones to gnaw.
Ne'er were we crushed with a heavier hand,
When the Saxon was lording it o'er the land:
And these are the Emperor's troops, they say!

SON.

From the kitchen a couple are coming this way,
Not much shall we make by such blades as they.

FATHER.

They're born Bohemian knaves — the two —
Belonging to Terzky's carabineers,
Who've lain in these quarters now for years;
The worst are they of the worthless crew.
Strutting, swaggering, proud and vain,
They seem to think they may well disdain
With the peasant a glass of his wine to drain
But, soft — to the left o' the fire I see
Three riflemen, who from the Tyrol should be
Emmerick, come, boy, to them will we.

Birds of this feather 'tis luck to find,
Whose trim's so spruce, and their purse well lined.
[*They move towards the tent.*

SCENE II.

The above — Sergeant-Major, Trumpeter, Hulan.

TRUMPETER.

What would the boor? Out, rascal, away!

PEASANT.

Some victuals and drink, worthy masters, I pray,
For not a warm morsel we've tasted to day.

TRUMPETER.

Ay, guzzle and guttle — 'tis always the way.

HULAN (*with a glass*).

Not broken your fast! there — drink, ye hound!
He leads the peasant to the tent—the others come forward.

SERGEANT (*to the Trumpeter*).

Think ye they've done it without good ground?
Is it likely they double our pay to-day,
Merely that we may be jolly and gay?

TRUMPETER.

Why, the duchess arrives to-day, we know,
And her daughter too —

SERGEANT.

Tush! that's mere show —
'Tis the troops collected from other lands
Who here at Pilsen have joined our bands —
We must do the best we can t' allure 'em,
With plentiful rations, and thus secure 'em.
Where such abundant fare they find,
A closer league with us to bind

TRUMPETER.

Yes! — there's something in the wind.

SERGEANT.

The generals and commanders too —

TRUMPETER.

A rather ominous sight, 'tis true.

SERGEANT.

Who're met together so thickly here —

TRUMPETER.

Have plenty of work on their hands, that's clear.

SERGEANT.

The whispering and sending to and fro —

TRUMPETER.

Ay! Ay!

SERGEANT.

The big-wig from Vienna, I trow,
Who since yesterday's seen to prowl about
In his golden chain of office there —
Something's at the bottom of this, I'll swear.

TRUMPETER.

A bloodhound is he beyond a doubt,
By whom the duke's to be hunted out.

SERGEANT.

Mark ye well, man! — they doubt us now,
And they fear the duke's mysterious brow;
He hath clomb too high for them, and fain
Would they beat him down from his perch again.

TRUMPETER.

But we will hold him still on high —
That [illegible] think as you and I!

SERGEANT.

[illegible]ther four
[illegible]he bravest corps
[illegible] the General's own,
[illegible] trade by himself alone
[illegible]nd of him,
[illegible] or limb.

Scene III.

Enter Croat with a necklace. Sharpshooter following him. The above.

SHARPSHOOTER.

Croat, where stole you that necklace, say?
Get rid of it man — for thee 'tis unmeet:
Come, take these pistols in change, I pray.

CROAT.

Nay, nay, Master Shooter, you're trying to cheat.

SHARPSHOOTER.

Then I'll give you this fine blue cap as well,
A lottery prize which just I've won:
Look at the cut of it — quite the swell!

CROAT (*twirling the Necklace in the Sun*).

But this is of pearls and of garnets bright,
See, how it plays in the sunny light!

SHARPSHOOTER (*taking the Necklace*).

Well, I'll give you to boot, my own canteen —
I'm in love with this bauble's beautiful sheen.
[*Looks at it.*

TRUMPETER.

See, now! — how cleanly the Croat is *done:*
Snacks! Master Shooter, and *mum's* the word.

CROAT (*having put on the cap*).

I think your cap is a smartish one.

SHARPSHOOTER (*winking to the Trumpeter*).

'Tis a regular swop, as these gents have heard.

Scene IV.

The above. An Artilleryman.

ARTILLERYMAN (*to the Sergeant*).

How is this I pray, brother carabineer?
Shall we longer stay here, our fingers warming,
While the foe in the field around is swarming?

SERGEANT.

Art thou, indeed, in such hasty fret?
Why the roads, as I think, are scarce passable yet.

ARTILLERYMAN.

For me they are not — I'm snug enough here —
But a courier's come, our wits to waken
With the precious news that Ratisbon's taken.

TRUMPETER.

Ha! then we soon shall have work in hand.

SERGEANT.

Indeed! to protect the Bavarian's land,
Who hates the duke, as we understand,
We won't put ourselves in a violent sweat.

ARTILLERYMAN.

Heyday! — you'll find you're a wiseacre yet.

Scene V.

The above — Two Yagers. Afterwards Sutler-woman, Soldier-boy, Schoolmaster, Servant-girl.

FIRST YAGER.

See! see!
Here meet we a jovial company!

TRUMPETER.

Who can these greencoats be, I wonder,
That strut so gay and sprucely yonder!

SERGEANT.

They're the Yagers of Holk — and the lace they wear,
I'll be sworn, was ne'er purchased at Leipzig fair.

SUTLER-WOMAN (*bringing wine*).

Welcome, good sirs!

FIRST YAGER.

Zounds, how now?
Gustel of Blasewitz here, I vow!

SUTLER-WOMAN.

The same in sooth — and you I know,
Are the lanky Peter of Itzeho:
Who at Glückstadt once, in revelling night,
With the wags of our regiment, put to flight
All his father's shiners — then crowned the fun —

FIRST YAGER.

By changing his pen for a rifle-gun.

SUTLER-WOMAN.

We're old acquaintance, then, 'tis clear.

FIRST YAGER.

And to think we should meet in Bohemia here!

SUTLER-WOMAN.

Oh, here to-day — to-morrow yonder —
As the rude war-broom, in restless trace,
Scatters and sweeps us from place to place.
Meanwhile I've been doomed far round to wander.

FIRST YAGER.

So one would think, by the look of your face.

SUTLER-WOMAN.

Up the country I've rambled to Temsewar,
Whither I went with the baggage-car,
When Mansfeld before us we chased away;
With the duke near Stralsund next we lay,
Where trade went all to pot, I may say.
I jogged with the succors to Mantua;
And back again came, under Feria:
Then, joining a Spanish regiment,
I took a short cut across to Ghent;
And now to Bohemia I'm come to get
Old scores paid off, that are standing yet,
If a helping hand by the duke be lent —
And yonder you see my sutler's tent.

FIRST YAGER.

Well, all things seem in a flourishing way,
But what have you done with the Scotchman, say,
Who once in the camp was your constant flame?

SUTLER-WOMAN.

A villain, who tricked me clean, that same
He bolted, and took to himself whate'er
I'd managed to scrape together, or spare,
Leaving me naught but the urchin there.

SOLDIER-BOY (*springing forward*).

Mother, is it my papa you name?

FIRST YAGER.

Well, the emperor now must father this elf,
For the army must ever recruit itself.

SCHOOLMASTER.

Forth to the school, ye rogue — d'ye hear?

FIRST YAGER.

He, too, of a narrow room has fear.

SERVANT GIRL (*entering*).

Aunt, they'll be off.

SUTLER-WOMAN.

I come apace.

FIRST YAGER.

What gypsy is that with the roguish face?

SUTLER-WOMAN.

My sister's child from the south, is she.

FIRST YAGER.

Ay, ay, a sweet little niece — I see.

SECOND YAGER (*holding the girl*).

Softly, my pretty one! stay with me.

GIRL.

The customers wait, sir, and I must go.
[*Disengages herself, and exit.*

FIRST YAGER.

That maiden's a dainty morsel, I trow!
And her aunt — by heaven! I mind me well,

When the best of the regiment loved her so,
To blows for her beautiful face they fell.
What different folks one's doomed to know!
How time glows off with a ceasless flow!
And what sights as yet we may live to see!
(*To the Sergeant and Trumpeter.*)
Your health, good sirs, may we be free,
A seat beside you here to take?

Scene VI.

The Yagers, Sergeant, and Trumpeter.

SERGEANT.

We thank ye — and room will gladly make.
To Bohemia welcome.

FIRST YAGER.

Snug enough here!
In the land of the foe our quarters were queer.

TRUMPETER.

You haven't the look on't — you're spruce to view.

SERGEANT.

Ay, faith, on the Saal, and in Meissen, too,
Your praises are heard from the lips of few.

SECOND YAGER.

Tush, man! why, what the plague d'ye mean?
The Croat had swept the fields so clean,
There was little or nothing for us to glean.

TRUMPETER.

Yet your pointed collar is clean and sightly,
And, then, your hose that sit so tightly!
Your linen so fine, with the hat and feather,
Make a show of smartness altogether!
(*To Sergeant.*)
That fortune should upon younkers shine —
While nothing in your way comes, or mine.

SERGEANT.

But then we're the Friedlander's regiment
And, thus, may honor and homage claim.

FIRST YAGER.

For us, now, that's no great compliment,
We, also, bear the Friedlander's name.

SERGEANT.

True — you form part of the general mass.

FIRST YAGER.

And you, I suppose, are a separate class!
The difference lies in the coats we wear,
And I have no wish to change with you there!

SERGEANT.

Sir Yager, I can't but with pity melt,
When I think how much among boors you've dwelt.
The clever knack and the proper tone,
Are caught by the general's side alone.

FIRST YAGER.

Then the lesson is wofully thrown away, —
How he hawks and spits, indeed, I may say
You've copied and caught in the cleverest way;
But his spirit, his genius — oh, these I ween,
On your guard parade are but seldom seen.

SECOND YAGER.

Why, zounds! ask for us wherever you will,
Friedland's wild hunt is our title still!
Never shaming the name, all undaunted we go
Alike through the field of a friend, or a foe;
Through the rising stalk, or the yellow corn,
Well know they the blast of Holk's Yager horn.
In the flash of an eye, we are far or near,
Swift as the deluge, or there or here —
As at midnight dark, when the flames outbreak
In the silent dwelling where none awake;
Vain is the hope in weapons or flight,
Nor order nor discipline thwart its might.

Then struggles the maid in our sinewy arms,
But war hath no pity, and scorns alarms.
Go, ask — I speak not with boastful tongue —
In Bareuth, Westphalia, Voigtland, where'er
Our troops have traversed — go, ask them there —
Children and children's children long,
When hundreds and hundreds of years are o'er,
Of Holk will tell and his Yager corps.

SERGEANT.

Why, hark! Must a soldier then be made
By driving this riotous, roaring trade!
'Tis drilling that makes him, skill and sense —
Perception — thought — intelligence.

FIRST YAGER.

'Tis liberty makes him! Here's a fuss!
That I should such twaddle as this discuss.
Was it for this that I left the school?
That the scribbling desk, and the slavish rule,
And the narrow walls, that our spirits cramp,
Should be met with again in the midst of the camp?
No! Idle and heedless, I'll take my way,
Hunting for novelty every day;
Trust to the moment with dauntless mind,
And give not a glance or before or behind.
For this to the emperor I sold my hide,
That no other care I might have to bide.
Through the foe's fierce firing bid me ride,
Through fathomless Rhine, in his roaring flow,
Where ev'ry third man to the devil may go,
At no bar will you find me boggling there;
But, farther than this, 'tis my special prayer,
That I may not be bothered with aught like care.

SERGEANT.

If this be your wish, you needn't lack it,
'Tis granted to all with the soldier's jacket.

FIRST YAGER.

What a fuss and a bother, forsooth, was made
By that man-tormentor, Gustavus, the Swede,

Whose camp was a church, where prayers were said
At morning réveille and evening tattoo;
And, whenever it chanced that we frisky grew,
A sermon himself from the saddle he'd read.

SERGEANT.

Ay, that was a man with the fear of God.

FIRST YAGER.

Girls he detested; and what's rather odd,
If caught with a wench you in wedlock were tacked, —
I could stand it no longer, so off I packed.

SERGEANT.

Their discipline now has a trifle slacked.

FIRST YAGER.

Well, next to the League I rode over; their men
Were mustering in haste against Magdeburg then.
Ha! that was another guess sort of a thing!
In frolic and fun we'd a glorious swing;
With gaming, and drinking, and girls at call,
I'faith, sirs, our sport was by no means small.
For Tilly knew how to command, that's plain;
He held himself in but gave us the rein;
And, long as he hadn't the bother of paying,
"Live and let live!" was the general's saying.
But fortune soon gave him the slip; and ne'er
Since the day of that villanous Leipzig affair
Would aught go aright. 'Twas of little avail
That we tried, for our plans were sure to fail.
If now we drew nigh and rapped at the door,
No greeting awaited, 'twas opened no more;
From place to place we went sneaking about,
And found that their stock of respect was out;
Then touched I the Saxon bounty, and thought
Their service with fortune must needs be fraught.

SERGEANT.

You joined them then just in the nick to share
Bohemia's plunder?

FIRST YAGER.

I'd small luck there.
Strict discipline sternly ruled the day,
Nor dared we a foeman's force display;
They set us to guard the imperial forts,
And plagued us all with the farce of the courts.
War they waged as a jest 'twere thought —
And but half a heart to the business brought,
They would break with none; and thus 'twas plain
Small honor among them could a soldier gain.
So heartily sick in the end grew I
That my mind was the desk again to try;
When suddenly, rattling near and far,
The Friedlander's drum was heard to war.

SERGEANT.

And how long here may you mea[illegible]?

FIRST YAGE[illegible]

You jest, man. So long as *he* bea[illegible]ay,
By my soul! not a thought of change have I;
Where better than here could the soldier lie?
Here the true fashion of war is found,
And the cut of power's on all things round;
While the spirit whereby the movement's given
Mightily stirs, like the winds of heaven,
The meanest trooper in all the throng.
With a hearty step shall I tramp along
On a burgher's neck as undaunted tread
As our general does on the prince's head.
As 'twas in the times of old 'tis now,
The sword is the sceptre, and all must bow.
One crime alone can I understand,
And that's to oppose the word of command.
What's not forbidden to do make bold,
And none will ask you what creed you hold.
Of just two things in this world I wot,
What belongs to the army and what does not,
To the banner alone is my service brought.

SERGEANT.

Thus, Yager, I like thee — thou speakest, I vow,
With the tone of a Friedland trooper now.

FIRST YAGER.

'Tis not as an office he holds command,
Or a power received from the emperor's hand;
For the emperor's service what should he care,
What better for him does the emperor fare?
With the mighty power he wields at will,
Has ever he sheltered the land from ill?
No; a soldier-kingdom he seeks to raise,
And for this would set the world in a blaze,
Daring to risk and to compass all ——

TRUMPETER.

Hush — who shall such words as these let fall?

FIRST YAGER.

Whatever I think may be said by me,
For the general tells us the word is free.

SERGEANT.

True — that he said so I fully agree,
I was standing by. "The word is free —
The deed is dumb — obedience blind!"
His very words I can call to mind.

FIRST YAGER.

I know not if these were his words or no,
But he said the thing, and 'tis even so.

SECOND YAGER.

Victory ne'er will his flag forsake,
Though she's apt from others a turn to take:
Old Tilly outlived his fame's decline,
But under the banner of Wallenstein,
There am I certain that victory's mine!
Fortune is spell-bound to him, and must yield;
Whoe'er under Friedland shall take the field
Is sure of a supernatural shield:
For, as all the world is aware full well,
The duke has a devil in hire from hell.

SERGEANT.

In truth that he's charmed is past a doubt,
For we know how, at Lützen's bloody affair,
Where firing was thickest he still was there,
As coolly as might be, sirs, riding about.
The hat on his head was shot thro' and thro',
In coat and boots the bullets that flew
Left traces full clear to all men's view;
But none got so far as to scratch off his skin,
For the ointment of hell was too well rubbed in.

FIRST YAGER.

What wonders so strange can you all see there?
An elk-skin jacket he happens to wear,
And through it the bullets can make no way.

SERGEANT.

'Tis an ointment of witches' herbs, I say,
Kneaded and cooked by unholy spell.

TRUMPETER.

No doubt 'tis the work of the powers of hell.

SERGEANT.

That he reads in the stars we also hear,
Where the future he sees — distant or near —
But I know better the truth of the case:
A little gray man, at the dead of night,
Through bolted doors to him will pace —
The sentinels oft have hailed the sight,
And something great was sure to be nigh,
When this little gray-coat had glided by.

FIRST YAGER.

Ay, ay, he's sold himself to the devil,
Wherefore, my lads, let's feast and revel.

Scene VII.

The above — Recruit, Citizen, Dragoon.

(*The Recruit advances from the tent, wearing a tin cap on his head, and carrying a wine-flask.*)

RECRUIT.

To father and uncle pray make my bow,
And bid 'em good-by — I'm a soldier now.

FIRST YAGER.

See, yonder they're bringing us something new,

CITIZEN.

Oh, Franz, remember, this day you'll rue.

RECRUIT (*sings*).

The drum and the fife,
War's rattling throng,
And a wandering life
The world along!
Swift steed — and a hand
To curb and command —
With a blade by the side,
We're off far and wide.
As jolly and free,
As the finch in its glee,
On thicket or tree,
Under heaven's wide hollow —
Hurrah! for the Friedlander's banner I'll follow!

SECOND YAGER.

Foregad! a jolly companion, though.

[*They salute him.*

CITIZEN.

He comes of good kin; now pray let him go.

FIRST YAGER.

And we wern't found in the streets you must know.

CITIZEN.

I tell you his wealth is a plentiful stock;
Just feel the fine stuff that he wears for a frock.

TRUMPETER.

The emperor's coat is the best he can wear.

CITIZEN.

To a cap manufactory he is the heir.

SECOND YAGER.

The will of a man is his fortune alone.

CITIZEN.

His grandmother's shop will soon be his own.

FIRST YAGER.

Pish! traffic in matches! who would do't?

CITIZEN.

A wine-shop his grandfather leaves, to boot,
A cellar with twenty casks of wine.

TRUMPETER.

These with his comrades he'll surely share.

SECOND YAGER.

Hark ye, lad — be a camp-brother of mine.

CITIZEN.

A bride he leaves sitting, in tears, apart.

FIRST YAGER.

Good — that now's a proof of an iron heart.

CITIZEN.

His grandmother's sure to die with sorrow.

SECOND YAGER.

The better — for then he'll inherit to-morrow.

SERGEANT (*advances gravely, and lays his hand on the Recruit's tin cap*).

The matter no doubt you have duly weighed,
And here a new man of yourself have made;
With hanger and helm, sir, you now belong
To a nobler and more distinguished throng.
Thus, a loftier spirit 'twere well to uphold —

FIRST YAGER.

And, specially, never be sparing of gold.

SERGEANT.

In Fortune's ship, with an onward gale,
My friend, you have made up your mind to sail.
The earth-ball is open before you — yet there
Naught's to be gained, but by those who dare.
Stupid and sluggish your citizen's found,
Like a dyer's dull jade, in his ceaseless round,
While the soldier can be whatever he will,
For war o'er the earth is the watchword still.
Just look now at me, and the coat I wear,
You see that the emperor's baton I bear —
And all good government, over the earth,
You must know from the baton alone has birth;
For the sceptre that's swayed by the kingly hand
Is naught but a baton, we understand.
And he who has corporal's rank obtained,
Stands on the ladder where all's to be gained,
And you, like another, may mount to that height —

FIRST YAGER.

Provided you can but read and write.

SERGEANT.

Now, hark to an instance of this from me,
And one, which I've lived myself to see:
There's Butler, the chief of dragoons, why he,
Whose rank was not higher a whit than mine,
Some thirty years since, at Cologne on Rhine,
Is a major-general now — because
He put himself forward and gained applause;
Filling the world with his martial fame,
While slept my merits without a name.
And even the Friedlander's self — I've heard —
Our general and all-commanding lord,
Who now can do what he will at a word,
Had at first but a private squire's degree;
In the goddess of war yet trusting free,

He reared the greatness which now you see,
And, after the emperor, next is he.
Who knows what more he may mean or get?
(*Styly.*) For all-day's evening isn't come yet.

FIRST YAGER.

He was little at first, though now so great —
For at Altorf, in student's gown he played
By your leave, the part of a roaring blade,
And rattled away at a queerish rate.
His fag he had well nigh killed by a blow,
And their Nur'mburg worships swore he should go
To jail for his pains — if he liked it or no.
'Twas a new-built nest to be christened by him
Who first should be lodged. Well, what was his whim?
Why, he sent his dog forward to lead the way,
And they call the jail from the dog to this day.
That was the game a brave fellow should play,
And of all the great deeds of the general, none
E'er tickled my fancy, like this one.

[*During this speech, the second Yager has begun toying with the girl who has been in waiting.*]

DRAGOON (*stepping between them*).

Comrade — give over this sport, I pray.

SECOND YAGER.

Why, who the devil shall say me nay!

DRAGOON.

I've only to tell you the girl's my own.

FIRST YAGER.

Such a morsel as this, for himself alone! —
Dragoon, why say, art thou crazy grown?

SECOND YAGER.

In the camp to be keeping a wench for one!
No! the light of a pretty girl's face must fall,
Like the beams of the sun, to gladden us all.
(*Kisses her.*)

DRAGOON (*tears her away*).

I tell you again, that it shan't be done.

FIRST YAGER.

The pipers are coming, lads! now for fun!

SECOND YAGER (*to Dragoon*).

I shan't be far off, should you look for me.

SERGEANT.

Peace, my good fellows! — a kiss goes free.

SCENE VIII.

Enter Miners, and play a waltz — at first slowly, and afterwards quicker. The first Yager dances with the girl, the Sutler-woman with the recruit. The girl springs away, and the Yager, pursuing her, seizes hold of a Capuchin Friar just entering.

CAPUCHIN.

Hurrah! halloo! tol, lol, de rol, le!
The fun's at its height! I'll not be away!
Is't an army of Christians that join in such works?
Or are we all turned Anabaptists and Turks?
Is the Sabbath a day for this sport in the land,
As though the great God had the gout in his hand,
And thus couldn't smite in the midst of your band?
Say, is this a time for your revelling shouts,
For your banquetings, feasts, and holiday bouts?
Quid hic statis otiosi? declare
Why, folding your arms, stand ye lazily there?
While the furies of war on the Danube now fare
And Bavaria's bulwark is lying full low,
And Ratisbon's fast in the clutch of the foe.
Yet, the army lies here in Bohemia still,
And caring for naught, so their paunches they fill!
Bottles far rather than battles you'll get,
And your bills than your broad-swords more readily wet;
With the wenches, I ween, is your dearest concern,
And you'd rather roast oxen than Oxenstiern.
In sackcloth and ashes while Christendom's grieving,
No thought has the soldier his guzzle of leaving.

'Tis a time of misery, groans, and tears!
Portentous the face of the heavens appears!
And forth from the clouds behold blood-red,
The Lord's war-mantle is downward spread —
While the comet is thrust as a threatening rod,
From the window of heaven by the hand of God.
The world is but one vast house of woe,
The ark of the church stems a bloody flow,
The Holy Empire — God help the same!
Has wretchedly sunk to a hollow name.
The Rhine's gay stream has a gory gleam,
The cloister's nests are robbed by roysters;
The church-lands now are changed to lurch-lands;
Abbacies, and all other holy foundations
Now are but robber-sees — rogues' habitations.
And thus is each once-blest German state,
Deep sunk in the gloom of the desolate!
Whence comes all this? Oh, that will I tell —
It comes of your doings, of sin, and of hell;
Of the horrible, heathenish lives ye lead,
Soldiers and officers, all of a breed.
For sin is the magnet, on every hand,
That draws your steel throughout the land!
As the onion causes the tear to flow,
So vice must ever be followed by woe —
The W duly succeeds the V,
This is the order of A, B, C.
Ubi erit victoriæ spes,
Si offenditur Deus? which says,
How, pray ye, shall victory e'er come to pass,
If thus you play truant from sermon and mass,
And do nothing but lazily loll o'er the glass?
The woman, we're told in the Testament,
Found the penny in search whereof she went.
Saul met with his father's asses again,
And Joseph his precious fraternal train,
But he, who 'mong soldiers shall hope to see
God's fear, or shame, or discipline — he
From his toil, beyond doubt, will baffled return,
Though a hundred lamps in the search he burn.
To the wilderness preacher, th' Evangelist says,

The soldiers, too, thronged to repent of their ways,
And had themselves christened in former days.
Quid faciemus nos? they said:
Toward Abraham's bosom what path must we tread?
Et ait illis, and, said he,
Neminem concutiatis;
From bother and wrongs leave your neighbors free.
Neque calumniam faciatis;
And deal nor in slander nor lies, d'ye see?
Contenti estote — content ye, pray,
Stipendiis vestris — with your pay —
And curse forever each evil way.
There is a command — thou shalt not utter
The name of the Lord thy God in vain;
But, where is it men most blasphemies mutter
Why here, in Duke Friedland's headquarters, 'tis plain
If for every thunder, and every blast,
Which blazing ye from your tongue-points cast,
The bells were but rung, in the country round,
Not a bellman, I ween, would there soon be found;
And if for each and every unholy prayer
Which to vent from your jabbering jaws you dare,
From your noddles were plucked but the smallest hair,
Ev'ry crop would be smoothed ere the sun went down,
Though at morn 'twere as bushy as Absalom's crown.
Now, Joshua, methinks, was a soldier as well —
By the arm of King David the Philistine fell;
But where do we find it written, I pray,
That they ever blasphemed in this villanous way?
One would think ye need stretch your jaws no more,
To cry, "God help us!" than "Zounds!" to roar.
But, by the liquor that's poured in the cask, we know
With what it will bubble and overflow.
Again, it is written — thou shalt not steal,
And this you follow, i'faith! to the letter,
For open-faced robbery suits ye better.
The gripe of your vulture claws you fix
On all — and your wiles and rascally tricks
Make the gold unhid in our coffers now,
And the calf unsafe while yet in the cow —
Ye take both the egg and the hen, I vow.

Contenti estote — the preacher said;
Which means — be content with your army bread.
But how should the slaves not from duty swerve?
The mischief begins with the lord they serve,
Just like the members so is the head.
I should like to know who can tell me his creed.

FIRST YAGER.

Sir priest, 'gainst ourselves rail on as you will —
Of the general we warn you to breathe no ill.

CAPUCHIN.

Ne custodias gregem meam!
An Ahab is he, and a Jerobeam,
Who the people from faith's unerring way,
To the worship of idols would turn astray,

TRUMPETER *and* RECRUIT.

Let us not hear that again, we pray.

CAPUCHIN.

Such a Bramarbas, whose iron tooth
Would seize all the strongholds of earth forsooth!
Did he not boast, with ungodly tongue,
That Stralsund must needs to his grasp be wrung,
Though to heaven itself with a chain 'twere strung?

TRUMPETER.

Will none put a stop to his slanderous bawl?

CAPUCHIN.

A wizard he is! — and a sorcerer Saul! —
Holofernes! — a Jehu! — denying, we know,
Like St. Peter, his Master and Lord below;
And hence must he quail when the cock doth crow —

BOTH YAGERS.

Now, parson, prepare; for thy doom is nigh.

CAPUCHIN.

A fox more cunning than Herod, I trow —

TRUMPETER *and both* YAGERS (*pressing against him*).

Silence, again, — if thou wouldst not die!

CROATS (*interfering*).

Stick to it, father; we'll shield you, ne'er fear;
The close of your preachment now let's hear.

CAPUCHIN (*still louder*).

A Nebuchadnezzar in towering pride!
And a vile and heretic sinner beside!
He calls himself rightly the stone of a wall;
For, faith! he's a stumbling-stone to us all.
And ne'er can the emperor have peace indeed,
Till of Friedland himself the land is freed.

[*During the last passage, which he pronounces in an elevated voice, he has been gradually retreating, the Croats keeping the other soldiers off.*

SCENE IX.

The above, without the Capuchin.

FIRST YAGER (*to the Sergeant*).

But, tell us, what meant he about chanticleer;
Whose crowing the general dares not hear?
No doubt it was uttered in spite and scorn.

SERGEANT.

Listen — 'tis not so untrue as it appears;
For Friedland was rather mysteriously born,
And is 'specially troubled with ticklish ears;
He can never suffer the mew of a cat;
And when the cock crows he starts thereat.

FIRST YAGER.

He's one and the same with the lion in that.

SERGEANT.

Mouse-still must all around him creep,
Strict watch in this the sentinels keep,
For he ponders on matters most grave and deep.

[*Voices in the tent. A tumult.*

Seize the rascal! lay on! lay on!

PEASANT'S VOICE.

Help! — mercy! — help!

OTHERS.

Peace! peace! begone!

FIRST YAGER.

Deuce take me, but yonder the swords are out!

SECOND YAGER.

Then I must be off, and see what 'tis about.

[*Yagers enter the tent.*

SUTLER-WOMAN (*comes forward*).

A scandalous villain! — a scurvy thief!

TRUMPETER.

Good hostess, the cause of this clamorous grief?

SUTLER-WOMAN.

A cut-purse! a scoundrel! the villain I call.
That the like in my tent should ever befall!
I'm disgraced and undone with the officers all.

SERGEANT.

Well, coz, what is it?

SUTLER-WOMAN.

Why, what should it be?
But a peasant they've taken just now with me —
A rogue with false dice, to favor his play.

TRUMPETER.

See! they're bringing the boor and his son this way.

SCENE X.

Soldiers dragging in the peasant, bound.

FIRST YAGER.

He must hang!

SHARPSHOOTERS *and* DRAGOONS.

To the provost, come on!

SERGEANT.

'Tis the latest order that forth has gone.

SUTLER-WOMAN.

In an hour I hope to behold him swinging!

SERGEANT.

Bad work bad wages will needs be bringing.

FIRST ARQUEBUSIER (*to the others*).

This comes of their desperation. We
First ruin them out and out, d'ye see;
Which tempts them to steal, as it seems to me.

TRUMPETER.

How now! the rascal's cause would you plead?
The cur! the devil is in you indeed!

FIRST ARQUEBUSIER.

The boor is a man — as a body may say.

FIRST YAGER (*to the Trumpeter*).

Let 'em go! they're of Tiefenbach's corps, the railers,
A glorious train of glovers and tailors!
At Brieg, in garrison, long they lay;
What should they know about camps, I pray?

Scene XI.

The above. — Cuirassiers.

FIRST CUIRASSIER.

Peace! what's amiss with the boor, may I crave?

FIRST SHARPSHOOTER.

He has cheated at play, the cozening knave!

FIRST CUIRASSIER.

But say, has he cheated *you*, man, of aught?

FIRST SHARPHOOTER.

Just cleaned me out — and not left me a groat.

FIRST CUIRASSIER.

And can you, who've the rank of a Friedland man,
So shamefully cast yourself away,
As to try your luck with the boor at play?
Let him run off, so that run he can.

[*The peasant escapes, the others throng together.*

FIRST ARQUEBUSIER.

He makes short work — is of resolute mood —
And that with such fellows as these is good.
Who is he? not of Bohemia, that's clear.

SUTLER-WOMAN.

He's a Walloon — and respect, I trow,
Is due to the Pappenheim cuirassier!

FIRST DRAGOON (*joining*).

Young Piccolomini leads them now,
Whom they chose as colonel, of their own free might,
When Pappenheim fell in Lützen's fight.

FIRST ARQUEBUSIER.

Durst they, indeed, presume so far?

FIRST DRAGOON.

This regiment is something above the rest.
It has ever been foremost throught the war,
And may manage its laws, as it pleases best;
Besides, 'tis by Friedland himself caressed.

FIRST CUIRASSIER (*to the Second.*)

Is't so in truth, man? Who averred it?

SECOND CUIRASSIER.

From the lips of the colonel himself I heard it.

FIRST CUIRASSIER.

The devil! we're not their dogs, I ween!

FIRST YAGER.

How now, what's wrong? You're swollen with spleen!

SECOND YAGER.

Is it anything, comrades, may us concern?

FIRST CUIRASSIER.

'Tis what none need be wondrous glad to learn.
The Soldiers press round him.
To the Netherlands they would lend us now —
Cuirassiers, Yagers, and Shooters away,
Eight thousand in all must march, they say.

SUTLER-WOMAN.

What! What! again the old wandering way —
I got back from Flanders but yesterday!

SECOND CUIRASSIER (*to the Dragoons*).

You of Butler's corps must tramp with the rest.

FIRST CUIRASSIER.

And we, the Walloons, must doubtless be gone.

SUTLER-WOMAN.

Why, of all our squadrons these are the best.

FIRST CUIRASSIER.

To march where that Milanese fellow leads on.

FIRST YAGER.

The infant? that's queer enough in its way.

SECOND YAGER.

The priest — then, egad! there's the devil to pay.

FIRST CUIRASSIER.

Shall we then leave the Friedlander's train,
Who so nobly his soldiers doth entertain —
And drag to the field with this fellow from Spain!
A niggard whom we in our souls disdain!
That'll never go down — I'm off, I swear.

TRUMPETER.

Why, what the devil should we do there?
We sold our blood to the emperor — ne'er
For this Spanish red hat a drop we'll spare!

SECOND YAGER.

On the Friedlander's word and credit alone
We ranged ourselves in the trooper line,
And, but for our love to Wallenstein,
Ferdinand ne'er had our service known.

FIRST DRAGOON.

Was it not Friedland that formed our force?
His fortune shall still be the star of our course.

SERGEANT.

Silence, good comrades, to me give ear —
Talking does little to help us here.
Much farther in this I can see than you all,
And a trap has been laid in which we're to fall.

FIRST YAGER.

List to the order-book! hush — be still!

SERGEANT.

But first, Cousin Gustel, I pray thee fill
A glass of Melneck, as my stomach's but weak:
When I've tossed it off, my mind I'll speak.

SUTLER-WOMAN.

Take it, good sergeant. I quake for fear —
Think you that mischief is hidden here?

SERGEANT.

Look ye, my friends, 'tis fit and clear
That each should consider what's most near.
But as the general says, say I,
One should always the whole of a case descry.
We call ourselves all the Friedlander's troops;
The burgher, on whom we're billeted, stoops
Our wants to supply, and cooks our soups.
His ox, or his horse, the peasant must chain
To our baggage-car, and may grumble in vain.
Just let a lance-corp'ral, with seven good men,
Tow'rd a village from far but come within ken,
You're sure he'll be prince of the place, and may
Cut what capers he will, with unquestioned sway.
Why, zounds! lads, they heartily hate us all —
And would rather the devil should give them a call,
Than our yellow collars. And why don't they fall
On us fairly at once and get rid of our lumber?
They're more than our match in point of number,
And carry the cudgel as we do the sword.
Why can we laugh them to scorn? By my word
Because we make up here a terrible horde.

FIRST YAGER.

Ay, ay, in the mass lies the spell of our might,
And the Friedlander judged the matter aright,
When, some eight or nine years ago, he brought
The emperor's army together. They thought
Twelve thousand enough for the general. In vain,
Said he, such a force I can never maintain.
Sixty thousand I'll bring ye into the plain,
And they, I'll be sworn, won't of hunger die,
And thus were we Wallenstein's men, say I.

SERGEANT.

For example, cut one of my fingers off,
This little one here from my right hand doff.
Is the taking my finger then all you've done?
No, no, to the devil my hand is gone!
'Tis a stump — no more — and use has none.
The eight thousand horse they wish to disband
May be but a finger of our army's hand.
But when they're once gone may we understand
We are but one-fifth the less? Oh, no —
By the Lord, the whole to the devil will go!
All terror, respect, and awe will be over,
And the peasant will swell his crest once more;
And the Board of Vienna will order us where
Our troops must be quartered and how we must fare,
As of old in the days of their beggarly care.
Yes, and how long it will be who can say
Ere the general himself they may take away?
For they don't much like him at court I learn?
And then it's all up with the whole concern!
For who, to our pay, will be left to aid us?
And see that they keep the promise they made us
Who has the energy — who the mind —
The flashing thought — and the fearless hand —
Together to bring, and thus fastly bind
The fragments that form our close-knit band.
For example, dragoon — just answer us now,
From which of the countries of earth art thou?

DRAGOON.

[illegible] distant Erin came I here.

SERGEANT (*to the two Cuirassiers*).

You're a Walloon, my friend, that's clear,
And you, an Italian, as all may hear.

FIRST CUIRASSIER.

Who I may be, faith! I never could say;
In my infant years they stole me away.

SERGEANT.

And you, from what far land may you be?

FIRST ARQUEBUSIER.

I come from Buchau — on the Feder Sea.

SERGEANT.

Neighbor, and you?

SECOND ARQUEBUSIER.

I am a Swiss.

SERGEANT (*to the second Yager*).

And Yager, let's hear where your country is?

SECOND YAGER.

Up above Wismar my fathers dwell.

SERGEANT (*pointing to the Trumpeter*).

And he's from Eger — and I as well:
And now, my comrades, I ask you whether,
Would any one think, when looking at us,
That we, from the North and South, had thus
Been hitherward drifted and blown together?
Do we not seem as hewn from one mass?
Stand we not close against the foe
As though we were glued or moulded so?
Like mill-work don't we move, d'ye think!
'Mong ourselves in the nick, at a word or wink.
Who has thus cast us here all as one,
Now to be severed again by none?
Who? why, no other than Wallenstein!

FIRST YAGER.

In my life it ne'er was a thought of mine
Whether we suited each other or not,
I let myself go with the rest of the lot.

FIRST CUIRASSIER.

I quite agree in the sergeant's opinion —
They'd fain have an end of our camp dominion,
And trample the soldier down, that they
May govern alone in their own good way.
'Tis a conspiration — a plot, I say!

SUTLER-WOMAN.

A conspiration — God help the day!
Then my customers won't have cash to pay.

SERGEANT.

Why, faith, we shall all be bankrupts made;
The captains and generals, most of them, paid
The costs of the regiments with private cash,
And, wishing, 'bove all, to cut a dash,
Went a little beyond their means — but thought,
No doubt, that they thus had a bargain bought.
Now they'll be cheated, sirs, one and all,
Should our chief, our head, the general fall.

SUTLER-WOMAN.

Oh, Heaven! this curse I never can brook
Why, half of the army stand in my book.
Two hundred dollars I've trusted madly
That Count Isolani who pays so badly.

FIRST CUIRASSIER.

Well, comrades, let's fix on what's to be done —
Of the ways to save us, I see but one;
If we hold together we need not fear;
So let us stand out as one man here;
And then they may order and send as they will,
Fast planted we'll stick in Bohemia still.
We'll never give in — no, nor march an inch,
We stand on our honor, and must not flinch.

SECOND YAGER.

We're not to be driven the country about,
Let'em come here, and they'll find it out.

FIRST ARQUEBUSIER.

Good sirs, 'twere well to bethink ye still,
That such is the emperor's sovereign will.

TRUMPETER.

Oh, as to the emperor, we needn't be nice.

FIRST ARQUEBUSIER.

Let me not hear you say so twice.

TRUMPETER.

Why, 'tis even so — as I just have said.

FIRST YAGER.

True, man — I've always heard 'em say,
'Tis Friedland, alone, you've here to obey.

SERGEANT.

By our bargain with him it should be so,
Absolute power is his, you must know,
We've war, or peace, but as he may please,
Or gold or goods he has power to seize,
And hanging or pardon his will decrees.
Captains and colonels he makes — and he,
In short, by the imperial seal is free,
To hold all the marks of sovereignty.

FIRST ARQUEBUSIER.

The duke is high and of mighty will,
But yet must remain, for good or for ill,
Like us all, but the emperor's servant still.

SERGEANT.

Not like us all — I there disagree —
Friedland is quite independent and free,
The Bavarian is no more a prince than he
For, was I not by myself to see,
When on duty at Brandeis, how the emperor said,
He wished him to cover his princely head.

FIRST ARQUEBUSIER.

That was because of the Mecklenburgh land,
Which he held in pawn from the emperor's hand.

FIRST YAGER (*to the Sergeant*).

In the emperor's presence, man! say you so?
That, beyond doubt, was a wonderful go!

SERGEANT (*feels in his pocket*).

If you question my word in what I have told,
I can give you something to grasp and hold.
[*Showing a coin.*
Whose image and stamp d'ye here behold?

SUTLER-WOMAN.

Oh! that is a Wallenstein's, sure!

SERGEANT-MAJOR.

Well, there, you have it — what doubt can rest
Is he not prince, just as good as the best?
Coins he not money like Ferdinand?
Hath he not his own subjects and land?
Is he not called your highness, I pray?
And why should he not have his soldiers in

FIRST ARQUEBUSIER.

That no one has ever meant to gainsay;
But we're still at the emperor's beck and call,
For his majesty 'tis who pays us all.

TRUMPETER.

In your teeth I deny it — and will again —
His majesty 'tis who pays us *not*,
For this forty weeks, say, what have we got
But a promise to pay, believed in vain?

FIRST ARQUEBUSIER.

What then! 'tis kept in safe hands, I suppose.

FIRST CUIRASSIER.

Peace, good sirs, will you come to blows?
Have you a quarrel and squabble to know
If the emperor be our master or no?
'Tis because of our rank, as his soldiers brave,
That we scorn the lot of the herded slave;
And will not be driven from place to place,
As priest or puppies our path may trace.

And, tell me, is't not the sovereign's gain,
If the soldiers their dignity will maintain?
Who but his soldiers give him the state
Of a mighty, wide-ruling potentate?
Make and preserve for him, far and near,
The voice which Christendom quakes to hear?
Well enough *they* may his yoke-chain bear,
Who feast on his favors, and daily share,
In golden chambers, his sumptuous fare.
We — we of his splendors have no part,
Naught but hard wearying toil and care,
And the pride that lives in a soldier's heart.

SECOND YAGER.

All great tyrants and kings have shown
Their wit, as I take it, in what they've done;
They've trampled all others with stern command,
But the soldier they've led with a gentle hand.

FIRST CUIRASSIER.

The soldier his worth must understand;
Whoe'er doesn't nobly drive the trade,
'Twere best from the business far he'd stayed.
If I cheerily set my life on a throw,
Something still better than life I'll know;
Or I'll stand to be slain for the paltry pelf,
As the Croat still does — and scorn myself.

BOTH YAGERS.

Yes — honor is dearer than life itself.

FIRST CUIRASSIER.

The sword is no plough, nor delving tool,
He, who would till with it, is but a fool.
For us, neither grass nor grain doth grow,
Houseless the soldier is doomed to go,
A changeful wanderer over the earth,
Ne'er knowing the warmth of a home-lit hearth.
The city glances — he halts — not there —
Nor in village meadows, so green and fair;
The vintage and harvest wreath are twined
He sees, but must leave them far behind.

Then, tell me, what hath the soldier left,
If he's once of his self-esteem bereft?
Something he *must* have his own to call,
Or on slaughter and burnings at once he'll fall.

FIRST ARQUEBUSIER.

God knows, 'tis a wretched life to live!

FIRST CUIRASSIER.

Yet one, which I, for no other would give,
Look ye — far round in the world I've been,
And all of its different service seen.
The Venetian Republic — the Kings of Spain
And Naples I've served, and served in vain.
Fortune still frowned — and merchant and knight,
Craftsmen and Jesuit, have met my sight;
Yet, of all their jackets, not one have I known
To please me like this steel coat of my own.

FIRST ARQUEBUSIER.

Well — that now is what I can scarcely say.

FIRST CUIRASSIER.

In the world, a man who would make his way,
Must plague and bestir himself night and day.
To honor and place if he choose the road,
He must bend his back to the golden load.
And if home-delights should his fancy please,
With children and grandchildren round his knees,
Let him follow an honest trade in peace.
I've no taste for this kind of life — not I!
Free will I live, and as freely die.
No man's spoiler nor heir will I be —
But, throned on my nag, I will smile to see
The coil of the crowd that is under me.

FIRST YAGER.

Bravo! — that's as I've always done.

FIRST ARQUEBUSIER.

In truth, sirs, it may be far better fun
To trample thus over your neighbor's crown.

FIRST CUIRASSIER.

Comrade, the times are bad of late —
The sword and the scales live separate.
But do not then blame that I've preferred,
Of the two, to lean, as I have, to the sword.
For mercy in war I will yield to none,
Though I never will stoop to be drummed upon.

FIRST ARQUEBUSIER.

Who but the soldier the blame should bear
That the laboring poor so hardly fare?
The war with its plagues, which all have blasted
Now sixteen years in the land hath lasted.

FIRST CUIRASSIER.

Why, brother, the blessed God above
Can't have from us all an equal love.
One prays for the sun, at which t'other will fret
One is for dry weather — t'other for wet.
What you, now, regard as with misery rife,
Is to me the unclouded sun of life.
If 'tis at the cost of the burgher and boor,
I really am sorry that they must endure;
But how can I help it? Here, you must know,
'Tis just like a cavalry charge 'gainst the foe:
The steeds loud snorting, and on they go!
Whoever may lie in the mid-career —
Be it my brother or son so dear,
Should his dying groan my heart divide,
Yet over his body I needs must ride,
Nor pitying stop to drag him aside.

FIRST YAGER.

True — who ever asks how another may bide?

FIRST CUIRASSIER.

Thus, my lads, 'tis my counsel, while
On the soldier Dame Fortune deigns to smile,
That we with both hands her bounty clasp,
For it may not be much longer left to our grasp.
Peace will be coming some over-night,
And then there's an end of our martial might.

The soldier unhorsed, and fresh mounted the boor,
Ere you can think it 'twill be as before.
As yet we're together firm bound in the land,
The hilt is yet fast in the soldier's hand.
But let 'em divide us, and soon we shall find
Short commons is all that remains behind.

FIRST YAGER.

No, no, by the Lord! *that* won't do for me.
Come, come, lads, let's all now, as one, agree.

SECOND YAGER.

Yes, let us resolve on what 'tis to be.

FIRST ARQUEBUSIER.

(*To the Sutler-woman, drawing out his leather purse*).
Hostess, tell us how high you've scored.

SUTLER-WOMAN.

Oh, tis unworthy a single word. [*They settle.*

TRUMPETER.

You do well, sirs, to take a further walk,
Your company only disturbs our talk.
[*Exeunt Arquebusiers.*

FIRST CUIRASSIER.

Plague take the fellows — they're brave, I know.

FIRST YAGER.

They haven't a soul 'bove a soapboiler's, though.

SECOND YAGER.

We're now alone, so teach us who can
How best we may meet and mar their plan.

TRUMPETER.

How? Why, let's tell them we will not go!

FIRST CUIRASSIER.

Despising all discipline! no, my lads, no,
Rather his corps let each of us seek,
And quietly then with his comrades speak,
That every soldier may clearly know,
It were not for his good so far to go;

For my Walloons to answer I'm free,
Every man of 'em thinks and acts with me.

SERGEANT.

The Terzky regiments, both horse and foot,
Will thus resolve, and will keep them to't.

SECOND CUIRASSIER (*joining the first*).

The Walloons and the Lombards one intent.

FIRST YAGER.

Freedom is Yagers' own element.

SECOND YAGER.

Freedom must ever with might entwine —
I live and will die by Wallenstein.

FIRST SHARPSHOOTER.

The Lorrainers go on with the strongest tide,
Where spirits are light and courage tried.

DRAGOON.

An Irishman follows his fortune's star.

SECOND SHARPSHOOTER.

The Tyrolese for their sovereign war.

FIRST CUIRASSIER.

Then, comrades, let each of our corps agree
A *pro memoriâ* to sign — that we,
In spite of all force or fraud, will be
To the fortunes of Friedland firmly bound,
For in him is the soldier's father found.
This we will humbly present, when done,
To Piccolomini — I mean the son —
Who understands these kind of affairs,
And the Friedlander's highest favor shares;
Besides, with the emperor's self, they say
He holds a capital card to play.

SECOND YAGER.

Well, then, in this, let us all agree,
That the colonel shall our spokesmen be!

ALL (*going*).

Good! the colonel shall our spokesman be.

SERGEANT.

Hold, sirs — just toss off a glass with me
To the health of Piccolomini.

SUTLER-WOMAN (*brings a flask*).

This shall not go to the list of scores,
I gladly give it — success be yours!

CUIRASSIER.

The soldier shall sway!

BOTH YAGERS.

The peasant shall pay!

DRAGOONS *and* SHARPSHOOTERS.

The army shall flourishing stand!

TRUMPETER *and* SERGEANT.

And the Friedlander keep the command!

SECOND CUIRASSIER (*sings*).

Arouse ye, my comrades, to horse! to horse!
To the field and to freedom we guide!
For there a man feels the pride of his force
And there is the heart of him tried.
No help to him there by another is shown,
He stands for himself and himself alone.
[*The soldiers from the background have come forward during the singing of this verse and form the chorus.*

Chorus.

No help to him by another is shown,
He stands for himself and himself alone.

DRAGOON.

Now freedom hath fled from the world, we find
But lords and their bondsmen vile:
And nothing holds sway in the breast of mankind
Save falsehood and cowardly guile.

Who looks in death's face with a fearless brow,
The soldier, alone, is the freeman now.

Chorus.

Who looks in death's face with a fearless brow,
The soldier, alone, is the freeman now.

FIRST YAGER.

With the troubles of life he ne'er bothers his pate,
And feels neither fear nor sorrow;
But boldly rides onward to meet with his fate —
He may meet it to-day, or to-morrow!
And, if to-morrow 'twill come, then, I say,
Drain we the cup of life's joy to-day!

Chorus.

And, if to-morrow 'twill come, then, I say,
Drain we the cup of life's joy to-day!
[*The glasses are here refilled, and all drink.*

SERGEANT.

'Tis from heaven his jovial lot has birth;
Nor needs he to strive or toil.
The peasant may grope in the bowels of earth,
And for treasure may greedily moil:
He digs and he delves through life for the pelf,
And digs till he grubs out a grave for himself.

Chorus.

He digs and he delves through life for the pelf,
And digs till he grubs out a grave for himself.

FIRST YAGER.

The rider and lightning steed — a pair
Of terrible guests, I ween!
From the bridal-hall, as the torches glare,
Unbidden they join the scene;
Nor gold, nor wooing, his passion prove;
By storm he carries the prize of love!

Chorus.

Nor gold, nor wooing, his passion prove;
By storm he carries the prize of love!

SECOND CUIRASSIER.

Why mourns the wench with so sorrowful face?
Away, girl, the soldier must go!
No spot on the earth is his resting-place;
And your *true* love he never can know.
Still onward driven by fate's rude wind,
He nowhere may leave his peace behind.

Chorus.

Still onward driven by fate's rude wind,
He nowhere may leave his peace behind.

FIRST YAGER.

He takes the two next to him by the hand — the others do the same — and form a large semi-circle.

Then rouse ye, my comrades — to horse! to horse!
In battle the breast doth swell!
Youth boils — the life-cup foams in its force —
Up! ere time can dew dispel!
And deep be the stake, as the prize is high —
Who life would win, he must dare to die!

Chorus.

And deep be the stake, as the prize is high!
Who life would win, he must dare to die!

[*The curtain falls before the chorus has finished.*

THE PICCOLOMINI.

PREFACE.

The two dramas, — Piccolomini, or the first part of Wallenstein, and the Death of Wallenstein, are introduced in the original manuscript by a prelude in one act, entitled Wallenstein's Camp. This is written in rhyme, and in nine-syllable verse, in the same *lilting* metre (if that expression may be permitted), with the second Eclogue of Spenser's Shepherd's Calendar.

This prelude possesses a sort of broad humor, and is not deficient in character: but to have translated it into prose, or into any other metre than that of the original, would have given a false idea both of its style and purport; to have translated it into the same metre would have been incompatible with a faithful adherence to the sense of the German from the comparative poverty of our language in rhymes; and it would have been unadvisable, from the incongruity of those lax verses with the present taste of the English public. Schiller's intention seems to have been merely to have prepared his reader for the tragedies by a lively picture of laxity of discipline and the mutinous dispositions of Wallenstein's soldiery. It is not necessary as a preliminary explanation. For these reasons it has been thought expedient not to translate it.

The admirers of Schiller, who have abstracted their idea of that author from the Robbers, and the Cabal and Love, plays in which the main interest is produced by the excitement of curiosity, and in which the curiosity is excited by terrible and extraordinary incident, will not have perused without some portion of disappointment the dramas, which it has been my employment to translate. They should, however, reflect that these are historical dramas taken from a popular German history;

that we must, therefore, judge of them in some measure with the feelings of Germans; or, by analogy, with the interest excited in us by similar dramas in our own language. Few, I trust, would be rash or ignorant enough to compare Schiller with Shakspeare; yet, merely as illustration, I would say that we should proceed to the perusal of Wallenstein, not from Lear or Othello, but from Richard II., or the three parts of Henry VI. We scarcely expect rapidity in an historical drama; and many prolix speeches are pardoned from characters whose names and actions have formed the most amusing tales of our early life. On the other hand, there exist in these plays more individual beauties, more passages whose excellence will bear reflection than in the former productions of Schiller. The description of the Astrological Tower, and the reflections of the Young Lover, which follow it, form in the original a fine poem; and my translation must have been wretched indeed if it can have wholly overclouded the beauties of the scene in the first act of the first play between Questenberg, Max, and Octavio Piccolomini. If we except the scene of the setting sun in the Robbers, I know of no part in Schiller's plays which equals the first scene of the fifth act of the concluding plays.* It would be unbecoming in me to be more diffuse on this subject. A translator stands connected with the original author by a certain law of subordination which makes it more decorous to point out excellences than defects; indeed, he is not likely to be a fair judge of either. The pleasure or disgust from his own labor will mingle with the feelings that arise from an afterview of the original. Even in the first perusal of a work in any foreign language which we understand, we are apt to attribute to it more excellence than it really possesses from our own pleasurable sense of difficulty overcome without effort. Translation of poetry into poetry is difficult, because the translator must give a brilliancy to his language without that warmth of original conception from which such brilliancy would follow of its own accord. But the translator of a living author is incumbered with additional inconveniences. If he render

* In this edition, scene iii., act v.

his original faithfully as to the sense of each passage, he must necessarily destroy a considerable portion of the spirit; if he endeavor to give a work executed according to laws of compensation he subjects himself to imputations of vanity or misrepresentation. I have thought it my duty to remain bound by the sense of my original with as few exceptions as the nature of the languages rendered possible.

S. T. C.

THE PICCOLOMINI.

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

WALLENSTEIN, *Duke of Friedland, Generalissimo of the Imperial Forces in the Thirty Years' War.*
OCTAVIO PICCOLOMINI, *Lieutenant-General.*
MAX. PICCOLOMINI, *his Son, Colonel of a Regiment of Cuirassiers.*
COUNT TERZKY, *the Commander of several Regiments, and Brother-in-law of Wallenstein.*
ILLO, *Field-Marshal, Wallenstein's Confidant.*
ISOLANI, *General of the Croats.*
BUTLER, *an Irishman, Commander of a Regiment of Dragoons.*
TIEFENBACH, DON MARADAS, GOETZ, KOLATTO, *Generals under Wallenstein.*
NEUMANN, *Captain of Cavalry, Aide-de-Camp to Terzky.*
VON QUESTENBERG, *the War Commissioner, Imperial Envoy.*
BAPTISTA SENI, *an Astrologer.*
DUCHESS OF FREIDLAND, *Wife of Wallenstein.*
THEKLA, *her Daughter, Princess of Friedland.*
THE COUNTESS TERZKY, *Sister of the Duchess.*
A CORNET.
COLONELS *and* GENERALS *(several).*
PAGES *and* ATTENDANTS *belonging to Wallenstein.*
ATTENDANTS *and* HOBOISTS *belonging to Terzky.*
MASTER OF THE CELLAR *to Count Terzky.*
VALET DE CHAMBRE *of Count Piccolomini.*

ACT I.

SCENE I.

An old Gothic Chamber in the Council-House at Pilsen, decorated with Colors and other War Insignia.

ILLO, *with* BUTLER *and* ISOLANI.

ILLO.

Ye have come too late — but ye are come! The distance,
Count Isolani, excuses your delay.

ISOLANI.

Add this too, that we come not empty-handed.
At Donauwerth* it was reported to us,
A Swedish caravan was on its way,
Transporting a rich cargo of provision,

* A town about twelve German miles N.E. of Ulm.

Almost six hundreds wagons. This my Croats
Plunged down upon and seized, this weighty prize! —
We bring it hither ——

ILLO.

Just in time to banquet
The illustrious company assembled here.

BUTLER.

'Tis all alive! a stirring scene here!

ISOLANI.

Ay!
The very churches are full of soldiers.
[*Casts his eye round.*
And in the council-house, too, I observe,
You're settled quite at home! Well, well! we soldiers
Must shift and suit us in what way we can.

ILLO.

We have the colonels here of thirty regiments.
You'll find Count Terzky here, and Tiefenbach,
Kolatto, Goetz, Maradas, Hinnersam,
The Piccolomini, both son and father ——
You'll meet with many an unexpected greeting
From many an old friend and acquaintance. Only
Gallas is wanting still, and Altringer.

BUTLER.

Expect not Gallas.

ILLO (*hesitating*).

How so? Do *you* know ——

ISOLANI (*interrupting him*).

Max. Piccolomini here? O bring me to him.
I see him yet ('tis now ten years ago,
We were engaged with Mansfeldt hard by Dessau),
I see the youth, in my mind's eye I see him,
Leap his black war-horse from the bridge adown,
And t'ward his father, then in extreme peril,
Beat up against the strong tide of the Elbe.

The down was scarce upon his chin! I hear
He has made good the promise of his youth,
And the full hero now is finished in him.

ILLO.

You'll see him yet ere evening. He conducts
The Duchess Friedland hither, and the princess *
From Cärnthen.† We expect them here at noon.

BUTLER.

Both wife and daughter does the duke call hither?
He crowds in visitants from all sides.

ISOLANI.

Hm!
So much the better! I had framed my mind
To hear of naught but warlike circumstance,
Of marches and attacks, and batteries;
And lo! the duke provides, and something too
Of gentler sort and lovely, should be present
To feast our eyes.

ILLO (*who has been standing in the attitude of meditation, to* BUTLER, *whom he leads a little on one side*).

And how came you to know
That the Count Gallas joins us not?

BUTLER.

Because
He importuned *me* to remain behind.

ILLO (*with warmth*).

And you? You hold out firmly!
[*Grasping his hand with affection.*
Noble Butler!

BUTLER.

After the obligation which the duke
Had laid so newly on me——

* The Dukes in Germany being always reigning powers, their sons and daughters are entitled princes and princesses.
† Carinthia.

ILLO.

I had forgotten
A pleasant duty — major-general,
I wish you joy!

ISOLANI.

What, you mean, of this regiment?
I hear, too, that to make the gift still sweeter,
The duke has given him the very same
In which he first saw service, and since then
Worked himself step by step, through each preferment,
From the ranks upwards. And verily, it gives
A precedent of hope, a spur of action
To the whole corps, if once in their remembrance
An old deserving soldier makes his way.

BUTLER.

I am perplexed and doubtful whether or no
I dare accept this your congratulation.
The emperor has not yet confirmed the appointment.

ISOLANI.

Seize it, friend, seize it! The hand which in that post
Placed you is strong enough to keep you there,
Spite of the emperor and his ministers!

ILLO.

Ay, if we would but so consider it! —
If we would *all* of us consider it so!
The emperor gives us nothing; from the duke
Comes all — whate'er we hope, whate'er we have.

ISOLANI (*to* ILLO).

My noble brother! did I tell you how
The duke will satisfy my creditors?
Will be himself my bankers for the future,
Make me once more a creditable man!
And this is now the third time, think of that!
This kingly-minded man has rescued me
From absolute ruin and restored my honor.

ILLO.

Oh that his power but kept pace with his wishes!
Why, friend! he'd give the whole world to his soldiers.

But at Vienna, brother! — here's the grievance, —
What politic schemes do they not lay to shorten
His arm, and where they can to clip his pinions.
Then these new dainty requisitions! these
Which this same Questenberg brings hither!

BUTLER.

Ay!
Those requisitions of the emperor —
I too have heard about them; but I hope
The duke will not draw back a single inch!

ILLO.

Not from his right most surely, unless first
From office!

BUTLER (*shocked and confused*).

Know you *aught* then? You alarm me.

ISOLANI (*at the same time with* BUTLER, *and in a hurrying voice*).

We should be ruined, every one of us!

ILLO.

Yonder I see *our worthy friend* * approaching
With the Lieutenant-General Piccolomini.

BUTLER (*shaking his head significantly*).

I fear we shall not go hence as we came.

SCENE II.

Enter OCTAVIO PICCOLOMINI and QUESTENBERG.

OCTAVIO (*still in the distance*).

Ay! ah! more still! Still more new visitors!
Acknowledge, friend! that never was a camp,
Which held at once so many heads of heroes.

QUESTENBERG.

Let none approach a camp of Friedland's troops
Who dares to think unworthily of war;

* Spoken with a sneer.

E'en I myself had nigh forgot its evils
When I surveyed that lofty soul of order,
By which, while it destroys the world — itself
Maintains the greatness which itself created.

OCTAVIO (*approaching nearer*).

Welcome, Count Isolani!

ISOLANI.

My noble brother!
Even now am I arrived; it has been else my duty —

OCTAVIO.

And Colonel Butler — trust me, I rejoice
Thus to renew acquaintance with a man
Whose worth and services I know and honor.
See, see, my friend!
There might we place at once before our eyes
The sum of war's whole trade and mystery —
[*To* QUESTENBERG, *presenting* BUTLER *and* ISOLANI *at the same time to him.*
These two the total sum — strength and despatch.

QUESTENBERG (*to* OCTAVIO).

And lo! betwixt them both, experienced prudence!

OCTAVIO (*presenting* QUESTENBERG *to* BUTLER *and* ISOLANI).

The Chamberlain and War-Commissioner Questenberg.
The bearer of the emperor's behests,
The long-tried friend and patron of all soldiers,
We honor in this noble visitor. [*Universal silence.*

ILLO (*moving towards* QUESTENBERG).

'Tis not the first time, noble minister,
You have shown our camp this honor.

QUESTENBERG.

Once before
I stood beside these colors.

ILLO.

Perchance too you remember *where* that was;
It was at Znäim * in Moravia, where
You did present yourself upon the part
Of the emperor to supplicate our duke
That he would straight assume the chief command.

QUESTENBURG.

To *supplicate?* Nay, bold general!
So far extended neither my commission
(At least to my own knowledge) nor my zeal.

ILLO.

Well, well, then — to *compel* him, if you choose,
I can remember me right well, Count Tilly
Had suffered total rout upon the Lech.
Bavaria lay all open to the enemy,
Whom there was nothing to delay from pressing
Onwards into the very heart of Austria.
At that time you and Werdenberg appeared
Before our general, storming him with prayers,
And menacing the emperor's displeasure,
Unless he took compassion on this wretchedness.

ISOLANI (*steps up to them*).

Yes, yes, 'tis comprehensible enough,
Wherefore with your commission of to-day,
You were not all too willing to remember
Your former one.

QUESTENBERG.

Why not, Count Isolani?
No contradiction sure exists between them.
It was the urgent business of that time
To snatch Bavaria from her enemy's hand;
And my commision of to-day instructs me
To free her from her good friends and protectors.

ILLO.

A worthy office! After with our blood
We have wrested this Bohemia from the Saxon,

* A town not far from the Mine-mountains, on the high road from Vienna to Prague.

To be swept out of it is all our thanks,
The sole reward of all our hard-won victories.

QUESTENBERG.

Unless that wretched land be doomed to suffer
Only a change of evils, it must be
Freed from the scourge alike of friend or foe.

ILLO.

What? 'Twas a favorable year; the boors
Can answer fresh demands already.

QUESTENBERG.

Nay,
If you discourse of herds and meadow-grounds—

ISOLANI.

The war maintains the war. Are the boors ruined
The emperor gains so many more new soldiers.

QUESTENBERG.

And is the poorer by even so many subjects.

ISOLANI.

Poh! we are all his subjects.

QUESTENBERG.

Yet with a difference, general! The one fill
With profitable industry the purse,
The others are well skilled to empty it.
The sword has made the emperor poor; the plough
Must reinvigorate his resources.

ISOLANI.

Sure!
Times are not yet so bad. Methinks I see
[*Examining with his eye the dress and ornaments of* QUESTENBERG.
Good store of gold that still remains uncoined.

QUESTENBERG.

Thank Heaven! that means have been found out to hide
Some little from the fingers of the Croats,

ILLO.

'here! The Stawata and the Martinitz,
)n whom the emperor heaps his gifts and graces,
'o the heart-burning of all good Bohemians —
'hose minions of court favor, those court harpies,
Vho fatten on the wrecks of citizens
)riven from their house and home — who reap no harvests
ave in the general calamity —
Vho now, with kingly pomp, insult and mock
'he desolation of their country — these,
et these, and such as these, support the war,
'he fatal war, which they alone enkindled!

BUTLER.

And those state-parasites, who have their feet
So constantly beneath the emperor's table,
Who cannot let a benefice fall, but they
Snap at it with dogs' hunger — they, forsooth,
Would pare the soldiers bread and cross his reckoning!

ISOLANI.

My life long will it anger me to think,
How when I went to court seven years ago,
To see about new horses for our regiment,
How from one antechamber to another
They dragged me on and left me by the hour
To kick my heels among a crowd of simpering
Feast-fattened slaves, as if I had come thither
A mendicant suitor for the crumbs of favor
That fell beneath their tables. And, at last,
Whom should they send me but a Capuchin!
Straight I began to muster up my sins
For absolution — but no such luck for me!
This was the man, this Capuchin, with whom
I was to treat concerning the army horses!
And I was forced at last to quit the field,
The business unaccomplished. Afterwards
The duke procured me in three days what I
Could not obtain in thirty at Vienna.

QUESTENBERG.

Yes, yes! your travelling bills soon found their way to us!
Too well I know we have still accounts to settle.

ILLO.

War is violent trade; one cannot always
Finish one's work by soft means; every trifle
Must not be blackened into sacrilege.
If we should wait till you, in solemn council,
With due deliberation had selected
The smallest out of four-and-twenty evils,
I' faith we should wait long —
"Dash! and through with it!" That's the better watch-
word.
Then after come what may come. 'Tis man's nature
To make the best of a bad thing once past.
A bitter and perplexed "what shall I do?"
Is worse to man than worst necessity.

QUESTENBERG.

Ay, doubtless, it is true; the duke *does* spare us
The troublesome task of choosing.

BUTLER.

Yes, the duke
Cares with a father's feelings for his troops;
But how the emperor feels for us, we see.

QUESTENBERG.

His cares and feelings all ranks share alike,
Nor will he offer one up to another.

ISOLANI.

And therefore thrusts he us into the deserts
As beasts of prey, that so he may preserve
His dear sheep fattening in his fields at home.

QUESTENBERG (*with a sneer*).

Count! this comparison you make, not I.

ILLO.

Why, were we all the court supposes us
'Twere dangerous, sure, to give us liberty.

QUESTENBERG (*gravely*).

You have taken liberty — it was not given you,
And therefore it becomes an urgent duty
To rein it in with the curbs.

ILLO.

Expect to find a restive steed in us.

QUESTENBERG.

A better rider may be found to rule it.

ILLO.

He only brooks the rider who has tamed him.

QUESTENBERG.

Ay, tame him once, and then a child may lead him.

ILLO.

The child, we know, is found for him already.

QUESTENBERG.

Be duty, sir, your study, not a name.

BUTLER (*who has stood aside with* PICCOLOMINI, *but with visible interest in the conversation, advances*).

Sir president, the emperor has in Germany
A splendid host assembled; in this kingdom
Full twenty thousand soldiers are cantoned,
With sixteen thousand in Silesia;
Ten regiments are posted on the Weser,
The Rhine, and Maine; in Swabia there are six,
And in Bavaria twelve, to face the Swedes;
Without including in the account the garrisons
Who on the frontiers hold the fortresses.
This vast and mighty host is all obedient
To Friedland's captains; and its brave commanders,
Bred in one school, and nurtured with one milk,
Are all excited by one heart and soul;
They are as strangers on the soil they tread,
The service is their only house and home.
No zeal inspires them for their country's cause,
For thousands like myself were born abroad;
Nor care they for the emperor, for one half

Deserting other service fled to ours,
Indifferent what their banner, whether 'twere,
The Double Eagle, Lily, or the Lion.
Yet one sole man can rein this fiery host
By equal rule, by equal love and fear;
Blending the many-nationed whole in one;
And like the lightning's fires securely led
Down the conducting rod, e'en thus his power
Rules all the mass, from guarded post to post,
From where the sentry hears the Baltic roar,
Or views the fertile vales of the Adige,
E'en to the body-guard, who holds his watch
Within the precincts of the imperial palace!

QUESTENBERG.

What's the short meaning of this long harangue?

BUTLER.

That the respect, the love, the confidence,
Which makes us willing subjects of Duke Friedland,
Are not to be transferred to the first comer
That Austria's court may please to send to us.
We have not yet so readily forgotten
How the command came into Friedland's hands.
Was it, forsooth, the emperor's majesty
That gave the army ready to his hand,
And only sought a leader for it? No.
The army then had no existence. He,
Friedland, it was who called it into being,
And gave it to his sovereign — but receiving
No army at his hand; nor did the emperor
Give Wallenstein to us as general. No,
It was from Wallenstein we first received
The emperor as our master and our sovereign;
And he, he only, binds us to our banners!

OCTAVIO (*interposing and addressing* QUESTENBERG).

My noble friend,
This is no more than a remembrancing
That you are now in camp, and among warriors;
The soldier's boldness constitutes his freedom.

Could he act daringly, unless he dared
Talk even so? One runs into the other.
The boldness of this worthy officer,
[*Pointing to* BUTLER.
Which now is but mistaken in its mark,
Preserved, when naught but boldness could preserve it,
To the emperor, his capital city, Prague,
In a most formidable mutiny
Of the whole garrison. [*Military music at a distance.*
Hah! here they come!

ILLO.

The sentries are saluting them: this signal
Announces the arrival of the duchess.

OCTAVIO (*to* QUESTENBERG).

Then my son Max., too, has returned. 'Twas he
Fetched and attended them from Cärnthen hither.

ISOLANI (*to* ILLO).

Shall we not go in company to greet them?

ILLO.

Well, let us go — Ho! Colonel Butler, come. [*To* OCTAVIO.
You'll not forget that yet ere noon we meet
The noble envoy at the general's palace.
[*Exeunt all but* QUESTENBERG *and* OCTAVIO.

SCENE III.

QUESTENBERG *and* OCTAVIO.

QUESTENBERG (*with signs of aversion and astonishment*).

What have I not been forced to hear, Octavio!
What sentiments! what fierce, uncurbed defiance!
And were this spirit universal —

OCTAVIO.

Hm!
You are now acquainted with three-fourths of the army.

QUESTENBERG.

Where must we seek, then, for a second host
To have the custody of this? That Illo

Thinks worse, I fear me, than he speaks. And then
This Butler, too — he cannot even conceal
The passionate workings of his ill intentions.

OCTAVIO.

Quickness of temper — irritated pride;
'Twas nothing more. I cannot give up Butler.
I know a spell that will soon dispossess
The evil spirit in *him*.

QUESTENBERG (*walking up and down in evident disquiet*).

Friend, friend!
O! this is worse, far worse, than we had suffered
Ourselves to dream of at Vienna. There
We saw it only with a courtier's eyes,
Eyes dazzled by the splendor of the throne.
We had not seen the war-chief, the commander,
The man all-powerful in his camp. Here, here,
'Tis quite another thing.
Here is no emperor more — the duke is emperor.
Alas, my friend! alas, my noble friend!
This walk which you have ta'en me through the camp
Strikes my hopes prostrate.

OCTAVIO.

Now you see yourself
Of what a perilous kind the office is,
Which you deliver to me from the court.
The least suspicion of the general
Costs me my freedom and my life, and would
But hasten his most desperate enterprise.

QUESTENBERG.

Where was our reason sleeping when we trusted
This madman with the sword, and placed such power
In such a hand? I tell you, he'll refuse,
Flatly refuse to obey the imperial orders.
Friend, he *can* do it, and what he can, he will.
And then the impunity of his defiance —
Oh! what a proclamation of our weakness!

OCTAVIO.

D'ye think, too, he has brought his wife and daughter
Without a purpose hither? Here in camp!
And at the very point of time in which
We're arming for the war? That he has taken
These, the last pledges of his loyalty,
Away from out the emperor's dominions —
This is no doubtful token of the nearness
Of some eruption.

QUESTENBERG.

How shall we hold footing
Beneath this tempest, which collects itself
And threats us from all quarters? The enemy
Of the empire on our borders, now already
The master of the Danube, and still farther,
And farther still, extending every hour!
In our interior the alarum-bells
Of insurrection — peasantry in arms —
All orders discontented — and the army,
Just in the moment of our expectation
Of aidance from it — lo! this very army
Seduced, run wild, lost to all discipline,
Loosened, and rent asunder from the state
And from their sovereign, the blind instrument
Of the most daring of mankind, a weapon
Of fearful power, which at his will *he* wields.

OCTAVIO.

Nay, nay, friend! let us not despair too soon —
Men's words are even bolder than their deeds;
And many a resolute, who now appears
Made up to all extremes, will, on a sudden,
Find in his breast a heart he wot not of,
Let but a single honest man speak out
The true name of his crime! Remember, too,
We stand not yet so wholly unprotected.
Counts Altringer and Gallas have maintained
Their little army faithful to its duty,
And daily it becomes more numerous.
Nor can he take us by surprise; you know
I hold him all encompassed by my listeners.

What'er he does, is mine, even while 'tis doing —
No step so small, but instantly I hear it;
Yea, his own mouth discloses it.

QUESTENBERG.

'Tis quite
Incomprehensible, that he detects not
The foe so near!

OCTAVIO.

Beware, you do not think,
That I, by lying arts, and complaisant
Hypocrisy, have sulked into his graces,
Or with the substance of smooth professions
Nourish his all-confiding friendship! No —
Compelled alike by prudence, and that duty
Which we all owe our country and our sovereign,
To hide my genuine feelings from him, yet
Ne'er have I duped him with base counterfeits!

QUESTENBERG.

It is the visible ordinance of heaven.

OCTAVIO.

I know not what it is that so attracts
And links him both to me and to my son.
Comrades and friends we always were — long habit,
Adventurous deeds performed in company,
And all those many and various incidents
Which stores a soldier's memory with affections,
Had bound us long and early to each other —
Yet I can name the day, when all at once
His heart rose on me, and his confidence
Shot out into sudden growth. It was the morning
Before the memorable fight at Lützen.
Urged by an ugly dream, I sought him out,
To press him to accept another charger.
At a distance from the tents, beneath a tree,
I found him in a sleep. When I had waked him
And had related all my bodings to him,
Long time he stared upon me, like a man
Astounded: thereon fell upon my neck,

And manifested to me an emotion
That far outstripped the worth of that small service.
Since then his confidence has followed me
With the same pace that mine has fled from him.

QUESTENBERG.

You lead your son into the secret?

OCTAVIO.

No!

QUESTENBERG.

What! and not warn him either, what bad hands
His lot has placed him in?

OCTAVIO.

I must perforce
Leave him in wardship to his innocence.
His young and open soul — dissimulation
Is foreign to its habits! Ignorance
Alone can keep alive the cheerful air,
The unembarrassed sense and light free spirit,
That makes the duke secure.

QUESTENBERG (*anxiously*).

My honored friend! most highly do I deem
Of Colonel Piccolomini — yet — if ——
Reflect a little ——

OCTAVIO.

I must venture it.
Hush! There he comes!

Scene IV.

MAX. PICCOLOMINI, OCTAVIO PICCOLOMINI, QUESTENBERG.

MAX.

Ha! there he is himself. Welcome, my father!
[*He embraces his father. As he turns round, he observes* QUESTENBERG, *and draws back with a cold and reserved air.*
You are engaged, I see. I'll not disturb you.

OCTAVIO.

How, Max.? Look closer at this visitor.
Attention, Max., an old friend merits — reverence
Belongs of right to the envoy of your sovereign.

MAX. (*drily*).

Von Questenberg! — welcome — if you bring with you
Aught good to our headquarters.

QUESTENBERG (*seizing his hand*).

Nay, draw not
Your hand away, Count Piccolimini!
Not on my own account alone I seized it,
And nothing common will I say therewith.
[*Taking the hands of both.*
Octavio — Max. Piccolomini!
O savior names, and full of happy omen!
Ne'er will her prosperous genius turn from Austria,
While two such stars, with blessed influences
Beaming protection, shine above her hosts.

MAX.

Heh! Noble minister! You miss your part.
You come not here to act a panegyric.
You're sent, I know, to find fault and to scold us —
I must not be beforehand with my comrades.

OCTAVIO (*to* MAX.).

He comes from court, where people are not quite
So well contented with the duke as here.

MAX.

What now have they contrived to find out in him?
That he alone determines for himself
What he himself alone doth understand!
Well, therein he does right, and will persist in't
Heaven never meant him for that passive thing
That can be struck and hammered out to suit
Another's taste and fancy. He'll not dance
To every tune of every minister.
It goes against his nature — he can't do it,
He is possessed by a commanding spirit,
And his, too, is the station of command.

And well for us it is so! There exist
Few fit to rule themselves, but few that use
Their intellects intelligently. Then
Well for the whole, if there be found a man
Who makes himself what nature destined him,
The pause, the central point, to thousand thousands —
Stands fixed and stately, like a firm-built column,
Where all may press with joy and confidence —
Now such a man is Wallenstein; and if
Another better suits the court — no other
But such a one as he can serve the army.

QUESTENBERG.

The army? Doubtless!

MAX.

What delight to observe
How he incites and strengthens all around him,
Infusing life and vigor. Every power
Seems as it were redoubled by his presence:
He draws forth every latent energy,
Showing to each his own peculiar talent,
Yet leaving all to be what nature made them,
And watching only that they be naught else
In the right place and time; and he has skill
To mould the powers of all to his own end.

QUESTENBERG.

But who denies his knowledge of mankind,
And skill to use it? Our complaint is this: —
That in the master he forgets the servant,
As if he claimed by birth his present honors.

MAX.

And does he not so? Is he not endowed
With every gift and power to carry out
The high intents of nature, and to win
A ruler's station by a ruler's talent?

QUESTENBERG.

So then it seems to rest with him alone
What is the worth of all mankind beside!

MAX.

Uncommon men require no common trust;
Give him but scope and he will set the bounds.

QUESTENBER

The proof is yet to come.

MAX.

Thus are ye ever.
Ye shrink from every thing of depth, and think
Yourselves are only safe while ye're in shallows.

OCTAVIO (*to* QUESTENBERG).

'Twere best to yield with a good grace, my friend;
Of *him* there you'll make nothing.

MAX. (*continuing*).

In their fear
They call a spirit up, and when he comes,
Straight their flesh creeps and quivers, and they dread him
More than the ills for which they called him up.
The uncommon, the sublime, must seem and be
Like things of every day. But in the field,
Ay, *there* the *Present Being* makes itself felt.
The personal must command, the actual eye
Examine. If to be the chieftain asks
All that is great in nature, let it be
Likewise his privilege to move and act
In all the correspondences of greatness.
The oracle within him, that which lives,
He must invoke and question — not dead books,
Not ordinances, not mould-rotted papers.

OCTAVIO.

My son! of those old narrow ordinances
Let us not hold too lightly. They are weights
Of priceless value, which oppressed mankind,
Tied to the volatile will of their oppressors.
For always formidable was the League
And partnership of free power with free will.
The way of ancient ordinance, though it winds,

Is yet no devious path. Straight forward goes
The lightning's path, and straight the fearful path
Of the cannon-ball. Direct it flies, and rapid;
Shattering that it may reach, and shattering what it reaches,
My son, the road the human being travels,
That, on which blessing comes and goes, doth follow
The river's course, the valley's playful windings,
Curves round the cornfield and the hill of vines,
Honoring the holy bounds of property!
And thus secure, though late, leads to its end.

QUESTENBERG.

Oh, hear your father, noble youth! hear him
Who is at once the hero and the man.

OCTAVIO.

My son, the nursling of the camp spoke in thee!
A war of fifteen years
Hath been thy education and thy school.
Peace hast thou never witnessed! There exists
An higher than the warrior's excellence.
In war itself war is no ultimate purpose,
The vast and sudden deeds of violence,
Adventures wild, and wonders of the moment,
These are not they, my son, that generate
The calm, the blissful, and the enduring mighty!
Lo there! the soldier, rapid architect!
Builds his light town of canvas, and at once
The whole scene moves and bustles momently.
With arms, and neighing steeds, and mirth and quarrel
The motley market fills; the roads, the streams
Are crowded with new freights; trade stirs and hurries,
But on some morrow morn, all suddenly,
The tents drop down, the horde renews its march.
Dreary, and solitary as a churchyard;
The meadow and down-trodden seed-plot lie,
And the year's harvest is gone utterly.

MAX.

Oh, let the emperor make peace, my father!
Most gladly would I give the blood-stained laurel

For the first violet * of the leafless spring,
Plucked in those quiet fields where I have journeyed.

OCTAVIO.

What ails thee? What so moves thee all at once?

MAX.

Peace have I ne'er beheld? I have beheld it.
From thence am I come hither: oh, that sight,
It glimmers still before me, like some landscape
Left in the distance, — some delicious landscape!
My road conducted me through countries where
The war has not yet reached. Life, life, my father —
My venerable father, life has charms
Which we have never experienced. We have been
But voyaging along its barren coasts,
Like some poor ever-roaming horde of pirates,
That, crowded in the rank and narrow ship,
House on the wild sea with wild usages,
Nor know aught of the mainland, but the bays
Where safeliest they may venture a thieves' landing.
Whate'er in the inland dales the land conceals
Of fair and exquisite, oh, nothing, nothing,
Do we behold of that in our rude voyage.

OCTAVIO (*attentive, with an appearance of uneasiness*).

And so your journey has revealed this to you?

MAX.

'Twas the first leisure of my life. O tell me,
What is the meed and purpose of the toil,
The painful toil which robbed me of my youth,
Left me a heart unsouled and solitary,
A spirit uninformed, unornamented!
For the camp's stir, and crowd, and ceaseless larum,
The neighing war-horse, the air-shattering trumpet,
The unvaried, still returning hour of duty,
Word of command, and exercise of arms —

* In the original,
"Den blut'gen Lorbeer geb'ich hin mit Freuden
Fürs erste Veilchen, das der März uns bringt,
Das dürftige Pfand der neuverjüngten Erde."

There's nothing here, there's nothing in all this,
To satisfy the heart, the gasping heart!
Mere bustling nothingness, where the soul is not—
This cannot be the sole felicity,
These cannot be man's best and only pleasures!

OCTAVIO.

Much hast thou learnt, my son, in this short journey.

MAX.

Oh day, thrice lovely! when at length the soldier
Returns home into life; when he becomes
A fellow-man among his fellow-men.
The colors are unfurled, the cavalcade
Mashals, and now the buzz is hushed, and hark!
Now the soft peace-march beats, home, brothers, home!
The caps and helmet are all garlanded
With green boughs, the last plundering of the fields.
The city gates fly open of themselves,
They need no longer the petard to tear them.
The ramparts are all filled with men and women,
With peaceful men and women, that send onwards
Kisses and welcomings upon the air,
Which they make breezy with affectionate gestures.
From all the towers rings out the merry peal,
The joyous vespers of a bloody day.
O happy man, O fortunate! for whom
The well-known door, the faithful arms are open,
The faithful tender arms with mute embracing.

QUESTENBERG (*apparently much affected*).

O that you should speak
Of such a distant, distant time, and not
Of the to-morrow, not of this to-day.

MAX. (*turning round to him quick and vehement*).

Where lies the fault but on you in Vienna!
I will deal openly with you, Questenberg.
Just now, as first I saw you standing here
(I'll own it to you freely), indignation
Crowded and pressed my inmost soul together.

'Tis ye that hinder peace, *ye!* — and the warrior,
It is the warrior that must force it from you.
Ye fret the general's life out, blacken him,
Hold him up as a rebel, and heaven knows
What else still worse, because he spares the Saxons,
And tries to awaken confidence in the enemy;
Which yet's the only way to peace: for if
War intermit not during war, *how* then
And *whence* can peace come? Your own plagues fall on you!
Even as I love what's virtuous, hate I you.
And here I make this vow, here pledge myself,
My blood shall spurt out for this Wallenstein,
And my heart drain off, drop by drop, ere ye
Shall revel and dance jubilee o'er his ruin. [*Exit.*

SCENE V.

QUESTENBERG, OCTAVIO PICCOLOMINI.

QUESTENBERG.

Alas! alas! and stands it so?
[*Then in pressing and impatient tones.*
What friend! and do we let him go away
In this delusion — let him go away?
Not call him back immediately, not open
His eyes upon the spot?

OCTAVIO (*recovering himself out of a deep study*).

He has now opened mine,
And I see more than pleases me.

QUESTENBERG.

What is it?

OCTAVIO.

Curse on this journey!

QUESTENBERG.

But why so? What is it?

OCTAVIO.

Come, come along, friend! I must follow up
The ominous track immediately. Mine eyes
Are opened now, and I must use them. Come!
[*Draws* QUESTENBERG *on with him.*

QUESTENBERG.

What now? *Where* go you then?

OCTAVIO.

To her herself.

QUESTENBERG.

To ——

OCTAVIO (*interrupting him and correcting himself*).

To the duke. Come, let us go —— 'Tis done, 'tis done,
I see the net that is thrown over him.
Oh! he returns not to me as he went.

QUESTENBERG.

Nay, but explain yourself.

OCTAVIO.

And that I should not
Foresee it, not prevent this journey! Wherefore
Did I keep it from him? You were in the right.
I should have warned him. Now it is too late.

QUESTENBERG.

But *what's* too late? Bethink yourself, my friend,
That you are talking absolute riddles to me.

OCTAVIO (*more collected*).

Come! to the duke's. 'Tis close upon the hour
Which he appointed you for audience. Come!
A curse, a threefold curse, upon this journey!

[*He leads* QUESTENBERG *off*.

ACT II.

SCENE I.

Changes to a spacious chamber in the house of the Duke of Friedland. Servants employed in putting the tables and chairs in order. During this enters SENI, *like an old Italian doctor, in black, and clothed somewhat fantastically. He carries a white staff, with which he marks out the quarters of the heavens.*

FIRST SERVANT.

Come — to it, lads, to it! Make an end of it. I hear the sentry call out, "Stand to your arms!" They will be here in a minute.

SECOND SERVANT.

Why were we not told before that the audience would be held here? Nothing prepared — no orders — no instructions.

THIRD SERVANT.

Ay, and why was the balcony chamber countermanded, that with the great worked carpet? There one can look about one.

FIRST SERVANT.

Nay, that you must ask the mathematician there. He says it is an unlucky chamber.

SECOND SERVANT.

Poh! stuff and nonsense! that's what I call a *hum*. A chamber is a chamber; what much can the place signify in the affair?

SENI (*with gravity*).

My son, there's *nothing* insignificant,
Nothing! But yet in every earthly thing,
First and most principal is place and time.

FIRST SERVANT (*to the second*).

Say nothing to him, Nat. The duke himself must let him have his own will.

SENI (*counts the chairs, half in a loud, half in a low voice, till he comes to eleven, which he repeats*).

Eleven! an evil number! Set twelve chairs.
Twelve! twelve signs hath the zodiac: five and seven,
The holy numbers, include themselves in twelve.

SECOND SERVANT.

And what may you have to object against eleven? I should like to know that now.

SENI.

Eleven is transgression; eleven oversteps
The ten commandments.

SECOND SERVANT.

That's good? and why do you call five a holy number?

SENI.

Five is the soul of man: for even as man
Is mingled up of good and evil, so
The five is the first number that's made up
Of even and odd.

SECOND SERVANT.

The foolish old coxcomb!

FIRST SERVANT.

Ay! let him alone though. I like to hear him; there is more in his words than can be seen at first sight.

THIRD SERVANT.

Off, they come.

SECOND SERVANT.

There! Out at the side-door.

[*They hurry off.* SENI *follows slowly. A page brings the staff of command on a red cushion, and places it on the table, near the duke's chair. They are announced from without, and the wings of the door fly open.*

SCENE II.

WALLENSTEIN, DUCHESS.

WALLENSTEIN.

You went, then, through Vienna, were presented
To the Queen of Hungary?

DUCHESS.

Yes; and to the empress, too,
And by both majesties were we admitted
To kiss the hand.

WALLENSTEIN.

And how was it received,
That I had sent for wife and daughter hither
To the camp, in winter-time?

DUCHESS.

I did even that
Which you commissioned me to do. I told them
You had determined on our daughter's marriage,

And wished, ere yet you went into the field,
To show the elected husband his betrothed.

WALLENSTEIN.

And did they guess the choice which I had made?

DUCHESS.

They only hoped and wished it may have fallen
Upon no foreign nor yet Lutheran noble.

WALLENSTEIN.

And you — what do *you* wish, Elizabeth?

DUCHESS.

Your will, you know, was always mine.

WALLENSTEIN (*after a pause*).

Well, then, —
And in all else, of what kind and complexion
Was your reception at the court?

[*The* DUCHESS *casts her eyes on the ground, and remains silent.*

Hide nothing from me. How were you received?

DUCHESS.

O! my dear lord, all is not what it was.
A canker-worm, my lord, a canker-worm
Has stolen into the bud.

WALLENSTEIN.

Ay! is it so?
What, they were lax? they failed of the old respect?

DUCHESS.

Not of respect. No honors were omitted,
No outward courtesy; but in the place
Of condescending, confidential kindness,
Familiar and endearing, there were given me
Only these honors and that solemn courtesy.
Ah! and the tenderness which was put on,
It was the guise of pity, not of favor.
No! Albrecht's wife, Duke Albrecht's princely wife,
Count Harrach's noble daughter, should not so —
Not wholly so should she have been received.

WALLENSTEIN.

Yes, yes; they have taken offence. My latest conduct
They railed at it, no doubt.

DUCHESS.

O that they had!
I have been long accustomed to defend you,
To heal and pacify distempered spirits.
No; no one railed at you. They wrapped them up,
O Heaven! in such oppressive, solemn silence!
Here is no every-day misunderstanding,
No transient pique, no cloud that passes over;
Something most luckless, most unhealable,
Has taken place. The Queen of Hungary
Used formerly to call me her dear aunt,
And ever at departure to embrace me ——

WALLENSTEIN.

Now she omitted it?

DUCHESS (*wiping away her tears after a pause*).

She did embrace me,
But then first when I had already taken
My formal leave, and when the door already
Had closed upon me, then did she come out
In haste, as she had suddenly bethought herself,
And pressed me to her bosom, more with anguish
Than tenderness.

WALLENSTEIN (*seizes her hand soothingly*).

Nay, now collect yourself.
And what of Eggenberg and Lichtenstein,
And of our other friends there?

DUCHESS (*shaking her head*).

I saw none.

WALLENSTEIN.

The ambassador from Spain, who once was wont
To plead so warmly for me?

DUCHESS.

Silent, silent!

WALLENSTEIN.

These suns then are eclipsed for us. Henceforward
Must we roll on, our own fire, our own light.

DUCHESS.

And were it — were it, my dear lord, in that
Which moved about the court in buzz and whisper,
But in the country let itself be heard
Aloud — in that which Father Lamormain
In sundry hints and ——

WALLENSTEIN (*eagerly*).

Lanormain! what said he?

DUCHESS.

That you're accused of having daringly
O'erstepped the powers intrusted to you, charged
With traitorous contempt of the emperor
And his supreme behests. The proud Bavarian,
He and the Spaniards stand up your accusers —
That there's a storm collecting over you
Of far more fearful menace than the former one
Which whirled you headlong down at Regensburg.
And people talk, said he, of —— Ah!
[*Stifling extreme emotion.*

WALLENSTEIN.

Proceed!

DUCHESS.

I cannot utter it!

WALLENSTEIN.

Proceed!

DUCHESS.

They talk ——

WALLENSTEIN.

Well!

DUCHESS.

Of a second — (*catches her voice and hesitates.*)

WALLENSTEIN.

Second ——

DUCHESS.

Most disgraceful
Dismission.

WALLENSTEIN.

Talk they?
[*Strides across the chamber in vehement agitation.*
O! they force, they thrust me
With violence, against my own will, onward!

DUCHESS (*presses near to him in entreaty*).

Oh! if there yet be time, my husband! if
By giving way and by submission, this
Can be averted — my dear lord, give way!
Win down your proud heart to it! Tell the heart,
It is your sovereign lord, your emperor,
Before whom you retreat. Oh! let no longer
Low trickling malice blacken your good meaning
With abhorred venomous glosses. Stand you up
Shielded and helmed and weaponed with the truth,
And drive before you into uttermost shame
These slanderous liars! Few firm friends have we —
You know it! The swift growth of our good fortune,
It hath but set us up a mark for hatred.
What are we, if the sovereign's grace and favor
Stand not before us!

Scene III.

Enter the Countess Terzky, *leading in her hand the Princess* Thekla, *richly adorned with brilliants.*

Countess, Thekla, Wallenstein, Duchess.

COUNTESS.

How, sister! What, already upon business?
[*Observing the countenance of the* Duchess.
And business of no pleasing kind I see,
Ere he has gladdened at his child. The first
Moment belongs to joy. Here, Friedland! father!
This is thy daughter.
[Thekla *approaches with a shy and timid air, and bends herself as about to kiss his hand. He receives her in his arms, and remains standing for some time lost in the feeling of her presence.*

WALLENSTEIN.

Yes! pure and lovely hath hope risen on me,
I take her as the pledge of greater fortune.

DUCHESS.

'Twas but a little child when you departed
To raise up that great army for the emperor:
And after, at the close of the campaign,
When you returned home out of Pomerania,
Your daughter was already in the convent,
Wherein she has remained till now.

WALLENSTEIN.

The while
We in the field here gave our cares and toils
To make her great, and fight her a free way
To the loftiest earthly good; lo! mother Nature
Within the peaceful, silent convent walls,
Has done her part, and out of her free grace
Hath she bestowed on the beloved child
The god-like; and now leads her thus adorned
To meet her splendid fortune, and my hope.

DUCHESS (*to* THEKLA).

Thou wouldst not now have recognized thy father,
Wouldst thou, my child? She counted scarce eight years
When last she saw your face.

THEKLA.

O yes, yes, mother!
At the first glance! My father has not altered.
The form that stands before me falsifies
No feature of the image that hath lived
So long within me!

WALLENSTEIN.

The voice of my child!
[*Then after a pause.*
I was indignant at my destiny,
That it denied me a man-child, to be
Heir of my name and of my prosperous fortune,
And re-illume my soon-extinguished being
In a proud line of princes.

I wronged my destiny. Here upon this head,
So lovely in its maiden bloom, will I
Let fall the garland of a life of war,
Nor deem it lost, if only I can wreath it,
Transmuted to a regal ornament,
Around these beauteous brows.
[*He clasps her in his arms as* PICCOLOMINI *enters.*

SCENE IV.

Enter MAX. PICCOLOMINI, *and some time after* COUNT TERZKY, *the others remaining as before.*

COUNTESS.

There comes the Paladin who protected us.

WALLENSTEIN.

Max.! Welcome, ever welcome! Always wert thou
The morning star of my best joys!

MAX.

My general ——

WALLENSTEIN.

Till now it was the emperor who rewarded thee,
I but the instrument. This day thou hast bound
The father to thee, Max.! the fortunate father,
And this debt Friedland's self must pay.

MAX.

My prince!
You made no common hurry to transfer it.
I come with shame: yea, not without a pang!
For scarce have I arrived here, scarce delivered
The mother and the daughter to your arms,
But there is brought to me from your equerry *
A splendid richly-plated hunting dress
So to remunerate me for my troubles —

* A reviewer in the *Literary Gazette* observes that, in these lines, Mr. Coleridge has misapprehended the meaning of the word "zug," a team, translating it as "anzug," a suit of clothes. The following version, as a substitute, I propose: —

When from your stables there is brought to me
A team of four most richly harnessed horses.

The term, however, is "jagd-zug," which may mean a "hunting equipage," or a "hunting stud;" although Hilpert gives only "a team of four horses."

Yes, yes, remunerate me, — since a trouble
It must be, a mere office, not a favor
Which I leaped forward to receive, and which
I came with grateful heart to thank you for.
No! 'twas not so intended, that my business
Should be my highest best good fortune!

[TERZKY *enters, and delivers letters to the* DUKE, *which he breaks open hurriedly.*

COUNTESS (*to* MAX.).

Remunerate your trouble! For his joy
He makes you recompense. 'Tis not unfitting
For you, Count Piccolomini, to feel
So tenderly — my brother it beseems
To show himself forever great and princely.

THEKLA.

Then I too must have scruples of his love:
For his munificent hands did ornament me
Ere yet the father's heart had spoken to me.

MAX

Yes; 'tis his nature ever to be giving
And making happy.

[*He grasps the hand of the* DUCHESS *with still increasing warmth.*

How my heart pours out
Its all of thanks to him! O! how I seem
To utter all things in the dear name — Friedland.
While I shall live, so long will I remain
The captive of this name: in it shall bloom
My every fortune, every lovely hope.
Inextricably as in some magic ring
In this name hath my destiny charm-bound me!

COUNTESS (*who during this time has been anxiously watching the* DUKE, *and remarks that he is lost in thought over the letters*).

My brother wishes us to leave him. Come.

WALLENSTEIN (*turns himself round quick, collects himself, and speaks with cheerfulness to the* DUCHESS).

Once more I bid thee welcome to the camp,
Thou art the hostess of this court. You, Max.,
Will now again administer your old office,
While we perform the sovereign's business here.

[MAX. PICCOLOMINI *offers the* DUCHESS *his arm; the* COUNTESS *accompanies the* PRINCESS.

TERZKY (*calling after him*).

Max., we depend on seeing you at the meeting.

SCENE V.

WALLENSTEIN, COUNT TERZKY.

WALLENSTEIN (*in deep thought, to himself*).

She has seen all things as they are — it is so,
And squares completely with my other notices,
They have determined finally in Vienna,
Have given me my successor already;
It is the King of Hungary, Ferdinand,
The emperor's delicate son! he's now their savior,
He's the new star that's rising now! Of us
They think themselves already fairly rid,
And as we were deceased, the heir already
Is entering on possession — Therefore — despatch!

[*As he turns round he observes* TERZKY, *and gives him a letter.*

Count Altringer will have himself excused,
And Gallas too — I like not this!

TERZKY.

And if
Thou loiterest longer, all will fall away,
One following the other.

WALLENSTEIN.

Altringer
Is master of the Tyrol passes. I must forthwith
Send some one to him, that he let not in
The Spaniards on me from the Milanese.

——Well, and the old Sesin, that ancient trader
In contraband negotiations, he
Has shown himself again of late. What brings he
From the Count Thur?

TERZKY.

The count communicates
He has found out the Swedish chancellor
At Halberstadt, where the convention's held,
Who says, you've tired him out, and that he'll have
No further dealings with you.

WALLENSTEIN.

And why so?

TERZKY.

He says, you are never in earnest in your speeches;
That you decoy the Swedes — to make fools of them;
Will league yourself with Saxony against them,
And at last make yourself a riddance of them
With a paltry sum of money.

WALLENSTEIN.

So then, doubtless,
Yes, doubtless, this same modest Swede expects
That I shall yield him some fair German tract
For his prey and booty, that ourselves at last
On our own soil and native territory
May be no longer our own lords and masters!
An excellent scheme! No, no! They must be off,
Off, off! away! *we* want no such neighbors.

TERZKY.

Nay, yield them up that dot, that speck of land —
It goes not from your portion. If you win
The game, what matters it to you who pays it?

WALLENSTEIN.

Off with them, off! Thou understand'st not this.
Never shall it be said of me, I parcelled
My native land away, dismembered Germany,
Betrayed it to a foreigner, in order
To come with stealthy tread, and filch away

My own share of the plunder — Never! never!
No foreign power shall strike root in the empire,
And least of all these Goths! these hungry wolves!
Who send such envious, hot, and greedy glances
Toward the rich blessings of our German lands!
I'll have their aid to cast and draw my nets,
But not a single fish of all the draught
Shall they come in for.

TERZKY.

You will deal, however,
More fairly with the Saxons? they lose patience
While you shift round and make so many curves.
Say, to what purpose all these masks? Your friends
Are plunged in doubts, baffled, and led astray in you.
There's Oxenstiern, there's Arnheim — neither knows
What he should think of your procrastinations,
And in the end I prove the liar; all
Passes through me. I've not even your handwriting.

WALLENSTEIN.

I *never* give handwriting; and thou knowest it.

TERZKY.

But how can it be *known* that you are in earnest,
If the act follows not upon the word?
You must yourself acknowledge, that in all
Your intercourses hitherto with the enemy,
You might have done with safety all you have done.
Had you meant nothing further than to gull him
For the emperor's service.

WALLENSTEIN (*after a pause, during which he looks narrowly on* TERZKY).

And from whence dost thou know
That I'm not gulling him for the emperor's service?
Whence knowest thou that I'm not gulling all of you?
Dost thou know me so well? When made I thee
The intendant of my secret purposes?
I am not conscious that I ever opened
My inmost thoughts to thee. The emperor, it is true,
Hath dealt with me amiss; and if I would
I could repay him with usurious interest

For the evil he hath done me. It delights me
To know my power; but whether I shall use it,
Of that I should have thought that thou couldst speak
No wiser than thy fellows.

TERZKY.

So hast thou always played thy game with us.

[*Enter* ILLO.

SCENE VI.

ILLO, WALLENSTEIN, TERZKY.

WALLENSTEIN.

How stand affairs without? Are they prepared?

ILLO.

You'll find them in the very mood you wish.
They know about the emperor's requisition,
And are tumultuous.

WALLENSTEIN.

How hath Isolani
Declared himself?

ILLO.

He's yours, both soul and body,
Since you built up again his faro-bank.

WALLENSTEIN.

And which way doth Kolatto bend? Hast thou
Made sure of Tiefenbach and Deodati?

ILLO.

What Piccolomini does that they do too.

WALLENSTEIN.

You mean, then, I may venture somewhat with them?

ILLO.

If you are assured of the Piccolomini.

WALLENSTEIN.

Not more assured of mine own self.

TERZKY.

And yet
I would you trusted not so much to Octavio,
The fox!

WALLENSTEIN.

Thou teachest me to know my man?
Sixteen campaigns I have made with that old warrior.
Besides, I have his horoscope;
We both are born beneath like stars — in short,
[*With an air of mystery.*
To this belongs its own peculiar aspect,
If therefore thou canst warrant me the rest ——

ILLO.

There is among them all but this one voice,
You must not lay down the command. I hear
They mean to send a deputation to you.

WALLENSTEIN.

If I'm in aught to bind myself to them
They too must bind themselves to me.

ILLO.

Of course.

WALLENSTEIN.

Their words of honor they must give, their oaths,
Give them in writing to me, promising
Devotion to my service unconditional.

ILLO.

Why not?

TERZKY.

Devotion unconditional?
The exception of their duties towards Austria
They'll always place among the premises.
With this reserve ——

WALLENSTEIN (*shaking his head*).

All unconditional;
No premises, no reserves.

ILLO.

A thought has struck me.
Does not Count Terzky give us a set banquet
This evening?

TERZKY.

Yes; and all the generals
Have been invited.

ILLO (*to* WALLENSTEIN).

Say, will you here fully
Commission me to use my own discretion?
I'll gain for you the generals' word of honor,
Even as you wish.

WALLENSTEIN.

Gain me their signatures!
How you come by them that is your concern.

ILLO.

And if I bring it to you in black on white,
That all the leaders who are present here
Give themselves up to you, without condition;
Say, will you then — then will you show yourself
In earnest, and with some decisive action
Try your fortune.

WALLENSTEIN.

Get but the signatures!

ILLO.

Think what thou dost, thou canst not execute
The emperor's orders, nor reduce thine army,
Nor send the regiments to the Spaniards' aid,
Unless thou wouldst resign thy power forever.
Think on the other hand — thou canst not spurn
The emperor's high commands and solemn orders,
Nor longer temporize, nor seek evasion,
Wouldst thou avoid a rupture with the court.
Resolve then! Wilt thou now by one bold act
Anticipate their ends, or, doubting still,
Await the extremity?

WALLENSTEIN.

There's time before
The extremity arrives.

ILLO.

Seize, seize the hour,
Ere it slips from you. Seldom comes the moment
In life, which is indeed sublime and weighty.
To make a great decision possible,
O! many things, all transient and all rapid,
Must meet at once: and, haply, they thus met
May by that confluence be enforced to pause
Time long-enough for wisdom, though too short,
Far, far too short a time for doubt and scruple!
This is that moment. See, our army chieftains,
Our best, our noblest, are assembled round you,
Their king-like leader! On your nod they wait.
The single threads, which here your prosperous fortune
Hath woven together in one potent web
Instinct with destiny, O! let them not
Unravel of themselves. If you permit
These chiefs to separate, so unanimous
Bring you them not a second time together.
'Tis the high tide that heaves the stranded ship,
And every individual's spirit waxes
In the great stream of multitudes. Behold
They are still here, here still! But soon the war
Bursts them once more asunder, and in small
Particular anxieties and interests
Scatters their spirit, and the sympathy
Of each man with the whole. He who to-day
Forgets himself, forced onward with the stream,
Will become sober, seeing but himself.
Feel only his own weakness, and with speed
Will face about, and march on in the old
High road of duty, the old broad-trodden road,
And seek but to make shelter in good plight.

WALLENSTEIN.

The time is not yet come.

TERZKY.

So you say always.
But when will it be time?

WALLENSTEIN.

When I shall say it.

ILLO.

You'll wait upon the stars, and on their hours,
Till the earthly hour escapes you. Oh, believe me,
In your own bosom are your destiny's stars.
Confidence in yourself, prompt resolution,
This is your Venus! and the sole malignant,
The only one that harmeth you is doubt.

WALLENSTEIN.

Thou speakest as thou understandest. How oft
And many a time I've told thee Jupiter,
That lustrous god, was setting at thy birth.
Thy visual power subdues no mysteries;
Mole-eyed thou mayest but burrow in the earth,
Blind as the subterrestrial, who with wan
Lead-colored shine lighted thee into life.
The common, the terrestrial, thou mayest see,
With serviceable cunning knit together,
The nearest with the nearest; and therein
I trust thee and believe thee! but whate'er
Full of mysterious import Nature weaves,
And fashions in the depths — the spirit's ladder,
That from this gross and visible world of dust,
Even to the starry world, with thousand rounds,
Builds itself up; on which the unseen powers
Move up and down on heavenly ministries —
The circles in the circles, that approach
The central sun with ever-narrowing orbit —
These see the glance alone, the unsealed eye,
Of Jupiter's glad children born in lustre.

[*He walks across the chamber, then returns, and standing still, proceeds.*

The heavenly constellations make not merely
The day and nights, summer and spring, not merely
Signify to the husbandman the seasons

Of sowing and of harvest. Human action,
That is the seed, too, of contingencies,
Strewed on the dark land of futurity
In hopes to reconcile the powers of fate
Whence it behoves us to seek out the seed-time,
To watch the stars, select their proper hours,
And trace with searching eye the heavenly houses,
Whether the enemy of growth and thriving
Hide himself not, malignant, in his corner.
Therefore permit me my own time. Meanwhile
Do you your part. As yet I cannot say
What *I* shall do — only, give way I will not,
Depose me, too, they shall not. On these points
You may rely.

PAGE (*entering*).

My lords, the generals.

WALLENSTEIN.

Let them come in.

TERZKY.

Shall all the chiefs be present?

WALLENSTEIN.

'Twere needless. Both the Piccolomini
Maradas, Butler, Forgœtsch, Deodati,
Karaffa, Isolani — these may come.

[TERZKY *goes out with the* PAGE.

WALLENSTEIN (*to* ILLO).

Hast thou taken heed that Questenberg was watched?
Had he no means of secret intercourse?

ILLO.

I have watched him closely — and he spoke with none
But with Octavio.

Scene VII.

Wallenstein, Terzky, Illo. — *To them enter* Questenberg, Octavio, *and* Max. Piccolomini, Butler, Isolani, Maradas, *and three other Generals.* Wallenstein *motions* Questenberg, *who in consequence takes the chair directly opposite to him; the others follow, arranging themselves according to their rank. There reigns a momentary silence.*

WALLENSTEIN.

I have understood,
'Tis true, the sum and import, Questenberg,
Of your instructions. I have weighed them well,
And formed my final, absolute resolve;
Yet it seems fitting that the generals
Should hear the will of the emperor from your mouth.
May it please you then to open your commission
Before these noble chieftains?

QUESTENBERG.

I am ready
To obey you; but will first entreat your highness,
And all these noble chieftains, to consider,
The imperial dignity and sovereign right
Speaks from my mouth, and not my own presumption.

WALLENSTEIN.

We excuse all preface.

QUESTENBERG.

When his majesty
The emperor to his courageous armies
Presented in the person of Duke Friedland
A most experienced and renowned commander,
He did it in glad hope and confidence
To give thereby to the fortune of the war
A rapid and auspicious change. The onset
Was favorable to his royal wishes.
Bohemia was delivered from the Saxons,
The Swede's career of conquest checked! These lands
Began to draw breath freely, as Duke Friedland

From all the streams of Germany forced hither
The scattered armies of the enemy;
Hither invoked as round one magic circle
The Rhinegrave, Bernhard, Banner, Oxenstiern,
Yea, and the never-conquered king himself;
Here finally, before the eye of Nürnberg,
The fearful game of battle to decide.

WALLENSTEIN.

To the point, so please you.

QUESTENBERG.

A new spirit
At once proclaimed to us the new commander.
No longer strove blind rage with rage more blind;
But in the enlightened field of skill was shown
How fortitude can triumph over boldness,
And scientific art outweary courage.
In vain they tempt him to the fight, he only
Entrenches him still deeper in his hold,
As if to build an everlasting fortress.
At length grown desperate, now, the king resolves
To storm the camp and lead his wasted legions,
Who daily fall by famine and by plague,
To quicker deaths and hunger and disease.
Through lines of barricades behind whose fence
Death lurks within a thousand mouths of fire,
He yet unconquered strives to storm his way.
There was attack, and there resistance, such
As mortal eye had never seen before;
Repulsed at last, the king withdrew his troops
From this so murderous field, and not a foot
Of ground was gained by all that fearful slaughter.

WALLENSTEIN.

Pray spare us these recitals from gazettes,
Which we ourselves beheld with deepest horror.

QUESTENBERG.

In Nürnberg's camp the Swedish monarch left
His fame — in Lützen's plains his life. But who
Stood not astounded, when victorious Friedland

After this day of triumph, this proud day,
Marched toward Bohemia with the speed of flight,
And vanished from the theatre of war?
While the young Weimar hero * forced his way
Into Franconia, to the Danube, like
Some delving winter-stream, which, where it rushes,
Makes its own channel; with such sudden speed
He marched, and now at once 'fore Regensburg
Stood to the affright of all good Catholic Christians.
Then did Bavaria's well-deserving prince
Entreat swift aidance in his extreme need;
The emperor sends seven horsemen to Duke Friedland,
Seven horsemen couriers sends he with the entreaty:
He superadds his own, and supplicates
Where as the sovereign lord he can command.
In vain his supplication! At this moment
The duke hears only his old hate and grudge,
Barters the general good to gratify
Private revenge — and so falls Regensburg.

WALLENSTEIN.

Max., to what period of the war alludes he?
My recollection fails me here.

MAX.

He means
When we were in Silesia.

WALLENSTEIN.

Ay! is it so!
But what had we to do *there?*

MAX.

To beat out
The Swedes and Saxons from the province.

WALLENSTEIN.

True;
In that description which the minister gave,
I seemed to have forgotten the whole war.
[*To* QUESTENBERG.
Well, but proceed a little.

* Bernhard of Saxe-Weimar, who succeeded Gustavus in command.

QUESTENBERG.

We hoped upon the Oder to regain
What on the Danube shamefully was lost.
We looked for deeds of all-astounding grandeur
Upon a theatre of war, on which
A Friedland led in person to the field,
And the famed rival of the great Gustavus
Had but a Thurn and Arnheim to oppose him!
Yet the encounter of their mighty hosts
Served but to feast and entertain each other.
Our country groaned beneath the woes of war,
Yet naught but peace prevailed in Friedland's camp!

WALLENSTEIN.

Full many a bloody strife is fought in vain,
Because its youthful general needs a victory.
But 'tis the privilege of the old commander
To spare the costs of fighting useless battles
Merely to show that he knows how to conquer.
It would have little helped my fame to boast
Of conquest o'er an Arnheim; but far more
Would my forbearance have availed my country,
Had I succeeded to dissolve the alliance
Existing 'twixt the Saxon and the Swede.

QUESTENBERG.

But you did not succeed, and so commenced
The fearful strife anew. And here at length,
Beside the river Ober did the duke
Assert his ancient fame. Upon the fields
Of Steinau did the Swedes lay down their arms,
Subdued without a blow. And here, with others,
The righteousness of heaven to his avenger
Delivered that long-practised stirrer-up
Of insurrection, that curse-laden torch
And kindler of this war, Matthias Thurn.
But he had fallen into magnanimous hands
Instead of punishment he found reward,
And with rich presents did the duke dismiss
The arch-foe of his emperor.

WALLENSTEIN (*laughs*).

I know,
I know you had already in Vienna
Your windows and your balconies forestalled
To see him on the executioner's cart.
I might have lost the battle, lost it too
With infamy, and still retained your graces —
But, to have cheated them of a spectacle,
Oh! that the good folks of Vienna never,
No, never can forgive me!

QUESTENBERG.

So Silesia
Was freed, and all things loudly called the duke
Into Bavaria, now pressed hard on all sides.
And he did put his troops in motion: slowly,
Quite at his ease, and by the longest road
He traverses Bohemia; but ere ever
He hath once seen the enemy, faces round,
Breaks up the march, and takes to winter-quarters.

WALLENSTEIN.

The troops were pitiably destitute
Of every necessary, every comfort,
The winter came. What thinks his majesty
His troops are made of? Aren't we men; subjected
Like other men to wet, and cold, and all
The circumstances of necessity?
Oh, miserable lot of the poor soldier!
Wherever he comes in all flee before him,
And when he goes away the general curse
Follows him on his route. All must be seized.
Nothing is given him. And compelled to seize
From every man he's every man's abhorrence.
Behold, here stand my generals. Karaffa!
Count Deodati! Butler! Tell this man
How long the soldier's pay is in arrears.

BUTLER.

Already a full year.

WALLENSTEIN.

And 'tis the hire
That constitutes the hireling's name and duties,
The soldier's pay is the soldier's covenant.*

QUESTENBERG.

Ah! this is a far other tone from that
In which the duke spoke eight, nine years ago.

WALLENSTEIN.

Yes! 'tis my fault, I know it: I myself
Have spoilt the emperor by indulging him.
Nine years ago, during the Danish war,
I raised him up a force, a mighty force,
Forty or fifty thousand men, that cost him
Of his own purse no doit. Through Saxony
The fury goddess of the war marched on,
E'en to the surf-rocks of the Baltic, bearing
The terrors of his name. That was a time!
In the whole imperial realm no name like mine
Honored with festival and celebration —
And Albrecht Wallenstein, it was the title
Of the third jewel in his crown!
But at the Diet, when the princes met
At Regensburg, there, there the whole broke out,
There 'twas laid open, there it was made known
Out of what money-bag I had paid the host,
And what were now my thanks, what had I now
That I, a faithful servant of the sovereign,
Had loaded on myself the people's curses,
And let the princes of the empire pay
The expenses of this war that aggrandizes
The emperor alone. What thanks had I?
What? I was offered up to their complaint
Dismissed, degraded!

* The original is not translatable into English: —

—— Und sein Sold
Muss dem *Soldaten* werden, darnach heisst er.

It might perhaps have been thus rendered: —

And that for which he sold his services,
The soldier must receive —

but a false or doubtful etymology is no more than a dull pun.

QUESTENBERG.

But your highness knows
What little freedom he possessed of action
In that disastrous Diet.

WALLENSTEIN.

Death and hell!
I had that which could have procured him freedom
No! since 'twas proved so inauspicious to me
To serve the emperor at the empire's cost,
I have been taught far other trains of thinking
Of the empire and the Diet of the empire.
From the emperor, doubtless, I received this staff,
But now I hold it as the empire's general, —
For the common weal, the universal interest,
And no more for that one man's aggrandizement!
But to the point. What is it that's desired of me?

QUESTENBERG.

First, his imperial majesty hath willed
That without pretexts of delay the army
Evacuate Bohemia.

WALLENSTEIN.

In this season?
And to what quarter wills the emperor
That we direct our course?

QUESTENBERG.

To the enemy.
His majesty resolves, that Regensburg
Be purified from the enemy ere Easter,
That Lutheranism may be no longer preached
In that cathedral, nor heretical
Defilement desecrate the celebration
Of that pure festival.

WALLENSTEIN.

My generals,
Can this be realized?

ILLO.

'Tis not possible.

BUTLER.

It can't be realized.

QUESTENBERG.

The emperor
Already hath commanded Colonel Suys
To advance towards Bavaria.

WALLENSTEIN.

What did Suys?

QUESTENBERG.

That which his duty prompted. He advanced.

WALLENSTEIN.

What! he advanced? And I, his general,
Had given him orders, peremptory orders:
Not to desert his station! Stands it thus
With my authority? Is this the obedience
Due to my office, which being thrown aside,
No war can be conducted? Chieftains, speak:
You be the judges, generals! What deserves
That officer who, of his oath neglectful,
Is guilty of contempt of orders?

ILLO.

Death.

WALLENSTEIN (*raising his voice, as all but* ILLO *had remained silent and seemingly scrupulous*).

Count Piccolomini! what has he deserved?

MAX. PICCOLOMINI (*after a long pause*).

According to the letter of the law,
Death.

ISOLANI.

Death.

BUTLER.

Death, by the laws of war.

[QUESTENBERG *rises from his seat,* WALLENSTEIN *follows, all the rest rise.*

WALLENSTEIN.

To this the law condemns him, and not I.
And if I show him favor, 'twill arise
From the reverence that I owe my emperor.

QUESTENBERG.

If so, I can say nothing further — *here!*

WALLENSTEIN.

I accepted the command but on conditions!
And this the first, that to the diminution
Of my authority no human being,
Not even the emperor's self, should be entitled
To do aught, or to say aught, with the army.
If I stand warranter of the *event*,
Placing my honor and my head in pledge,
Needs must I have full mastery in all
The means thereto. What rendered this Gustavus
Resistless, and unconquered upon earth?
This — that he was the monarch in his army!
A monarch, one who is indeed a monarch,
Was never yet subdued but by his equal.
But to the point! The best is yet to come,
Attend now, generals!

QUESTENBERG.

The Prince Cardinal
Begins his route at the approach of spring
From the Milanese; and leads a Spanish army
Through Germany into the Netherlands.
That he may march secure and unimpeded,
'Tis the emperor's will you grant him a detachment
Of eight horse-regiments from the army here.

WALLENSTEIN.

Yes, yes! I understand! Eight regiments! Well,
Right well concerted, Father Lanormain!
Eight thousand horse! Yes, yes! 'tis as it should be!
I see it coming.

QUESTENBERG.

There is nothing coming.
All stands in front: the counsel of state-prudence,
The dictate of necessity!

WALLENSTEIN.

What then?
What, my lord envoy? May I not be suffered
To understand that folks are tired of seeing
The sword's hilt in *my* grasp, and that your court
Snatch eagerly at this pretence, and use
The Spanish title, and drain off my forces,
To lead into the empire a new army
Unsubjected to my control? To throw me
Plumply aside, — I am still too powerful for you
To venture that. My stipulation runs,
That all the imperial forces shall obey me
Where'er the German is the native language.
Of Spanish troops and of prince cardinals,
That take their route as visitors, through the empire,
There stands no syllable in my stipulation.
No syllable! And so the politic court
Steals in on tiptoe, and creeps round behind it;
First makes me weaker, then to be dispensed with,
Till it dares strike at length a bolder blow,
And make short work with me.
What need of all these crooked ways, lord envoy?
Straightforward, man! his compact with me pinches
The emperor. He would that I moved off!
Well! I will gratify him!

[*Here there commences an agitation among the generals, which increases continually.*

It grieves me for my noble officers' sakes;
I see not yet by what means they will come at
The moneys they have advanced, or how obtain
The recompense their services demand.
Still a new leader brings new claimants forward,
And prior merit superannuates quickly.
There serve here many foreigners in the army,
And were the man in all else brave and gallant,
I was not wont to make nice scrutiny
After his pedigree or catechism.
This will be otherwise i' the time to come.
Well; me no longer it concerns. [*He seats himself.*

MAX. PICCOLOMINI.

Forbid it, Heaven, that it should come to this!
Our troops will swell in dreadful fermentation —
The emperor is abused — it cannot be.

ISOLANI.

It cannot be; all goes to instant wreck.

WALLENSTEIN.

Thou hast said truly, faithful Isolani!
What *we* with toil and foresight have built up
Will go to wreck — all go to instant wreck.
What then? Another chieftain is soon found,
Another army likewise (who dares doubt it?)
Will flock from all sides to the emperor,
At the first beat of his recruiting drum.
[*During this speech*, ISOLANI, TERZKY, ILLO, *and* MARADAS *talk confusedly with great agitation.*

MAX. PICCOLOMINI (*busily and passionately going from one to another, and soothing them*).

Hear, my commander! Hear me, generals!
Let me conjure you, duke! Determine nothing,
Till we have met and represented to you
Our joint remonstrances! Nay, calmer! Friends!
I hope all may yet be set right again.

TERZKY.

Away! let us away! in the antechamber
Find we the others. [*They go.*

BUTLER (*to* QUESTENBERG).

If good counsel gain
Due audience from your wisdom, my lord envoy,
You will be cautious how you show yourself
In public for some hours to come — or hardly
Will that gold key protect you from maltreatment.
[*Commotions heard from without.*

WALLENSTEIN.

A salutary counsel —— Thou, Octavio!
Wilt answer for the safety of our guest.

Farewell, Von Questenberg!
[QUESTENBURG *is about to speak.*
Nay, not a word.
Not one word more of that detested subject!
You have performed your duty. We know now
To separate the office from the man.
[*As* QUESTENBERG *is going off with* OCTAVIO, GOETZ, TIEFENBACH, KOLATTO, *press in, several other generals following them.*

GOETZ.

Where's he who means to rob us of our general?

TIEFENBACH (*at the same time*).

What are we forced to hear? That thou wilt leave us?

KOLATTO (*at the same time*).

We will live with thee, we will die with thee.

WALLENSTEIN (*with stateliness, and pointing to* ILLO).
There! the field-marshal knows our will. [*Exit.*
[*While all are going off the stage, the curtain drops.*

Act ~~SCENE~~ III.

A Small Chamber.

ILLO *and* TERZKY.

TERZKY.

Now for this evening's business! How intend you
To manage with the generals at the banquet?

ILLO.

Attend! We frame a formal declaration,
Wherein we to the duke consign ourselves
Collectively, to be and to remain
His, both with life and limb, and not to spare
The last drop of our blood for *him*, provided,
So doing we infringe no oath or duty
We may be under to the emperor. Mark!
This reservation we expressly make
In a particular clause, and save the conscience.

Now hear! this formula so framed and worded
Will be presented to them for perusal
Before the banquet. No one will find in it
Cause of offence or scruple. Hear now further!
After the feast, when now the vapering wine
Opens the heart, and shuts the eyes, we let
A counterfeited paper, in the which
This one particular clause has been left out,
Go round for signatures.

TERZKY.

How! think you then
That they'll believe themselves bound by an oath,
Which we have tricked them into by a juggle?

ILLO.

We shall have caught and caged them! Let them then
Beat their wings bare against the wires, and rave
Loud as they may against our treachery;
At court their signatures will be believed
Far more than their most holy affirmations.
Traitors they are, and must be; therefore wisely
Will make a virtue of necessity.

TERZKY.

Well, well, it shall content me: let but something
Be *done*, let only some decisive blow
Set us in motion.

ILLO.

Besides, 'tis of subordinate importance
How, or how far, we may thereby propel
The generals. 'Tis enough that we persuade
The duke that they are his. Let him but act
In his determined mood, as if he had them,
And he *will* have them. Where he plunges in,
He makes a whirlpool, and all stream down to it.

TERZKY.

His policy is such a labyrinth,
That many a time when I have thought myself
Close at his side, he's gone at once, and left me
Ignorant of the ground where I was standing.

He lends the enemy his ear, permits me
To write to them, to Arnheim; to Sesina
Himself comes forward blank and undisguised;
Talks with us by the hour about his plans,
And when I think I have him — off at once —
He has slipped from me, and appears as if
He had no scheme, but to retain his place.

ILLO.

He give up his old plans! I'll tell you, friend!
His soul is occupied with nothing else,
Even in his sleep — they are his thoughts, his dreams,
That day by day he questions for this purpose
The motions of the planets ——

TERZKY.

Ah! you know
This night, that is now coming, he with Seni,
Shuts himself up in the astrological tower
To make joint observations — for I hear
It is to be a night of weight and crisis;
And something great, and of long expectation,
Takes place in heaven.

ILLO.

O that it might take place
On earth! The generals are full of zeal,
And would with ease be led to anything
Rather than lose their chief. Observe, too, that
We have at last a fair excuse before us
To form a close alliance 'gainst the court,
Yet innocent its title, bearing simply
That we support him only in command.
But in the ardor of pursuit thou knowest
Men soon forget the goal from which they started.
The object I've in view is that the prince
Shall either find them, or believe them ready
For every hazard. Opportunity
Will tempt him on. Be the great step once taken,
Which at Vienna's court can ne'er be pardoned,
The force of circumstances will lead him onward

The farther still and farther. 'Tis the choice
That makes him undecisive — come but need,
And all his powers and wisdom will come with it.

TERZKY.

'Tis this alone the enemy awaits
To change their chief and join their force with ours.

ILLO.

Come! be we bold and make despatch. The work
In this next day or two must thrive and grow
More than it has for years. And let but only
Things first turn up auspicious here below —
Mark what I say — the right stars, too, will show themselves.
Come to the generals. All is in the glow,
And must be beaten while 'tis malleable.

TERZKY.

Do you go thither, Illo? I must stay
And wait here for the Countess Terzky. Know
That we, too, are not idle. Break one string,
A second is in readiness.

ILLO.

Yes! yes!
I saw your lady smile with such sly meaning.
What's in the wind?

TERZKY.

A secret. Hush! she comes.
[*Exit* ILLO.

SCENE II.

The COUNTESS *steps out from a closet.*

COUNT *and* COUNTESS TERZKY.

TERZKY.

Well — is she coming? I can keep him back
No longer.

COUNTESS.

She will be here instantly,
You only send him.

TERZKY.

I am not quite certain,
I must confess it, countess, whether or not
We are earning the duke's thanks hereby. You know
No ray has broke out from him on this point.
You have o'erruled me, and yourself know best
How far you dare proceed.

COUNTESS.

I take it on me.
[*Talking to herself while she is advancing.*
Here's no heed of full powers and commissions;
My cloudy duke! we understand each other —
And without words. What could I not unriddle,
Wherefore the daughter should be sent for hither,
Why first he, and no other should be chosen
To fetch her hither? This sham of betrothing her
To a bridegroom *, whom no one knows — No! no!
This may blind others! I see through thee, brother!
But it beseems thee not to draw a card
At such a game. Not yet! It all remains
Mutely delivered up to my finessing.
Well — thou shalt not have been deceived, Duke Friedland,
In her who is thy sister.

SERVANT (*enters*).

The commanders! [*Exit.*

TERZKY (*to the* COUNTESS).

Take care you heat his fancy and affections —
Possess him with a reverie, and send him,
Absent and dreaming to the banquet; that
He may not boggle at the signature.

COUNTESS.

Take care of your guests! Go, send him hither.

TERZKY.

All rests upon his undersigning.

* In Germany, after honorable addresses have been paid and formally accepted, the lovers are called bride and bridegroom, even though the marriage should not take place till years afterwards.

COUNTESS (*interrupting him*).

Go to your guests! Go ——

ILLO (*comes back*).

Where art staying, Terzky?
The house is full, and all expecting you.

TERZKY.

Instantly! instantly! [*To the* COUNTESS.
And let him not
Stay here too long. It might awake suspicion
In the old man ——

COUNTESS.

A truce with your precautions!
[*Exeunt* TERZKY *and* ILLO.

SCENE III.

COUNTESS, MAX. PICCOLOMINI.

MAX. (*peeping in on the stage slyly*).

Aunt Terzky! may I venture?
[*Advances to the middle of the stage, and looks around him with uneasiness.*
She's not here!
Where is she?

COUNTESS.

Look but somewhat narrowly
In yonder corner, lest perhaps she lie
Concealed behind that screen.

MAX.

There lie her gloves!
[*Snatches at them, but the* COUNTESS *takes them herself.*
You unkind lady! You refuse me this,
You make it an amusement to torment me.

COUNTESS.

And this the thanks you give me for my trouble?

MAX.

O, if you felt the oppression at my heart!
Since we've been here, so to constrain myself

With such poor stealth to hazard words and glances.
These, these are not my habits!

COUNTESS.

You have still
Many new habits to acquire, young friend!
But on this proof of your obedient temper
I must continue to insist; and only
On this condition can I play the agent
For your concerns.

MAX.

But wherefore comes she not?
Where is she?

COUNTESS.

Into *my* hands you must place it
Whole and entire. Whom could you find, indeed,
More zealously affected to your interest?
No soul on earth must know it — not your father;
He must not, above all.

MAX.

Alas! what danger?
Here is no face on which I might concentre
All the enraptured soul stirs up within me.
O lady! tell me, is all changed around me?
Or is it only I?
I find myself,
As among strangers! Not a trace is left
Of all my former wishes, former joys.
Where has it vanished to? There was a time
When even, methought, with such a world as this,
I was not discontented. Now how flat!
How stale! No life, no bloom, no flavor in it!
My comrades are intolerable to me.
My father — even to him I can say nothing.
My arms, my military duties — O!
They are such wearying toys!

COUNTESS.

But, gentle friend!
I must entreat it of your condescension,
You would be pleased to sink your eye, and favor

With one short glance or two this poor stale world,
Where even now much, and of much moment,
Is on the eve of its completion.

MAX.

Something,
I can't but know is going forward round me.
I see it gathering, crowding, driving on,
In wild uncustomary movements. Well,
In due time, doubtless, it will reach even me.
Where think you I have been, dear lady? Nay,
No raillery. The turmoil of the camp,
The spring-tide of acquaintance rolling in,
The pointless jest, the empty conversation,
Oppressed and stifled me. I gasped for air—
I could not breathe—I was constrained to fly,
To seek a silence out for my full heart;
And a pure spot wherein to feel my happiness.
No smiling, countess! In the church was I.
There is a cloister here "To the heaven's gate," *
Thither I went, there found myself alone.
Over the altar hung a holy mother;
A wretched painting 'twas, yet 'twas the friend
That I was seeking in this moment. Ah,
How oft have I beheld that glorious form
In splendor, 'mid ecstatic worshippers;
Yet, still it moved me not! and now at once
Was my devotion cloudless as my love.

COUNTESS.

Enjoy your fortune and felicity!
Forget the world around you. Meantime, friendship
Shall keep strict vigils for you, anxious, active.
Only be manageable when that friendship
Points you the road to full accomplishment.

MAX.

But where abides she then? Oh, golden time
Of travel, when each morning sun united

* I am doubtful whether this be the dedication of the cloister, or the name of one of the city gates, near which it stood. I have translated it in the former sense; but fearful of having made some blunder, I add the original,—'s ist ein Kloster hier *zur Himmelspforte.*

And but the coming night divided us;
Then ran no sand, then struck no hour for us,
And time, in our excess of happiness,
Seemed on its course eternal to stand still.
Oh, he hath fallen from out his heaven of bliss
Who can descend to count the changing hours,
No clock strikes ever for the happy!

COUNTESS.

How long is it since you declared your passion?

MAX.

This morning did I hazard the first word.

COUNTESS.

This morning the first time in twenty days?

MAX.

'Twas at that hunting-castle, betwixt here
And Nepomuck, where *you* had joined us, and —
That was the last relay of the whole journey;
In a balcony we were standing mute,
And gazing out upon the dreary field:
Before us the dragoons were riding onward,
The safeguard which the duke had sent us — heavy;
The inquietude of parting lay upon me,
And trembling ventured I at length these words:
This all reminds me, noble maiden, that
To-day I must take leave of my good fortune.
A few hours more, and you will find a father,
Will see yourself surrounded by new friends,
And I henceforth shall be but as a stranger,
Lost in the many — "Speak with my Aunt Terzky!"
With hurrying voice she interrupted me.
She faltered. I beheld a glowing red
Possess her beautiful cheeks, and from the ground
Raised slowly up her eye met mine — no longer
Did I control myself.

[*The Princess* THEKLA *appears at the door, and remains standing, observed by the* COUNTESS, *but not by* PICCOLOMINI.

With instant boldness
I caught her in my arms, my lips touched hers;

There was a rustling in the room close by;
It parted us —'Twas you. What since has happened
You know.

COUNTESS (*after a pause, with a stolen glance at* THEKLA).
And is it your excess of modesty
Or are you so incurious, that you do not
Ask me too of my secret?

MAX.
Of *your* secret?

COUNTESS.
Why, yes! When in the instant after you
I stepped into the room, and found my niece there;
What she in this first moment of the heart
Taken with surprise —

MAX. (*with eagerness*).
Well?

SCENE IV.

THEKLA (*hurries forward*), COUNTESS, MAX. PICCOLOMINI.

THEKLA (*to the* COUNTESS).
Spare yourself the trouble:
That hears he better from myself.

MAX. (*stepping backward*).
My princess!
What have you let her hear me say, Aunt Terzky?

THEKLA (*to the* COUNTESS).
Has he been here long?

COUNTESS.
Yes; and soon must go,
Where have *you* stayed so long?

THEKLA.
Alas! my mother,
Wept so again! and I — I see her suffer,
Yet cannot keep myself from being happy.

MAX.

Now once again I have courage to look on you.
To-day at noon I could not.
The dazzle of the jewels that played round you
Hid the beloved from me.

THEKLA.

Then you saw me
With your eye only — and not with your heart?

MAX.

This morning, when I found you in the circle
Of all your kindred, in your father's arms,
Beheld myself an alien in this circle,
O! what an impulse felt I in that moment
To fall upon his neck, to call him *father!*
But his stern eye o'erpowered the swelling passion,
It dared not but be silent. And those brilliants,
That like a crown of stars enwreathed your brows,
They scared me too! O wherefore, wherefore should he
At the first meeting spread as 'twere the ban
Of excommunication round you, — wherefore
Dress up the angel as for sacrifice.
And cast upon the light and joyous heart
The mournful burden of his station? Fitly
May love dare woo for love; but such a splendor
Might none but monarchs venture to approach.

THEKLA.

Hush! not a word more of this mummery;
You see how soon the burden is thrown off.
[*To the* COUNTESS.
He is not in spirits. Wherefore is he not?
'Tis you, aunt, that have made him all so gloomy!
He had quite another nature on the journey —
So calm, so bright, so joyous eloquent. [*To* MAX.
It was my wish to see you always so,
And never otherwise!

MAX.

You find yourself
In your great father's arms, beloved lady!

All in a new world, which does homage to you,
And which, were't only by its novelty,
Delights your eye.

THEKLA.

Yes; I confess to you
That many things delight me here: this camp,
This motley stage of warriors, which renews
So manifold the image of my fancy,
And binds to life, binds to reality,
What hitherto had but been present to me
As a sweet dream!

MAX.

Alas! not so to me.
It makes a dream of my reality.
Upon some island in the ethereal heights
I've lived for these last days. This mass of men
Forces me down to earth. It is a bridge
That, reconducting to my former life,
Divides me and my heaven.

THEKLA.

The game of life
Looks cheerful, when one carries in one's heart
The unalienable treasure. 'Tis a game,
Which, having once reviewed, I turn more joyous
Back to my deeper and appropriate bliss.
[*Breaking off, and in a sportive tone.*
In this short time that I've been present here.
What new unheard-of things have I not seen;
And yet they all must give place to the wond
Which this mysterious castle guards.

COUNTESS (*recollecting*).

And what
Can this be then? Methought I was acquainted
With all the dusky corners of this house.

THEKLA (*smiling*).

Ay, but the road thereto is watched by spirits,
Two griffins still stand sentry at the door.

COUNTESS (*laughs*).

The astrological tower! How happens it
That this same sanctuary, whose access
Is to all others so impracticable,
Opens before you even at your approach?

THEKLA.

A dwarfish old man with a friendly face
And snow-white hairs, whose gracious services
Were mine at first sight, opened me the doors.

MAX.

That is the duke's astrologer, old Seni.

THEKLA.

He questioned me on many points; for instance,
When I was born, what month, and on what day,
Whether by day or in the night.

COUNTESS.

He wished
To erect a figure for your horoscope.

THEKLA.

My hand too he examined, shook his head
With much sad meaning, and the lines, methought,
Did not square over truly with his wishes.

COUNTESS.

Well, princess, and what found you in this tower?
My highest privilege has been to snatch
A side-glance, and away!

THEKLA.

It was a strange
Sensation that came o'er me, when at first
From the broad sunshine I stepped in; and now
The narrowing line of daylight, that ran after
The closing door, was gone; and all about me
'Twas pale and dusky night, with many shadows
Fantastically cast. Here six or seven
Colossal statues, and all kings, stood round me
In a half-circle. Each one in his hand

A sceptre bore, and on his head a star;
And in the tower no other light was there
But from these stars all seemed to come from them.
"These are the planets," said that low old man,
"They govern worldy fates, and for that cause
Are imaged here as kings. He farthest from you,
Spiteful and cold, an old man melancholy,
With bent and yellow forehead, he is Saturn.
He opposite, the king with the red light,
An armed man for the battle, that is Mars;
And both these bring but little luck to man."
But at his side a lovely lady stood,
The star upon her head was soft and bright,
Oh, that was Venus, the bright star of joy.
And the left hand, lo! Mercury, with wings
Quite in the middle glittered silver bright.
A cheerful man, and with a monarch's mien;
And this was Jupiter, my father's star:
And at his side I saw the Sun and Moon.

MAX.

Oh, never rudely will I blame his faith
In the might of stars and angels. 'Tis not merely
The human being's pride that peoples space
With life and mystical predominance;
Since likewise for the stricken heart of love
This visible nature, and this common world,
Is all too narrow; yea, a deeper import
Lurks in the legend told my infant years
Than lies upon that truth, we live to learn.
For fable is love's world, his home, his birth-place;
Delightedly dwells he among fays and talismans,
And spirits; and delightedly believes
Divinities, being himself divine
The intelligible forms of ancient poets,
The fair humanities of old religion,
The power, the beauty, and the majesty,
That had her haunts in dale, or piny mountain,
Or forest by slow stream, or pebbly spring,
Or chasms, and watery depths, all these have vanished.
They live no longer in the faith of reason!

But still the heart doth need a language, still
Doth the old instinct bring back the old names;
And to yon starry world they now are gone,
Spirits or gods, that used to share this earth
With man as with their friend,* and to the lover
Yonder they move, from yonder visible sky
Shoot influence down: and even at this day
'Tis Jupiter who brings what'er is great,
And Venus who brings everything that's fair!

THEKLA.

And if this be the science of the stars,
I too, with glad and zealous industry,
Will learn acquaintance with this cheerful faith.
It is a gentle and affectionate thought,
That in immeasurable heights above us,
At our first birth, the wreath of love was woven,
With sparkling stars for flowers.

COUNTESS.

Not only roses
But thorns too hath the heaven, and well for you
Leave they your wreath of love inviolate:
What Venus twined, the bearer of glad fortune,
The sullen orb of Mars soon tears to pieces.

MAX.

Soon will this gloomy empire reach its close.
Blest be the general's zeal: into the laurel
Will he inweave the olive-branch, presenting
Peace to the shouting nations. Then no wish
Will have remained for his great heart! Enough
Has he performed for glory, and can now
Live for himself and his. To his domains
Will he retire; he has a stately seat
Of fairest view at Gitschin; Reichenberg,
And Friedland Castle, both lie pleasantly;
Even to the foot of the huge mountains here
Stretches the chase and covers of his forests:

* No more of talk, where god or angel guest
With man, as with his friend familiar, used
To sit indulgent. *Paradise Lost*, B. IX.

His ruling passion to create the splendid
He can indulge without restraint; can give
A princely patronage to every art,
And to all worth a sovereign's protection.
Can build, can plant, can watch the starry courses ——

COUNTESS.

Yet I would have you look, and look again,
Before you lay aside your arms, young friend!
A gentle bride, as she is, is well worth it,
That you should woo and win her with the sword.

MAX.

Oh, that the sword could win her!

COUNTESS.

What was that?
Did you hear nothing? Seeemed as if I heard
Tumult and larum in the banquet-room.
[*Exit* COUNTESS.

SCENE V.

THEKLA *and* MAX. PICCOLOMINI.

THEKLA (*as soon as the* COUNTESS *is out of sight, in a quick, low voice to* PICCOLOMINI).

Don't trust them! They are false!

MAX.

Impossible!

THEKLA.

Trust no one here but me. I saw at once,
They had a purpose.

MAX.

Purpose! but what purpose?
And how can we be instrumental to it?

THEKLA.

I know no more than you; but yet believe me:
There's some design in this; to make us happy,
To realize our union — trust me, love!
They but pretend to wish it.

MAX

But these Terzkys —
Why use we them at all? Why not your mother?
Excellent creature! she deserves from us
A full and filial confidence.

THEKLA.

She doth love you,
Doth rate you high before all others — but —
But such a secret — she would never have
The courage to conceal it from my father.
For her own peace of mind we must preserve it
A secret from her too.

MAX.

Why any secret?
I love not secrets. Mark what I will do.
I'll throw me at your father's feet — let him
Decide upon my fortunes! He is true,
He wears no mask — he hates all crooked ways —
He is so good, so noble!

THEKLA (*falls on his neck*).

That are you!

MAX.

You knew him only since this morn! but I
Have lived ten years already in his presence;
And who knows whether in this very moment
He is not merely waiting for us both
To own our loves in order to unite us?
You are silent!
You look at me with such a hopelessness!
What have you to object against your father?

THEKLA.

I? Nothing. Only he's so occupied —
He has no leisure time to think about
The happiness of us two. [*Taking his hand tenderly.*
Follow me!
Let us not place too great a faith in men.
These Terzkys — we will still be grateful to them

For every kindness, but not trust them further
Than they deserve; — and in all else rely
On our own hearts!

MAX.

O! shall we e'er be happy?

THEKLA.

Are we not happy now? Art thou not mine?
Am I not thine? There lives within my soul
A lofty courage — 'tis love gives it me!
I ought to be less open — ought to hide
My heart more from thee — so decorum dictates:
But where in this place couldst thou seek for truth,
If in my mouth thou didst not find it?
We now have met, then let us hold each other
Clasped in a lasting and a firm embrace.
Believe me this was more than their intent.
Then be our loves like some blest relic kept
Within the deep recesses of the heart.
From heaven alone the love has been bestowed,
To heaven alone our gratitude is due;
It can work wonders for us still.

Scene VI.

To them enters the Countess Terzky.

COUNTESS (*in a pressing manner*).

Come, come!
My husband sends me for you. It is now
The latest moment.

[*They not appearing to attend to what she says, she steps between them.*

Part you!

THEKLA.

Oh, not yet!
It has been scarce a moment.

COUNTESS.

Ay! Then time
Flies swiftly with your highness, princess niece!

MAX.

There is no hurry, aunt.

COUNTESS.

Away! away!
The folks begin to miss you. Twice already
His father has asked for him.

THELKA.

Ha. his father!

COUNTESS.

You understand that, niece!

THELKA.

Why needs he
To go at all to that society?
'Tis not his proper company. They may
Be worthy men, but he's too young for them;
In brief, he suits not such society.

COUNTESS.

You mean, you'd rather keep him wholly here?

THELKA (*with energy*).

Yes! you have hit it, aunt! That is my meaning,
Leave him here wholly! Tell the company ——

COUNTESS.

What! have you lost your senses, niece?
Count, you remember the conditions. Come!

MAX. (*to* THELKA).

Lady, I must obey. Farewell, dear lady!

[THELKA *turns away from him with a quick motion.*

What say you then, dear lady?

THELKA (*without looking at him*).

Nothing. Go!

MAX.

Can I, when you are angry ——

[*He draws up to her, their eyes meet, she stands silent a moment, then throws herself into his arms; he presses her fast to his heart.*

COUNTESS.

Off! Heavens! if any one should come!
Hark! What's that noise! It comes this way. Off!

[MAX. *tears himself away out of her arms and goes. The* COUNTESS *accompanies him.* THEKLA *follows him with her eyes at first, walks restlessly across the room, then stops, and remains standing, lost in thought. A guitar lies on the table, she seizes it as by a sudden emotion, and after she has played awhile an irregular and melancholy symphony, she falls gradually into the music and sings.*

SCENE VII.

THEKLA (*plays and sings*).

The cloud doth gather, the greenwood roar,
The damsel paces along the shore;
The billows, they tumble with might, with might;
And she flings out her voice to the darksome night;
Her bosom is swelling with sorrow;
The world it is empty, the heart will die,
There's nothing to wish for beneath the sky:
Thou Holy One, call thy child away!
I've lived and loved, and that was to-day;
Make ready my grave-clothes to-morrow.*

* I found it not in my power to translate this song with literal fidelity, preserving at the same time the Alcaic movement, and have therefore added the original, with a prose translation. Some of my readers may be more fortunate.

THEKLA (*spielt und singt*).

Der Eichwald brauset, die Wolken ziehn,
Das Mägdlein wandelt an Ufers Grün;
Es bricht sich die Welle mit Macht, mit Macht,
Und sie singt hinaus in die finstre Nacht,
Das Auge von Weinen getrübet:
Das Herz is gestorben, die Welt ist leer,
Und weiter giebt sie dem Wunsche nichts mehr.
Du Heilige, rufe dein Kind zurück,
Ich habe genossen das irdische Glück,
Ich habe gelebt und geliebet.

LITERAL TRANSLATION.

THEKLA (*plays and sings*).

The oak-forest bellows, the clouds gather, the damsel walks to and fro on the green of the shore; the wave breaks with might, with might, and she sings out into the dark night, her eye discolored with weeping: the heart

Scene VIII.

Countess (*returns*), Thekla.

COUNTESS.

Fie, lady niece! to throw yourself upon him
Like a poor gift to one who cares not for it,
And so must be flung after him! For you,
Duke Friedland's only child, I should have thought
It had been more beseeming to have shown yourself
More chary of your person.

THEKLA (*rising*).

And what mean you?

COUNTESS.

I mean, niece, that you should not have forgotten
Who you are, and who he is. But perchance
That never once occurred to you.

THEKLA.

What then?

COUNTESS.

That you're the daughter of the Prince Duke Friedland.

THEKLA.

Well, and what farther?

COUNTESS.

What? a pretty question!

is dead, the world is empty, and further gives it nothing more to the wish. Thou Holy One, call thy child home. I have enjoyed the happiness of this world, I have lived and have loved.

I cannot but add here an imitation of this song, with which my friend, Charles Lamb, has favored me, and which appears to me to have caught the happiest manner of our old ballads: —

The clouds are blackening, the storms threatening,
The cavern doth mutter, the greenwood moan!
Billows are breaking, the damsel's heart aching,
Thus in the dark night she singeth alone,
Her eye upward roving:

The world is empty, the heart is dead surely,
In this world plainly all seemeth amiss;
To thy heaven, Holy One, take home thy little one,
I have partaken of all earth's bliss,
Both living and loving.

THEKLA.

He was born that which we have but become.
He's of an ancient Lombard family,
Son of a reigning princess.

COUNTESS.

Are you dreaming?
Talking in sleep? An excellent jest, forsooth!
We shall no doubt right courteously entreat him
To honor with his hand the richest heiress
In Europe.

THEKLA.

That will not be necessary.

COUNTESS.

Methinks 'twere well, though, not to run the hazard.

THEKLA.

His father loves him; Count Octavio
Will interpose no difficulty ——

COUNTESS.

His!
His father! His! But yours, niece, what of yours?

THEKLA.

Why, I begin to think you fear his father,
So anxiously you hide it from the man!
His father, his, I mean.

COUNTESS (*looks at her as scrutinizing*).

Niece, you are false.

THEKLA.

Are you then wounded? O, be friends with me!

COUNTESS.

You hold your game for won already. Do not
Triumph too soon!

THEKLA (*interrupting her, and attempting to soothe her*).

Nay now, be friends with me.

COUNTESS.

It is not yet so far gone.

THEKLA.

I believe you.

COUNTESS.

Did you suppose your father had laid out
His most important life in toils of war,
Denied himself each quiet earthly bliss,
Had banished slumbers from his tent, devoted
His noble head to care, and for this only,
To make a happier pair of you? At length
To draw you from your convent, and conduct
In easy triumph to your arms the man
That chanced to please your eyes! All this, methinks,
He might have purchased at a cheaper rate.

THEKLA.

That which he did not plant for me might yet
Bear me fair fruitage of its own accord.
And if my friendly and affectionate fate,
Out of his fearful and enormous being,
Will but prepare the joys of life for me ——

COUNTESS.

Thou seest it with a lovelorn maiden's eyes,
Cast thine eye round, bethink thee who thou art; —
Into no house of joyance hast thou stepped,
For no espousals dost thou find the walls
Decked out, no guests the nuptial garland wearing;
Here is no splendor but of arms. Or thinkest thou
That all these thousands are here congregated
To lead up the long dances at thy wedding!
Thou see'st thy father's forehead full of thought,
Thy mother's eye in tears: upon the balance
Lies the great destiny of all our house.
Leave now the puny wish, the girlish feeling;
Oh, thrust it far behind thee! Give thou proof
Thou'rt the daughter of the mighty — his
Who where he moves creates the wonderful.

Not to herself the woman must belong,
Annexed and bound to alien destinies.
But she performs the best part, she the wisest,
Who can transmute the alien into self,
Meet and disarm necessity by choice;
And what must be, take freely to her heart,
And bear and foster it with mother's love.

THEKLA.

Such ever was my lesson in the convent.
I had no loves, no wishes, knew myself
Only as his — his daughter — his, the mighty!
His fame, the echo of whose blast drove to me
From the far distance, weakened in my soul
No other thought than this — I am appointed
To offer myself up in passiveness to him.

COUNTESS.

That is thy fate. Mould thou thy wishes to it —
I and thy mother gave thee the example.

THEKLA.

My fate hath shown me him, to whom behoves it
That I should offer up myself. In gladness
Him will I follow.

COUNTESS.

Not thy fate hath shown him!
Thy heart, say rather — 'twas thy heart, my child!

THEKLA.

Faith hath no voice but the heart's impulses.
I am all his! His present — his alone.
Is this new life, which lives in me? He hath
A right to his own creature. What was I
Ere his fair love infused a soul into me?

COUNTESS.

Thou wouldst oppose thy father, then, should he
Have otherwise determined with thy person?
[THEKLA *remains silent. The* COUNTESS *continues.*
Thou meanest to force him to thy liking? Child,
His name is Friedland.

THEKLA.

My name too is Friedland.
He shall have found a genuine daughter in me.

COUNTESS.

What! he has vanquished all impediment,
And in the wilful mood of his own daughter
Shall a new struggle rise for him? Child! child!
As yet thou hast seen thy father's smiles alone;
The eye of his rage thou hast not seen. Dear child,
I will not frighten thee. To that extreme,
I trust it ne'er shall come. His will is yet
Unknown to me; 'tis possible his aims
May have the same direction as thy wish.
But this can never, never be his will,
That thou, the daughter of his haughty fortunes,
Shouldest e'er demean thee as a lovesick maiden
And like some poor cost-nothing, fling thyself
Toward the man, who, if that high prize ever
Be destined to await him, yet with sacrifices
The highest love can bring, must pay for it.

[*Exit* COUNTESS.

SCENE IX.

THEKLA (*who during the last speech had been standing evidently lost in her reflections*).

I thank thee for the hint. It turns
My sad presentiment to certainty.
And it is so! Not one friend have we here,
Not one true heart! we've nothing but ourselves!
Oh, she said rightly — no auspicious signs
Beam on this covenant of our affections.
This is no theatre where hope abides:
The dull thick noise of war alone stirs here,
And love himself, as he were armed in steel,
Steps forth, and girds him for the strife of death.

[*Music from the banquet-room is heard.*

There's a dark spirit walking in our house.
And swiftly will the destiny close on us.
It drove me hither from my calm asylum,
It mocks my soul with charming witchery,

It lures me forward in a seraph's shape,
I see it near, I see it nearer floating,
It draws, it pulls me with a godlike power —
And lo! the abyss — and thither am I moving —
I have no power within me not to move!

[*The music from the banquet-room becomes louder.*

Oh, when a house is doomed in fire to perish,
Many and dark Heaven drives his clouds together,
Yea, shoots his lightnings down from sunny heights,
Flames burst from out the subterraneous chasms,
And fiends and angels, mingling in their fury,
Sling firebrands at the burning edifice.*

[*Exit* THEKLA.

ACT IV.

SCENE I.

A large saloon lighted up with festal splendor; in the midst of it, and in the centre of the stage a table richly set out, at which eight generals are sitting, among whom are OCTAVIO PICCOLOMINI, TERZKY, *and* MARADAS. *Right and left of this, but further back, two other tables, at each of which six persons are placed. The middle door, which is standing open, gives to the prospect a fourth table with the same number of persons. More forward stands the sideboard. The whole front of the stage is kept open for the pages and servants-in-waiting. All is in motion. The band of music belonging to* TERZKY'S *regiment march across the stage, and draw up around the tables. Before they are quite off from the front of the stage,* MAX. PICCOLOMINI *appears,* TERZKY *advances towards him with a paper,* ISOLANI *comes up to meet him with a beaker, or service-cup.*

* There are few who will not have taste enough to laugh at the two concluding lines of this soliloquy: and still fewer, I would fain hope, who would not have been more disposed to shudder, had I given a *faithful* translation. For the readers of German I have added the original: —

Blind-wüthend schleudert selbst der Gott der Freude
Den Pechkranz in das brennende Gebäude.

TERZKY, ISOLANI, MAX. PICCOLOMINI.

ISOLANI.

Here, brother, what we love! Why, where hast been?
Off to thy place — quick! Terzky here has given
The mother's holiday wine up to free booty.
Here it goes on as at the Heidelberg castle.
Already hast thou lost the best. They're giving
At yonder table ducal crowns in shares;
There Sternberg's lands and chattels are put up,
With Eggenberg's, Stawata's, Lichtenstein's,
And all the great Bohemian feudalities.
Be nimble, lad! and something may turn up
For thee, who knows? off — to thy place! quick! march!

TIEFENBACH *and* GOETZ (*call out from the second and third tables*).

Count Piccolomini!

TERZKY.

Stop, ye shall have him in an instant. Read
This oath here, whether 'as tis here set forth,
The wording satisfies you. They've all read it,
Each in his turn, and each one will subscribe
His individual signature.

MAX. (*reads*).

"*Ingratis servire nefas.*"

ISOLANI.

That sounds to my ears very much like Latin,
And being interpreted, pray what may it mean?

TERZKY.

No honest man will serve a thankless master.

MAX.

"Inasmuch as our supreme commander, the illustrious Duke of Friedland, in consequence of the manifold affronts and grievances which he has received, had expressed his determination to quit the emperor, but on our unanimous entreaty has graciously consented to remain still with the army, and not to part from us without our approbation thereof, so we, collectively and *each*

in particular, in the stead of an oath personally taken, do hereby oblige ourselves — likewise by him honorably and faithfully to hold, and in nowise whatsoever from him to part, and to be ready to shed for his interests the last drop of our blood, so far, namely, as *our oath to the emperor will permit it.* (*These last words are repeated by* ISOLANI.) In testimony of which we subscribe our names."

TERZKY.

Now! are you willing to subscribe to this paper?

ISOLANI.

Why should he not? All officers of honor
Can do it, ay, must do it. Pen and ink here!

TERZKY.

Nay, let it rest till after meal.

ISOLANI (*drawing* MAX. *along*).

Come, Max.

[*Both seat themselves at their table.*

SCENE II.

TERZKY, NEUMANN.

TERZKY (*beckons to* NEUMANN, *who is waiting at the side-table and steps forward with him to the edge of the stage*).

Have you the copy with you, Neumann? Give it.
It may be changed for the other?

NEUMANN.

I have copied it
Letter by letter, line by line; no eye
Would e'er discover other difference,
Save only the omission of that clause,
According to your excellency's order.

TERZKY.

Right! lay it yonder and away with this —
It has performed its business — to the fire with it.

[NEUMANN *lays the copy on the table, and steps back again to the side-table.*

Scene III.

Illo (*comes out from the second chamber*), Terzky.

ILLO.

How goes it with young Piccolomini!

TERZKY.

All right, I think. He has started no object

ILLO.

He is the only one I fear about —
He and his father. Have an eye on both!

TERZKY.

How looks it at your table: you forget not
To keep them warm and stirring?

ILLO.

Oh, quite cordial,
They are quite cordial in the scheme. We have them
And 'tis as I predicted too. Already
It is the talk, not merely to maintain
The duke in station. "Since we're once for all
Together and unanimous, why not,"
Says Montecuculi, "ay, why not onward,
And make conditions with the emperor
There in his own Venice?" Trust me, count,
Were it not for these said Piccolomini,
We might have spared ourselves the cheat.

TERZKY.

And Butler?
How goes it there? Hush!

Scene IV.

To them enter Butler *from a second table.*

BUTLER.

Don't disturb yourselves;
Field-marshal, I have understood you perfectly.
Good luck be to the scheme; and as to me,
[*With an air of mystery.*
You may depend upon me.

ILLO (*with vivacity*).

May we, Butler?

BUTLER.

With or without the clause, all one to me!
You understand me! My fidelity
The duke may put to any proof — I'm with him!
Tell him so! I'm the emperor's officer,
As long as 'tis his pleasure to remain
The emperor's general! and Friedland's servant,
As soon as it shall please him to become
His own lord.

TERZKY.

You would make a good exchange.
No stern economist, no Ferdinand,
Is he to whom you plight your services.

BUTLER (*with a haughty look*).

I do not put up my fidelity
To sale, Count Terzky! Half a year ago
I would not have advised you to have made me
An overture to that, to which I now
Offer myself of my own free accord.
But that is past! and to the duke, field-marshal,
I bring myself, together with my regiment.
And mark you, 'tis my humor to believe,
The example which I give will not remain
Without an influence.

ILLO.

Who is ignorant,
That the whole army looks to Colonel Butler
As to a light that moves before them?

BUTLER.

Ay?
Then I repent me not of that fidelity
Which for the length of forty years I held,
If in my sixtieth year my good old name
Can purchase for me a revenge so full.
Start not at what I say, sir generals!
My real motives — they concern not you.

And you yourselves, I trust, could not expect
That this your game had crooked my judgment — or
That fickleness, quick blood, or such like cause,
Has driven the old man from the track of honor,
Which he so long had trodden. Come, my friends!
I'm not thereto determined with less firmness,
Because I know and have looked steadily
At that on which I have determined.

ILLO.

Say,
And speak roundly, what are we to deem you?

BUTLER.

A friend! I give you here my hand! I'm yours
With all I have. Not only men, but money
Will the duke want. Go, tell him, sirs!
I've earned and laid up somewhat in his service,
I lend it him; and is he my survivor,
It has been already long ago bequeathed to him;
He is my heir. For me, I stand alone
Here in the world; naught know I of the feeling
That binds the husband to a wife and children.
My name dies with me, my existence ends.

ILLO.

'Tis not your money that he needs — a heart
Like yours weighs tons of gold down, weighs down millions!

BUTLER.

I came a simple soldier's boy from Ireland
To Prague — and with a master, whom I buried.
From lowest stable duty I climbed up,
Such was the fate of war, to this high rank,
The plaything of a whimsical good fortune.
And Wallenstein too is a child of luck:
I love a fortune that is like my own.

ILLO.

All powerful souls have kindred with each other.

BUTLER.

This is an awful moment! to the brave,
To the determined, an auspicious moment.
The Prince of Weimar arms, upon the Maine,
To found a mighty dukedom. He of Halberstadt,
That Mansfeldt, wanted but a longer life
To have marked out with his good sword a lordship
That should reward his courage. Who of these
Equals our Friedland? There is nothing, nothing
So high, but he may set the ladder to it!

TERZKY.

That's spoken like a man!

BUTLER.

Do you secure the Spaniard and Italian —
I'll be your warrant for the Scotchman Lesly.
Come to the company!

TERZKY.

Where is the master of the cellar? Ho!
Let the best wines come up. Ho! cheerly, boy!
Luck comes to-day, so give her hearty welcome.
[*Exeunt, each to his table.*

Scene V.

The Master of the Cellar, *advancing with* Neumann, Servants *passing backwards and forwards.*

MASTER OF THE CELLAR.

The best wine! Oh, if my old mistress, his lady mother, could but see these wild goings on she would turn herself round in her grave. Yes, yes, sir officer! 'tis all down the hill with this noble house! no end, no moderation! And this marriage with the duke's sister, a splendid connection, a very splendid connection! but I will tell you, sir officer, it looks no good.

NEUMANN.

Heaven forbid! Why, at this very moment the whole prospect is in bud and blossom!

MASTER OF THE CELLAR.

You think so? Well, well! much may be said on that head.

FIRST SERVANT (*comes*).

Burgundy for the fourth table.

MASTER OF THE CELLAR.

Now, sir lieutenant, if this aint the seventieth flask —

FIRST SERVANT.

Why, the reason is, that German lord, Tiefenbach, sits at that table.

MASTER OF THE CELLAR (*continuing his discourse to* NEUMANN).

They are soaring too high. They would rival kings and electors in their pomp and splendor; and wherever the duke leaps, not a minute does my gracious master, the count, loiter on the brink — (*to the* SERVANTS). What do you stand there listening for? I will let you know you have legs presently. Off! see to the tables, see to the flasks! Look there! Count Palfi has an empty glass before him!

RUNNER (*comes*).

The great service-cup is wanted, sir, that rich gold cup with the Bohemian arms on it. The count says you know which it is.

MASTER OF THE CELLAR.

Ay! that was made for Frederick's coronation by the artist William — there was not such another prize in the whole booty at Prague.

RUNNER.

The same! — a health is to go round in him.

MASTER OF THE CELLAR (*shaking his head while he fetches and rinses the cups*).

This will be something for the tale-bearers — this goes to Vienna.

NEUMANN.

Permit me to look at it. Well, this is a cup indeed! How heavy! as well it may be, being all gold. And what

neat things are embossed on it! how natural and elegant they look! There, on the first quarter, let me see. That proud amazon there on horseback, she that is taking a leap over the crosier and mitres, and carries on a wand a hat together with a banner, on which there's a goblet represented. Can you tell me what all this signifies?

MASTER OF THE CELLAR.

The woman you see there on horseback is the Free Election of the Bohemian Crown. That is signified by the round hat and by that fiery steed on which she is riding. The hat is the pride of man; for he who cannot keep his hat on before kings and emperors is no free man.

NEUMANN.

But what is the cup there on the banner.

MASTER OF THE CELLAR.

The cup signifies the freedom of the Bohemian Church, as it was in our forefathers' times. Our forefathers in the wars of the Hussites forced from the pope this noble privilege; for the pope, you know, will not grant the cup to any layman. Your true Moravian values nothing beyond the cup; it is his costly jewel, and has cost the Bohemians their precious blood in many and many a battle.

NEUMANN.

And what says that chart that hangs in the air there, over it all?

MASTER OF THE CELLAR.

That signifies the Bohemian letter-royal which we forced from the Emperor Rudolph — a precious, never to be enough valued parchment, that secures to the new church the old privileges of free ringing and open psalmody. But since he of Steiermark has ruled over us that is at an end; and after the battle at Prague, in which Count Palatine Frederick lost crown and empire, our faith hangs upon the pulpit and the altar — and our brethren look at their homes over their shoulders; but the letter-royal the emperor himself cut to pieces with his scissors.

NEUMANN.

Why, my good Master of the Cellar! you are deep read in the chronicles of your country.

MASTER OF THE CELLAR.

So were my forefathers, and for that reason were they minstrels, and served under Procopius and Ziska. Peace be with their ashes! Well, well! they fought for a good cause though. There! carry it up!

NEUMANN.

Stay! let me but look at this second quarter. Look *there!* That is, when at Prague Castle, the imperial counsellors, Martinitz and Stawata, were hurled down head over heels. 'Tis even so! there stands Count Thurn who commands it.

[RUNNER *takes the service-cup and goes off with it.*

MASTER OF THE CELLAR.

Oh, let me never more hear of that day. It was the three-and-twentieth of May in the year of our Lord one thousand six hundred and eighteen. It seems to me as it were but yesterday — from that unlucky day it all began, all the heartaches of the country. Since that day it is now sixteen years, and there has never once been peace on the earth.

[*Health drunk aloud at the second table.*

The Prince of Weimar! Hurrah!

[*At the third and fourth tables.*

Long live Prince William! Long live Duke Bernard! Hurrah! [*Music strikes up.*

FIRST SERVANT.

Hear 'em! Hear 'em! What an uproar!

SECOND SERVANT (*comes in running*).

Did you hear? They have drunk the Prince of Weimar's health.

THIRD SERVANT.

The Swedish chief commander!

FIRST SERVANT (*speaking at the same time*).

The Lutheran!

SECOND SERVANT.

Just before, when Count Deodati gave out the emperor's health, they were all as mum as a nibbling mouse.

MASTER OF THE CELLAR.

Po, po! When the wine goes in strange things come out. A good servant hears, and hears not! You should be nothing but eyes and feet, except when you are called to.

SECOND SERVANT.

[*To the* RUNNER, *to whom he gives secretly a flask of wine, keeping his eye on the* MASTER OF THE CELLAR, *standing between him and the* RUNNER.

Quick, Thomas! before the Master of the Cellar runs this way; 'tis a flask of Frontignac! Snapped it up at the third table. Canst go off with it?

RUNNER (*hides it in his pocket*).

All right! [*Exit the* Second Servant.

THIRD SERVANT (*aside to the* FIRST)

Be on the hark, Jack! that we may have right plenty to tell to Father Quivoga. He will give us right plenty of absolution in return for it.

FIRST SERVANT.

For that very purpose I am always having something to do behind Illo's chair. He is the man for speeches to make you stare with.

MASTER OF THE CELLAR (*to* NEUMANN).

Who, pray, may that swarthy man be, he with the cross, that is chatting so confidently with Esterhats?

NEUMANN.

Ay, he too is one of those to whom they confide too much. He calls himself Maradas; a Spaniard is he.

MASTER OF THE CELLAR. (*impatiently*).

Spaniard! Spaniard! I tell you, friend, nothing good comes of those Spaniards. All these outlandish fellows are little better than rogues.

NEUMANN.

Fy, fy! you should not say so, friend. There are among them our very best generals, and those on whom the duke at this moment relies the most.

MASTER OF THE CELLAR.

[*Taking the flask out of the* RUNNER'S *pocket.*

My son, it will be broken to pieces in your pocket.

[TERZKY *hurries in, fetches away the paper, and calls to a servant for pen and ink, and goes to the back of the stage.*

MASTER OF THE CELLAR (*to the* SERVANTS.)

The lieutenant-general stands up. Be on the watch. Now! They break up. Off, and move back the forms.

[*They rise at all the tables, the* SERVANTS *hurry off the front of the stage to the tables; part of the guests come forward.*

SCENE VI.

OCTAVIO PICCOLOMINI *enters, in conversation with* MARADAS, *and both place themselves quite on the edge of the stage on one side of the proscenium. On the side directly opposite,* MAX. PICCOLOMINI, *by himself, lost in thought, and taking no part in anything that is going forward. The middle space between both, but rather more distant from the edge of the stage, is filled up by* BUTLER, ISOLANI, GOETZ, TIEFENBACH, *and* KOLATTO.

ISOLANI (*while the company is coming forward*).

Good-night, good-night, Kolatto! Good-night, lieutenant-general! I should rather say good-morning.

GOETZ (*to* TIEFENBACH).

Noble brother! (*making the usual compliment after meals*).

TIEFENBACH.

Ay! 'twas a royal feast indeed.

GOETZ.

Yes, my lady countess understands these matters. Her mother-in-law, heaven rest her soul, taught her! Ah! that was a housewife for you!

TIEFENBACH.

There was not her like in all Bohemia for setting out a table.

OCTAVIO (*aside to* MARADAS).

Do me the favor to talk to me — talk of what you will — or of nothing. Only preserve the appearance at least of talking. I would not wish to stand by myself, and yet I conjecture that there will be goings on here worthy of our attentive observation. (*He continues to fix his eye on the whole following scene.*)

ISOLANI (*on the point of going*).

Lights! lights!

TERZKY (*advances with the paper to* ISOLANI).

Noble brother; two minutes longer! Here is something to subscribe.

ISOLANI.

Subscribe as much as you like — but you must excuse me from reading it.

TERZKY.

There is no need. It is the oath which you have already read. Only a few marks of your pen!

[ISOLANI *hands over the paper to* OCTAVIO *respectfully.*

TERZKY.

Nay, nay, first come, first served. There is no precedence here. [OCTAVIO *runs over the paper with apparent indifference.* TERZKY *watches him at some distance.*

GOETZ (*to* TERZKY).

Noble count! with your permission — good-night.

TERKZY.

Where's the hurry? Come, one other composing draught. (*To the* SERVANTS). Ho!

GOETZ.

Excuse me — aint able.

TERZKY.

A thimble-full!

GOETZ.

Excuse me.

TIEFENBACH (*sits down*).

Pardon me, nobles! This standing does not agree with me.

TERZKY.

Consult your own convenience, general.

TIEFENBACH.

Clear at head, sound in stomach — only my legs won't carry me any longer.

ISOLANI (*pointing at his corpulence*).

Poor legs! how should they! Such an unmerciful load!

[OCTAVIO *subscribes his name, and reaches over the paper to* TERZKY, *who gives it to* ISOLANI; *and he goes to the table to sign his name.*

TIEFENBACH.

'Twas that war in Pomerania that first brought it on. Out in all weathers — ice and snow — no help for it. I shall never get the better of it all the days of my life.

GOETZ.

Why, in simple verity, your Swedes make no nice inquiries about the season.

TERZKY (*observing* ISOLANI, *whose hand trembles excessively so that he can scarce direct his pen*).

Have you had that ugly complaint long, noble brother? Despatch it.

ISOLANI.

The sins of youth! I have already tried the chalybeate waters. Well — I must bear it.

[TERZKY *gives the paper to* MARADAS; *he steps to the table to subscribe.*

OCTAVIO (*advancing to* BUTLER).

You are not over-fond of the orgies of Bacchus, colonel! I have observed it. You would, I think, find yourself more to your liking in the uproar of a battle than of a feast.

BUTLER.

I must confess 'tis not in my way.

OCTAVIO (*stepping nearer to him friendlily*).

Nor in mine neither, I can assure you; and I am not a little glad, my much-honored Colonel Butler, that we agree so well in our opinions. A half-dozen good friends at most, at a small round table, a glass of genuine Tokay, open hearts, and a rational conversation — that's my taste.

BUTLER.

And mine, too, when it can be had.

[*The paper comes to* TIEFENBACH, *who glances over it at the same time with* GOETZ *and* KOLATTO. MARADAS *in the meantime returns to* OCTAVIO. *All this takes places, the conversation with* BUTLER *proceeding uninterrupted.*

OCTAVIO (*introducing* MADARAS *to* BUTLER.)

Don Balthasar Maradas! likewise a man of our stamp, and long ago your admirer. [BUTLER *bows.*

OCTAVIO (*continuing*).

You are a stranger here — 'twas but yesterday you arrived — you are ignorant of the ways and means here. 'Tis a wretched place. I know at your age one loves to be snug and quiet. What if you move your lodgings? Come, be my visitor. (BUTLER *makes a low bow.*) Nay, without compliment! For a friend like you I have still a corner remaining.

BUTLER (*coldly*).

Your obliged humble servant, my lord lieutenant-general.

[*The paper comes to* BUTLER, *who goes to the table to subscribe it. The front of the stage is vacant, so that both the* PICCOLOMINIS, *each on the side where he had been from the commencement of the scene, remain alone.*

OCTAVIO (*after having some time watched his son in silence, advances somewhat nearer to him*).

You were long absent from us, friend!

MAX.

I —— urgent business detained me.

OCTAVIO.

And, I observe, you are still absent!

MAX.

You know this crowd and bustle always makes me silent.

OCTAVIO (*advancing still nearer*).

May I be permitted to ask what the business was that detained you? Terzky knows it without asking.

MAX.

What does Terzky know?

OCTAVIO.

He was the only one who did not miss you.

ISOLANI (*who has been attending to them for some distance steps up*).

Well done, father! Rout out his baggage! Beat up his quarters! there is something there that should not be.

TERZKY (*with the paper*).

Is there none wanting? Have the whole subscribed?

OCTAVIO.

All.

TERZKY (*calling aloud*)

Ho! Who subscribes?

BUTLER (*to* TERZKY).

Count the names. There ought to be just thirty.

TERZKY.

Here is a cross.

TIEFENBACH.

That's my mark!

ISOLANI.

He cannot write; but his cross is a good cross, and is honored by Jews as well as Christians.

OCTAVIO (*presses on to* MAX.).

Come, general! let us go. It is late.

TERZKY.

One Piccolomini only has signed.

ISOLANI (*pointing to* MAX.).

Look! that is your man, that statue there, who has had neither eye, ear, nor tongue for us the whole evening.

[MAX. *receives the paper from* TERZKY, *which he looks upon vacantly.*

SCENE VII.

To these enter ILLO *from the inner room. He has in his hand a golden service-cup, and is extremely distempered with drinking;* GOETZ *and* BUTLER *follow him, endeavoring to keep him back.*

ILLO.

What do you want! Let me go.

GOETZ *and* BUTLER.

Drink no more, Illo! For heaven's sake, drink no more.

ILLO (*goes up to* OCTAVIO, *and shakes him cordially by the hand, and then drinks*).

Octavio! I bring this to you! Let all grudge be drowned in this friendly bowl! I know well enough you never loved me — devil take me! and I never loved you! I am always even with people in that way! Let what's past be past — that is, you understand — forgotten! I esteem you infinitely. (*Embracing him repeatedly.*) You have not a dearer friend on earth than I, but that you know. The fellow that cries rogue to you calls me villain, and I'll strangle him! my dear friend!

TERZKY (*whispering to him*).

Art in thy senses? For heaven's sake, Illo, think where you are!

ILLO (*aloud*).

What do you mean? There are none but friends here, are there? (*Looks round the whole circle with a jolly and triumphant air.*) Not a sneaker amongst us, thank heaven!

TERZKY (*to* BUTLER, *eagerly*).

Take him off with you, force him off, I entreat you, Butler!

BUTLER (*to* ILLO).

Field-marshal! a word with you. (*Leads to the side-board*).

ILLO (*cordially*).

A thousand for one. Fill; fill it once more up to the brim. To this gallant man's health!

ISOLANI (*to* MAX., *who all the while has been staring on the paper with fixed but vacant eyes*).

Slow and sure, my noble brother! Hast parsed it all yet? Some words yet to go through? Ha?

MAX. (*waking as from a dream*).

What am I to do?

TERZKY, *and at the same time* ISOLANI.

Sign your name. (OCTAVIO *directs his eyes on him with intense anxiety.*)

MAX. (*returns the paper*).

Let it stay till to-morrow. It is business; to-day I am not sufficiently collected. Send it to me to-morrow.

TERZKY.

Nay, collect yourself a little.

ISOLANI.

Awake man, awake! Come, thy signature, and have done with it! What! Thou art the youngest in the whole company, and would be wiser than all of us together! Look there! thy father has signed; we have all signed.

TERZKY (*to* OCTAVIO).

Use your influence. Instruct him.

OCTAVIO.

My son is at the age of discretion.

ILLO (*leaves the service-cup on the sideboard*).

What's the dispute?

TERZKY.

He declines subscribing the paper.

MAX.

I say it may as well stay till to-morrow.

ILLO.

It cannot stay. We have all subscribed to it — and so must you. You must subscribe.

MAX.

Illo, good-night!

ILLO.

No! you come not off so! The duke shall learn who are his friends. (*All collect round* ILLO *and* MAX.)

MAX.

What my sentiments are towards the duke, the duke knows, every one knows — what need of this wild stuff?

ILLO.

This is the thanks the duke gets for his partiality to Italians and foreigners. Us Bohemians he holds for little better than dullards — nothing pleases him but what's outlandish.

TERZKY (*in extreme embarrassment, to the Commanders, who at* ILLO'S *words give a sudden start as preparing to resent them*).

It is the wine that speaks, and not his reason. Attend not to him, I entreat you.

ISOLANI (*with a bitter laugh*).

Wine invents nothing: it only tattles.

ILLO.

He who is not with me is against me. Your tender consciences! Unless they can slip out by a back-door, by a puny proviso ——

TERZKY (*interrupting him*).

He is stark mad — don't listen to him!

ILLO (*raising his voice to the highest pitch*).

Unless they can slip out by a proviso. What of the proviso? The devil take this proviso!

MAX (*has his attention roused, and looks again into the paper*).

What is there here then of such perilous import? You make me curious — I must look closer at it.

TERZKY (*in a low voice to* ILLO).

What are you doing, Illo? You are ruining us.

TIEFENBACH (*to* KOLATTO).

Ay, ay! I observed, that before we sat down to supper, it was read differently.

GOETZ.

Why, I seemed to think so too.

ISOLANI.

What do I care for that? Where there stand other names mine can stand too.

TIEFENBACH.

Before supper there was a certain proviso therein, or short clause, concerning our duties to the emperor.

BUTLER (*to one of the Commanders*).

For shame, for shame! Bethink you. What is the main business here? The question now is, whether we shall keep our general, or let him retire. One must not take these things too nicely, and over-scrupulously.

ISOLANI (*to one of the Generals*).

Did the duke make any of these provisos when he gave you your regiment?

TERZKY (*to* GOETZ).

Or when he gave you the office of army-purveyancer, which brings you in yearly a thousand pistoles!

ILLO.

He is a rascal who makes us out to be rogues. If there be any one that wants satisfaction, let him say so, — I am his man.

TIEFENBACH.

Softly, softly? 'Twas but a word or two.

MAX. (*having read the paper gives it back*).

Till to-morrow therefore!

ILLO (*stammering with rage and fury, loses all command over himself and presents the paper to* MAX. *with one hand, and his sword in the other*).

Subscribe — Judas!

ISOLANI.

Out upon you, Illo!

OCTAVIO, TERZKY, BUTLER (*all together*).

Down with the sword!

MAX. (*rushes on him suddenly and disarms him, then to* COUNT TERZKY).

Take him off to bed!

(MAX *leaves the stage.* ILLO *cursing and raving is held back by some of the officers, and amidst a universal confusion the curtain drops.*

ACT V.

SCENE I.

A Chamber in PICCOLOMINI'S *Mansion. It is Night.*

OCTAVIO PICCOLOMINI. *A* VALET DE-CHAMBRE *with Lights.*

OCTAVIO.

—— And when my son comes in, conduct him hither. What is the hour?

VALET.

'Tis on the point of morning.

OCTAVIO.

Set down the light. We mean not to undress.
You may retire to sleep.

[*Exit* VALET. OCTAVIO *paces, musing, across the chamber;* MAX. PICCOLOMINI *enters unobserved, and looks at his father for some moments in silence.*

MAX.

Art thou offended with me? Heaven knows
That odious business was no fault of mine.
'Tis true, indeed, I saw thy signature,
What thou hast sanctioned, should not, it might seem,
Have come amiss to me. - But — tis my nature —
Thou know'st that in such matters I must follow
My own light, not another's.

OCTAVIO (*goes up to him and embraces him*)

Follow it,
Oh, follow it still further, my best son!
To-night, dear boy! it hath more faithfully
Guided thee than the example of thy father.

MAX.

Declare thyself less darkly.

OCTAVIO.

I will do so;
For after what has taken place this night,
There must remain no secrets 'twixt us two.

[*Both seat themselves.*

Max. Piccolomini! what thinkest thou of
The oath that was sent round for signatures?

MAX.

I hold it for a thing of harmless import,
Although I love not these set declarations.

OCTAVIO.

And on no other ground hast thou refused
The signature they fain had wrested from thee?

MAX.

It was a serious business. I was absent —
The affair itself seemed not so urgent to me.

OCTAVIO.

Be open, Max. Thou hadst then no suspicion?

MAX.

Suspicion! what suspicion? Not the least.

OCTAVIO.

Thank thy good angel, Piccolomini;
He drew thee back unconscious from the abyss.

MAX.

I know not what thou meanest.

OCTAVIO.

I will tell thee.
Fain would they have extorted from thee, son,
The sanction of thy name to villany;
Yes, with a single flourish of thy pen,
Made thee renounce thy duty and thy honor!

MAX. (*rises*).

Octavio!

OCTAVIO.

Patience! Seat yourself. Much yet
Hast thou to hear from me, friend! Hast for years
Lived in incomprehensible illusion.
Before thine eyes is treason drawing out
As black a web as e'er was spun for venom:
A power of hell o'erclouds thy understanding.
I dare no longer stand in silence — dare
No longer see thee wandering on in darkness,
Nor pluck the bandage from thine eyes.

MAX.

My father!
Yet, ere thou speakest, a moment's pause of thought!
If your disclosures should appear to be
Conjectures only — and almost I fear
They will be nothing further — spare them! I
Am not in that collected mood at present,
That I could listen to them quietly.

OCTAVIO.

The deeper cause then hast to hate this light,
The more important cause have I, my son,
To force it on thee. To the innocence
And wisdom of thy heart I could have trusted thee
With calm assurance — but I see the net
Preparing — and it is thy heart itself
Alarms me, for thine innocence — that secret,
[*Fixing his eyes steadfastly on his son's face.*
Which thou concealest, forces mine from me.
[MAX. *attempts to answer, but hesitates, and casts his eyes to the ground embarrassed.*

OCTAVIO (*after a pause*).

Know, then, they are duping thee! — a most foul game
With thee and with us all — nay, hear me calmly —
The duke even now is playing. He assumes
The mask, as if he would forsake the army;
And in this moment makes he preparations
That army from the emperor to steal,
And carry it over to the enemy!

MAX.

That low priest's legend I know well, but did not
Expect to hear it from thy mouth.

OCTAVIO.

That mouth,
From which thou hearest it at this present moment,
Doth warrant thee that it is no priest's legend.

MAX.

How mere a maniac they supposed the duke;
What, he can meditate? — the duke? — can dream
That he can lure away full thirty thousand
Tried troops and true, all honorable soldiers,
More than a thousand noblemen among them,
From oaths, from duty, from their honor lure them,
And make them all unanimous to do
A deed that brands them scoundrels?

OCTAVIO.

Such a deed,
With such a front of infamy, the duke
No way desires — what he requires of us
Bears a far gentler appellation. Nothing
He wishes but to give the empire peace.
And so, because the emperor hates this peace,
Therefore the duke — the duke will force him to it.
All parts of the empire will he pacify,
And for his trouble will retain in payment
(What he has already in his gripe) — Bohemia!

MAX.

Has he, Octavio, merited of us,
That we — that we should think so vilely of him?

OCTAVIO.

What we would think is not the question here,
The affair speaks for itself — and clearest proofs!
Hear me, my son — 'tis not unknown to thee,
In what ill credit with the court we stand.
But little dost thou know, or guess what tricks,
What base intrigues, what lying artifices,
Have been employed — for this sole end — to sow
Mutiny in the camp! All bands are loosed —
Loosed all the bands that link the officer
To his liege emperor, all that bind the soldier
Affectionately to the citizen.
Lawless he stands, and threateningly beleaguers
The state he's bound to guard. To such a height
'Tis swollen, that at this hour the emperor
Before his armies — his own armies — trembles;
Yea, in his capital, his palace, fears
The traitor's poniard, and is meditating
To hurry off and hide his tender offspring —
Not from the Swedes, not from the Lutherans — no,
From his own troops to hide and hurry them!

MAX.

Cease, cease! thou torturest, shatterest me. I know
That oft we tremble at an empty terror;
But the false phantasm brings a real misery.

OCTAVIO.

It is no phantasm. An intestine war,
Of all the most unnatural and cruel,
Will burst out into flames, if instantly
We do not fly and stifle it. The generals
Are many of them long ago won over;
The subalterns are vacillating; whole
Regiments and garrisons are vacillating.
To foreigners our strongholds are intrusted;
To that suspected Schafgotch is the whole
Force of Silesia given up: to Terzky
Five regiments, foot and horse; to Isolani,
To Illo, Kinsky, Butler, the best troops.

MAX.

Likewise to both of us.

OCTAVIO.

Because the duke
Believes he has secured us, means to lure us
Still further on by splendid promises.
To me he portions forth the princedoms, Glatz
And Sagan; and too plain I see the bait
With which he doubts not but to catch thee.

MAX.

No! no!
I tell thee, no!

OCTAVIO.

Oh, open yet thine eyes!
And to what purpose think'st thou he has called
Hither to Pilsen? to avail himself
Of our advice? Oh, when did Friedland ever
Need our advice? Be calm, and listen to me.
To sell ourselves are we called hither, and
Decline we that, to be his hostages.
Therefore doth noble Gallas stand aloof;
Thy father, too, thou wouldst not have seen here,
If higher duties had not held him fettered.

MAX.

He makes no secret of it — needs make none —
That we're called hither for his sake — he owns it.

He needs our aidance to maintain himself—
He did so much for us; and 'tis but fair
That we, too, should do somewhat now for him.

OCTAVIO.

And know'st thou what it is which we must do?
That Illo's drunken mood betrayed it to thee.
Bethink thyself, what hast thou heard, what seen?
The counterfeited paper, the omission
Of that particular clause, so full of meaning,
Does it not prove that they would bind us down
To nothing good?

MAX.

That counterfeited paper
Appears to me no other than a trick
Of Illo's own device. These underhand
Traders in great men's interests ever use
To urge and hurry all things to the extreme.
They see the duke at variance with the court,
And fondly think to serve him, when they widen
The breach irreparably. Trust me, father,
The duke knows nothing of all this.

OCTAVIO.

It grieves me
That I must dash to earth, that I must shatter
A faith so specious; but I may not spare thee!
For this is not a time for tenderness.
Thou must take measures, speedy ones, must act.
I therefore will confess to thee that all
Which I've intrusted to thee now, that all
Which seems to thee so unbelievable,
That—yes, I will tell thee, (*a pause*) Max.! I had it all
From his own mouth, from the duke's mouth I had it.

MAX (*in excessive agitation*).

No! no! never!

OCTAVIO.

Himself confided to me
What I, 'tis true, had long before discovered
By other means; himself confided to me,

With injuries and affronts;
Of irritation, what if he, for
Forgot himself? He's an in

OCTAVIO.

Nay, in cold blood he did co
And having construed my as
Into a scruple of his power, l
His written evidences — show
Both from the Saxon and the
Promise of aidance, and defir

MAX.

It cannot be! — cannot be! c
Dost thou not see, it cannot!
Thou wouldst of necessity hav
Such horror, such deep loathi
Had taken thee for his better
Thou stood'st not now a living

OCTAVIO.

I have laid open my objection
Dissuaded him with pressing c
But my *abhorrence*, the full se
Of my *whole* heart — that I ha
To my own consciousness.

MAX.

MAX.

Uprightness merited his confidence.

OCTAVIO.

He was no longer worthy of sincerity.

MAX.

Dissimulation, sure, was still less worthy
Of thee, Octavio!

OCTAVIO.

Gave I him a cause
To entertain a scruple of my honor?

MAX.

That he did not evinced his confidence.

OCTAVIO.

Dear son, it is not always possible
Still to preserve that infant purity
Which the voice teaches in our inmost heart,
Still in alarm, forever on the watch
Against the wiles of wicked men: e'en virtue
Will sometimes bear away her outward robes
Soiled in the wrestle with iniquity.
This is the curse of every evil deed
That, propagating still, it brings forth evil.
I do not cheat my better soul with sophisms;
I but perform my orders; the emperor
Prescribes my conduct to me. Dearest boy,
Far better were it, doubtless, if we all
Obeyed the heart at all times; but so doing,
In this our present sojourn with bad men,
We must abandon many an honest object.
'Tis now our call to serve the emperor;
By what means he can best be served — the heart
May whisper what it will — this is our call!

MAX.

It seems a thing appointed, that to-day
I should not comprehend, not understand thee.
The duke, thou sayest, did honestly pour out
His heart to thee, but for an evil purpose:

And thou dishonestly hast cheated him
For a good purpose! Silence, I entreat thee —
My friend, thou stealest not from me —
Let me not lose my father!

OCTAVIO (*suppressing resentment*).

As yet thou knowest not all, my son. I have
Yet somewhat to disclose to thee. [*After a pause.*
Duke Friedland
Hath made his preparations. He relies
Upon the stars. He deems us unprovided,
And thinks to fall upon us by surprise.
Yea, in his dream of hope, he grasps already
The golden circle in his hand. He errs,
We, too, have been in action — he but grasps
His evil fate, most evil, most mysterious!

MAX.

Oh, nothing rash, my sire! By all that's good,
Let me invoke thee — no precipitation!

OCTAVIO.

With light tread stole he on his evil way,
And light of tread hath vengeance stole on after him.
Unseen she stands already, dark behind him —
But one step more — he shudders in her grasp!
Thou hast seen Questenberg with me. As yet
Thou knowest but his ostensible commission:
He brought with him a private one, my son!
And that was for me only.

MAX.

May I know it?

OCTAVIO (*seizes the patent*).

Max!
[*A pause.*
—— In this disclosure place I in thy hands
The empire's welfare and thy father's life.
Dear to thy inmost heart is Wallenstein:
A powerful tie of love, of veneration,
Hath knit thee to him from thy earliest youth.

Thou nourishest the wish,—O let me still
Anticipate thy loitering confidence!
The hope thou nourishest to knit thyself
Yet closer to him ——

MAX.

Father ——

OCTAVIO.

Oh, my son!
I trust thy heart undoubtingly. But am I
Equally sure of thy collectedness?
Wilt thou be able, with calm countenance,
To enter this man's presence, when that I
Have trusted to thee his whole fate?

MAX.

According
As thou dost trust me, father, with his crime.

[OCTAVIO *takes a paper out of his escritoire and gives it to him.*

MAX.

What! how! a full imperial patent!

OCTAVIO.

Read it.

MAX. (*just glances on it*).

Duke Friedland sentenced and condemned!

OCTAVIO.

Even so.

MAX. (*throws down the paper*).

Oh, this is too much! O unhappy error!

OCTAVIO.

Read on. Collect thyself.

MAX. (*after he has read further, with a look of affright and astonishment on his father*).

How! what! Thou! thou!

OCTAVIO.

But for the present moment, till the King
Of Hungary may safely join the army,
Is the command assigned to me.

MAX.

And think'st thou,
Dost thou believe, that thou wilt tear it from him?
Oh, never hope it! Father! father! father!
An inauspicious office is enjoined thee.
This paper here! — this! and wilt thou enforce it?
The mighty in the middle of his host,
Surrounded by his thousands, him wouldst thou
Disarm — degrade! Thou art lost, both thou and all of us.

OCTAVIO.

What hazard I incur thereby, I know.
In the great hand of God I stand. The Almighty
Will cover with his shield the imperial house,
And shatter, in his wrath, the work of darkness.
The emperor hath true servants still; and even
Here in the camp, there are enough brave men
Who for the good cause will fight gallantly.
The faithful have been warned — the dangerous
Are closely watched. I wait but the first step,
And then immediately ——

MAX.

What! on suspicion?
Immediately?

OCTAVIO.

The emperor is no tyrant.
The deed alone he'll punish, not the wish.
The duke hath yet his destiny in his power.
Let him but leave the treason uncompleted,
He will be silently displaced from office,
And make way to his emperor's royal son.
An honorable exile to his castles
Will be a benefaction to him rather
Than punishment. But the first open step ——

MAX.

What callest thou such a step? A wicked step
Ne'er will he take; but thou mightest easily,
Yea, thou hast done it, misinterpret him.

OCTAVIO.

Nay, howsoever punishable were
Duke Friedland's purposes, yet still the steps
Which he hath taken openly permit
A mild construction. It is my intention
To leave this paper wholly unenforced
Till some act is committed which convicts him
Of high treason, without doubt or plea,
And that shall sentence him.

MAX.

But who the judge

OCTAVIO.

Thyself.

MAX.

Forever, then, this paper will lie idle.

OCTAVIO.

Too soon, I fear, its powers must all be proved.
After the counter-promise of this evening,
It cannot be but he must deem himself
Secure of the majority with us;
And of the army's general sentiment
He hath a pleasing proof in that petition,
Which thou delivered'st to him from the regiments.
Add this too — I have letters that the Rhinegrave
Hath changed his route, and travels by forced marches
To the Bohemian forests. What this purports
Remains unknown; and, to confirm suspicion,
This night a Swedish nobleman arrived here.

MAX.

I have thy word. Thou'lt not proceed to action
Before thou hast convinced me — me myself.

OCTAVIO.

Is it possible? Still, after all thou know'st,
Canst thou believe still in his innocence?

MAX. (*with enthusiasm*).

Thy judgment may mistake; my heart cannot.
[*Moderates his voice and manner.*
These reasons might expound thy spirit or mine;
But they expound not Friedland — I have faith:
For as he knits his fortunes to the stars,
Even so doth he resemble them in secret,
Wonderful, still inexplicable courses!
Trust me, they do him wrong. All will be solved.
These smokes at once will kindle into flame —
The edges of this black and stormy cloud
Will brighten suddenly, and we shall view
The unapproachable glide out in splendor.

OCTAVIO.

I will await it.

SCENE II.

OCTAVIO *and* MAX. *as before.* *To them the* VALET OF THE CHAMBER.

OCTAVIO.

How now, then?

VALET.

A despatch is at the door.

OCTAVIO.

So early? From whom comes he then? Who is it?

VALET.

That he refused to tell me.

OCTAVIO.

Lead him in:
And, hark you — let it not transpire.
[*Exit* VALET: *the* CORNET *steps in.*

OCTAVIO.

Ha! cornet — is it you; and from Count Gallas?
Give me your letters.

CORNET.

The lieutenant-general
Trusted it not to letters.

OCTAVIO.

And what is it?

CORNET.

He bade me tell you — Dare I speak openly here?

OCTAVIO.

My son knows all.

CORNET.

We have him.

OCTAVIO.

Whom?

CORNET.

Sesina,
The old negotiator.

OCTAVIO (*eagerly*).

And you have him?

CORNET.

In the Bohemian Forest Captain Mohrbrand
Found and secured him yester-morning early.
He was proceeding then to Regensburg,
And on him were despatches for the Swede.

OCTAVIO.

And the despatches ——

CORNET.

The lieutenant-general
Sent them that instant to Vienna, and
The prisoner with them.

OCTAVIO.

This is, indeed, a tiding!
That fellow is a precious casket to us,
Enclosing weighty things. Was much found on him?

CORNET.

I think, six packets, with Count Terzky's arms.

OCTAVIO.

None in the duke's own hand?

CORNET.

Not that I know.

OCTAVIO.

And old Sesina?

CORNET.

He was sorely frightened,
When it was told him he must to Vienna;
But the Count Altringer bade him take heart,
Would he but make a full and free confession.

OCTAVIO.

Is Altringer then with your lord? I heard
That he lay sick at Linz.

CORNET.

These three days past
He's with my master, the lieutenant-general,
At Frauenburg. Already have they sixty
Small companies together, chosen men;
Respectfully they greet you with assurances,
That they are only waiting your commands.

OCTAVIO.

In a few days may great events take place.
And when must you return?

CORNET.

I wait your orders.

OCTAVIO.

Remain till evening.
[CORNET *signifies his assent and obeisance, and is going.*
No one saw you — ha?

CORNET.

No living creature. Through the cloister wicket
The capuchins, as usual, let me in.

OCTAVIO.

Go, rest your limbs, and keep yourself concealed.
I hold it probable that yet ere evening
I shall despatch you. The development

Of this affair approaches: ere the day,
That even now is dawning in the heaven,
Ere this eventful day hath set, the lot
That must decide our fortunes will be drawn.
[*Exit* CORNET.

SCENE III.

OCTAVIO *and* MAX. PICCOLOMINI.

OCTAVIO.

Well — and what now, son? All will soon be clear;
For all, I'm certain, went through that Sesina.

MAX. (*who through the whole of the foregoing scene has been in a violent and visible struggle of feelings, at length starts as one resolved*).

I will procure me light a shorter way.
Farewell.

OCTAVIO.

Where now? Remain here.

MAX.

To the Duke.

OCTAVIO (*alarmed*).

What ——

MAX. (*returning*).

If thou hast believed that I shall act
A part in this thy play, thou hast
Miscalculated on me grievously.
My way must be straight on. True with the tongue,
False with the heart — I may not, cannot be:
Nor can I suffer that a man should trust me —
As his friend trust me — and then lull my conscience
With such low pleas as these: "I ask him not —
He did it all at his own hazard — and
My mouth has never lied to him." No, no!
What a friend takes me for, that I must be.
I'll to the duke; ere yet this day is ended
Will I demand of him that he do save
His good name from the world, and with one stride
Break through and rend this fine-spun web of yours.

He can, he will! I still am his believer,
Yet I'll not pledge myself, but that those letters
May furnish you, perchance, with proofs against him.
How far may not this Terzky have proceeded —
What may not he himself too have permitted
Himself to do, to snare the enemy,
The laws of war excusing? Nothing, save
His own mouth shall convict him — nothing less!
And face to face will I go question him.

OCTAVIO.

Thou wilt?

MAX.

I will, as sure as this heart beats.

OCTAVIO.

I have, indeed, miscalculated on thee.
I calculated on a prudent son,
Who would have blessed the hand beneficent
That plucked him back from the abyss — and lo!
A fascinated being I discover,
Whom his two eyes befool, whom passion wilders,
Whom not the broadest light of noon can heal.
Go, question him! Be mad enough, I pray thee.
The purpose of thy father, of thy emperor,
Go, give it up free booty! Force me, drive me
To an open breach before the time. And now,
Now that a miracle of heaven had guarded
My secret purpose even to this hour,
And laid to sleep suspicion's piercing eyes,
Let me have lived to see that mine own son,
With frantic enterprise, annihilates
My toilsome labors and state policy.

MAX.

Ay — this state policy! Oh, how I curse it!
You will some time, with your state policy,
Compel him to the measure: it may happen,
Because ye are determined that he is guilty,
Guilty ye'll make him. All retreat cut off,
You close up every outlet, hem him in
Narrower and narrower, till at length ye force him —

Yes, ye, ye force him, in his desperation,
To set fire to his prison. Father! father!
That never can end well — it cannot — will not!
And let it be decided as it may,
I see with boding heart the near approach
Of an ill-starred, unblest catastrophe.
For this great monarch-spirit, if he fall,
Will drag a world into the ruin with him.
And as a ship that midway on the ocean
Takes fire, at once, and with a thunder-burst
Explodes, and with itself shoots out its crew
In smoke and ruin betwixt sea and heaven!
So will he, falling, draw down in his fall
All us, who're fixed and mortised to his fortune,
Deem of it what thou wilt; but pardon me,
That I must bear me on in my own way.
All must remain pure betwixt him and me;
And, ere the daylight dawns, it must be known
Which I must lose — my father or my friend.
[*During his exit the curtain drops.*

THE DEATH OF WALLENSTEIN.

DRAMATIS PERSONÆ.

WALLENSTEIN, *Duke of Friedland, Generalissimo of the Imperial Forces in the Thirty Years' War.*
DUCHESS OF FREIDLAND, *Wife of Wallenstein.*
THEKLA, *her Daughter, Princess of Friedland.*
THE COUNTESS TERZKY, *Sister of the Duchess.*
LADY NEUBRUNN.
OCTAVIO PICCOLOMINI, *Lieutenant-General.*
MAX. PICCOLOMINI, *his Son, Colonel of a Regiment of Cuirassiers.*
COUNT TERZKY, *the Commander of several Regiments, and Brother-in-law of Wallenstein.*
ILLO, *Field-Marshal, Wallenstein's Confidant.*
ISOLANI, *General of the Croats.*
BUTLER, *an Irishman, Commander of a Regiment of Dragoons.*
GORDON, *Governor of Egra.*
MAJOR GERALDIN.
CAPTAIN DEVEREUX.
CAPTAIN MACDONALD.
AN ADJUTANT.
NEUMANN, *Captain of Cavalry, Aide-de-Camp to Terzky.*
COLONEL WRANGEL, *Envoy from the Swedes.*
ROSENBURG, *Master of Horse.*
SWEDISH CAPTAIN.
SENI.
BURGOMASTER *of Egra.*
ANSPESSADE *of the Cuirassiers.*
GROOM OF THE CHAMBER, } *Belonging to the Duke.*
A PAGE. }
Cuirassiers, Dragoons, and Servants.

ACT I.

SCENE I.

A room fitted up for astrological labors, and provided with celestial charts, with globes, telescopes, quadrants, and other mathematical instruments. Seven colossal figures, representing the planets, each with a transparent star of different color on its head, stand in a semicircle in the background, so that Mars and Saturn are nearest the eye. The remainder of the scene and its disposition is given in the fourth scene of the second act. There must be a curtain over the figures, which may be dropped and conceal them on occasions.

[*In the fifth scene of this act it must be dropped; but in the seventh scene it must be again drawn up wholly or in part.*]

WALLENSTEIN *at a black table, on which a speculum astrologicum is described with chalk.* SENI *is taking observations through a window.*

WALLENSTEIN.

All well — and now let it be ended, Seni. Come,
The dawn commences, and Mars rules the hour;
We must give o'er the operation. Come,
We know enough.

SENI.

Your highness must permit me
Just to contemplate Venus. She is now rising;
Like as a sun so shines she in the east.

WALLENSTEIN.

She is at present in her perigee,
And now shoots down her strongest influences.
[*Contemplating the figure on the table.*
Auspicious aspect! fateful in conjunction,
At length the mighty three corradiate;
And the two stars of blessing, Jupiter
And Venus, take between them the malignant
Slyly-malicious Mars, and thus compel
Into my service that old mischief-founder:
For long he viewed me hostilely, and ever
With beam oblique, or perpendicular,
Now in the Quartile, now in the Secundan,
Shot his red lightnings at my stars, disturbing
Their blessed influences and sweet aspects:
Now they have conquered the old enemy,
And bring him in the heavens a prisoner to me.

SENI (*who has come down from the window*).

And in a corner-house, your highness — think of that!
That makes each influence of double strength.

WALLENSTEIN.

And sun and moon, too, in the Sextile aspect,
The soft light with the vehement — so I love it.
Sol is the heart, Luna the head of heaven,
Bold be the plan, fiery the execution.

SENI.

And both the mighty Lumina by no
Maleficus affronted. Lo! Saturnus,
Innocuous, powerless, in *cadente Domo.*

WALLENSTEIN.

The empire of Saturnus is gone by;
Lord of the secret birth of things is he;
Within the lap of earth, and in the depths
Of the imagination dominates;
And his are all things that eschew the light.
The time is o'er of brooding and contrivance,
For Jupiter, the lustrous, lordeth now,
And the dark work, complete of preparation,
He draws by force into the realm of light.
Now must we hasten on to action, ere
The scheme, and most auspicious positure
Parts o'er my head, and takes once more its flight,
For the heaven's journey still, and adjourn not.

[*There are knocks at the door.*

There's some one knocking there. See who it is

TERZKY (*from without*).

Open, and let me in.

WALLENSTEIN.

Ay — 'tis Terzky.
What is there of such urgence? We are busy.

TERZKY (*from without*).

Lay all aside at present, I entreat you;
It suffers no delaying.

WALLENSTEIN.

Open, Seni!

[*While* SENI *opens the door for* TERZKY, WALLENSTEIN *draws the curtain over the figures.*

SCENE II.

WALLENSTEIN. COUNT TERZKY.

TERSKY (*enters*).

Hast thou already heard it? He is taken.
Gallas has given him up to the emperor.

[SENI *draws off the black table, and exit.*

WALLENSTEIN (*to* TERZKY).

Who has been taken? Who is given up?

TERZKY.

The man who knows our secrets, who knows every
Negotiation with the Swede and Saxon,
Through whose hands all and everything has passed——

WALLENSTEIN (*drawing back*).

Nay, not Sesina? Say, no! I entreat thee.

TERZKY.

All on his road for Regensburg to the Swede
He was plunged down upon by Gallas' agent,
Who had been long in ambush, lurking for him.
There must have been found on him my whole packet
To Thur, to Kinsky, to Oxenstiern, to Arnheim:
All this is in their hands; they have now an insight
Into the whole—our measures and our motives.

SCENE III.

To them enters ILLO.

ILLO (*to* TERZKY).

Has he heard it?

TERZKY.

He has heard it.

ILLO (*to* WALLENSTEIN).

Thinkest thou still
To make thy peace with the emperor, to regain
His confidence? E'en were it now thy wish
To abandon all thy plans, yet still they know
What thou hast wished: then forwards thou must press;
Retreat is now no longer in thy power.

TERZKY.

They have documents against us, and in hands,
Which show beyond all power of contradiction—

WALLENSTEIN.

Of my handwriting—no iota. Thee
I punish for thy lies.

ILLO.

And thou believest,
That what this man, and what thy sister's husband,
Did in thy name, will not stand on thy reckoning?
His word must pass for thy word with the Swede,
And not with those that hate thee at Vienna?

TERZKY.

In writing thou gavest nothing; but bethink thee,
How far thou venturedst by word of mouth
With this Sesina! And will he be silent?
If he can save himself by yielding up
Thy secret purposes, will he retain them?

ILLO.

Thyself dost not conceive it possible;
And since they now have evidence authentic
How far thou hast already gone, speak! tell us,
What art thou waiting for? Thou canst no longer
Keep thy command; and beyond hope of rescue
Thou'rt lost if thou resign'st it.

WALLENSTEIN.

In the army
Lies my security. The army will not
Abandon me. Whatever they may know,
The power is mine, and they must gulp it down ——
And if I give them caution for my fealty,
They must be satisfied, at least appear so.

ILLO.

The army, duke, *is* thine now; for this moment
'Tis thine: but think with terror on the slow,
The quiet power of time. From open violence
The attachment of thy soldiery secures thee
To-day, to-morrow: but grant'st thou them a respite,
Unheard, unseen, they'll undermine that love
On which thou now dost feel so firm a footing,
With wily theft will draw away from thee
One after the other ——

WALLENSTEIN.

'Tis a cursed accident!

ILLO.

Oh! I will call it a most blessed one,
If it work on thee as it ought to do,
Hurry thee on to action — to decision.
The Swedish general?

WALLENSTEIN.

He's arrived! Know'st thou
What his commission is ——

ILLO.

To thee alone
Will he intrust the purpose of his coming.

WALLENSTEIN.

A cursed, cursed accident! Yes, yes,
Sesina knows too much, and won't be silent.

TERZKY.

He's a Bohemian fugitive and rebel,
His neck is forfeit. Can he save himself
At thy cost, think you he will scruple it?
And if they put him to the torture, will he,
Will he, that dastardling, have strength enough —

WALLENSTEIN (*lost in thought*).

Their confidence is lost, irreparably!
And I may act which way I will, I shall
Be and remain forever in their thought
A traitor to my country. How sincerely
Soever I return back to my duty,
It will no longer help me ——

ILLO.

Ruin thee,
That it will do! Not thy fidelity,
Thy weakness will be deemed the sole occasion ——

WALLENSTEIN (*pacing up and down in extreme agitation*).

What! I must realize it now in earnest,
Because I toyed too freely with the thought!
Accursed he who dallies with a devil!
And must I — I must realize it now —
Now, while I have the power, it must take place!

ILLO.

Now — now — ere they can ward and parry it!

WALLENSTEIN (*looking at the paper of signatures*):

I have the generals' word — a written promise!
Max. Piccolomini stands not here — how's that?

TERZKY.

It was — he fancied ——

ILLO.

Mere self-willedness.
There needed no such thing 'twixt him and you.

WALLENSTEIN.

He is quite right; there needed no such thing.
The regiments, too, deny to march for Flanders
Have sent me in a paper of remonstrance,
And openly resist the imperial orders.
The first step to revolt's already taken.

ILLO.

Believe me, thou wilt find it far more easy
To lead them over to the enemy
Than to the Spaniard.

WALLENSTEIN.

I will hear, however,
What the Swede has to say to me.

ILLO (*eagerly to* TERZKY).

Go, call him,
He stands without the door in waiting.

WALLENSTEIN.

Stay!
Stay but a little. It hath taken me
All by surprise; it came too quick upon me;
'Tis wholly novel that an accident,
With its dark lordship, and blind agency,
Should force me on with it.

ILLO.

First hear him only,
And after weigh it. [*Exeunt* TERZKY *and* ILLO.

Scene IV.

WALLENSTEIN (*in soliloquy*).

Is it possible?
Is't so? I can no longer what I would?
No longer draw back at my liking? I
Must do the deed, because I thought of it?
And fed this heart here with a dream? Because
I did not scowl temptation from my presence,
Dallied with thoughts of possible fulfilment,
Commenced no movement, left all time uncertain,
And only kept the road, the access open?
By the great God of Heaven! it was not
My serious meaning, it was ne'er resolved.
I but amused myself with thinking of it.
The free-will tempted me, the power to do
Or not to do it. Was it criminal
To make the fancy minister to hope,
To fill the air with pretty toys of air,
And clutch fantastic sceptres moving toward me?
Was not the will kept free? Beheld I not
The road of duty close beside me — but
One little step, and once more I was in it!
Where am I? Whither have I been transported?
No road, no track behind me, but a wall,
Impenetrable, insurmountable,
Rises obedient to the spells I muttered
And meant not — my own doings tower behind me.
[*Pauses and remains in deep thought.*
A punishable man I seem, the guilt,
Try what I will, I cannot roll off from me;
The equivocal demeanor of my life
Bears witness on my prosecutor's party.
And even my purest acts from purest motives
Suspicion poisons with malicious gloss.
Were I that thing for which I pass, that traitor,
A goodly outside I had sure reserved,
Had drawn the coverings thick and double round me,
Been calm and chary of my utterance;
But being conscious of the innocence
Of my intent, my uncorrupted will,

I gave way to my humors, to my passion:
Bold were my words, because my deeds were not
Now every planless measure, chance event,
The threat of rage, the vaunt of joy and triumph,
And all the May-games of a heart overflowing,
Will they connect, and weave them all together
Into one web of treason; all will be plan,
My eye ne'er absent from the far-off mark,
Step tracing step, each step a politic progress;
And out of all they'll fabricate a charge
So specious, that I must myself stand dumb.
I am caught in my own net, and only force,
Naught but a sudden rent can liberate me.
[*Pauses again.*
How else! since that the heart's unbiased instinct
Impelled me to the daring deed, which now
Necessity, self-preservation, *orders.*
Stern is the on-look of necessity,
Not without shudder may a human hand
Grasp the mysterious urn of destiny.
My deed was mine, remaining in my bosom;
Once suffered to escape from its safe corner
Within the heart, its nursery and birthplace,
Sent forth into the foreign, it belongs
Forever to those sly malicious powers
Whom never art of man conciliated.
[*Paces in agitation through the chamber, then pauses, and, after the pause, breaks out again into audible soliloquy.*
What it thy enterprise? thy aim? thy object?
Hast honestly confessed it to thyself?
Power seated on a quiet throne thou'dst shake,
Power on an ancient, consecrated throne,
Strong in possession, founded in all custom;
Power by a thousand tough and stringy roots
Fixed to the people's pious nursery faith.
This, this will be no strife of strength with strength.
That feared I not. I brave each combatant,
Whom I can look on, fixing eye to eye,
Who, full himself of courage, kindles courage
In me too. 'Tis a foe invisible

The which I fear — a fearful enemy,
Which in the human heart opposes me,
By its coward fear alone made fearful to me.
Not that, which full of life, instinct with power,
Makes known its present being; that is not
The true, the perilously formidable.
O no! it is the common, the quite common,
The thing of an eternal yesterday.
Whatever was, and evermore returns,
Sterling to-morrow, for to-day 'twas sterling!
For of the wholly common is man made,
And custom is his nurse! Woe then to them
Who lay irreverent hands upon his old
House furniture, the dear inheritance
From his forefathers! For time consecrates;
And what is gray with age becomes religion.
Be in possession, and thou hast the right,
And sacred will the many guard it for thee!
[*To the* PAGE, *who here enters.*
The Swedish officer? Well, let him enter.
[*The* PAGE *exit*, WALLENSTEIN *fixes his eye in deep thought on the door.*
Yet, it is pure — as yet! — the crime has come
Not o'er this threshold yet — so slender is
The boundary that divideth life's two paths.

SCENE V.

WALLENSTEIN *and* WRANGEL.

WALLENSTEIN (*after having fixed a searching look on him*).

Your name is Wrangel?

WRANGEL.

Gustave Wrangel, General
Of the Sudermanian Blues.

WALLENSTEIN.

It was a Wrangel
Who injured me materially at Stralsund,
And by his brave resistance was the cause
Of the opposition which that seaport made.

WRANGEL.

It was the doing of the element
With which you fought, my lord! and not my merit.
The Baltic Neptune did assert his freedom:
The sea and land, it seemed were not to serve
One and the same.

WALLENSTEIN

You plucked the admiral's hat from off my head.

WRANGEL.

I come to place a diadem thereon.

WALLENSTEIN (*makes the motion for him to take a seat, and seats himself*).

And where are your credentials?
Come you provided with full powers, sir general?

WRANGEL.

There are so many scruples yet to solve ——

WALLENSTEIN (*having read the credentials*).

An able letter! Ay — he is a prudent,
Intelligent master whom you serve, sir general!
The chancellor writes me that he but fulfils
His late departed sovereign's own idea
In helping me to the Bohemian crown.

WRANGEL.

He says the truth. Our great king, now in heaven,
Did ever deem most highly of your grace's
Pre-eminent sense and military genius;
And always the commanding intellect,
He said, should have command, and be the king.

WALLENSTEIN.

Yes, he might say it safely. General Wrangel,
[*Taking his hand affectionately.*
Come, fair and open. Trust me, I was always
A Swede at heart. Eh! that did you experience
Both in Silesia and at Nuremberg;
I had you often in my power, and let you
Always slip out by some back door or other.

'Tis this for which the court can ne'er forgive me,
Which drives me to this present step: and since
Our interests so run in one direction,
E'en let us have a thorough confidence
Each in the other.

WRANGEL.

Confidence will come
Has each but only first security.

WALLENSTEIN.

The chancellor still, I see, does not quite trust me;
And, I confess — the game does not lie wholly
To my advantage. Without doubt he thinks,
If I can play false with the emperor,
Who is my sovereign, I can do the like
With the enemy, and that the one, too, were
Sooner to be forgiven me than the other.
Is not this your opinion, too, sir general?

WRANGEL.

I have here a duty merely, no opinion.

WALLENSTEIN.

The emperor hath urged me to the uttermost:
I can no longer honorably serve him.
For my security, in self-defence,
I take this hard step, which my conscience blames.

WRANGEL.

That I believe. So far would no one go
Who was not forced to it. [*After a pause.*
What may have impelled
Your princely highness in this wise to act
Toward your sovereign lord and emperor,
Beseems not us to expound or criticise.
The Swede is fighting for his good old cause,
With his good sword and conscience. This concurrence,
This opportunity is in our favor,
And all advantages in war are lawful.
We take what offers without questioning;
And if all have its due and just proportions ——

WALLENSTEIN.

Of what then are ye doubting? Of my will?
Or of my power? I pledged me to the chancellor,
Would he trust me with sixteen thousand men,
That I would instantly go over to them
With eighteen thousand of the emperor's troops.

WRANGEL.

Your grace is known to be a mighty war-chief,
To be a second Attila and Pyrrhus.
'Tis talked of still with fresh astonishment,
How some years past, beyond all human faith,
You called an army forth like a creation:
But yet ——

WALLENSTEIN.

But yet?

WRANGEL.

But still the chancellor thinks
It might yet be an easier thing from nothing
To call forth sixty thousand men of battle,
Than to persuade one-sixtieth part of them ——

WALLENSTEIN.

What now? Out with it, friend?

WRANGEL.

To break their oaths.

WALLENSTEIN.

And he thinks so? He judges like a Swede,
And like a Protestant. You Lutherans
Fight for your Bible. You are interested
About the cause; and with your hearts you follow
Your banners. Among you whoe'er deserts
To the enemy hath broken covenant
With two lords at one time. We've no such fancies.

WRANGEL.

Great God in heaven! Have then the people here
No house and home, no fireside, no altar?

WALLENSTEIN.

I will explain that to you, how it stands:
The Austrian has a country, ay, and loves it,

And has good cause to love it — but this army
That calls itself the imperial, this that houses
Here in Bohemia, this has none — no country;
This is an outcast of all foreign lands,
Unclaimed by town or tribe, to whom belongs
Nothing except the universal sun.
And this Bohemian land for which we fight
Loves not the master whom the chance of war,
Not its own choice or will, hath given to it.
Men murmur at the oppression of their conscience,
And power hath only awed but not appeased them.
A glowing and avenging memory lives
Of cruel deeds committed on these plains;
How can the son forget that here his father
Was hunted by the bloodhound to the mass?
A people thus oppressed must still be feared,
Whether they suffer or avenge their wrongs.

WRANGEL.

But then the nobles and the officers?
Such a desertion, such a felony,
It is without example, my lord duke,
In the world's history.

WALLENSTEIN.

They are all mine —
Mine unconditionally — mine on all terms.
Not me, your own eyes you must trust.
[*He gives him the paper containing the written oath.*
WRANGEL *reads it through, and, having read it, lays it on the table, remaining silent.*
So then;
Now comprehend you?

WRANGEL.

Comprehend who can!
My lord duke, I will let the mask drop — yes!
I've full powers for a final settlement.
The Rhinegrave stands but four days' march from here
With fifteen thousand men, and only waits
For orders to proceed and join your army.
These orders I give out immediately
We're compromised.

WALLENSTEIN.

What asks the chancellor?

WRANGEL (*considerately*).

Twelve regiments, every man a Swede — my head
The warranty — and all might prove at last
Only false play ——

WALLENSTEIN (*starting*).

Sir Swede!

WRANGEL (*calmly proceeding*).

Am therefore forced
To insist thereon, that he do formally,
Irrevocably break with the emperor,
Else not a Swede is trusted to Duke Friedland.

WALLENSTEIN.

Come, brief and open! What is the demand?

WRANGEL.

That he forthwith disarm the Spanish regiments
Attached to the emperor, that he seize on Prague,
And to the Swedes give up that city, with
The strong pass Egra.

WALLENSTEIN.

That is much indeed!
Prague! — Egra's granted — but — but Prague
'Twon't do.
I give you every security
Which you may ask of me in common reason —
But Prague — Bohemia — these, sir general,
I can myself protect.

WRANGEL.

We doubt it not.
But 'tis not the protection that is now
Our sole concern. We want security,
That we shall not expend our men and money
All to no purpose.

WALLENSTEIN.

'Tis but reasonable.

WRANGEL.

And till we are indemnified, so long
Stays Prague in pledge.

WALLENSTEIN.

Then trust you us so little?

WRANGEL (*rising*).

The Swede, if he would treat well with the German,
Must keep a sharp lookout. We have been called
Over the Baltic, we have saved the empire
From ruin — with our best blood have we sealed
The liberty of faith and gospel truth.
But now already is the benefaction
No longer felt, the load alone is felt.
Ye look askance with evil eye upon us,
As foreigners, intruders in the empire,
And would fain send us with some paltry sum
Of money, home again to our old forests.
No, no! my lord duke! it never was
For Judas' pay, for chinking gold and silver,
That we did leave our king by the Great Stone.*
No, not for gold and silver have there bled
So many of our Swedish nobles — neither
Will we, with empty laurels for our payment,
Hoist sail for our own country. Citizens
Will we remain upon the soil, the which
Our monarch conquered for himself and died.

WALLENSTEIN.

Help to keep down the common enemy,
And the fair border land must needs be yours.

WRANGEL.

But when the common enemy lies vanquished,
Who knits together our new friendship then?
We know, Duke Friedland! though perhaps the Swede
Ought not to have known it, that you carry on
Secret negotiations with the Saxons.

* A great stone near Lützen, since called the Swede's Stone, the body of their great king having been found at the foot of it, after the battle in which he lost his life.

Who is our warranty that we are not
The sacrifices in those articles
Which 'tis thought needful to conceal from us?

WALLENSTEIN (*rises*).

Think you of something better, Gustave Wrangel!
Of Prague no more.

WRANGEL.

Here my commission ends.

WALLENSTEIN.

Surrender up to you my capital!
Far liever would I force about, and step
Back to my emperor.

WRANGEL.

If time yet permits ——

WALLENSTEIN.

That lies with me, even now, at any hour.

WRANGEL.

Some days ago, perhaps. To-day, no longer;
No longer since Sesina's been a prisoner.
[WALLENSTEIN *is struck, and silenced.*
My lord duke, hear me — we believe that you
At present do mean honorably by us.
Since yesterday we're sure of that — and now
This paper warrants for the troops, there's nothing
Stands in the way of our full confidence.
Prague shall not part us. Hear! The chancellor
Contents himself with Alstadt; to your grace
He gives up Ratschin and the narrow side.
But Egra above all must open to us,
Ere we can think of any junction.

WALLENSTEIN.

You,
You therefore must I trust, and not you me?
I will consider of your proposition.

WRANGEL.

I must entreat that your consideration
Occupy not too long a time. Already

Has this negotiation, my lord duke!
Crept on into the second year. If nothing
Is settled this time, will the chancellor
Consider it as broken off forever?

WALLENSTEIN.

Ye press me hard. A measure such as this
Ought to be thought of.

WRANGEL.

Ay! but think of this too,
That sudden action only can procure it.
Success — think first of this, your highness.

[*Exit* WRANGEL.

SCENE VI.

WALLENSTEIN, TERZKY, *and* ILLO (*re-enter*).

ILLO.

Is't all right?

TERZKY.

Are you compromised?

ILLO.

This Swede
Went smiling from you. Yes! you're compromised.

WALLENSTEIN.

As yet is nothing settled; and (well weighed)
I feel myself inclined to leave it so.

TERZKY.

How? What is that?

WALLENSTEIN.

Come on me what will come,
The doing evil to avoid an evil
Cannot be good!

TERZKY.

Nay, but bethink you, duke.

WALLENSTEIN.

To live upon the mercy of these Swedes!
Of these proud-hearted Swedes! — I could not bear it.

ILLO.

Goest thou as fugitive, as mendicant?
Bringest thou not more to them than thou receivest?

WALLENSTEIN.

How fared it with the brave and royal Bourbon
Who sold himself unto his country's foes,
And pierced the bosom of his father-land?
Curses were his reward, and men's abhorrence
Avenged the unnatural and revolting deed.

ILLO.

Is that thy case?

WALLENSTEIN.

True faith, I tell thee,
Must ever be the dearest friend of man:
His nature prompts him to assert its rights.
The enmity of sects, the rage of parties,
Long-cherished envy, jealousy, unite;
And all the struggling elements of evil
Suspend their conflict, and together league
In one alliance 'gainst their common foe—
The savage beast that breaks into the fold,
Where men repose in confidence and peace.
For vain were man's own prudence to protect him.
'Tis only in the forehead nature plants
The watchful eye; the back, without defence,
Must find its shield in man's fidelity.

TERZKY.

Think not more meanly of thyself than do
Thy foes, who stretch their hands with joy to greet thee.
Less scrupulous far was the imperial Charles,
The powerful head of this illustrious house;
With open arms he gave the Bourbon welcome;
For still by policy the world is ruled.

Scene VII.

To these enter the Countess Terzky.

WALLENSTEIN.

Who sent for you? There is no business here
For women.

COUNTESS.

I am come to bid you joy.

WALLENSTEIN.

Use thy authority, Terzky; bid her go.

COUNTESS.

Come I perhaps too early? I hope not.

WALLENSTEIN.

Set not this tongue upon me, I entreat you:
You know it is the weapon that destroys me.
I am routed, if a woman but attack me:
I cannot traffic in the trade of words
With that unreasoning sex.

COUNTESS.

I had already
Given the Bohemians a king.

WALLENSTEIN (*sarcastically*).

They have one,
In consequence, no doubt.

COUNTESS (*to the others*).

Ha! what new scruple?

TERZKY.

The duke will not.

COUNTESS.

He will not what he must!

ILLO.

It lies with you now. Try. For I am silenced
When folks begin to talk to me of conscience
And of fidelity.

COUNTESS.

How? then, when all
Lay in the far-off distance, when the road
Stretched out before thine eyes interminably,
Then hadst thou courage and resolve; and now,
Now that the dream is being realized,
The purpose ripe, the issue ascertained,

Dost thou begin to play the dastard now?
Planned merely, 'tis a common felony;
Accomplished, an immortal undertaking:
And with success comes pardon hand in hand,
For all event is God's arbitrament.

SERVANT (*enters*).

The Colonel Piccolomini.

COUNTESS (*hastily*).

— Must wait.

WALLENSTEIN.

I cannot see him now. Another time.

SERVANT.

But for two minutes he entreats an audience:
Of the most urgent nature is his business.

WALLENSTEIN.

Who knows what he may bring us! I will hear him.

COUNTESS (*laughs*).

Urgent for him, no doubt? but thou may'st wait.

WALLENSTEIN.

What is it?

COUNTESS.

Thou shalt be informed hereafter.
First let the Swede and thee be compromised.

[*Exit* SERVANT.

WALLENSTEIN.

If there were yet a choice! if yet some milder
Way of escape were possible — I still
Will choose it, and avoid the last extreme.

COUNTESS.

Desirest thou nothing further? Such a way
Lies still before thee. Send this Wrangel off.
Forget thou thy old hopes, cast far away
All thy past life; determine to commence
A new one. Virtue hath her heroes too,
As well as fame and fortune. To Vienna
Hence — to the emperor — kneel before the throne;

Take a full coffer with thee — say aloud,
Thou didst but wish to prove thy fealty;
Thy whole intention but to dupe the Swede.

ILLO.

For that too 'tis too late. They know too much;
He would but bear his own head to the block.

COUNTESS.

I fear not that. They have not evidence
To attaint him legally, and they avoid
The avowal of an arbitrary power.
They'll let the duke resign without disturbance.
I see how all will end. The King of Hungary
Makes his appearance, and 'twill of itself
Be understood, and then the duke retires.
There will not want a formal declaration.
The young king will administer the oath
To the whole army; and so all returns
To the old position. On some morrow morning
The duke departs; and now 'tis stir and bustle
Within his castles. He will hunt and build;
Superintend his horses' pedigrees,
Creates himself a court, gives golden keys,
And introduceth strictest ceremony
In fine proportions, and nice etiquette;
Keeps open table with high cheer: in brief,
Commenceth mighty king — in miniature.
And while he prudently demeans himself,
And gives himself no actual importance,
He will be let appear whate'er he likes:
And who dares doubt, that Friedland will appear
A mighty prince to his last dying hour?
Well now, what then? Duke Friedland is as others,
A fire-new noble, whom the war hath raised
To price and currency, a Jonah's gourd,
An over-night creation of court-favor,
Which, with an undistinguishable ease,
Makes baron or makes prince.

WALLENSTEIN (*in extreme agitation*).

Take her away.
Let in the young Count Piccolomini.

COUNTESS.

Art thou in earnest? I entreat thee! Canst thou
Consent to bear thyself to thy own grave,
So ignominiously to be dried up?
Thy life, that arrogated such an height
To end in such a nothing! To be nothing,
When one was always nothing, is an evil
That asks no stretch of patience, a light evil;
But to become a nothing, having been ——

WALLENSTEIN (*starts up in violent agitation*).

Show me a way out of this stifling crowd,
Ye powers of aidance! Show me such a way
As I am capable of going. I
Am no tongue-hero, no fine virtue-prattler;
I cannot warm by thinking; cannot say
To the good luck that turns her back upon me
Magnanimously: "Go; I need thee not."
Cease I to work, I am annihilated.
Dangers nor sacrifices will I shun,
If so I may avoid the last extreme;
But ere I sink down into nothingness,
Leave off so little, who began so great,
Ere that the world confuses me with those
Poor wretches, whom a day creates and crumbles,
This age and after ages * speak my name
With hate and dread; and Friedland be redemption
For each accursed deed.

COUNTESS.

What is there here, then,
So against nature? Help me to perceive it!
Oh, let not superstition's nightly goblins
Subdue thy clear, bright spirit! Art thou bid
To murder? with abhorred, accursed poniard,
To violate the breasts that nourished thee?
That were against our nature, that might aptly

* Could I have hazarded such a Germanism as the use of the word afterworld for posterity, — "Es spreche Welt und *Nachwelt* meinen Namen" — might have been rendered with more literal fidelity: Let world and afterworld speak out my name, etc.

Make thy flesh shudder, and thy whole heart sicken.*
Yet not a few, and for a meaner object,
Have ventured even this, ay, and performed it.
What is there in thy case so black and monstrous?
Thou art accused of treason — whether with
Or without justice is not now the question —
Thou art lost if thou dost not avail thee quickly
Of the power which thou possessest — Friedland! Duke!
Tell me where lives that thing so meek and tame,
That doth not all his living faculties
Put forth in preservation of his life?
What deed so daring, which necessity
And desperation will not sanctify?

WALLENSTEIN.

Once was this Ferdinand so gracious to me;
He loved me; he esteemed me; I was placed
The nearest to his heart. Full many a time
We like familiar friends, both at one table,
Have banqueted together — he and I;
And the young kings themselves held me the basin
Wherewith to wash me — and is't come to this?

COUNTESS.

So faithfully preservest thou each small favor,
And hast no memory for contumelies?
Must I remind thee, how at Regensburg
This man repaid thy faithful services?
All ranks and all conditions in the empire
Thou hadst wronged to make him great, — hadst loaded on thee,
On thee, the hate, the curse of the whole world.
No friend existed for thee in all Germany,
And why? because thou hadst existed only
For the emperor. To the emperor alone
Clung Friedland in that storm which gathered round him
At Regensburg in the Diet — and he dropped thee!
He let thee fall! he let thee fall a victim

* I have not ventured to affront the fastidious delicacy of our age with a literal translation of this line,

werth
Die Eingeweide schaudernd aufzuregen.

To the Bavarian, to that insolent!
Deposed, stripped bare of all thy dignity
And power, amid the taunting of thy foe
Thou wert let drop into obscurity.
Say not, the restoration of thy honor
Has made atonement for that first injustice.
No honest good-will was it that replaced thee;
The law of hard necessity replaced thee,
Which they had fain opposed, but that they could not.

WALLENSTEIN.

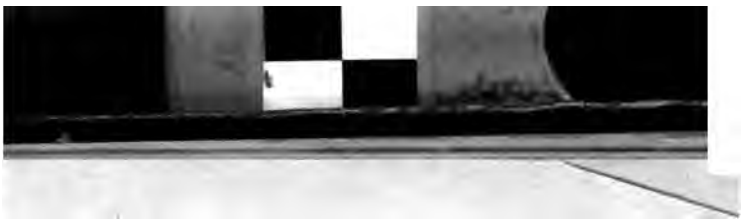
Not to their good wishes, that is certain,
Nor yet to his affection I'm indebted
For this high office; and if I abuse it,
I shall therein abuse no confidence.

COUNTESS.

Affection! confidence! — they needed thee.
Necessity, impetuous remonstrant!
Who not with empty names, or shows of proxy,
Is served, who'll have the thing and not the symbol,
Ever seeks out the greatest and the best,
And at the rudder places him, e'en though
She had been forced to take him from the rabble —
She, this necessity, it was that placed thee
In this high office; it was she that gave thee
Thy letters-patent of inauguration.
For, to the uttermost moment that they can,
This race still help themselves at cheapest rate
With slavish souls, with puppets! At the approach
Of extreme peril, when a hollow image
Is found a hollow image and no more,
Then falls the power into the mighty hands
Of nature, of the spirit-giant born,
Who listens only to himself, knows nothing
Of stipulations, duties, reverences,
And, like the emancipated force of fire,
Unmastered scorches, ere it reaches them,
Their fine-spun webs, their artificial policy.

WALLENSTEIN.

'Tis true! they saw me always as I am —
Always! I did not cheat them in the bargain.



I never held it worth my pains to hide
The bold all-grasping habit of my soul.

COUNTESS.

Nay rather — thou hast ever shown thyself
A formidable man, without restraint;
Hast exercised the full prerogatives
Of thy impetuous nature, which had been
Once granted to thee. Therefore, duke, not thou,
Who hast still remained consistent with thyself,
But they are in the wrong, who, fearing thee,
Intrusted such a power in hands they feared.
For, by the laws of spirit, in the right
Is every individual character
That acts in strict consistence with itself:
Self-contradiction is the only wrong.
Wert thou another being, then, when thou
Eight years ago pursuedst thy march with fire,
And sword, and desolation, through the circles
Of Germany, the universal scourge,
Didst mock all ordinances of the empire,
The fearful rights of strength alone exertedst,
Trampledst to earth each rank, each magistracy,
All to extend thy Sultan's domination?
Then was the time to break thee in, to curb
Thy haughty will, to teach thee ordinance.
But no, the emperor felt no touch of conscience;
What served him pleased him, and without a murmur
He stamped his broad seal on these lawless deeds.
What at that time was right, because thou didst it
For him, to-day is all at once become
Opprobrious, foul, because it is directed
Against him. O most flimsy superstition!

WALLENSTEIN (*rising*).

I never saw it in this light before,
'Tis even so. The emperor perpetrated
Deeds through my arm, deeds most unorderly.
And even this prince's mantle, which I wear,
I owe to what were services to him,
But most high misdemeanors 'gainst the empire.

COUNTESS.

Then betwixt thee and him (confess it, Friedland!)
The point can be no more of right and duty,
Only of power and the opportunity.
That opportunity, lo! it comes yonder
Approaching with swift steeds; then with a swing
Throw thyself up into the chariot-seat,
Seize with firm hand the reins ere thy opponent
Anticipate thee, and himself make conquest
Of the now empty seat. The moment comes;
It is already here, when thou must write
The absolute total of thy life's vast sum.
The constellations stand victorious o'er thee,
The planets shoot good fortune in fair junctions,
And tell thee, "Now's the time!" The starry courses
Hast thou thy life-long measured to no purpose?
The quadrant and the circle, were they playthings?
[*Pointing to the different objects in the room.*
The zodiacs, the rolling orbs of heaven,
Hast pictured on these walls and all around thee.
In dumb, foreboding symbols hast thou placed
These seven presiding lords of destiny —
For toys? Is all this preparation nothing?
Is there no marrow in this hollow art,
That even to thyself it doth avail
Nothing, and has no influence over thee
In the great moment of decision?

WALLENSTEIN (*during this last speech walks up and down with inward struggles, laboring with passion; stops suddenly, stands still, then interrupting the* COUNTESS).

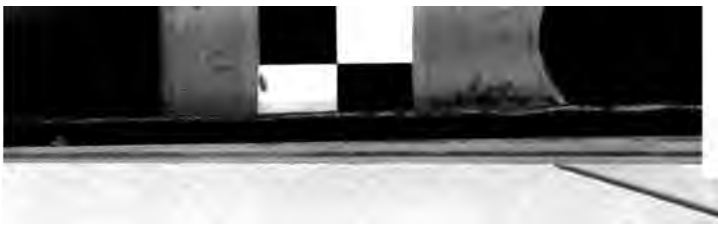
Send Wrangel to me — I will instantly
Despatch three couriers ——

ILLO (*hurrying out*).

God in heaven be praised!

WALLENSTEIN.

It is his evil genius and mine.
[illegible]ur evil genius! It chastises him
[illegible]ough me, the instrument of his ambition;



And I expect no less, than that revenge
E'en now is whetting for my breast the poinard.
Who sows the serpent's teeth let him not hope
To reap a joyous harvest. Every crime
Has, in the moment of its perpetration,
Its own avenging angel — dark misgiving,
An ominous sinking at the inmost heart.
He can no longer trust me. Then no longer
Can I retreat — so come that which must come.
Still destiny preserves its due relations,
The heart within us is its absolute
Vicegerent. [*To* TERZKY.
Go, conduct you Gustave Wrangel
To my state cabinet. Myself will speak to
The couriers. And despatch immediately
A servant for Octavio Piccolomini.
[*To the* COUNTESS, *who cannot conceal her triumph.*
No exultation! woman, triumph not!
For jealous are the powers of destiny,
Joy premature, and shouts ere victory,
Encroach upon their rights and privileges.
We sow the seed, and they the growth determine.
[*While he is making his exit the curtain drops.*

ACT II.

SCENE I.

Scene as in the preceding Act.

WALLENSTEIN, OCTAVIO PICCOLOMINI.

WALLENSTEIN (*coming forward in conversation*).

He sends me word from Linz that he lies sick;
But I have sure intelligence that he
Secretes himself at Frauenberg with Gallas.
Secure them both, and send them to me hither.
Remember, thou takest on thee the command
Of those same Spanish regiments, — constantly
Make preparation, and be never ready;
And if they urge thee to draw out against me,
Still answer yes, and stand as thou wert fettered.

I know, that it is doing thee a service
To keep thee out of action in this business.
Thou lovest to linger on in fair appearances;
Steps of extremity are not thy province,
Therefore have I sought out this part for thee.
Thou wilt this time be of most service to me
By thy inertness. The meantime, if fortune
Declare itself on my side, thou wilt know
What is to do.

[*Enter* MAX. PICCOLOMINI.

Now go, Octavio.
This night must thou be off, take my own horses:
Him here I keep with me — make short farewell —
Trust me, I think we all shall meet again
In joy and thriving fortunes.

OCTAVIO (*to his son*).

I shall see you
Yet ere I go.

SCENE II.

WALLENSTEIN, MAX. PICOLOMINI.

MAX. (*advances to him*).

My general!

WALLENSTEIN.

That I am no longer, if
Thou stylest thyself the emperor's officer.

MAX.

Then thou wilt leave the army, general?

WALLENSTEIN.

I have renounced the service of the emperor.

MAX.

And thou wilt leave the army?

WALLENSTEIN.

Rather hope I
To bind it nearer still and faster to me.

[*He seats himself.*

Yes, Max., I have delayed to open it to thee,
Even till the hour of acting 'gins to strike.

Youth's fortunate feeling doth seize easily
The absolute right, yea, and a joy it is
To exercise the single apprehension
Where the sums square in proof;
But where it happens, that of two sure evils
One must be taken, where the heart not wholly
Brings itself back from out the strife of duties,
There 'tis a blessing to have no election,
And blank necessity is grace and favor.
This is now present: do not look behind thee,—
It can no more avail thee. Look thou forwards!
Think not! judge not! prepare thyself to act!
The court — it hath determined on my ruin,
Therefore I will be beforehand with them.
We'll join the Swedes — right gallant fellows are they,
And our good friends.

[*He stops himself, expecting* PICCOLOMINI'S *answer.*

I have taken thee by surprise. Answer me not:
I grant thee time to recollect thyself.

[*He rises, retires to the back of the stage.* MAX. *remains for a long time motionless, in a trance of excessive anguish. At his first motion* WALLENSTEIN *returns, and places himself before him.*

MAX.

My general, this day thou makest me
Of age to speak in my own right and person,
For till this day I have been spared the trouble
To find out my own road. Thee have I followed
With most implicit, unconditional faith,
Sure of the right path if I followed thee.
To-day, for the first time, dost thou refer
Me to myself, and forcest me to make
Election between thee and my own heart.

WALLENSTEIN.

Soft cradled thee thy fortune till to-day;
Thy duties thou couldst exercise in sport,
Indulge all lovely instincts, act forever
With undivided heart. It can remain
No longer thus. Like enemies, the roads
Start from each other. Duties strive with duties,

Thou must needs choose thy party in the war
Which is now kindling 'twixt thy friend and him
Who is thy emperor.

MAX.

War! is that the name?
War is as frightful as heaven's pestilence,
Yet it is good, is it heaven's will as that is.
Is that a good war, which against the emperor
Thou wagest with the emperor's own army?
O God of heaven! what a change is this.
Beseems it me to offer such persuasion
To thee, who like the fixed star of the pole
Wert all I gazed at on life's trackless ocean?
O! what a rent thou makest in my heart!
The ingrained instinct of old reverence,
The holy habit of obediency,
Must I pluck life asunder from thy name?
Nay, do not turn thy countenance upon me —
It always was as a god looking upon me!
Duke Wallenstein, its power has not departed;
The senses still are in thy bonds, although
Bleeding, the soul hath freed itself.

WALLENSTEIN.

Max., hear me.

MAX.

Oh, do it not, I pray thee, do it not!
There is a pure and noble soul within thee,
Knows not of this unblest unlucky doing.
Thy will is chaste, it is thy fancy only
Which hath polluted thee — and innocence,
It will not let itself be driven away
From that world-awing aspect. Thou wilt not,
Thou canst not end in this. It would reduce
All human creatures to disloyalty
Against the nobleness of their own nature.
'Twill justify the vulgar misbelief,
Which holdeth nothing noble in free will,
And trusts itself to impotence alone,
Made powerful only in an unknown power.

WALLENSTEIN.

The world will judge me harshly, I expect it.
Already have I said to my own self
All thou canst say to me. Who but avoids
The extreme, can he by going round avoid it?
But here there is no choice. Yes, I must use
Or suffer violence — so stands the case,
There remains nothing possible but that.

MAX.

Oh, that is never possible for thee!
'Tis the last desperate resource of those
Cheap souls, to whom their honor, their good name,
Is their poor saving, their last worthless keep,
Which, having staked and lost, they staked themselves
In the mad rage of gaming. Thou art rich
And glorious; with an unpolluted heart
Thou canst make conquest of whate'er seems highest!
But he who once hath acted infamy
Does nothing more in this world.

WALLENSTEIN (*grasps his hand*).

Calmly, Max.!
Much that is great and excellent will we
Perform together yet. And if we only
Stand on the height with dignity, 'tis soon
Forgotten, Max., by what road we ascended.
Believe me, many a crown shines spotless now,
That yet was deeply sullied in the winning.
To the evil spirit doth the earth belong,
Not to the good. All that the powers divine
Send from above are universal blessings:
Their light rejoices us, their air refreshes,
But never yet was man enriched by them:
In their eternal realm no property
Is to be struggled for — all there is general.
The jewel, the all-valued gold we win
From the deceiving powers, depraved in nature,
That dwell beneath the day and blessed sunlight.
Not without sacrifices are they rendered
Propitious, and there lives no soul on earth
That e'er retired unsullied from their service.

MAX.

Whate'er is human to the human being
Do I allow — and to the vehement
And striving spirit readily I pardon
The excess of action; but to thee, my general!
Above all others make I large concession.
For thou must move a world and be the master —
He kills thee who condemns thee to inaction.
So be it then! maintain thee in thy post
By violence. Resist the emperor,
And if it must be force with force repel;
I will not praise it, yet I can forgive it.
But not — not to the traitor — yes! the word
Is spoken out ——
Not to the traitor can I yield a pardon.
That is no mere excess! that is no error
Of human nature — that is wholly different,
Oh, that is black, black as the pit of hell!
[WALLENSTEIN *betrays a sudden agitation.*
Thou canst not hear it named, and wilt thou do it?
O turn back to thy duty. That thou canst,
I hold it certain. Send me to Vienna;
I'll make thy peace for thee with the emperor.
He knows thee not. But I do know thee. He
Shall see thee, duke! with my unclouded eye,
And I bring back his confidence to thee.

WALLENSTEIN.

It is too late! Thou knowest not what has happened.

MAX.

Were it too late, and were things gone so far,
That a crime only could prevent thy fall,
Then — fall! fall honorably, even as thou stoodest,
Lose the command. Go from the stage of war!
Thou canst with splendor do it — do it too
With innocence. Thou hast lived much for others,
At length live thou for thy own self. I follow thee.
My destiny I never part from thine.

WALLENSTEIN.

It is too late! Even now, while thou art losing
Thy words, one after another, are the mile-stones
Left fast behind by my post couriers,
Who bear the order on to Prague and Egra.

[MAX. *stands as convulsed, with a gesture and countenance expressing the most intense anguish.*

Yield thyself to it. We act as we are forced.
I cannot give assent to my own shame
And ruin. Thou — no — thou canst not forsake me!
So let us do, what must be done, with dignity,
With a firm step. What am I doing worse
Than did famed Cæsar at the Rubicon,
When he the legions led against his country,
The which his country had delivered to him?
Had he thrown down the sword, he had been lost.
As I were, if I but disarmed myself.
I trace out something in me of this spirit.
Give me his luck, that other thing I'll bear.

[MAX. *quits him abruptly.* WALLENSTEIN *startled and overpowered, continues looking after him, and is still in this posture when* TERZKY *enters.*

SCENE III.

WALLENSTEIN, TERZKY.

TERZKY.

Max. Piccolomini just left you?

WALLENSTEIN.

Where is Wrangel?

TERZKY.

He is already gone.

WALLENSTEIN.

In such a hurry?

TERZKY.

It is as if the earth had swallowed him.
He had scarce left thee, when I went to seek him.
I wished some words with him — but he was gone.

Then the whole science of the stars is false;
For know, I have a pledge from Fate itself,
That he is the most faithful of my friends.

ILLO.

Hast thou a pledge that this pledge is not false?

WALLENSTEIN.

There exist moments in the life of man,
When he is nearer the great Soul of the world
Than is man's custom, and possesses freely
The power of questioning his destiny:
And such a moment 'twas, when in the night
Before the action in the plains of Lützen,
Leaning against a tree, thoughts crowding thoughts,
I looked out far upon the ominous plain.
My whole life, past and future, in this moment
Before my mind's eye glided in procession,
And to the destiny of the next morning
The spirit, filled with anxious presentiment,
Did knit the most removed futurity.
Then said I also to myself, "So many
Dost thou command. They follow all thy stars,
And as on some great number set their all
Upon thy single head, and only man
The vessel of thy fortune. Yet a day
Will come, when destiny shall once more scatter
All these in many a several direction:
Few be they who will stand out faithful to thee."
I yearned to know which one was faithfulest
Of all, this camp included. Great destiny,
Give me a sign! And he shall be the man,
Who, on the approaching morning, comes the first
To meet me with a token of his love:
And thinking this, I fell into a slumber,
Then midmost in the battle was I led
In spirit. Great the pressure and the tumult!
Then was my horse killed under me: I sank;
And over me away, all unconcernedly,
Drove horse and rider — and thus trod to pieces
I lay, and panted like a dying man;

Then seized me suddenly a savior arm;
It was Octavio's — I woke at once,
'Twas broad day, and Octavio stood before me.
"My brother," said he, "do not ride to-day
The dapple, as you're wont; but mount the horse
Which I have chosen for thee. Do it, brother!
In love to me. A strong dream warned me so."
It was the swiftness of this horse that snatched me
From the hot pursuit of Bannier's dragoons.
My cousin rode the dapple on that day,
And never more saw I or horse or rider.

ILLO.

That was a chance.

WALLENSTEIN (*significantly*).

There's no such thing as chance
And what to us seems merest accident
Springs from the deepest source of destiny.
In brief, 'tis signed and sealed that this Octavio
Is my good angel — and now no word more.
[*He is retiring.*

TERZKY.

This is my comfort — Max. remains our hostage.

ILLO.

And he shall never stir from here alive.

WALLENSTEIN (*stops and turns himself round*).

Are ye not like the women, who forever
Only recur to their first word, although
One had been talking reason by the hour!
Know, that the human being's thoughts and deeds
Are not like ocean billows, blindly moved.
The inner world, his microcosmus, is
The deep shaft, out of which they spring eternally.
They grow by certain laws, like the tree's fruit —
No juggling chance can metamorphose them.
Have I the human kernel first examined?
Then I know, too, the future will and action.
[*Exeunt.*

Scene IV.

Chamber in the residence of Piccolomini: Octavio Piccolomini (*attired for travelling*), *an* Adjutant.

OCTAVIO.

Is the detachment here?

ADJUTANT.

It waits below.

OCTAVIO.

And are the soldiers trusty, adjutant?
Say, from what regiment hast thou chosen them?

ADJUTANT.

From Tiefenbach's.

OCTAVIO.

That regiment is loyal,
Keep them in silence in the inner court,
Unseen by all, and when the signal peals
Then close the doors, keep watch upon the house.
And all ye meet be instantly arrested. [*Exit* Adjutant.
I hope indeed I shall not need their service,
So certain feel I of my well-laid plans;
But when an empire's safety is at stake
'Twere better too much caution than too little.

Scene V.

A chamber in Piccolomini's *dwelling-house:* Octavio Piccolomini, Isolani, *entering.*

ISOLANI.

Here am I — well! who comes yet of the others?

OCTAVIO (*with an air of mystery*).

But, first, a word with you, Count Isolani.

ISOLANI (*assuming the same air of mystery*).

Will it explode, ha? Is the duke about
To make the attempt? In me, friend, you may place
Full confidence — nay, put me to the proof.

OCTAVIO.

That may happen.

ISOLANI.

Noble brother, I am
Not one of those men who in words are valiant,
And when it comes to action skulk away.
The duke has acted towards me as a friend:
God knows it is so; and I owe him all;
He may rely on my fidelity.

OCTAVIO.

That will be seen hereafter.

ISOLANI.

Be on your guard,
All think not as I think; and there are many
Who still hold with the court — yes, and they say
That these stolen signatures bind them to nothing.

OCTAVIO.

Indeed! Pray name to me the chiefs that think so;

ISOLANI.

Plague upon them! all the Germans think so
Esterhazy, Kaunitz, Deodati, too,
Insist upon obedience to the court.

OCTAVIO.

I am rejoiced to hear it.

ISOLANI.

You rejoice?

OCTAVIO.

That the emperor has yet such gallant servants,
And loving friends.

ISOLANI.

Nay, jeer not, I entreat you.
They are no such worthless fellows, I assure you.

OCTAVIO.

I am assured already. God forbid
That I should jest! In very serious earnest,
I am rejoiced to see an honest cause
So strong.

ISOLANI.

The devil! — what! — why, what means this?
Are you not, then —— For what, then, am I here?

OCTAVIO.

That you may make full declaration, whether
You will be called the friend or enemy
Of the emperor.

ISOLANI (*with an air of defiance*).

That declaration, friend,
I'll make to him in whom a right is placed
To put that question to me.

OCTAVIO.

Whether, count,
That right is mine, this paper may instruct you.

ISOLANI (*stammering*).

Why, — why — what! this is the emperor's hand and seal [*Reads.*
"Whereas the officers collectively
Throughout our army will obey the orders
Of the Lieutenant-General Piccolomini,
As from ourselves." — Hem! — Yes! so! — Yes! yes!
I — I give you joy, lieutenant-general!

OCTAVIO.

And you submit to the order?

ISOLANI.

I ——
But you have taken me so by surprise —
Time for reflection one must have ——

OCTAVIO.

Two minutes.

ISOLANI.

My God! but then the case is ——

OCTAVIO.

Plain and simple.
You must declare you, whether you determine
To act a treason 'gainst your lord and sovereign,

Or whether you will serve him faithfully.
Treason! My God! But who talks then of treason?

OCTAVIO.

That is the case. The prince-duke is a traitor —
Means to lead over to the enemy
The emperor's army. Now, count! brief and full -
Say, will you break your oath to the emperor?
Sell yourself to the enemy? Say, will you?

ISOLANI.

What mean you? I — I break my oath, d'ye say,
To his imperial majesty?
Did I say so! When, when have I said that?

OCTAVIO.

You have not said it yet — not yet. This instant
I wait to hear, count, whether you will say it.

ISOLANI.

Ay! that delights me now, that you yourself
Bear witness for me that I never said so.

OCTAVIO.

And you renounce the duke then?

ISOLANI.

If he's planning
Treason — why, treason breaks all bonds asunder.

OCTAVIO.

And are determined, too, to fight against him?

ISOLANI.

He has done me service — but if he's a villain,
Perdition seize him! All scores are rubbed off.

OCTAVIO.

I am rejoiced that you are so well disposed.
This night break off in the utmost secrecy
With all the light-armed troops — it must appear
As came the order from the duke himself.
At Frauenburg's the place of rendezvous;
There will Count Gallas give you further orders.

ISOLANI.

It shall be done. But you'll remember me
With the emperor — how well disposed you found me.

OCTAVIO.

I will not fail to mention it honorably.
[*Exit* ISOLANI. *A* SERVANT *enters.*
What, Colonel Butler! Show him up.

ISOLANI (*returning*).

Forgive me too my bearish ways, old father!
Lord God! how should I know, then, what a great
Person I had before me.

OCTAVIO.

No excuses!

ISOLANI.

I am a merry lad, and if at time
A rash word might escape me 'gainst the court
Amidst my wine, — you know no harm was meant.
[*Exit.*

OCTAVIO.

You need not be uneasy on that score.
That has succeeded. Fortune favor us
With all the others only but as much

SCENE VI.

OCTAVIO PICCOLOMINI, BUTLER.

BUTLER.

At your command, lieutenant-general.

OCTAVIO.

Welcome, as honored friend and visitor.

BUTLER.

You do me too much honor.

OCTAVIO (*after both have seated themselves*)

You have not
Returned the advances which I made you yesterday —

Misunderstood them as mere empty forms.
That wish proceeded from my heart — I was
In earnest with you — for 'tis now a time
In which the honest should unite most closely.

BUTLER.

'Tis only the like-minded can unite.

OCTAVIO.

True! and I name all honest men like-minded.
I never charge a man but with those acts
To which his character deliberately
Impels him; for alas! the violence
Of blind misunderstandings often thrusts
The very best of us from the right track.
You came through Frauenburg. Did the Count Gallas
Say nothing to you? Tell me. He's my friend

BUTLER.

His words were lost on me.

OCTAVIO.

It grieves me sorely
To hear it: for his counsel was most wise.
I had myself the like to offer.

BUTLER.

Spare
Yourself the trouble — me the embarrassment.
To have deserved so ill your good opinion.

OCTAVIO.

The time is precious — let us talk openly.
You know how matters stand here. Wallenstein
Meditates treason — I can tell you further,
He has committed treason; but few hours
Have past since he a covenant concluded
With the enemy. The messengers are now
Full on their way to Egra and to Prague.
To-morrow he intends to lead us over
To the enemy. But he deceives himself;
For prudence wakes — the emperor has still
Many and faithful friends here, and they stand

In closest union, mighty though unseen.
This manifesto sentences the duke —
Recalls the obedience of the army from him,
And summons all the loyal, all the honest,
To join and recognize in me their leader.
Choose — will you share with us an honest cause?
Or with the evil share an evil lot?

BUTLER (*rises*).

His lot is mine.

OCTAVIO.

Is that your last resolve?

BUTLER.

It is.

OCTAVIO.

Nay, but bethink you, Colonel Butler.
As yet you have time. Within my faithful breast
That rashly uttered word remains interred.
Recall it, Butler! choose a better party;
You have not chosen the right one.

BUTLER (*going*).

Any other
Commands for me, lieutenant-general?

OCTAVIO.

See your white hairs; recall that word!

BUTLER.

Farewell!

OCTAVIO.

What! Would you draw this good and gallant sword
In such a cause? Into a curse would you
Transform the gratitude which you have earned
By forty years' fidelity from Austria?

BUTLER (*laughing with bitterness*).

Gratitude from the House of Austria! [*He is going.*

OCTAVIO (*permits him to go as far as the door, then calls after him*).

Butler!

BUTLER.

What wish you?

OCTAVIO.

How was't with the count?

BUTLER.

Count? what?

OCTAVIO (*coldly*).

The title that you wished, I mean.

BUTLER (*starts in sudden passion*).

Hell and damnation!

OCTAVIO (*coldly*).

You petitioned for it —
And your petition was repelled — was it so?

BUTLER.

Your insolent scoff shall not go by unpunished.
Draw!

OCTAVIO.

Nay! your sword to its sheath! and tell me calmly
How all that happened. I will not refuse you
Your satisfaction afterwards. Calmly, Butler!

BUTLER.

Be the whole world acquainted with the weakness
For which I never can forgive myself,
Lieutenant-general! Yes; I have ambition.
Ne'er was I able to endure contempt.
It stung me to the quick that birth and title
Should have more weight than merit has in the army.
I would fain not be meaner than my equal,
So in an evil hour I let myself
Be tempted to that measure. It was folly!
But yet so hard a penance it deserved not.
It might have been refused; but wherefore barb
And venom the refusal with contempt?
Why dash to earth and crush with heaviest scorn
The gray-haired man, the faithful veteran?
Why to the baseness of his parentage
Refer him with such cruel roughness, only
Because he had a weak hour and forgot himself?
But nature gives a sting e'en to the worm
Which wanton power treads on in sport and insult.

OCTAVIO.

You must have been calumniated. Guess you
The enemy who did you this ill service?

BUTLER.

Be't who it will — a most low-hearted scoundrel!
Some vile court-minion must it be, some Spaniard;
Some young squire of some ancient family,
In whose light I may stand; some envious knave,
Stung to his soul by my fair self-earned honors!

OCTAVIO.

But tell me, did the duke approve that measure?

BUTLER.

Himself impelled me to it, used his interest
In my behalf with all the warmth of friendship.

OCTAVIO.

Ay! are you sure of that?

BUTLER.

I read the letter.

OCTAVIO.

And so did I — but the contents were different.
[BUTLER *is suddenly struck.*
By chance I'm in possession of that letter —
Can leave it to your own eyes to convince you.
[*He gives him the letter.*

BUTLER.

Ha. what is this?

OCTAVIO.

I fear me, Colonel Butler,
An infamous game have they been playing with you.
The duke, you say, impelled you to this measure?
Now, in this letter, talks he in contempt
Concerning you; counsels the minister
To give sound chastisement to your conceit,
For so he calls it.
[BUTLER *reads through the letter; his knees tremble, he seizes a chair, and sinks down in it.*
You have no enemy, no persecutor;

There's no one wishes ill to you. Ascribe
The insult you received to the duke only.
His aim is clear and palpable. He wished
To tear you from your emperor: he hoped
To gain from your revenge what he well knew
(What your long-tried fidelity convinced him)
He ne'er could dare expect from your calm reason.
A blind tool would he make you, in contempt
Use you, as means of most abandoned ends.
He has gained his point. Too well has he succeeded
In luring you away from that good path
On which you had been journeying forty years!

BUTLER (*his voice trembling*).

Can e'er the emperor's majesty forgive me?

OCTAVIO.

More than forgive you. He would fain compensate
For that affront, and most unmerited grievance
Sustained by a deserving gallant veteran.
From his free impulse he confirms the present,
Which the duke made you for a wicked purpose.
The regiment, which you now command, is yours.

[BUTLER *attempts to rise, sinks down again. He labors inwardly with violent emotions; tries to speak and cannot. At length he takes his sword from the belt, and offers it to* PICCOLOMINI.

OCTAVIO.

What wish you? Recollect yourself, friend.

BUTLER.

Take it.

OCTAVIO.

But to what purpose? Calm yourself.

BUTLER.

O take it!
I am no longer worthy of this sword.

OCTAVIO.

Receive it then anew, from my hands — and
Wear it with honor for the right cause ever.

BUTLER.

Perjure myself to such a gracious sovereign?

OCTAVIO.

You'll make amends. Quick! break off from the duke!

BUTLER.

Break off from him!

OCTAVIO.

What now? Bethink thyself.

BUTLER (*no longer governing his emotion*).

Only break off from him? He dies! he dies!

OCTAVIO.

Come after me to Frauenberg, where now
All who are loyal are assembling under
Counts Altringer and Gallas. Many others
I've brought to a remembrance of their duty:
This night be sure that you escape from Pilsen.

BUTLER (*strides up and down in excessive agitation, then steps up to* OCTAVIO *with resolved countenance*).

Count Piccolomini! dare that man speak
Of honor to you, who once broke his troth.

OCTAVIO.

He who repents so deeply of it dares.

BUTLER.

Then leave me here upon my word of honor!

OCTAVIO.

What's your design?

BUTLER.

Leave me and my regiment.

OCTAVIO.

I have full confidence in you. But tell me
What are you brooding?

BUTLER.

That the deed will tell you.
Ask me no more at present. Trust to me.

Ye may trust safely. By the living God,
Ye give him over, not to his good angel!
Farewell. [*Exit* BUTLER.

SERVANT (*enters with a billet*).

A stranger left it, and is gone.
The prince-duke's horses wait for you below.
[*Exit* SERVANT.

OCTAVIO (*reads*).

"Be sure, make haste! Your faithful Isolani."
— O that I had but left this town behind me.
To split upon a rock so near the haven!
Away! This is no longer a safe place
For me! Where can my son be tarrying!

SCENE VII.

OCTAVIO *and* MAX. PICCOLOMINI.

MAX. *enters almost in a state of derangement, from extreme agitation; his eyes roll wildly, his walk is unsteady, and he appears not to observe his father, who stands at a distance, and gazes at him with a countenance expressive of compassion. He paces with long strides through the chamber, then stands still again, and at last throws himself into a chair, staring vacantly at the object directly before him.*

OCTAVIO (*advances to him*).

I am going off, my son.
[*Receiving no answer, he takes his hand.*
My son, farewell.

MAX.

Farewell.

OCTAVIO.

Thou wilt soon follow me?

MAX.

I follow thee?
Thy way is crooked — it is not my way.
[OCTAVIO *drops his hand and starts back.*
Oh, hadst thou been but simple and sincere,

Ne'er had it come to this — all had stood otherwise.
He had not done that foul and horrible deed,
The virtuous had retained their influence over him:
He had not fallen into the snares of villains.
Wherefore so like a thief, and thief's accomplice
Didst creep behind him lurking for thy prey!
Oh, unblest falsehood! Mother of all evil!
Thou misery-making demon, it is thou
That sinkest us in perdition. Simple truth,
Sustainer of the world, had saved us all!
Father, I will not, I cannot excuse thee!
Wallenstein has deceived me — oh, most foully!
But thou has acted not much better.

OCTAVIO.

Son
My son, ah! I forgive thy agony!

MAX. (*rises and contemplates his father with looks of suspicion*).

Was't possible? hadst thou the heart, my father,
Hadst thou the heart to drive it to such lengths,
With cold premeditated purpose? Thou —
Hadst thou the heart to wish to see him guilty
Rather than saved? Thou risest by his fall.
Octavio, 'twill not please me.

OCTAVIO.

God in heaven!

MAX.

Oh, woe is me! sure I have changed my nature.
How comes suspicion here — in the free soul?
Hope, confidence, belief, are gone; for all
Lied to me, all that I e'er loved or honored.
No, no! not all! She — she yet lives for me,
And she is true, and open as the heavens!
Deceit is everywhere, hypocrisy,
Murder, and poisoning, treason, perjury:
The single holy spot is our love,
The only unprofaned in human nature.

OCTAVIO.

Max.! — we will go together. 'Twill be better.

MAX.

What? ere I've taken a last parting leave,
The very last — no, never!

OCTAVIO.

Spare thyself
The pang of necessary separation.
Come with me! Come, my son!
[*Attempts to take him with him.*

MAX.

No! as sure as God lives, no

OCTAVIO (*more urgently*).

Come with me, I command thee! I, thy father.

MAX.

Command me what is human. I stay here.

OCTAVIO.

Max.! in the emperor's name I bid thee come.

MAX.

No emperor has power to prescribe
Laws to the heart; and wouldst thou wish to rob me
Of the sole blessing which my fate has left me,
Her sympathy? Must then a cruel deed
Be done with cruelty? The unalterable
Shall I perform ignobly — steal away,
With stealthy coward flight forsake her? No!
She shall behold my suffering, my sore anguish,
Hear the complaints of the disparted soul,
And weep tears o'er me. Oh! the human race
Have steely souls — but she is as an angel.
From the black deadly madness of despair
Will she redeem my soul, and in soft words
Of comfort, plaining, loose this pang of death!

OCTAVIO.

Thou wilt not tear thyself away; thou canst not.
Oh, come, my son! I bid thee save thy virtue.

Do sell thyself to him, the infamous,
Do stamp this brand upon our noble house
Then shall the world behold the horrible c
And in unnatural combat shall the steel
Of the son trickle with the father's blood.

MAX.

Oh, hadst thou always better thought of n
Thou hadst then acted better. Curst susp
Unholy, miserable doubt! To him
Nothing on earth remains unwrenched an
Who has no faith.

OCTAVIO.

And if I trust thy hear
Will it be always in thy power to follow

MAX.

The heart's voice thou hast not o'erpower
Will Wallenstein be able to o'erpower it.

OCTAVIO.

O, Max.! I see thee never more again!

MAX.

Unworthy of thee wilt thou never see me.

OCTAVIO.

I go to Fraunberg — the Pappenheimers
I leave thee here, the Lothrings too; Tso
And Tiefenbach remain here to protect th

OCTAVIO.

Farewell, my son!

MAX.

Farewell!

OCTAVIO.

How! not one look
Of filial love? No grasp of the hand at parting?
It is a bloody war to which we are going,
And the event uncertain and in darkness.
So used we not to part — it was not so!
Is it then true? I have a son no longer?

[MAX. *falls into his arms, they hold each other for a long time in a speechless embrace, then go away at different sides.*

(*The curtain drops.*)

ACT III.

SCENE I.

A chamber in the house of the Duchess of Friedland.

COUNTESS TERZKY, THEKLA, LADY NEUBRUNN (*the two latter sit at the same table at work*).

COUNTESS (*watching them from the opposite side*).

So you have nothing to ask me — nothing?
I have been waiting for a word from you.
And could you then endure in all this time
Not once to speak his name?

[THEKLA *remaining silent the* COUNTESS *rises and advances to her.*

Why, how comes this?
Perhaps I am already grown superfluous,
And other ways exist, besides through me?
Confess it to me, Thekla: have you seen him

THEKLA.

To-day and yesterday I have not seen him.

COUNTESS.

And not heard from him, either? Come, be open.

THEKLA.

No syllable.

COUNTESS.

And still you are so calm?

THEKLA.

I am.

COUNTESS.

May it please you, leave us, Lady Neubrunn.
[*Exit* LADY NEUBRUNN.

SCENE II.

The COUNTESS, THEKLA.

COUNTESS.

It does not please me, princess, that he holds
Himself so still, exactly at this time.

THEKLA.

Exactly at this time?

COUNTESS.

He now knows all.
'Twere now the moment to declare himself.

THEKLA.

If I'm to understand you, speak less darkly.

COUNTESS.

'Twas for that purpose that I bade her leave us.
Thekla, you are no more a child. Your heart
Is no more in nonage: for you love,
And boldness dwells with love — that you have proved
Your nature moulds itself upon your father's
More than your mother's spirit. Therefore may you
Hear what were too much for her fortitude.

THEKLA.

Enough: no further preface, I entreat you.
At once, out with it! Be it what it may,
It is not possible that it should torture me
More than this introduction. What have you
To say to me? Tell me the whole, and briefly!

COUNTESS.

You'll not be frightened ——

THEKLA.

Name it, I entreat you.

COUNTESS.

It lies within your power to do your father
A weighty service ——

THEKLA.

Lies within my power.

COUNTESS.

Max. Piccolomini loves you. You can link him
Indissolubly to your father.

THEKLA.

I?
What need of me for that? And is he not
Already linked to him?

COUNTESS.

He was.

THEKLA.

And wherefore
Should he not be so now — not be so always?

COUNTESS.

He cleaves to the emperor too.

THEKLA.

Not more than duty
And honor may demand of him.

COUNTESS.

We ask
Proofs of his love, and not proofs of his honor.
Duty and honor!
Those are ambiguous words with many meanings.
You should interpret them for him: his love
Should be the sole definer of his honor.

THEKLA.

How?

How much he wished to lay aside the s

COUNTESS.

He must not lay the sword aside, we me
He must unsheath it in your father's cau

THEKLA.

He'll spend with gladness and alacrity
His life, his heart's blood in my father's
If shame or injury be intended him.

COUNTESS.

You will not understand me. Well, hes
Your father has fallen off from the emp
And is about to join the enemy
With the whole soldiery ——

THEKLA.

Alas, my mo

COUNTESS.

There needs a great example to draw on
The army after him. The Piccolomini
Possess the love and reverence of the tr
They govern all opinions, and wherever
They lead the way, none hesitate to foll
The son secures the father to our interes
You've much in your hands at this mom

THEKLA

The far-off future weighs upon her heart
With torture of anxiety; but is it
Unalterably, actually present,
She soon resigns herself, and bears it calmly.

THEKLA.

O my foreboding bosom! Even now,
E'en now 'tis here, that icy hand of horror!
And my young hope lies shuddering in its grasp;
I knew it well — no sooner had I entered,
An heavy ominous presentiment
Revealed to me that spirits of death were hovering
Over my happy fortune. But why, think I
First of myself? My mother! O my mother!

COUNTESS.

Calm yourself! Break not out in vain lamenting!
Preserve you for your father the firm friend,
And for yourself the lover, all will yet
Prove good and fortunate.

THEKLA.

Prove good! What good?
Must we not part; part ne'er to meet again?

COUNTESS.

He parts not from you! He cannot part from you.

THEKLA.

Alas, for his sore anguish! It will rend
His heart asunder.

COUNTESS.

If indeed he loves you.
His resolution will be speedily taken.

THEKLA.

His resolution will be speedily taken —
Oh, do not doubt of that! A resolution!
Does there remain one to be taken?

COUNTESS.

Hush!
Collect yourself! I hear your mother coming.

THEKLA.

How shall I bear to see her?

COUNTESS.

Collect yourself.

SCENE III.

To them enter the DUCHESS.

DUCHESS (*to the* COUNTESS).

Who was here, sister? I heard some one talking,
And passionately, too.

COUNTESS.

Nay! there was no one.

DUCHESS.

I am growing so timorous, every trifling noise
Scatters my spirits, and announces to me
The footstep of some messenger of evil.
And you can tell me, sister, what the event is?
Will he agree to do the emperor's pleasure,
And send the horse regiments to the cardinal?
Tell me, has he dismissed Von Questenberg
With a favorable answer?

COUNTESS.

No, he has not.

DUCHESS.

Alas! then all is lost! I see it coming,
The worst that can come! Yes, they will depose him;
The accursed business of the Regensburg diet
Will all be acted o'er again!

COUNTESS.

No! never!
Make your heart easy, sister, as to that.

[THEKLA, *in extreme agitation, throws herself upon her mother, and enfolds her in her arms, weeping.*

DUCHESS.

Yes, my poor child!
Thou too hast lost a most affectionate godmother

In the empress. Oh, that stern, unbending man!
In this unhappy marriage what have I
Not suffered, not endured? For even as if
I had been linked on to some wheel of fire
That restless, ceaseless, whirls impetuous onward,
I have passed a life of frights and horrors with him,
And ever to the brink of some abyss
With dizzy headlong violence he bears me.
Nay, do not weep, my child. Let not my sufferings
Presignify unhappiness to thee,
Nor blacken with their shade the fate that waits thee.
There lives no second Friedland; thou, my child,
Hast not to fear thy mother's destiny.

THEKLA.

Oh, let us supplicate him, dearest mother!
Quick! quick! here's no abiding-place for us.
Here every coming hour broods into life
Some new affrightful monster.

DUCHESS.

Thou wilt share
An easier, calmer lot, my child! We, too,
I and thy father, witnessed happy days.
Still think I with delight of those first years,
When he was making progress with glad effort,
When his ambition was a genial fire,
Not that consuming flame which now it is.
The emperor loved him, trusted him; and all
He undertook could not but be successful.
But since that ill-starred day at Regensburg,
Which plunged him headlong from his dignity,
A gloomy, uncompanionable spirit,
Unsteady and suspicious, has possessed him.
His quiet mind forsook him, and no longer
Did he yield up himself in joy and faith
To his old luck and individual power;
But thenceforth turned his heart and best affections
All to those cloudy sciences which never
Have yet made happy him who followed them.

COUNTESS.

You see it, sister! as your eyes permit you,
But surely this is not the conversation
To pass the time in which we are waiting for him.
You know he will be soon here. Would you have him
Find her in this condition?

DUCHESS.

Come, my child!
Come, wipe away thy tears, and show thy father
A cheerful countenance. See, the tie-knot here
Is off; this hair must not hang so dishevelled.
Come, dearest! dry thy tears up. They deform
Thy gentle eye. Well, now — what was I saying?
Yes, in good truth, this Piccolomini
Is a most noble and deserving gentleman.

COUNTESS.

That is he, sister!

THEKLA (*to the* COUNTESS, *with marks of great oppression of spirits*).

Aunt, you will excuse me? (*Is going*).

COUNTESS.

But, whither? See, your father comes!

THEKLA.

I cannot see him now.

COUNTESS.

Nay, but bethink you.

THEKLA.

Believe me, I cannot sustain his presence.

COUNTESS.

But he will miss you, will ask after you.

DUCHESS.

What, now? Why is she going?

COUNTESS.

She's not well.

DUCHESS (*anxiously*).

What ails, then, my beloved child?

[*Both follow the* PRINCESS, *and endeavor to detain her. During this* WALLENSTEIN *appears, engaged in conversation with* ILLO.

SCENE IV.

WALLENSTEIN, ILLO, COUNTESS, DUCHESS, THEKLA.

WALLENSTEIN.

All quiet in the camp?

ILLO.

It is all quiet.

WALLENSTEIN.

In a few hours may couriers come from Prague
With tidings that this capital is ours.
Then we may drop the mask, and to the troops
Assembled in this town make known the measure
And its result together. In such cases
Example does the whole. Whoever is foremost
Still leads the herd. An imitative creature
Is man. The troops at Prague conceive no other,
Than that the Pilsen army has gone through
The forms of homage to us; and in Pilsen
They shall swear fealty to us, because
The example has been given them by Prague.
Butler, you tell me, has declared himself?

ILLO.

At his own bidding, unsolicited,
He came to offer you himself and regiment.

WALLENSTEIN,

I find we must not give implicit credence
To every warning voice that makes itself
Be listened to in the heart. To hold us back,
Oft does the lying spirit counterfeit
The voice of truth and inward revelation,
Scattering false oracles. And thus have I

This honest man is he who reaches to me
The first pledge of my fortune.

ILLO.

And doul
That his example will win over to you
The best men in the army.

WALLENSTEIN.

Go and send
Isolani hither. Send him immediately.
He is under recent obligations to me:
With him will I commence the trial. Go.

WALLENSTEIN (*turns himself round to th*
Lo, there's the mother with the darling dau
For once we'll have an interval of rest —
Come! my heart yearns to live a cloudless l
In the beloved circle of my family.

COUNTESS.

'Tis long since we've been thus together, br

WALLENSTEIN (*to the* COUNTESS, *asi*
Can she sustain the news? Is she prepared

COUNTESS.

Not yet.

WALLENSTEIN.

Come here, my sweet girl! Sect

DUCHESS.

Where is thy lute, my daughter? Let thy father
Hear some small trial of thy skill.

THEKLA.

My mother
I ——

DUCHESS.

Trembling? Come, collect thyself. Go, cheer
Thy father.

THEKLA.

O my mother! I — I cannot.

COUNTESS.

How, what is that, niece?

THEKLA (*to the* COUNTESS).

O spare me — sing — now — in this sore anxiety,
Of the overburdened soul — to sing to him
Who is thrusting, even now, my mother headlong
Into her grave.

DUCHESS.

How, Thekla! Humorsome!
What! shall thy father have expressed a wish
In vain?

COUNTESS.

Here is the lute.

THEKLA.

My God! how can I ——

[*The orchestra plays. During the ritornello* THEKLA *expresses in her gestures and countenance the struggle of her feelings; and at the moment that she should begin to sing, contracts herself together, as one shuddering, throws the instrument down, and retires abruptly.*

DUCHESS.

My child! Oh, she is ill ——

WALLENSTEIN.

What ails the maiden?
Say, is she often so?

COUNTESS.

Since then herself
Has now betrayed it, I too must no longer
Conceal it.

WALLENSTEIN.

What?

COUNTESS.

She loves him!

WALLENSTEIN.

Loves him? Whom?

COUNTESS.

Max. does she love! Max. Piccolomini!
Has thou never noticed it? Nor yet my sister?

DUCHESS.

Was it this that lay so heavy on her heart?
God's blessing on thee, my sweet child! Thou needest
Never take shame upon thee for thy choice.

COUNTESS.

This journey, if 'twere not thy aim, ascribe it
To thine own self. Thou shouldst have chosen another
To have attended her.

WALLENSTEIN.

And does he know it?

COUNTESS.

Yes, and he hopes to win her!

WALLENSTEIN.

Hopes to win her!
Is the boy mad?

COUNTESS.

Well — hear it from themselves.

WALLENSTEIN.

He thinks to carry off Duke Friedland's daughter!
Ay? The thought pleases me.
The young man has no groveling spirit.

COUNTESS.

Since
Such and such constant favor you have shown him ——

WALLENSTEIN.

He chooses finally to be my heir.
And true it is, I love the youth; yea, honor him.
But must he therefore be my daughter's husband?
Is it daughters only? Is it only children
That we must show our favor by?

DUCHESS.

His noble disposition and his manners ——

WALLENSTEIN.

Win him my heart, but not my daughter.

DUCHESS.

Then
His rank, his ancestors ——

WALLENSTEIN.

Ancestors! What?
He is a subject, and my son-in-law
I will seek out upon the thrones of Europe.

DUCHESS.

O dearest Albrecht! Climb we not too high
Lest we should fall too low.

WALLENSTEIN.

What! have I paid
A price so heavy to ascend this eminence,
And jut out high above the common herd,
Only to close the mighty part I play
In life's great drama with a common kinsman?
Have I for this ——
[*Stops suddenly, repressing himself.*
She is the only thing
That will remain behind of me on earth;
And I will see a crown around her head,
Or die in the attempt to place it there.
I hazard all — all! and for this alone,

To lift her into greatness —
Yea, in this moment, in the which we are speaking —
[*He recollects himself.*
And I must now, like a soft-hearted father,
Couple together in good peasant fashion
The pair that chance to suit each other's liking —
And I must do it now, even now, when I
Am stretching out the wreath that is to twine
My full accomplished work — no! she is the jewel,
Which I have treasured long, my last, my noblest,
And 'tis my purpose not to let her from me
For less than a king's sceptre.

DUCHESS.

O my husband!
You're ever building, building to the clouds,
Still building higher, and still higher building,
And ne'er reflect, that the poor narrow basis
Cannot sustain the giddy tottering column.

WALLENSTEIN (*to the* COUNTESS).

Have you announced the place of residence
Which I have destined for her?

COUNTESS.

No! not yet,
Twere better you yourself disclosed it to her.

DUCHESS.

How? Do we not return to Carinthia then?

WALLENSTEIN.

No.

DUCHESS.

And to no other of your lands or seats?

WALLENSTEIN.

You would not be secure there.

DUCHESS.

Not secure
In the emperor's realms, beneath the emperor's
Protection?

WALLENSTEIN.

Friedland's wife may be permitted
No longer to hope that.

DUCHESS.

O God in heaven!
And have you brought it even to this!

WALLENSTEIN.

In Holland
You'll find protection.

DUCHESS

In a Lutheran country?
What? And you send us into Lutheran countries?

WALLENSTEIN.

Duke Franz of Lauenburg conducts you thither.

DUCHESS.

Duke Franz of Lauenburg?
The ally of Sweden, the emperor's enemy.

WALLENSTEIN.

The emperor's enemies are mine no longer.

DUCHESS (*casting a look of terror on the* DUKE *and the* COUNTESS).

Is it then true? It is. You are degraded:
Deposed from the command? O God in heaven!

COUNTESS (*aside to the* DUKE).

Leave her in this belief. Thou seest she cannot
Support the real truth.

SCENE V.

To them enter COUNT TERZKY.

COUNTESS.

Terzky!
What ails him? What an image of affright!
He looks as he had seen a ghost.

WALLENSTEIN.

What?

TERZKY.

They are off
The Jägers likewise — all the villages
In the whole round are empty.

WALLENSTEIN.

Isolan

TERZKY.

Him thou hast sent away. Yes, surely

WALLENSTEIN.

TERZKY.

No? Hast thou not sent him off? No
They are vanished, both of them.

Scene VI.

To them enter Illo.

ILLO.

Has Terzky told thee?

TERZKY.

He knows all.

WALLENSTEIN (*winks at them*).

Hush!

COUNTESS (*who has been watching them anxiously from the distance and now advances to them*).

Terzky! Heaven! What is it? What has happened?

WALLENSTEIN (*scarcely suppressing his emotions*).

Nothing! let us be gone!

TERZKY (*following him*).

Theresa, it is nothing.

COUNTESS (*holding him back*).

Nothing? Do I not see that all the life-blood
Has left your cheeks — look you not like a ghost?
That even my brother but affects a calmness?

PAGE (*enters*).

An aide-de-camp inquires for the Count Terzky.

[TERZKY *follows the* PAGE.

WALLENSTEIN.

Go, hear his business.

[*To* ILLO.

This could not have happened
So unsuspected without mutiny.
Who was on guard at the gates?

ILLO.

'Twas Tiefenbach.

WALLENSTEIN.

Let Tienfenbach leave guard without delay,
And Terzky's grenadiers relieve him.

ILLO (*is going*).

Stop!
Hast thou heard aught of Butler?

ILLO.

Him I met:
He will be here himself immediately.
Butler remains unshaken,

[ILLO *exit.* WALLENSTEIN *is following him.*

COUNTESS.

Let him not leave thee, sister! go, detain him!
There's some misfortune.

DUCHESS (*clinging to him*).

Gracious Heaven! What is it?

WALLENSTEIN.

Be tranquil! leave me, sister! dearest wife!
We are in camp, and this is naught unusual;
Here storm and sunshine follow one another
With rapid interchanges. These fierce spirits
Champ the curb angrily, and never yet
Did quiet bless the temples of the leader;
If I am to stay go you. The plaints of women
Ill suit the scene where men must act.

[*He is going:* TERZKY *returns.*

TERZKY.

Remain here. From this window must we see it.

WALLENSTEIN (*to the* COUNTESS).

Sister, retire!

COUNTESS.

No — never!

WALLENSTEIN.

'Tis my will.

TERZKY (*leads the* COUNTESS *aside, and drawing her attention to the* DUCHESS).

Theresa!

DUCHESS.

Sister, come! since he commands it.

SCENE VII.

WALLENSTEIN, TERZKY.

WALLENSTEIN (*stepping to the window*).

What now, then?

TERZKY.

There are strange movements among all the troops,
And no one knows the cause. Mysteriously,
With gloomy silentness, the several corps

Marshal themselves, each under its own banners;
Tiefenbach's corps make threatening movements; only
The Pappenheimers still remain aloof
In their own quarters and let no one enter.

WALLENSTEIN.

Does Piccolomini appear among them?

TERZKY.

We are seeking him: he is nowhere to be met with.

WALLENSTEIN.

What did the aide-de-camp deliver to you?

TERZKY.

My regiments had despatched him; yet once more
They swear fidelity to thee, and wait
The shout for onset, all prepared, and eager.

WALLENSTEIN.

But whence arose this larum in the camp?
It should have been kept secret from the army
Till fortune had decided for us at Prague.

TERZKY.

Oh, that thou hadst believed me! Yester-evening
Did we conjure thee not to let that skulker,
That fox, Octavio, pass the gates of Pilsen.
Thou gavest him thy own horses to flee from thee.

WALLENSTEIN.

The old tune still! Now, once for all, no more
Of this suspicion — it is doting folly.

TERZKY.

Thou didst confide in Isolani too;
And lo! he was the first that did desert thee.

WALLENSTEIN.

It was but yesterday I rescued him
From abject wretchedness. Let that go by;
I never reckoned yet on gratitude.
And wherein doth he wrong in going from me?

He follows still the god whom all his life
He has worshipped at the gaming-table. With
My fortune and my seeming destiny
He made the bond and broke it, not with me.
I am but the ship in which his hopes were stowed,
And with the which, well-pleased and confident,
He traversed the open sea; now he beholds it
In eminent jeopardy among the coast-rocks,
And hurries to preserve his wares. As light
As the free bird from the hospitable twig
Where it had nested he flies off from me:
No human tie is snapped betwixt us two.
Yea, he deserves to find himself deceived
Who seeks a heart in the unthinking man.
Like shadows on a stream, the forms of life
Impress their characters on the smooth forehead,
Naught sinks into the bosom's silent depth:
Quick sensibility of pain and pleasure
Moves the light fluids lightly; but no soul
Warmeth the inner frame.

TERZKY.

Yet, would I rather
Trust the smooth brow than that deep furrowed one.

Scene VIII.

Wallenstein, Terzky, Illo.

ILLO (*who enters agitated with rage*).

Treason and mutiny!

TERZKY.

And what further now?

ILLO.

Tiefenbach's soldiers, when I gave the orders.
To go off guard — mutinous villains!

TERZKY.

Well!

WALLENSTEIN.

What followed?

ILLO.

They refused obedience to them.

TERZKY.

Fire on them instantly! Give out the order.

WALLENSTEIN.

Gently! what cause did they assign?

ILLO.

No other,
They said, had right to issue orders but
Lieutenant-General Piccolomini.

WALLENSTEIN (*in a convulsion of agony*).

What? How is that?

ILLO.

He takes that office on him by commission,
Under sign-manual from the emperor.

TERZKY.

From the emperor — hearest thou, duke?

ILLO.

At his incitement
The generals made that stealthy flight —

TERZKY.

Duke, hearest thou?

ILLO.

Caraffa too, and Montecuculi,
Are missing, with six other generals,
All whom he had induced to follow him.
This plot he has long had in writing by him
From the emperor; but 'twas finally concluded,
With all the detail of the operation,
Some days ago with the Envoy Questenberg.

[WALLENSTEIN *sinks down into a chair and covers his face.*

TERZKY.

Oh, hadst thou but believed me!

Scene IX.

To them enter the Countess.

COUNTESS.

This suspense,
This horrid fear — I can no longer bear it.
For heaven's sake tell me what has taken place?

ILLO.

The regiments are falling off from us.

TERZKY.

Octavio Piccolomini is a traitor.

COUNTESS.

O my foreboding! [*Rushes out of the room.*

TERZKY.

Hadst thou but believed me!
Now seest thou how the stars have lied to thee.

WALLENSTEIN.

The stars lie not; but we have here a work
Wrought counter to the stars and destiny.
The science is still honest: this false heart
Forces a lie on the truth-telling heaven,
On a divine law divination rests;
Where nature deviates from that law, and stumbles
Out of her limits, there all science errs.
True I did not suspect! Were it superstition
Never by such suspicion to have affronted
The human form, oh, may the time ne'er come
In which I shame me of the infirmity.
The wildest savage drinks not with the victim,
Into whose breast he means to plunge the sword.
This, this, Octavio, was no hero's deed:
'Twas not thy prudence that did conquer mine;
A bad heart triumphed o'er an honest one.
No shield received the assassin stroke; thou plungest
Thy weapon on an unprotected breast —
Against such weapons I am but a child.

SCENE X.

To these enter BUTLER.

TERZKY (*meeting him*).

Oh, look there, Butler! Here we've still a friend!

WALLENSTEIN (*meets him with outspread arms and embraces him with warmth.*

Come to my heart, old comrade! Not the sun
Looks out upon us more revivingly,
In the earliest month of spring,
Than a friend's countenance in such an hour.

BUTLER.

My general; I come ——

WALLENSTEIN (*leaning on* BUTLER'S *shoulder*).

Knowest thou already
That old man has betrayed me to the emperor.
What sayest thou? Thirty years have we together
Lived out, and held out, sharing joy and hardship.
We have slept in one camp-bed, drank from one glass,
One morsel shared! I leaned myself on him,
As now I lean me on thy faithful shoulder,
And now in the very moment when, all love,
All confidence, my bosom beat to his
He sees and takes the advantage, stabs the knife
Slowly into my heart.

[*He hides his face on* BUTLER'S *breast.*

BUTLER.

Forget the false one.
What is your present purpose?

WALLENSTEIN.

Well remembered!
Courage, my soul! I am still rich in friends,
Still loved by destiny; for in the moment
That it unmasks the plotting hypocrite
It sends and proves to me one faithful heart.
Of the hypocrite no more! Think not his loss
Was that which struck the pang: Oh, no! his treason
Is that which strikes the pang! No more of him!

Dear to my heart, and honored were they both,
And the young man — yes — he did truly love me,
He — he — has not deceived me. But enough,
Enough of this — swift counsel now beseems us.
The courier, whom Count Kinsky sent from Prague,
I expect him every moment: and whatever
He may bring with him we must take good care
To keep it from the mutineers. Quick then!
Despatch some messenger you can rely on
To meet him, and conduct him to me.

[ILLO *is going.*

BUTLER (*detaining him*).

My general, whom expect you then?

WALLENSTEIN.

The courier
Who brings me word of the event at Prague.

BUTLER (*hesitating*).

Hem!

WALLENSTEIN.

And what now?

BUTLER.

You do not know it?

WALLENSTEIN.

Well?

BUTLER.

From what that larum in the camp arose?

WALLENSTEIN.

From what?

BUTLER.

That courier ——

WALLENSTEIN (*with eager expectation*).

Well?

BUTLER.

Is already here.

TERZKY *and* ILLO (*at the same time*).

Already here?

WALLENSTEIEN.

My courier?

BUTLER.

For some hours.

WALLENSTEIN.

And I not know it?

BUTLER.

The sentinels detain him
In custody.

ILLO (*stamping with his foot*).

Damnation!

BUTLER.

And his letter
Was broken open, and is circulated
Through the whole camp.

WALLENSTEIN.

You know what it contains?

BUTLER.

Question me not!

TERZKY.

Illo! alas for us.

WALLENSTEIN.

Hide nothing from me — I can bear the worst.
Prague then is lost. It is. Confess it freely.

BUTLER.

Yes! Prague is lost. And all the several regiments
At Budweiss, Tabor, Braunau, Königingratz,
At Brunn, and Znaym, have forsaken you,
And taken the oaths of fealty anew
To the emperor. Yourself, with Kinsky, Terzky,
And Illo have been sentenced.

[TERZKY *and* ILLO *express alarm and fury.* WALLENSTEIN *remains firm and collected.*

WALLENSTEIN.

'Tis decided!
'Tis well! I have received a sudden cure

From all the pangs of doubt: with steady stream
Once more my life-blood flows! My soul's secure!
In the night only Friedland stars can beam.
Lingering irresolute, with fitful fears
I drew the sword—'twas with an inward strife,
While yet the choice was mine. The murderous knife
Is lifted for my heart! Doubt disappears!
I fight now for my head and for my life.
[*Exit* WALLENSTEIN; *the others follow him.*

SCENE XI.

COUNTESS TERZKY (*enters from a side room*).

I can endure no longer. No!
[*Looks around her.*
Where are they!
No one is here. They leave me all alone,
Alone in this sore anguish of suspense.
And I must wear the outward show of calmness
Before my sister, and shut in within me
The pangs and agonies of my crowded bosom.
It is not to be borne. If all should fail;
If—if he must go over to the Swedes,
An empty-handed fugitive, and not
As an ally, a covenanted equal,
A proud commander with his army following,
If we must wander on from land to land,
Like the Count Palatine, of fallen greatness
An ignominious monument. But no!
That day I will not see! And could himself
Endure to sink so low, I would not bear
To see him so low sunken.

SCENE XII.

COUNTESS, DUCHESS, THEKLA.

THEKLA (*endeavoring to hold back the* DUCHESS)

Dear mother, do stay here!

DUCHESS.

No! Here is yet
Some frightful mystery that is hidden from me.

Why does my sister shun me? Don't I see her
Full of suspense and anguish roam about
From room to room? Art thou not full of terror?
And what import these silent nods and gestures
Which stealthwise thou exchangest with her?

THEKLA.

Nothing:
Nothing, dear mother!

DUCHESS (*to the* COUNTESS).

Sister, I will know.

COUNTESS.

What boots it now to hide it from her? Sooner
Or later she must learn to hear and bear it.
'Tis not the time now to indulge infirmity;
Courage beseems us now, a heart collect,
And exercise and previous discipline
Of fortitude. One word, and over with it!
Sister, you are deluded. You believe
The duke has been deposed — the duke is not
Deposed — he is ——

THEKLA (*going to the* COUNTESS),

What? do you wish to kill her?

COUNTESS.

The duke is ——

THEKLA (*throwing her arms round her mother*).

Oh, stand firm! stand firm, my mother!

COUNTESS.

Revolted is the duke; he is preparing
To join the enemy; the army leave him,
And all has failed.

SCENE XIII.

A spacious room in the Duke of Friedland's palace.

WALLENSTEIN (*in armor*).

Thou hast gained thy point, Octavio! Once more am I
Almost as friendless as at Regensburg.
There I had nothing left me but myself;
But what one man can do you have now experience.

The twigs have you hewed off, and here I stand
A leafless trunk. But in the sap within
Lives the creating power, and a new world
May sprout forth from it. Once already have I
Proved myself worth an army to you — I alone!
Before the Swedish strength your troops had melted;
Beside the Lech sank Tilly, your last hope;
Into Bavaria, like a winter torrent,
Did that Gustavus pour, and at Vienna
In his own palace did the emperor tremble.
Soldiers were scarce, for still the multitude
Follow the luck: all eyes were turned on me,
Their helper in distress; the emperor's pride
Bowed itself down before the man he had injured.
'Twas I must rise, and with creative word
Assemble forces in the desolate camps.
I did it. Like a god of war my name
Went through the world. The drum was beat; and, lo
The plough, the workshop is forsaken, all
Swarm to the old familiar long-loved banners;
And as the wood-choir rich in melody
Assemble quick around the bird of wonder,
When first his throat swells with his magic song,
So did the warlike youth of Germany
Crowd in around the image of my eagle.
I feel myself the being that I was.
It is the soul that builds itself a body,
And Friedland's camp will not remain unfilled.
Lead then your thousands out to meet me — true!
They are accustomed under me to conquer,
But not against me. If the head and limbs
Separate from each other, 'twill be soon
Made manifest in which the soul abode.

(ILLO *and* TERZKY *enter.*)

Courage, friends! courage! we are still unvanquished;
I feel my footing firm; five regiments, Terzky,
Are still our own, and Butler's gallant troops;
And an host of sixteen thousand Swedes to-morrow.
I was not stronger when, nine years ago,
I marched forth, with glad heart and high of hope,
To conquer Germany for the emperor.

SCENE XIV.

WALLENSTEIN, ILLO, TERZKY.

(*To them enter* NEUMANN, *who leads* TERZKY *aside, and talks with him.*)

TERZKY.

What do they want?

WALLENSTEIN.

What now?

TERZKY.

Ten cuirassiers
From Pappenheim request leave to address you
In the name of the regiment.

WALLENSTEIN (*hastily to* NEUMANN).

Let them enter.
[*Exit* NEUMANN.
This
May end in something. Mark you. They are still
Doubtful, and may be won.

SCENE XV.

WALLENSTEIN, TERZKY, ILLO, *ten* CUIRASSIERS (*led by an* ANSPESSADE*, *march up and arrange themselves, after the word of command, in one front before the* DUKE, *and make their obeisance. He takes his hat off, and immediately covers himself again*).

ANSPESSADE.

Halt! Front! Present!

WALLENSTEIN (*after he has run through them with his eye, to the* ANSPESSADE).

I know thee well. Thou art out of Brüggen in Flanders:
Thy name is Mercy.

ANSPESSADE.

Henry Mercy.

* Anspessade, in German, Gefreiter, a soldier inferior to a corporal, but above the sentinels. The German name implies that he is exempt from mounting guard.

WALLENSTEIN.

Thou were cut off on the march, surrounded by the Hessians, and didst fight thy way with an hundred and eighty men through their thousand.

ANSPESSADE.

'Twas even so, general!

WALLENSTEIN.

What reward hadst thou for this gallant exploit?

ANSPESSADE.

That which I asked for: the honor to serve in this corps.

WALLENSTEIN (*turning to a second*).

Thou wert among the volunteers that seized and made booty of the Swedish battery at Altenburg.

SECOND CUIRASSIER.

Yes, general!

WALLENSTEIN.

I forget no one with whom I have exchanged words. (*A pause.*) Who sends you?

ANSPESSADE.

Your noble regiment, the cuirassiers of Piccolomini.

WALLENSTEIN.

Why does not your colonel deliver in your request according to the custom of service?

ANSPESSADE.

Because we would first know whom we serve.

WALLENSTEIN.

Begin your address.

ANSPESSADE (*giving the word of command*).

Shoulder your arms!

WALLENSTEIN (*turning to a third*).

Thy name is Risbeck; Cologne is thy birthplace.

THIRD CUIRASSIER.

Risbeck of Cologne.

WALLENSTEIN.

It was thou that broughtest in the Swedish colonel Dübald, prisoner, in the camp at Nüremberg.

THIRD CUIRASSIER.

It was not I, general.

WALLENSTEIN.

Perfectly right! It was thy elder brother: thou hadst a younger brother, too: where did he stay?

THIRD CUIRASSIER.

He is stationed at Olmütz, with the imperial army.

WALLENSTEIN (*to the* ANSPESSADE).

Now then — begin.

ANSPESSADE.

There came to hand a letter from the emperor
Commanding us ——

WALLENSTEIN (*interrupting him*).

Who chose you?

ANSPESSADE.

Every company
Drew its own man by lot.

WALLENSTEIN.

Now! to the business.

ANSPESSADE.

There came to hand a letter from the emperor
Commanding us, collectively, from thee
All duties of obedience to withdraw,
Because thou wert an enemy and traitor.

WALLENSTEIN.

And what did you determine?

ANSPESSADE.

All our comrades
At Braunau, Budweiss, Prague, and Olmütz, have
Obeyed already; and the regiments here,
Tiefenbach and Toscano, instantly

For we have found thee still since
No mouth shall interpose itself be
The gallant general and the gallar

WALLENSTEI

Therein I recognize my Pappenh

ANSPESSADI

And this proposal makes thy regi
Is it thy purpose merely to prese
In thine own hands this military
Which so becomes thee, which th
Made over to thee by a covenant
Is it thy purpose merely to remai
Supreme commander of the Aust
We will stand by thee, general!
Thy honest rights against all opp
And should it chance, that all the
Turn from thee, by ourselves we
Thy faithful soldiers, and, as is o
Far rather let ourselves be cut to
Than suffer thee to fall. But if i
As the emperor's letter says, if it
That thou in traitorous wise wilt
To the enemy, which God in heav
Then we too will forsake thee, an
That letter ——

WALLENS

Ye think, and do not follow with the herd:
And therefore have I always shown you honor
Above all others, suffered you to reason;
Have treated you as free men, and my orders
Were but the echoes of your prior suffrage.

ANSPESSADE.

Most fair and noble has thy conduct been
To us, my general! With thy confidence
Thou has honored us, and shown us grace and favor
Beyond all other regiments; and thou seest
We follow not the common herd. We will
Stand by thee faithfully. Speak but one word—
Thy word shall satisfy us that it is not
A treason which thou meditatest — that
Thou meanest not to lead the army over
To the enemy; nor e'er betray thy country.

WALLENSTEIN.

Me, me are they betraying. The emperor
Hath sacrificed me to my enemies,
And I must fall, unless my gallant troops
Will rescue me. See! I confide in you.
And be your hearts my stronghold! At this breast
The aim is taken, at this hoary head.
This is your Spanish gratitude, this is our
Requital for that murderous fight at Lützen!
For this we threw the naked breast against
The halbert, made for this the frozen earth
Our bed, and the hard stone our pillow! never stream
Too rapid for us, nor wood too impervious;
With cheerful spirit we pursued that Mansfeldt
Through all the turns and windings of his flight;
Yea, our whole life was but one restless march:
And homeless, as the stirring wind, we travelled
O'er the war-wasted earth. And now, even now,
That we have well-nigh finished the hard toil,
The unthankful, the curse-laden toil of weapons,
With faithful indefatigable arm
Have rolled the heavy war-load up the hill,
Behold! this boy of the emperor's bears away
The honors of the peace, an easy prize!

With fame, shall end this war, tl
Thou leadest us out to the blood
Of death; thou and no other sh
Rejoicing, to the lovely plains of
Shalt share with us the fruits of

WALLENSTEIN

What! Think you then at lengtl
To enjoy the fruits of toil? Beli
Never, no never, will you see th
Of the contest! you and me, an
This war will swallow up! Wa
Is Austria's wish; and therefore
Endeavored after peace, therefor
For what cares Austria how long
Wears out the armies and lays w
She will but wax and grow amid
And still win new domains.

[*The* CUIRASSIERS *express agit*

Ye

A noble rage flash from your eye
Oh, that my spirit might possess
Daring as once it led you to the
Ye would stand by me with you
Protect me in my rights; and tl
But think not that you can accor
Your scanty number! to no pur

ANSPESSADE.

Tis then but mere appearances which thou
Dost put on with the Swede! Thou'lt not betray
The emperor? Wilt not turn us into Swedes?
This is the only thing which we desire
To learn from thee.

WALLENSTEIN.

What care I for the Swedes?
I hate them as I hate the pit of hell,
And under Providence I trust right soon
To chase them to their homes across their Baltic.
My cares are only for the whole: I have
A heart — it bleeds within me for the miseries
And piteous groanings of my fellow-Germans.
Ye are but common men, but yet ye think
With minds not common; ye appear to me
Worthy before all others, that I whisper thee
A little word or two in confidence!
See now! already for full fifteen years,
The war-torch has continued burning, yet
No rest, no pause of conflict. Swede and German,
Papist and Lutheran! neither will give way
To the other; every hand's against the other.
Each one is party and no one a judge.
Where shall this end? Where's he that will unravel
This tangle, ever tangling more and more
It must be cut asunder.
I feel that I am the man of destiny,
And trust, with your assistance, to accomplish it.

SCENE XVI.

To these enter BUTLER.

BUTLER (*passionately*).

General! this is not right!

WALLENSTEIN.

What is not right?

BUTLER.

It must needs injure us with all honest men.

WALLENSTEIN.

But what?

BUTLER.

It is an open proclamation
Of insurrection.

WALLENSTEIN.

Well, well — but what is it?

BUTLER.

Count Terzky's regiments tear the imperial eagle
From off his banners, and instead of it
Have reared aloft their arms.

ANSPESSADE (*abruptly to the* CUIRASSIERS).

Right about! March!

WALLENSTEIN.

Cursed be this counsel, and accursed who gave it!
[*To the* CUIRASSIERS, *who are retiring.*
Halt, children, halt! There's some mistake in this;
Hark! I will punish it severely. Stop!
They do not hear. (*To* ILLO). Go after them, assure them,
And bring them back to me, cost what it may.
[ILLO *hurries out.*
This hurls us headlong. Butler! Butler!
You are my evil genius, wherefore must you
Announce it in their presence? It was all
In a fair way. They were half won! those madmen
With their improvident over-readiness —
A cruel game is Fortune playing with me.
The zeal of friends it is that razes me,
And not the hate of enemies.

SCENE XVII.

To these enter the DUCHESS, *who rushes into the chamber*; THEKLA *and the* COUNTESS *follow her.*

DUCHESS.

O Albrecht!
What hast thou done?

WALLENSTEIN.

And now comes this beside.

COUNTESS.

Forgive me, brother! It was not in my power —
They know all.

DUCHESS.

What hast thou done

COUNTESS (*to* TERZKY).

Is there no hope? Is all lost utterly?

TERZKY.

All lost. No hope. Prague in the emperor's hands,
The soldiery have taken their oaths anew.

COUNTESS.

That lurking hypocrite, Octavio!
Count Max. is off too.

TERZKY.

Where can he be? He's
Gone over to the emperor with his father.

[THEKLA *rushes out into the arms of her mother, hiding her face in her bosom.*

DUCHESS (*enfolding her in her arms*).

Unhappy child! and more unhappy mother!

WALLENSTEIN (*aside to* TERZKY).

Quick! Let a carriage stand in readiness
In the court behind the palace. Scherfenberg,
Be their attendant; he is faithful to us.
To Egra he'll conduct them, and we follow.

[*To* ILLO, *who returns.*

Thou hast not brought them back?

ILLO.

Hear'st thou the uproar?
The whole corps of the Pappenheimers is
Drawn out: the younger Piccolomini,
Their colonel, they require: for they affirm,
That he is in the palace here, a prisoner;

And if thou dost not instantly deliver him,
They will find means to free him with the sword.
[*All stand amazed.*

TERZKY.

What shall we make of this?

WALLENSTEIN.

Said I not so?
O my prophetic heart! he is still here.
He has not betrayed me — he could not betray me.
I never doubted of it.

COUNTESS.

If he be
Still here, then all goes well; for I know what
[*Embracing* THEKLA.
Will keep him here forever.

TERZKY.

It can't be.
His father has betrayed us, is gone over
To the emperor — the son could not have ventured
To stay behind.

THEKLA (*her eye fixed on the door*).

There he is!

SCENE XVIII.

To these enter MAX. PICCOLOMINI.

MAX.

Yes, here he is! I can endure no longer
To creep on tiptoe round this house, and lurk
In ambush for a favorable moment:
This loitering, this suspense exceeds my powers.
[*Advancing to* THEKLA, *who has thrown herself into her mother's arms.*
Turn not thine eyes away. O look upon me!
Confess it freely before all. Fear no one.
Let who will hear that we both love each other.
Wherefore continue to conceal it? Secrecy
Is for the happy — misery, hopeless misery,

Needeth no veil! Beneath a thousand suns
It dares act openly.

[*He observes the* COUNTESS *looking on* THEKLA *with expressions of triumph.*

No, lady! No!
Expect not, hope it not. I am not come
To stay: to bid farewell, farewell forever.
For this I come! 'Tis over! I must leave thee!
Thekla, I must — must leave thee! Yet thy hatred
Let me not take with me. I pray thee, grant me
One look of sympathy, only one look.
Say that thou dost not hate me. Say it to me, Thekla!

[*Grasps her hand.*

O God! I cannot leave this spot — I cannot!
Cannot let go this hand. O tell me, Thekla!
That thou dost suffer with me, art convinced
That I cannot act otherwise.

[THEKLA, *avoiding his look, points with her hand to her father.* MAX. *turns round to the* DUKE, *whom he had not till then perceived.*

Thou here? It was not thou whom here I sought.
I trusted never more to have beheld thee,
My business is with her alone. Here will I
Receive a full acquittal from this heart;
For any other I am no more concerned.

WALLENSTEIN.

Think'st thou that, fool-like, I shall let thee go,
And act the mock-magnanimous with thee?
Thy father is become a villain to me;
I hold thee for his son, and nothing more:
Nor to no purpose shalt thou have been given
Into my power. Think not, that I will honor
That ancient love, which so remorselessly
He mangled. They are now passed by, those hours
Of friendship and forgiveness. Hate and vengeance
Succeed — 'tis now their turn — I too can throw
All feelings of the man aside — can prove
Myself as much a monster as thy father!

MAX. (*calmly*).

Thou wilt proceed with me as thou hast power.
Thou knowest I neither brave nor fear thy rage.
What has detained me here, that too thou knowest.
[*Taking* THEKLA *by the hand.*
See, duke! All — all would I have owed to thee,
Would have received from thy paternal hand
The lot of blessed spirits. This hast thou
Laid waste forever — that concerns not thee.
Indifferent thou tramplest in the dust
Their happiness who most are thine. The god
Whom thou dost serve is no benignant deity.
Like as the blind, irreconcilable,
Fierce element, incapable of compact,
Thy heart's wild impulse only dost thou follow.*

* I have here ventured to omit a considerable number of lines. I fear that I should not have done amiss had I taken this liberty more frequently. It is, however, incumbent on me to give the original, with a literal translation.

"Weh denen, die auf Dich vertraun, an Dich
Die sichre Hütte ihres Glückes lehnen,
Gelockt von deiner geistlichen Gestalt.
Schnell unverhofft, bei nächtlich stiller Weile
Gährts in dem tückschen Feuerschlunde, ladet
Sich aus mit tobender Gewalt, und weg
Treibt über alle Pflanzungen der Menschen
Der wilde Strom in grausender Zerstörung.

WALLENSTEIN.

"Du schilderst deines Vaters Herz. Wie Du's
Beschreibst, so ist's in seinem Eingeweide,
In dieser schwarzen Heuchlers Brust gestaltet.
Oh, mich hat Höllenkunst getäuscht! Mir sandte
Der Abgrund den verfleckteste der Geister,
Den Lügenkundigsten herauf, und stellt' ihn
Als Freund an meiner Seite. Wer vermag
Der Hölle Macht zu widerstehn! Ich zog
Den Basilisken auf an meinem Busen,
Mit meinem Herzblut nährt ich ihn, er sog
Sich schwelgend voll an meiner Liebe Brüsten,
Ich hatte nimmer Arges gegen ihn,
Weit offen liess ich des Gedankens Thore,
Und warf die Schlüssel weiser Vorsicht weg,
Am Sternenhimmel," etc.

LITERAL TRANSLATION.

"Alas! for those who place their confidence on thee, against thee lean the secure hut of their fortune, allured by thy hospitable form. Suddenly, unexpectedly, in a moment still as night, there is a fermentation in the treacherous gulf of fire; it discharges itself with raging force, and away over all the plantations of men drives the wild stream in frightful devastation. WALLENSTEIN. — Thou art portraying thy father's heart; as thou describest, even so is it shaped in his entrails, in this black hypocrite's breast. Oh, the art of hell has deceived me! The abyss sent up to me the most spotted of

WALLENSTEIN.

Thou art describing thy own father's heart.
The adder! Oh, the charms of hell o'erpowered me
He dwelt within me, to my inmost soul
Still to and fro he passed, suspected never.
On the wide ocean, in the starry heaven
Did mine eyes seek the enemy, whom I
In my heart's heart had folded! Had I been
To Ferdinand what Octavio was to me,
War had I ne'er denounced against him. No,
I never could have done it. The emperor was
My austere master only, not my friend.
There was already war 'twixt him and me
When he delivered the commander's staff
Into my hands; for there's a natural
Unceasing war 'twixt cunning and suspicion;
Peace exists only betwixt confidence
And faith. Who poisons confidence, he murders
The future generations.

MAX.

I will not
Defend my father. Woe is me, I cannot!
Hard deeds and luckless have taken place; one crime
Drags after it the other in close link.
But we are innocent: how have we fallen
Into this circle of mishap and guilt?
To whom have we been faithless? Wherefore must
The evil deeds and guilt reciprocal
Of our two fathers twine like serpents round us?
Why must our fathers'
Unconquerable hate rend us asunder,
Who love each other?

WALLENSTEIN.

Max., remain with me.
Go you not from me, Max.! Hark! I will tell thee —

the spirits, the most skilful in lies, and placed him as a friend by my side. Who may withstand the power of hell? I took the basilisk to my bosom, with my heart's blood I nourished him; he sucked himself glutfull at the breasts of my love. I never harbored evil towards him; wide open did I leave the door of my thoughts; I threw away the key of wise foresight. In the starry heaven, etc." We find a difficulty in believing this to have been written by Schiller.

How when at Prague, our winter quarters, thou
Wert brought into my tent a tender boy,
Not yet accustomed to the German winters;
Thy hand was frozen to the heavy colors;
Thou wouldst not let them go.
At that time did I take thee in my arms,
And with my mantle did I cover thee;
I was thy nurse, no woman could have been
A kinder to thee; I was not ashamed
To do for thee all little offices,
However strange to me; I tended thee
Till life returned; and when thine eyes first opened,
I had thee in my arms. Since then, when have
Altered my feelings toward thee? Many thousands
Have I made rich, presented them with lands;
Rewarded them with dignities and honors;
Thee have I loved: my heart, my self, I gave
To thee; They all were aliens: thou wert
Our child and inmate.* Max.! Thou canst not leave me;
It cannot be; I may not, will not think
That Max. can leave me.

MAX.

Oh, my God!

WALLENSTEIN

I have
Held and sustained thee from thy tottering childhood.
What holy bond is there of natural love,
What human tie that does not knit thee to me?
I love thee, Max.! What did thy father for thee,
Which I too have not done, to the height of duty?
Go hence, forsake me, serve thy emperor;
He will reward thee with a pretty chain
Of gold; with his ram's fleece will he reward thee;
For that the friend, the father of thy youth,

* This is a poor and inadequate translation of the affectionate simplicity of the original —

Sie alle waren Fremdlinge, Du warst
Das Kind des Hauses.

Indeed the whole speech is in the best style of Massinger. *O si sic omnia!*

For that the holiest feeling of humanity,
Was nothing worth to thee.

MAX.

O God! how can I
Do otherwise. Am I not forced to do it,
My oath — my duty — my honor ——

WALLENSTEIN.

How? Thy duty?
Duty to whom? Who art thou? Max.! bethink thee
What duties may'st thou have? If I am acting
A criminal part toward the emperor,
It is my crime, not thine. Dost thou belong
To thine own self? Art thou thine own commander?
Stand'st thou, like me, a freeman in the world,
That in thy actions thou shouldst plead free agency?
On me thou art planted, I am thy emperor;
To obey me, to belong to me, this is
Thy honor, this a law of nature to thee!
And if the planet on the which thou livest
And hast thy dwelling, from its orbit starts
It is not in thy choice, whether or no
Thou'lt follow it. Unfelt it whirls thee onward
Together with his ring, and all his moons.
With little guilt steppest thou into this contest;
Thee will the world not censure, it will praise thee,
For that thou held'st thy friend more worth to thee
Than names and influences more removed
For justice is the virtue of the ruler,
Affection and fidelity the subject's.
Not every one doth it beseem to question
The far-off high Arcturus. Most securely
Wilt thou pursue the nearest duty: let
The pilot fix his eye upon the pole-star.

Scene XIX.

To these enter Neumann.

WALLENSTEIN.

What now?

NEUMANN.

The Pappenheimers are dismounted,
And are advancing now on foot, determined
With sword in hand to storm the house, and free
The count, their colonel.

WALLENSTEIN (*to* TERZKY).

Have the cannon planted.
I will receive them with chain-shot.

[*Exit* TERZKY.

Prescribe to me with sword in hand! Go, Neumann!
'Tis my command that they retreat this moment,
And in their ranks in silence wait my pleasure.

[NEUMANN *exit*. ILLO *steps to the window*.

COUNTESS.

Let him go, I entreat thee, let him go.

ILLO (*at the window*).

Hell and perdition!

WALLENSTEIN.

What is it?

ILLO.

They scale the council-house, the roof's uncovered,
They level at this house the cannon —

MAX.

Madmen

ILLO.

They are making preparations now to fire on us.

DUCHESS *and* COUNTESS.

Merciful heaven!

MAX. (*to* WALLENSTEIN).

Let me go to them!

WALLENSTEIN.

Not a step!

MAX. (*pointing to* THEKLA *and the* DUCHESS).

But their life! Thine!

WALLENSTEIN.

What tidings bringest thou, Terzky?

SCENE XX.

To these TERZKY *returning*

TERZKY.

Message and greeting from our faithful regiments.
Their ardor may no longer be curbed in.
They entreat permission to commence the attack;
And if thou wouldst but give the word of onset
They could now charge the enemy in rear,
Into the city wedge them, and with ease
O'erpower them in the narrow streets.

ILLO.

Oh come
Let not their ardor cool. The soldiery
Of Butler's corps stand by us faithfully;
We are the greater number. Let us charge them
And finish here in Pilsen the revolt.

WALLENSTEIN.

What? shall this town become a field of slaughter,
And brother-killing discord, fire-eyed,
Be let loose through its streets to roam and rage?
Shall the decision be delivered over
To deaf remorseless rage, that hears no leader?
Here is not room for battle, only for butchery.
Well, let it be! I have long thought of it,
So let it burst then!

[*Turns to* MAX.

Well, how is it with thee?
Wilt thou attempt a heat with me. Away!
Thou art free to go. Oppose thyself to me,
Front against front, and lead them to the battle;
Thou'rt skilled in war, thou hast learned somewhat under me,
I need not be ashamed of my opponent,
And never hadst thou fairer opportunity
To pay me for thy schooling.

True to the emperor; and this p
Make good, or perish. More tha
Requires of me. I will not fight
Unless compelled; for though a
Thy head is holy to me still,
[*Two reports of cannon.* I
to the window.

WALLENSTEI

What's that?

TERZKY.

He falls.

WALLENSTEI

Falls!

ILLO.

Discharged the ordnance.

WALLENSTE

Up

ILLO.

Your messenger.

WALLENSTEIN (*sta*

Ha! Death

ILLO.

Not yet, my general!
Oh, hold him! hold him!

WALLENSTEIN.

Leave me ——

MAX.

Do it not;
Not yet! This rash and bloody deed has thrown them
Into a frenzy-fit — allow them time ——

WALLENSTEIN.

Away! too long already have I loitered.
They are emboldened to these outrages,
Beholding not my face. They shall behold
My countenance, shall hear my voice ——
Are they not my troops? Am I not their general,
And their long-feared commander! Let me see,
Whether indeed they do no longer know
That countenance which was their sun in battle!
From the balcony (mark!) I show myself
To these rebellious forces, and at once
Revolt is mounded, and the high-swollen current
Shrinks back into the old bed of obedience.

[*Exit* WALLENSTEIN; ILLO, TERZKY, *and* BUTLER *follow.*

SCENE XXI.

COUNTESS, DUCHESS, MAX., *and* THEKLA.

COUNTESS (*to the* DUCHESS).

Let them but see him — there is hope still, sister.

DUCHESS.

Hope! I have none!

MAX. (*who during the last scene has been standing at a distance, in a visible struggle of feelings advances*).

This can I not endure.
With most determined soul did I come hither;
My purposed action seemed unblamable
To my own conscience — and I must stand here

Like one abhorred, a hard, inhuman being:
Yea, loaded with the curse of all I love!
Must see all whom I love in this sore anguish,
Whom I with one word can make happy — O!
My heart revolts within me, and two voices
Make themselves audible within my bosom.
My soul's benighted; I no longer can
Distinguish the right track. Oh, well and truly
Didst thou say, father, I relied too much
On my own heart. My mind moves to and fro —
I know not what to do.

COUNTESS.

What! you know not?
Does not your own heart tell you? Oh! then I
Will tell it you. Your father is a traitor,
A frightful traitor to us — he has plotted
Against our general's life, has plunged us all
In misery — and you're his son! 'Tis yours
To make the amends. Make you the son's fidelity
Outweigh the father's treason, that the name
Of Piccolomini be not a proverb
Of infamy, a common form of cursing
To the posterity of Wallenstein.

MAX.

Where is that voice of truth which I dare follow!
It speaks no longer in my heart. We all
But utter what our passionate wishes dictate:
Oh that an angel would descend from heaven,
And scoop for me the right, the uncorrupted,
With a pure hand from the pure Fount of light.
[*His eyes glance on* THEKLA.
What other angel seek I? To this heart,
To this unerring heart, will I submit it;
Will ask thy love, which has the power to bless
The happy man alone, averted ever
From the disquieted and guilty — canst thou
Still love me, if I stay? Say that thou canst,
And I am the duke's ——

COUNTESS.

Think, niece ——

MAX.

Think nothing, Thekla!
Speak what thou feelest.

COUNTESS.

Think upon your father.

MAX.

I did not question thee, as Friedland's daughter.
Thee, the beloved and the unerring God
Within thy heart, I question. What's at stake?
Not whether diadem of royalty
Be to be won or not — that mightest thou think on.
Thy friend, and his soul's quiet are at stake:
The fortune of a thousand gallant men,
Who will all follow me; shall I forswear
My oath and duty to the emperor?
Say, shall I send into Octavio's camp
The parricidal ball? For when the ball
Has left its cannon, and is on its flight,
It is no longer a dead instrument!
It lives, a spirit passes into it;
The avenging furies seize possession of it,
And with sure malice, guide it the worst way.

THEKLA.

Oh! Max. ——

MAX. (*interrupting her*).

Nay, not precipitately either, Thekla.
I understand thee. To thy noble heart
The hardest duty might appear the highest.
The human, not the great part, would I act.
Even from my childhood to this present hour,
Think what the duke has done for me, how loved me
And think, too, how my father has repaid him.
Oh likewise the free lovely impulses
Of hospitality, the pious friend's
Faithful attachment, these, too, are a holy
Religion to the heart; and heavily
The shudderings of nature do avenge

Thy heart's first feeling ——

COUNTES

O

THEKLA

Is it possible, that that can be tl
The which thy tender heart did
Detect and seize with instant in
Fulfil thy duty! I should ever
Whate'er thou hast chosen, thou
Nobly and worthy of thee — bu
Shall ne'er disturb thy soul's fai

MAX.

Must leave thee, must part from

THEKLA

To thine own self, thou art faith
If our fates part, our hearts rem
A bloody hatred will divide fore
The houses Piccolomini and Fri
But we belong not to our houses
Quick! quick! and separate thy
From our unholy and unblessed
The curse of heaven lies upon o
'Tis dedicate to ruin. Even me
My father's guilt dwells with it

SCENE XXII.

To the above enter TERZKY.

COUNTESS (*meeting him*).

What meant that cry? What was it?

TERZKY.

All is lost!

COUNTESS.

What! they regarded not his countenance?

TERZKY.

'Twas all in vain.

DUCHESS.

They shouted *Vivat!*

TERZKY.

To the emperor.

COUNTESS.

The traitors

TERZKY.

Nay! he was not permitted
Even to address them. Soon as he began,
With deafening noise of warlike instruments
They drowned his words. But here he comes.

SCENE XXIII.

To these enter WALLENSTEIN, *accompanied by* ILLO *and* BUTLER.

WALLENSTEIN (*as he enters*).

Terzky!

TERZKY.

My general!

WALLENSTEIN.

Let our regiments hold themselves
In readiness to march; for we shall leave
Pilsen ere evening. [*Exit* TERZKY.
Butler!

BUTLER.

Yes, my general.

WALLENSTEIN.

The Governor of Egra is your friend
And countryman. Write him instantly
By a post courier. He must be advised,
That we are with him early on the morrow.
You follow us yourself, your regiment with you.

BUTLER.

It shall be done, my general!

WALLENSTEIN (*steps between* MAX. *and* THEKLA, *who have remained during this time in each other's arms*).

Part!

MAX.

O God!

[CUIRASSIERS *enter with drawn swords, and assemble in the background. At the same time there are heard from below some spirited passages out of the Pappenheim March, which seem to address* MAX.

WALLENSTEIN (*to the* CUIRASSIERS).

Here he is, he is at liberty: I keep him
No longer.

[*He turns away, and stands so that* MAX. *cannot pass by him nor approach the* PRINCESS.

MAX.

Thou know'st that I have not yet learnt to live
Without thee! I go forth into a desert,
Leaving my all behind me. Oh, do not turn
Thine eyes away from me! Oh, once more show me
Thy ever dear and honored countenance.

[MAX. *attempts to take his hand, but is repelled: he turns to the* COUNTESS.

Is there no eye that has a look of pity for me?

[*The* COUNTESS *turns away from him; he turns to the* DUCHESS.

My mother!

DUCHESS.

Go where duty calls you. Haply
The time may come when you may prove to us

A true friend, a good angel at the throne
Of the emperor.

MAX.

You give me hope; you would not
Suffer me wholly to despair. No! no!
Mine is a certain misery. Thanks to heaven!
That offers me a means of ending it.

[*The military music begins again. The stage fills more and more with armed men.* MAX. *sees* BUTLER *and addresses him.*

And you here, Colonel Butler — and will you
Not follow me? Well, then, remain more faithful
To your new lord, than you have proved yourself
To the emperor. Come, Butler! promise me.
Give me your hand upon it, that you'll be
The guardian of his life, its shield, its watchman.
He is attainted, and his princely head
Fair booty for each slave that trades in murder.
Now he doth need the faithful eye of friendship,
And those whom here I see ——

[*Casting suspicious looks on* ILLO *and* BUTLER.

ILLO.

Go — seek for traitors
In Gallas', in your father's quarters. Here
Is only one. Away! away! and free us
From his detested sight! Away!

[MAX. *attempts once more to approach* THEKLA. WALLENSTEIN *prevents him.* MAX. *stands irresolute, and in apparent anguish. In the meantime the stage fills more and more; and the horns sound from below louder and louder, and each time after a shorter interval.*

MAX.

Blow, blow! Oh, were it but the Swedish trumpets,
And all the naked swords, which I see here,
Were plunged into my breast! What purpose you?
You come to tear me from this place! Beware,
Ye drive me not to desperation. Do it not!
Ye may repent it!

[*The stage is entirely filled with armed men.*

[*He turns to the [illegible]*
and violent movement am
they surround him, and c
tumult. WALLENSTEIN
THEKLA *sinks into her mo*
tain falls. The music b
powering, and passes into
— the orchestra joins it —
the interval between the se

ACT IV.

SCENE I.

The BURGOMASTER'S *ho*

BUTLER (*just ar*

Here then he is by his destiny co
Here, Friedland! and no further
Thy meteor rose, traversed the sl
And here upon the borders of Bo
Must sink.
Thou hast forsworn
Blind man! yet trustest to thy a
Profaner of the altar and the hea
Against thy emperor and fellow-
Thou meanest to wage the war.
The evil spirit of revenge impel
Beware thou, that revenge destr

His princely head attainted! Oh, my God!
Tell me, general, I implore thee, tell me
In full, of all these sad events at Pilsen.

BUTLER.

You have received the letter which I sent you
By a post-courier?

GORDON.

Yes: and in obedience to it
Opened the stronghold to him without scruple,
For an imperial letter orders me
To follow your commands implicitly.
But yet forgive me! when even now I saw
The duke himself, my scruples recommenced.
For truly, not like an attainted man,
Into this town did Friedland make his entrance;
His wonted majesty beamed from his brow,
And calm, as in the days when all was right,
Did he receive from me the accounts of office.
'Tis said, that fallen pride learns condescension.
But sparing and with dignity the duke
Weighed every syllable of approbation,
As masters praise a servant who has done
His duty and no more.

BUTLER.

'Tis all precisely
As I related in my letter. Friedland
Has sold the army to the enemy,
And pledged himself to give up Prague and Egra.
On this report the regiments all forsook him,
The five excepted that belong to Terzky,
And which have followed him, as thou hast seen.
The sentence of attainder is passed on him,
And every loyal subject is required
To give him in to justice, dead or living.

GORDON.

A traitor to the emperor. Such a noble!
Of such high talents! What is human greatness?
I often said, this can't end happily.
His might, his greatness, and this obscure power

Are but a covered pitfall. The human being
May not be trusted to self-government.
The clear and written law, the deep-trod footmarks
Of ancient custom, are all necessary
To keep him in the road of faith and duty.
The authority intrusted to this man
Was unexampled and unnatural,
It placed him on a level with his emperor,
Till the proud soul unlearned submission. Woe is me!
I mourn for him! for where he fell, I deem
Might none stand firm. Alas! dear general,
We in our lucky mediocrity
Have ne'er experienced, cannot calculate,
What dangerous wishes such a height may breed
In the heart of such a man.

BUTLER.

Spare your laments
Till he need sympathy; for at this present
He is still mighty, and still formidable.
The Swedes advance to Egra by forced marches,
And quickly will the junction be accomplished.
This must not be! The duke must never leave
This stronghold on free footing; for I have
Pledged life and honor here to hold him prisoner,
And your assistance 'tis on which I calculate.

GORDON.

O that I had not lived to see this day!
From his hand I received this dignity,
He did himself intrust this stronghold to me,
Which I am now required to make his dungeon
We subalterns have no will of our own:
The free, the mighty man alone may listen
To the fair impulse of his human nature.
Ah! we are but the poor tools of the law,
Obedience the sole virtue we dare aim at!

BUTLER.

Nay! let it not afflict you, that your power
Is circumscribed. Much liberty, much error!
The narrow path of duty is securest.

GORDON.

And all then have deserted him you say?
He has built up the luck of many thousands
For kingly was his spirit: his full hand
Was ever open! Many a one from dust
[*With a sly glance on* BUTLER.
Hath he selected, from the very dust
Hath raised him into dignity and honor.
And yet no friend, not one friend hath he purchased,
Whose heart beats true to him in the evil hour.

BUTLER.

Here's one, I see

GORDON.

I have enjoyed from him
No grace or favor. I could almost doubt,
If ever in his greatness he once thought on
An old friend of his youth. For still my office
Kept me at distance from him; and when first
He to this citadel appointed me,
He was sincere and serious in his duty.
I do not then abuse his confidence,
If I preserve my fealty in that
Which to my fealty was first delivered.

BUTLER.

Say, then, will you fulfil the attainder on him,
And lend your aid to take him in arrest?

GORDON (*pauses, reflecting — then as in deep dejection*).

If it be so — if all be as you say —
If he've betrayed the emperor, his master,
Have sold the troops, have purposed to deliver
The strongholds of the country to the enemy —
Yea, truly! — there is no redemption for him!
Yet it is hard, that me the lot should destine
To be the instrument of his perdition;
For we were pages at the court of Bergau
At the same period; but I was the senior.

BUTLER.

I have heard so ——

GORDON.

'Tis full thirty years since then,
A youth who scarce had seen his twentieth year
Was Wallenstein, when he and I were friends:
Yet even then he had a daring soul:
His frame of mind was serious and severe
Beyond his years: his dreams were of great objects
He walked amidst us of a silent spirit,
Communing with himself; yet I have known him
Transported on a sudden into utterance
Of strange conceptions; kindling into splendor
His soul revealed itself, and he spake so
That we looked round perplexed upon each other,
Not knowing whether it were craziness,
Or whether it were a god that spoke in him.

BUTLER.

But was it where he fell two story high
From a window-ledge, on which he had fallen asleep
And rose up free from injury? From this day
(It is reported) he betrayed clear marks
Of a distempered fancy.

GORDON.

He became
Doubtless more self-enwrapped and melancholy;
He made himself a Catholic.* Marvellously
His marvellous preservation had transformed him.
Thenceforth he held himself for an exempted
And privileged being, and, as if he were
Incapable of dizziness or fall,
He ran along the unsteady rope of life.
But now our destinies drove us asunder;
He paced with rapid step the way of greatness,
Was count, and prince, duke-regent, and dictator,
And now is all, all this too little for him;
He stretches forth his hands for a king's crown,
And plunges in unfathomable ruin.

* It appears that the account of his conversion being caused by such a fall, and other stories of his juvenile character, are not well authenticated.

BUTLER.

No more, he comes.

SCENE III.

To these enter WALLENSTEIN, *in conversation with the* BURGOMASTER *of Egra.*

WALLENSTEIN.

You were at one time a free town. I see
Ye bear the half eagle in your city arms.
Why the half eagle only?

BURGOMASTER.

We were free,
But for these last two hundred years has Egra
Remained in pledge to the Bohemian crown;
Therefore we bear the half eagle, the other half
Being cancelled till the empire ransom us,
If ever that should be.

WALLENSTEIN.

Ye merit freedom.
Only be firm and dauntless. Lend your ears
To no designing whispering court-minions.
What may your imposts be?

BURGOMASTER.

So heavy that
We totter under them. The garrison
Lives at our costs.

WALLENSTEIN.

I will relieve you. Tell me,
There are some Protestants among you still?
[*The* BURGOMASTER *hesitates.*
Yes, yes; I know it. Many lie concealed
Within these walls. Confess now, you yourself——
[*Fixes his eye on him. The* BURGOMASTER *alarmed.*
Be not alarmed. I hate the Jesuits.
Could my will have determined it they had
Been long ago expelled the empire. Trust me—

Mass-book or Bible, 'tis all one to me.
Of that the world has had sufficient proof.
I built a church for the Reformed in Glogau
At my own instance. Hark ye, burgomaster!
What is your name?

BURGOMASTER.

Pachhalbel, may it please you.

WALLENSTEIN.

Hark ye! But let it go no further, what I now
Disclose to you in confidence.

[*Laying his hand on the* BURGOMASTER'S *shoulder with a certain solemnity.*

The times
Draw near to their fulfilment, burgomaster!
The high will fall, the low will be exalted.
Hark ye! But keep it to yourself! The end
Approaches of the Spanish double monarchy —
A new arrangement is at hand. You saw
The three moons that appeared at once in the heaven?

BURGOMASTER.

With wonder and affright!

WALLENSTEIN.

Whereof did two
Strangely transform themselves to bloody daggers,
And only one, the middle moon, remained
Steady and clear.

BURGOMASTER.

We applied it to the Turks.

WALLENSTEIN.

The Turks! That all? I tell you that two empires
Will set in blood, in the East and in the West,
And Lutherism alone remain.

[*Observing* GORDON *and* BUTLER.

I'faith,
'Twas a smart cannonading that we heard
This evening, as we journeyed hitherward:
'Twas on our left hand. Did ye hear it here?

GORDON.

Distinctly. The wind brought it from the south.

BUTLER.

It seemed to come from Weiden or from Neustadt.

WALLENSTEIN.

'Tis likely. That's the route the Swedes are taking.
How strong is the garrison?

GORDON.

Not quite two hundred
Competent men, the rest are invalids.

WALLENSTEIN.

Good! And how many in the vale of Jochim?

GORDON.

Two hundred arquebusiers have I sent thither
To fortify the posts against the Swedes.

WALLENSTEIN.

Good! I commend your foresight. At the works too
You have done somewhat?

GORDON.

Two additional batteries
I caused to be run up. They were needless;
The Rhinegrave presses hard upon us, general!

WALLENSTEIN.

You have been watchful in your emperor's service.
I am content with you, lieutenant-colonel.
[*To* BUTLER.
Release the outposts in the vale of Jochim,
With all the stations in the enemy's route.
[*To* GORDON.
Governor, in your faithful hands I leave
My wife, my daughter, and my sister. I
Shall make no stay here, and wait but the arrival
Of letters to take leave of you, together
With all the regiments,

SCENE IV.

To these enter COUNT TERZKY.

TERZKY.

Joy, general, joy! I bring you welcome tidings.

WALLENSTEIN.

And what may they be?

TERZKY.

There has been an engagement
At Neustadt; the Swedes gained the victory.

WALLENSTEIN.

From whence did you receive the intelligence?

TERZKY.

A countryman from Tirschenreut conveyed it.
Soon after sunrise did the fight begin!
A troop of the imperialists from Tachau
Had forced their way into the Swedish camp;
The cannonade continued full two hours;
There were left dead upon the field a thousand
Imperialists, together with their colonel;
Further than this he did not know.

WALLENSTEIN.

How came
Imperial troops at Neustadt? Altringer,
But yesterday, stood sixty miles from there.
Count Gallas' force collects at Frauenberg,
And have not the full complement. Is it possible
That Suys perchance had ventured so far onward?
It cannot be.

TERZKY.

We shall soon know the whole,
For here comes Illo, full of haste, and joyous.

SCENE V.

To these enter ILLO.

ILLO (*to* WALLENSTEIN).

A courier, duke! he wishes to speak with thee.

TERZKY (*eagerly*).

Does he bring confirmation of the victory?

WALLENSTEIN (*at the same time*).

What does he bring? Whence comes he?

ILLO.

From the Rhinegrave,
And what he brings I can announce to you
Beforehand. Seven leagues distant are the Swedes;
At Neustadt did Max. Piccolomini
Throw himself on them with the cavalry;
A murderous fight took place! o'erpowered by numbers
The Pappenheimers all, with Max. their leader,
[WALLENSTEIN *shudders and turns pale.*
Were left dead on the field.

WALLENSTEIN (*after a pause, in a low voice*).

Where is the messenger? Conduct me to him.
[WALLENSTEIN *is going, when* LADY NEUBRUNN *rushes into the room. Some servants follow her and run across the stage.*

NEUBRUNN.

Help! Help!

ILLO *and* TERZKY (*at the same time*).

What now?

NEUBRUNN.

The princess!

WALLENSTEIN *and* TERZKY.

Does she know it?

NEUBRUNN (*at the same time with them*).

She is dying!
[*Hurries off the stage, when* WALLENSTEIN *and* TERZKY *follow her.*

SCENE VI.

BUTLER *and* GORDON.

GORDON.

What's this?

You have [illegible]
Reporteth, that the Swedes are conquere
And marching hitherward.

GORDON.

Too well I he

BUTLER.

They are twelve regiments strong, and th
Close by us to protect the duke. We ha
Only my single regiment; and the garris
Is not two hundred strong.

GORDON.

'Tis even so.

BUTLER.

It is not possible with such small force
To hold in custody a man like him.

GORDON.

I grant it.

BUTLER.

Soon the numbers would dis
And liberate him.

GORDON.

It were to be feare

GORDON.

Butler! What?
Do I understand you? Gracious God! You could——

BUTLER.

He must not live.

GORDON.

And you can do the deed?

BUTLER.

Either you or I. This morning was his last.

GORDON.

You would assassinate him?

BUTLER.

'Tis my purpose.

GORDON.

Who leans with his whole confidence upon you!

BUTLER.

Such is his evil destiny!

GORDON.

Your general!
The sacred person of your general!

BUTLER.

My general he has been.

GORDON.

That 'tis only
An "has been" washes out no villany,
And without judgment passed.

BUTLER.

The execution
Is here instead of judgment.

GORDON.

This were murder,
Not justice. The most guilty should be heard.

BUTLER.

His guilt is clear, the emperor has passed judgment,
And we but execute his will.

GORDON.

We should not
Hurry to realize a bloody sentence.
A word may be recalled, a life never can be.

BUTLER.

Despatch in service pleases sovereigns.

GORDON.

No honest man's ambitious to press forward
To the hangman's service.

BUTLER.

And no brave man loses
His color at a daring enterprise.

GORDON.

A brave man hazards life, but not his conscience.

BUTLER.

What then? Shall he go forth anew to kindle
The unextinguishable flame of war?

GORDON.

Seize him, and hold him prisoner — do not kill him.

BUTLER.

Had not the emperor's army been defeated
I might have done so. But 'tis now passed by.

GORDON.

Oh, wherefore opened I the stronghold to him?

BUTLER.

His destiny, and not the place destroys him.

GORDON.

Upon these ramparts, as beseemed a soldier,
I had fallen, defending the emperor's citadel!

BUTLER.

Yes! and a thousand gallant men have perished!

GORDON.

Doing their duty — that adorns the man!
But murder's a black deed, and nature curses it.

BUTLER (*brings out a paper*).

Here is the manifesto which commands us
To gain possession of his person. See —
It is addressed to you as well as me.
Are you content to take the consequences,
If through our fault he escape to the enemy?

GORDON.

I? Gracious God!

BUTLER.

Take it on yourself.
Come of it what may, on you I lay it.

GORDON.

Oh, God in heaven!

BUTLER.

Can you advise aught else
Wherewith to execute the emperor's purpose?
Say if you can. For I desire his fall,
Not his destruction.

GORDON.

Merciful heaven! what must be
I see as clear as you. Yet still the heart
Within my bosom beats with other feelings!

BUTLER.

Mine is of harder stuff! Necessity
In her rough school hath steeled me. And this Illo,
And Terzky likewise, they must not survive him.

GORDON.

I feel no pang for these. Their own bad hearts
Impelled them, not the influence of the stars.
'Twas they who strewed the seeds of evil passions
In his calm breast, and with officious villany
Watered and nursed the poisonous plants. May they
Receive their earnests to the uttermost mite!

BUTLER.

And their death shall precede his!
We meant to have taken them alive this evening
Amid the merrymaking of a feast,

TERZKY.

Our luck is on the turn. To-morrow c
The Swedes — twelve thousand gallant
Then straightwise for Vienna. Cheeril
What! meet such news with such a mo

ILLO.

It lies with us at present to prescribe
Laws, and take vengeance on those wor
Those skulking cowards that deserted
One has already done his bitter penanc
The Piccolomini: be his the fate
Of all who wish us evil! This flies su
To the old man's heart; he has his wh
Fretted and toiled to raise his ancient h
From a count's title to the name of pri
And now must seek a grave for his onl

BUTLER.

'Twas pity, though! A youth of such
And gentle temperament! The duke
'Twas easily seen, how near it went to

ILLO.

Hark ye, old friend! That is the very
That never pleased me in our general
He ever gave the preference to the Ita
Yea, at this very moment, by my soul
He'd gladly see us all dead ten times c

Come! we will keep a merry carnival —
The night for once be day, and 'mid full glasses
Will we expect the Swedish avant-garde.

ILLO.

Yes, let us be of good cheer for to-day,
For there's hot work before us, friends! This sword
Shall have no rest till it is bathed to the hilt
In Austrian blood.

GORDON.

Shame, shame! what talk is this,
My lord field-marshal? Wherefore foam you so
Against your emperor?

BUTLER.

Hope not too much
From this first victory. Bethink you, sirs!
How rapidly the wheel of fortune turns;
The emperor still is formidably strong.

ILLO.

The emperor has soldiers, no commander,
For this King Ferdinand of Hungary
Is but a tyro. Gallas? He's no luck,
And was of old the ruiner of armies.
And then this viper, this Octavio,
Is excellent at stabbing in the back,
But ne'er meets Friedland in the open field.

TERZKY.

Trust me, my friends, it cannot but succeed;
Fortune, we know, can ne'er forsake the duke!
And only under Wallenstein can Austria
Be conqueror.

ILLO.

The duke will soon assemble
A mighty army: all come crowding, streaming
To banners, dedicate by destiny
To fame, and prosperous fortune. I behold
Old times come back again! he will become
Once more the mighty lord which he has been.
How will the fools, who've how deserted him,

In higher station: your [illegible]
Well merits it.

GORDON.

I am content alre
And wish to climb no higher; wher
The fall must needs be great. "Gr
depth."

ILLO.

Here you have no more business, fo
The Swedes will take possession of
Come, Terzky, it is supper-time. V
Nay, shall we have the town illumi
In honor of the Swede? And who
To do it is a Spaniard and a traitor

TERZKY.

Nay! nay! not that, it will not pl

ILLO.

What; we are masters here; no s
Avow himself imperial where we'v
Gordon! good-night, and for the l
A fair leave of the place. Send o
To make secure, the watchword m
At the stroke of ten deliver in the
To the duke himself, and then yo
Your wardship of the gates, for o
The Swedes will take possession o

Scene VIII.

Gordon *and* Butler.

GORDON (*looking after them*).

Unhappy men! How free from all foreboding!
They rush into the outspread net of murder
In the blind drunkenness of victory;
I have no pity for their fate. This Illo,
This overflowing and foolhardy villain,
That would fain bathe himself in his emperor's blood.

BUTLER.

Do as he ordered you. Send round patrols,
Take measures for the citadel's security;
When they are within I close the castle-gate
That nothing may transpire.

GORDON (*with earnest anxiety*).

Oh! haste not so!
Nay, stop; first tell me ——

BUTLER.

You have heard already,
To-morrow to the Swedes belongs. This night
Alone is ours. They make good expedition.
But we will make still greater. Fare you well.

GORDON.

Ah! your looks tell me nothing good. Nay, Butler,
I pray you promise me!

BUTLER.

The sun has set;
A fateful evening doth descend upon us,
And brings on their long night! Their evil stars
Deliver them unarmed into our hands,
And from their drunken dream of golden fortunes
The dagger at their hearts shall rouse them. Well,
The duke was ever a great calculator;
His fellow-men were figures on his chess-board
To move and station, as his game required.
Other men's honor, dignity, good name,
Did he shift like pawns, and made no conscience of

Still calculating, calculating still;
And yet at last his calculation proves
Erroneous; the whole game is lost; and low!
His own life will be found among the forfeits.

GORDON.

Oh, think not of his errors now! remember
His greatness, his munificence; think on all
The lovely features of his character,
On all the noble exploits of his life,
And let them, like an angel's arm, unseen,
Arrest the lifted sword.

BUTLER.

It is too late.
I suffer not myself to feel compassion,
Dark thoughts and bloody are my duty now.
[*Grasping* GORDON'S *hand.*
Gordon! 'tis not my hatred (I pretend not
To love the duke, and have no cause to love him).
Yet 'tis not now my hatred that impels me
To be his murderer. 'Tis his evil fate.
Hostile occurrences of many events
Control and subjugate me to the office.
In vain the human being meditates
Free action. He is but the wire-worked * puppet
Of the blind Power, which, out of its own choice,
Creates for him a dread necessity.
What too would it avail him if there were
A something pleading for him in my heart—
Still I must kill him.

GORDON.

If your heart speak to you
Follow its impulse. 'Tis the voice of God.
Think you your fortunes will grow prosperous
Bedewed with blood—his blood? Believe it not!

BUTLER.

You know not. Ask not! Wherefore should it happen
That the Swedes gained the victory, and hasten

* We doubt the propriety of putting so blasphemous a statement in the mouth of any character.—T.

With such forced marches hitherwards? Fain would I
Have given him to the emperor's mercy. Gordon!
I do not wish his blood, — but I must ransom
The honor of my word, — it lies in pledge —
And he must die, or ——
[*Passionately grasping* GORDON'S *hand.*
Listen, then, and know
I am dishonored if the duke escape us.

GORDON.

Oh! to save such a man ——

BUTLER.

What!

GORDON.

It is worth
A sacrifice. Come, friend! Be noble-minded!
Our own heart, and not other men's opinions,
Forms our true honor.

BUTLER (*with a cold and haughty air*).

He is a great lord,
This duke, and I am of but mean importance.
This is what you would say! Wherein concerns it
The world at large, you mean to hint to me,
Whether the man of low extraction keeps
Or blemishes his honor —
So that the man of princely rank be saved?
We all do stamp our value on ourselves:
The price we challenge for ourselves is given us.
There does not live on earth the man so stationed
That I despise myself compared with him.
Man is made great or little by his own will;
Because I am true to mine therefore he dies!

GORDON.

I am endeavoring to move a rock.
Thou hadst a mother, yet no human feelings.
I cannot hinder you, but may some God
Rescue him from you!

[*Exit* GORDON.

BUTLER * (*alone*).

I treasured my good name all my life long;
The duke has cheated me of life's best jewel,
So that I blush before this poor weak Gordon!
He prizes above all his fealty;
His conscious soul accuses him of nothing;
In opposition to his own soft heart
He subjugates himself to an iron duty.
Me in a weaker moment passion warped;
I stand beside him, and must feel myself
The worst man of the two. What though the world
Is ignorant of my purposed treason, yet
One man does know it, and can prove it, too —
High-minded Piccolomini!
There lives the man who can dishonor me!
This ignominy blood alone can cleanse!
Duke Friedland, thou or I. Into my own hands
Fortune delivers me. The dearest thing a man has is himself.

SCENE IX.

[*A gothic and gloomy apartment at the* DUCHESS FRIEDLAND'S. THEKLA *on a seat, pale, her eyes closed. The* DUCHESS *and* LADY NEUBRUNN *busied about her.* WALLENSTEIN *and the* COUNTESS *in conversation.*

WALLENSTEIN.

How knew she it so soon?

COUNTESS.

She seems to have
Foreboded some misfortune. The report
Of an engagement, in which had fallen
A colonel of the imperial army, frightened her.
I saw it instantly. She flew to meet
The Swedish courier, and with sudden questioning,
Soon wrested from him the disastrous secret.

* [This soliloquy, which, according to the former arrangement, constituted the whole of scene ix., and concluded the fourth act, is omitted in all the printed German editions. It seems probable that it existed in the original manuscript from which Mr. Coleridge translated. — ED.]

Too late we missed her, hastened after her,
We found her lying in his arms, all pale,
And in a swoon.

WALLENSTEIN.

A heavy, heavy blow!
And she so unprepared! Poor child! how is it?
[*Turning to the* DUCHESS.
Is she coming to herself?

DUCHESS.

Her eyes are opening

COUNTESS.

She lives!

THEKLA (*looking around her*).

Where am I?

WALLENSTEIN (*steps to her, raising her up in his arms*).

Come, cheerly, Thekla! be my own brave girl!
See, there's thy loving mother. Thou art in
Thy father's arms.

THEKLA (*standing up*).

Where is he? Is he gone?

DUCHESS.

Who gone, my daughter?

THEKLA.

He — the man who uttered
That word of misery.

DUCHESS.

Oh, think not of it!
My Thekla!

WALLENSTEIN.

Give her sorrow leave to talk!
Let her complain — mingle your tears with hers,
For she hath suffered a deep anguish; but
She'll rise superior to it, for my Thekla
Hath all her father's unsubdued heart.

THEKLA.

I am not ill. See, I have power to stand.
Why does my mother weep? Have I alarmed her?
It is gone by — I recollect myself.
[*She casts her eyes round the room, as seeking some one.*
Where is he? Please you, do not hide him from me.
You see I have strength enough: now I will hear him.

DUCHESS.

No; never shall this messenger of evil
Enter again into thy presence, Thekla!

THEKLA.

My father ——

WALLENSTEIN.

Dearest daughter!

THEKLA.

I'm not weak.
Shortly I shall be quite myself again.
You'll grant me one request?

WALLENSTEIN.

Name it, my daughter.

THEKLA.

Permit the stranger to be called to me,
And grant me leave, that by myself I may
Hear his report and question him.

DUCHESS.

No, never!

COUNTESS.

Tis not advisable — assent not to it.

WALLENSTEIN.

Hush! Wherefore wouldst thou speak with him, my daughter?

THEKLA.

Knowing the whole, I shall be more collected;
I will not be deceived. My mother wishes
Only to spare me. I will not be spared —
The worst is said already: I can hear
Nothing of deeper anguish!

COUNTESS *and* DUCHESS.

Do it not.

THEKLA.

The horror overpowered me by surprise,
My heart betrayed me in the stranger's presence:
He was a witness of my weakness, yea,
I sank into his arms; and that has shamed me.
I must replace myself in his esteem,
And I must speak with him, perforce, that he,
The stranger, may not think ungently of me.

WALLENSTEIN.

I see she is in the right, and am inclined
To grant her this request of hers. Go, call him.
[LADY NEUBRUNN *goes to call him.*

DUCHESS.

But I, thy mother, will be present ——

THEKLA.

'Twere
More pleasing to me if alone I saw him;
Trust me, I shall behave myself the more
Collectedly.

WALLENSTEIN.

Permit her her own will.
Leave her alone with him: for there are sorrows,
Where of necessity the soul must be
Its own support. A strong heart will rely
On its own strength alone. In her own bosom,
Not in her mother's arms, must she collect
The strength to rise superior to this blow.
It is mine own brave girl. I'll have her treated
Not as the woman, but the heroine. [*Going.*

COUNTESS (*detaining him*).

Where art thou going? I heard Terzky say
That 'tis thy purpose to depart from hence
To-morrow early, but to leave us here.

WALLENSTEIN.

Yes, ye stay here, placed under the protection
Of gallant men.

COUNTESS.

Oh, take us with you, brother.
Leave us not in this gloomy solitude.
To brood o'er anxious thoughts. The mists of doubt
Magnify evils to a shape of horror.

WALLENSTEIN.

Who speaks of evil? I entreat you, sister,
Use words of better omen.

COUNTESS.

Then take us with you.
Oh leave us not behind you in a place
That forces us to such sad omens. Heavy
And sick within me is my heart ——
These walls breathe on me like a churchyard vault.
I cannot tell you, brother, how this place
Doth go against my nature. Take us with you.
Come, sister, join you your entreaty! Niece,
Yours too. We all entreat you, take us with you!

WALLENSTEIN.

The place's evil omens will I change,
Making it that which shields and shelters for me
My best beloved.

LADY NEUBRUNN (*returning*).

The Swedish officer.

WALLENSTEIN.

Leave her alone with me.

DUCHESS (*to* THEKLA, *who starts and shivers*).

There — pale as death! Child, 'tis impossible
That thou shouldst speak with him. Follow thy mother.

THEKLA.

The Lady Neubrunn then may stay with me.

[*Exeunt* DUCHESS *and* COUNTESS.

Scene X.

Thekla, the Swedish Captain, Lady Neubrunn.

CAPTAIN (*respectfully approaching her*).

Princess — I must entreat your gentle pardon —
My inconsiderate rash speech. How could I ——

THEKLA (*with dignity*).

You have beheld me in my agony.
A most distressful accident occasioned
You from a stranger to become at once
My confidant.

CAPTAIN.

I fear you hate my presence,
For my tongue spake a melancholy word.

THEKLA.

The fault is mine. Myself did wrest it from you.
The horror which came o'er me interrupted
Your tale at its commencement. May it please you,
Continue it to the end.

CAPTAIN.

Princess, 'twill
Renew your anguish.

THEKLA.

I am firm, ——
I will be firm. Well — how began the engagement?

CAPTAIN.

We lay, expecting no attack, at Neustadt,
Intrenched but insecurely in our camp,
When towards evening rose a cloud of dust
From the wood thitherward; our vanguard fled
Into the camp, and sounded the alarm.
Scarce had we mounted ere the Pappenheimers,
Their horses at full speed, broke through the lines,
And leaped the trenches; but their heedless courage
Had borne them onward far before the others —
The infantry were still at distance, only

The Pappenheimers followed daringly
Their daring leader ——

[THEKLA *betrays agitation in her gestures. The officer pauses till she makes a sign to him to proceed.*

CAPTAIN.

Both in van and flanks
With our whole cavalry we now received them;
Back to the trenches drove them, where the foot
Stretched out a solid ridge of pikes to meet them.
They neither could advance, nor yet retreat;
And as they stood on every side wedged in,
The Rhinegrave to their leader called aloud,
Inviting a surrender; but their leader,
Young Piccolomini ——

[THEKLA, *as giddy, grasps a chair.*

Known by his plume,
And his long hair, gave signal for the trenches;
Himself leaped first: the regiment all plunged after.
His charger, by a halbert gored, reared up,
Flung him with violence off, and over him
The horses, now no longer to be curbed, ——

[THEKLA, *who has accompanied the last speech with all the marks of increasing agony, trembles through her whole frame and is falling. The* LADY NEUBRUNN *runs to her, and receives her in her arms.*

NEUBRUNN.

My dearest lady ——

CAPTAIN.

I retire.

THEKLA.

'Tis over.
Proceed to the conclusion.

CAPTAIN.

Wild despair
Inspired the troops with frenzy when they saw
Their leader perish; every thought of rescue
Was spurned; they fought like wounded tigers; their
Frantic resistance roused our soldiery;

A murderous fight took place, nor was the contest
Finished before their last man fell.

THEKLA (*faltering*).

And where —
Where is — you have not told me all.

CAPTAIN (*after a pause*).

This morning
We buried him. Twelve youths of noblest birth
Did bear him to interment; the whole army
Followed the bier. A laurel decked his coffin;
The sword of the deceased was placed upon it,
In mark of honor by the Rhinegrave's self,
Nor tears were wanting; for there are among us
Many, who had themselves experienced
The greatness of his mind and gentle manners;
All were affected at his fate. The Rhinegrave
Would willingly have saved him; but himself
Made vain the attempt — 'tis said he wished to die.

NEUBRUNN (*to* THEKLA, *who has hidden her countenance*).

Look up, my dearest lady ——

THEKLA.

Where is his grave?

CAPTAIN.

At Neustadt, lady; in a cloister church
Are his remains deposited, until
We can receive directions from his father.

THEKLA.

What is the cloister's name?

CAPTAIN.

Saint Catherine's.

THEKLA.

And how far is it thither?

CAPTAIN.

Near twelve leagues.

THEKLA.

And which the way?

CAPTAIN.

You go by Tirschenreut
And Falkenberg, through our advanced posts.

THEKLA

Who
Is their commander?

CAPTAIN.

Colonel Seckendorf.

[THEKLA *steps to the table, and takes a ring from a casket.*

THEKLA.

You have beheld me in my agony,
And shown a feeling heart. Please you, accept
[*Giving him the ring.*
A small memorial of this hour. Now go!

CAPTAIN (*confusedly*).

Princess ——

[THEKLA *silently makes signs to him to go, and turns from him. The captain lingers, and is about to speak.* LADY NEUBRUNN *repeats the signal, and he retires.*

SCENE XI.

THEKLA, LADY NEUBRUNN.

THEKLA (*falls on* LADY NEUBRUNN'S *neck*).

Now gentle Neubrunn, show me the affection
Which thou hast ever promised — prove thyself
My own true friend and faithful fellow-pilgrim.
This night we must away!

NEUBRUNN.

Away! and whither?

THEKLA.

Whither! There is but one place in the world.
Thither, where he lies buried! To his coffin!

NEUBRUNN.

What would you do there?

THEKLA.

What do there?
That wouldst thou not have asked, hadst thou e'er loved.
There, that is all that still remains of him!
That single spot is the whole earth to me.

NEUBRUNN.

That place of death ——

THEKLA.

Is now the only place
Where life yet dwells for me: detain me not!
Come and make preparations; let us think
Of means to fly from hence.

NEUBRUNN.

Your father's rage ——

THEKLA.

That time is past ——
And now I fear no human being's rage.

NEUBRUNN.

The sentence of the world! The tongue of calumny!

THEKLA.

Whom am I seeking? Him who is no more.
Am I then hastening to the arms —— O God!
I haste but to the grave of the beloved.

NEUBRUNN.

And we alone, two helpless, feeble women?

THEKLA.

We will take weapons: my arm shall protect thee.

NEUBRUNN.

In the dark night-time?

THEKLA.

Darkness will conceal us.

NEUBRUNN.

This rough tempestuous night ——

THEKLA.

Had he a soft bed
Under the hoofs of his war-horses?

NEUBRUNN.

Heaven!
And then the many posts of the enemy!

THEKLA.

They are human beings. Misery travels free
Through the whole earth.

NEUBRUNN.

The journey's weary length——

THEKLA.

The pilgrim, travelling to a distant shrine
Of hope and healing doth not count the leagues.

NEUBRUNN.

How can we pass the gates?

THEKLA.

Gold opens them.
Go, do but go.

NEUBRUNN.

Should we be recognized——

THEKLA.

In a despairing woman, a poor fugitive,
Will no one seek the daughter of Duke Friedland.

NEUBRUNN.

And where procure we horses for our flight?

THEKLA.

My equerry procures them. Go and fetch him.

NEUBRUNN.

Dares he, without the knowledge of his lord?

THEKLA.

He will. Go, only go. Delay no longer.

NEUBRUNN.

Dear lady! and your mother?

THEKLA.

Oh! my mother!

NEUBRUNN.

So much as she has suffered too already;
Your tender mother. Ah! how ill prepared
For this last anguish!

THEKLA.

Woe is me my mother!
[*Pauses.*
Go instantly.

NEUBRUNN.

But think what you are doing!

THEKLA.

What can be thought, already has been thought.

NEUBRUNN.

And being there, what purpose you to do?

THEKLA.

There a divinity will prompt my soul.

NEUBRUNN.

Your heart, dear lady, is disquieted!
And this is not the way that leads to quiet.

THEKLA.

To a deep quiet, such as he has found,
It draws me on, I know not what to name it,
Resistless does it draw me to his grave.
There will my heart be eased, my tears will flow.
Oh hasten, make no further questioning!
There is no rest for me till I have left
These walls — they fall in on me — a dim power
Drives me from hence — oh mercy! What a feeling!
What pale and hollow forms are those! They fill,
They crowd the place! I have no longer room here!
Mercy! Still more! More still! The hideous swarm,
They press on me; they chase me from these walls —
Those hollow, bodiless forms of living men!

NEUBRUNN.

You frighten me so, lady, that no longer
I dare stay here myself. I go and call
Rosenberg instantly. [*Exit* LADY NEUBRUNN.

SCENE XII.

THEKLA.

His spirit 'tis that calls me: 'tis the troop
Of his true followers, who offered up
Themselves to avenge his death: and they accuse me
Of an ignoble loitering — they would not
Forsake their leader even in his death; they died for him,
And shall I live?
For me too was that laurel garland twined
That decks his bier. Life is an empty casket:
I throw it from me. Oh, my only hope;
To die beneath the hoofs of trampling steeds —
That is a lot of heroes upon earth!

[*Exit* THEKLA.*

(*The Curtain drops.*)

SCENE XIII.

THEKLA, LADY NEUBRUNN, *and* ROSENBERG.

NEUBRUNN.

He is here, lady, and he will procure them.

THEKLA.

Wilt thou provide us horses, Rosenberg?

ROSENBERG.

I will, my lady.

THEKLA.

And go with us as well?

ROSENBERG.

To the world's end, my lady.

* The soliloquy of Thekla consists in the original of six-and-twenty lines, twenty of which are in rhymes of irregular recurrence. I thought it prudent to abridge it. Indeed the whole scene between Thekla and Lady Neubrunn might, perhaps, have been omitted without injury to the play. — C.

THEKLA.

But consider,
Thou never canst return unto the duke.

ROSENBERG.

I will remain with thee.

THEKLA.

I will reward thee.
And will commend thee to another master.
Canst thou unseen conduct us from the castle?

ROSENBERG.

I can.

THEKLA.

When can I go?

ROSENBERG.

This very hour.
But whither would you, lady?

THEKLA.

To —— Tell him, Neubrunn.

NEUBRUNN.

To Neustadt.

ROSENBERG.

So; I leave you to get ready. [*Exit.*

NEUBRUNN.

Oh, see, your mother comes.

THEKLA.

Indeed! O Heaven!

SCENE XIV.

THEKLA, LADY NEUBRUNN, *the* DUCHESS.

DUCHESS.

He's gone! I find thee more composed, my child.

THEKLA.

I am so, mother; let me only now
Retire to rest, and Neubrunn here be with me.
I want repose.

DUCHESS.

My Thekla, thou shalt have it.
I leave thee now consoled, since I can calm
Thy father's heart.

THEKLA.

Good night, beloved mother!

(*Falling on her neck and embracing her with deep emotion*).

DUCHESS.

Thou scarcely art composed e'en now, my daughter.
Thou tremblest strongly, and I feel thy heart
Beat audibly on mine.

THEKLA.

Sleep will appease
Its beating: now good-night, good-night, dear mother.

(*As she withdraws from her mother's arms the curtain falls*).

ACT V.

SCENE I.

Butler's Chamber.

BUTLER, *and* MAJOR GERALDIN.

BUTLER.

Find me twelve strong dragoons, arm them with pikes
For there must be no firing ——
Conceal them somewhere near the banquet-room,
And soon as the dessert is served up, rush all in
And cry — "Who is loyal to the emperor?"
I will overturn the table — while you attack
Illo and Terzky, and despatch them both.
The castle-palace is well barred and guarded,
That no intelligence of this proceeding
May make its way to the duke. Go instantly;
Have you yet sent for Captain Devereux
And the Macdonald?

GERALDIN.

They'll be here anon.

[*Exit* GERALDIN.

BUTLER.

Here's no room for delay. The citizens
Declare for him — a dizzy drunken spirit
Possesses the whole town. They see in the duke
A prince of peace, a founder of new ages
And golden times. Arms, too, have been given out
By the town-council, and a hundred citizens
Have volunteered themselves to stand on guard.
Despatch! then, be the word; for enemies
Threaten us from without and from within.

SCENE II.

BUTLER, CAPTAIN DEVEREUX, *and* MACDONALD.

MACDONALD.

Here we are, general.

DEVEREUX.

What's to be the watchword?

BUTLER.

Long live the emperor!

BOTH (*recoiling*).

How?

BUTLER.

Live the house of Austria.

DEVEREUX.

Have we not sworn fidelity to Friedland?

MACDONALD.

Have we not marched to this place to protect him?

BUTLER.

Protect a traitor and his country's enemy?

DEVEREUX.

Why, yes! in his name you administered
Our oath.

MACDONALD.

And followed him yourself to Egra.

BUTLER.

I did it the more surely to destroy him.

DEVEREUX.

So, then!

MACDONALD.

An altered case!

BUTLER (*to* DEVEREUX).

Thou wretched man
So easily leavest thou thy oath and colors?

DEVEREUX.

The devil! I but followed your example;
If you could prove a villain, why not we?

MACDONALD.

We've naught to do with thinking—that's your business.
You are our general, and give out the orders;
We follow you, though the track lead to hell.

BUTLER (*appeased*).

Good, then! we know each other.

MACDONALD.

I should hope so.

DEVEREUX.

Soldiers of fortune are we — who bids most
He has us.

MACDONALD.

'Tis e'en so!

BUTLER.

Well, for the present
You must remain honest and faithful soldiers.

DEVEREUX.

We wish no other.

BUTLER.

Ay, and make your fortunes.

MACDONALD.

That is still better.
Listen!

BOTH.

We attend.

BUTLER.

It is the emperor's will and ordinance
To seize the person of the Prince-Duke Friedland
Alive or dead.

DEVEREUX.

It runs so in the letter.

MACDONALD.

Alive or dead — these were the very words.

BUTLER.

And he shall be rewarded from the state
In land and gold who proffers aid thereto.

DEVEREUX.

Ay! that sounds well. The words sound always well
That travel hither from the court. Yes! yes!
We know already what court-words import.
A golden chain perhaps in sign of favor,
Or an old charger, or a parchment-patent,
And such like. The prince-duke pays better.

MACDONALD.

Yes,
The duke's a splendid paymaster.

BUTLER.

All over
With that, my friends! His lucky stars are set.

MACDONALD.

And is that certain?

BUTLER.

You have my word for it.

DEVEREUX.

His lucky fortune's all passed by?

BUTLER.

Forever.
He is as poor as we.

MACDONALD.

As poor as we?

DEVEREUX.

Macdonald, we'll desert him.

BUTLER.

We'll desert him?
Full twenty thousand have done that already;
We must do more, my countrymen! In short —
We — we must kill him.

BOTH (*starting back*).

Kill him!

BUTLER.

Yes, must kill him;
And for that purpose have I chosen you.

BOTH.

Us!

BUTLER.

You, Captain Devereux, and thee, Macdonald.

DEVEREUX (*after a pause*).

Choose you some other.

BUTLER.

What! art dastardly?
Thou, with full thirty lives to answer for —
Thou conscientious of a sudden?

DEVEREUX.

Nay
To assassinate our lord and general ——

MACDONALD.

To whom we swore a soldier's oath ——

BUTLER.

The oath
Is null, for Friedland is a traitor.

DEVEREUX.

No, no! it is too bad!

MACDONALD.

Yes, by my soul!
It is too bad. One has a conscience too ——

DEVEREUX.

If it were not our chieftain, who so long
Has issued the commands, and claimed our duty ——

BUTLER.

Is that the objection?

DEVEREUX.

Were it my own father,
And the emperor's service should demand it of me,
It might be done perhaps — but we are soldiers,
And to assassinate our chief commander,
That is a sin, a foul abomination,
From which no monk or confessor absolves us.

BUTLER.

I am your pope, and give you absolution.
Determine quickly!

DEVEREUX.

'Twill not do.

MACDONALD.

'Twont do!

BUTLER.

Well, off then! and — send Pestalutz to me.

DEVEREUX (*hesitates*).

The Pestalutz ——

MACDONALD.

What may you want with him?

BUTLER.

If you reject it, we can find enough ——

DEVEREUX.

Nay, if he must fall, we may earn the bounty
As well as any other. What think you,
Brother Macdonald?

MACDONALD.

Why, if he must fall,
And will fall, and it can't be otherwise,
One would not give place to this Pestalutz.

DEVEREUX (*after some reflection*).

When do you purpose he should fall?

BUTLER.

This night.
To-morrow will the Swedes be at our gates.

DEVEREUX.

You take upon you all the consequences?

BUTLER.

I take the whole upon me.

DEVEREUX.

And it is
The emperor's will, his express absolute will?
For we have instances that folks may like
The murder, and yet hang the murderer.

BUTLER.

The manifesto says — "alive or dead."
Alive — 'tis not possible — you see it is not.

DEVEREUX.

Well, dead then! dead! But how can we come at him.
The town is filled with Terzky's soldiery.

MACDONALD.

Ay! and then Terzky still remains, and Illo ——

BUTLER.

With these you shall begin — you understand me?

DEVEREUX.

How! And must they too perish?

BUTLER.

They the first.

MACDONALD.

Hear, Devereux! A bloody evening this.

DEVEREUX.

Have you a man for that? Commission me——

BUTLER.

'Tis given in trust to Major Geraldin;
This is a carnival night, and there's a feast
Given at the castle — there we shall surprise them,
And hew them down. The Pestalutz and Lesley
Have that commission. Soon as that is finished——

DEVEREUX.

Hear, general! It will be all one to you —
Hark ye, let me exchange with Geraldin.

BUTLER.

'Twill be the lesser danger with the duke.

DEVEREUX.

Danger! The devil! What do you think me, general,
'Tis the duke's eye, and not his sword, I fear.

BUTLER.

What can his eye do to thee?

DEVEREUX.

Death and hell!
Thou knowest that I'm no milksop, general!
But 'tis not eight days since the duke did send me
Twenty gold pieces for this good warm coat
Which I have on! and then for him to see me
Standing before him with the pike, his murderer,
That eye of his looking upon this coat —
Why — why — the devil fetch me! I'm no milksop!

BUTLER.

The duke presented thee this good warm coat,
And thou, a needy wight, hast pangs of conscience
To run him through the body in return,
A coat that is far better and far warmer
Did the emperor give to him, the prince's mantle.
How doth he thank the emperor? With revolt
And treason.

DEVEREUX.

That is true. The devil take
Such thankers! I'll despatch him.

BUTLER.

And would'st quiet
Thy conscience, thou hast naught to do but simply
Pull off the coat; so canst thou do the deed
With light heart and good spirits.

DEVEREUX.

You are right,
That did not strike me. I'll pull off the coat —
So there's an end of it.

MACDONALD.

Yes, but there's another
Point to be thought of.

BUTLER.

And what's that, Macdonald?

MACDONALD.

What avails sword or dagger against him?
He is not to be wounded — he is ——

BUTLER (*starting up*).

What!

MACDONALD.

Safe against shot, and stab, and flash! Hard frozen.
Secured and warranted by the black art!
His body is impenetrable, I tell you.

DEVEREUX.

In Ingolstadt there was just such another:
His whole skin was the same as steel; at last
We were obliged to beat him down with gunstocks.

MACDONALD.

Hear what I'll do.

DEVEREUX.

Well.

MACDONALD.

In the cloister here
There's a Dominican, my countryman.

I'll make him dip my sword and pike for me
In holy water, and say over them
One of his strongest blessings. That's *probatum!*
Nothing can stand 'gainst that.

BUTLER.

So do, Macdonald!
But now go and select from out the regiment
Twenty or thirty able-bodied fellows,
And let them take the oaths to the emperor.
Then when it strikes eleven, when the first rounds
Are passed, conduct them silently as may be
To the house. I will myself be not far off.

DEVEREUX.

But how do we get through Hartschier and Gordon,
That stand on guard there in the inner chamber?

BUTLER.

I have made myself acquainted with the place,
I lead you through a back door that's defended
By one man only. Me my rank and office
Give access to the duke at every hour.
I'll go before you — with one poinard-stroke
Cut Hartschier's windpipe, and make way for you.

DEVEREUX.

And when we are there, by what means shall we gain
The duke's bed-chamber, without his alarming
The servants of the court? for he has here
A numerous company of followers.

BUTLER.

The attendants fills the right wing: he hates bustle,
And lodges in the left wing quite alone.

DEVEREUX.

Were it well over — hey, Macdonald! I
Feel queerly on the occasion, devil knows.

MACDONALD.

And I, too. 'Tis too great a personage.
People will hold us for a brace of villains.

BUTLER.

In plenty, honor, splendor — you may safely
Laugh at the people's babble.

DEVEREUX.

If the business
Squares with one's honor — if that be quite certain.

BUTLER.

Set your hearts quite at ease. Ye save for Ferdinand
His crown and empire. The reward can be
No small one.

DEVEREUX.

And 'tis his purpose to dethrone the emperor?

BUTLER.

Yes! Yes! to rob him of his crown and life.

DEVEREUX.

And must he fall by the executioner's hands,
Should we deliver him up to the emperor
Alive?

BUTLER.

It were his certain destiny.

DEVEREUX.

Well! Well! Come then, Macdonald, he shall not
Lie long in pain.

[*Exeunt* BUTLER *through one door*, MACDONALD *and* DEVEREUX *through the other.*

SCENE III.

A saloon, terminated by a gallery, which extends far into the background.

WALLENSTIN *sitting at a table. The* SWEDISH CAPTAIN *standing before him.*

WALLENSTEIN.

Commend me to your lord. I sympathize
In his good fortune; and if you have seen me
Deficient in the expressions of that joy,

Which such a victory might well demand,
Attribute it to no lack of good-will,
For henceforth are our fortunes one. Farewell,
And for your trouble take my thanks. To-morrow
The citadel shall be surrendered to you
On your arrival.

[*The* SWEDISH CAPTAIN *retires.* WALLENSTEIN *sits lost in thought, his eyes fixed vacantly, and his head sustained by his hand. The* COUNTESS TERZKY *enters, stands before him for awhile, unobserved by him; at length he starts, sees her and recollects himself.*

WALLENSTEIN.

Comest thou from her? Is she restored? How is she?

COUNTESS.

My sister tells me she was more collected
After her conversation with the Swede.
She has now retired to rest.

WALLENSTEIN.

The pang will soften
She will shed tears.

COUNTESS.

I find thee altered, too,
My brother! After such a victory
I had expected to have found in thee
A cheerful spirit. Oh, remain thou firm!
Sustain, uphold us! For our light thou art,
Our sun.

WALLENSTEIN.

Be quiet. I ail nothing. Where's
Thy husband?

COUNTESS.

At a banquet — he and Illo.

WALLENSTEIN (*rises and strides across the saloon*).

The night's far spent. Betake thee to thy chamber.

COUNTESS.

Bid me not go, oh, let me stay with thee!

WALLENSTEIN (*moves to the window*).

There is a busy motion in the heaven,
The wind doth chase the flag upon the tower,
Fast sweep the clouds, the sickle * of the moon,
Struggling, darts snatches of uncertain light.
No form of star is visible! That one
White stain of light, that single glimmering yonder,
Is from Cassiopeia, and therein
Is Jupiter. (*A pause.*) But now
The blackness of the troubled element hides him!
[*He sinks into profound melancholy, and looks vacantly into the distance.*

COUNTESS (*looks on him mournfully, then grasps his hand*).

What art thou brooding on?

WALLENSTEIN.

Methinks
If I but saw him, 'twould be well with me.
He is the star of my nativity,
And often marvellously hath his aspect
Shot strength into my heart.

COUNTESS.

Thou'lt see him again.

WALLENSTEIN (*remains for awhile with absent mind, then assumes a livelier manner, and turning suddenly to the* COUNTESS).

See him again? Oh, never, never again!

* These four lines are expressed in the original with exquisite felicity: —

Am Himmel ist geschäftige Bewegung.
Des Thurmes Fahne jagt der Wind, schnell geht
Der Wolken Zug, die *Mondessichel wankt*,
Und durch die Nacht zuckt ungewisse Helle.

The word "moon-sickle," reminds me of a passage in Harris, as quoted by Johnson, under the word "falcated." "The enlightened part of the moon appears in the form of a sickle or reaping-hook, which is while she is moving from the conjunction to the opposition, or from the new moon to the full: but from full to a new again the enlightened part appears gibbous, and the dark *falcated*."

The words "wanken" and "schweben" are not easily translated. The English words, by which we attempt to render them, are either vulgar or pedantic, or not of sufficiently general application. So "der Wolken Zug" — The Draft, the Procession of Clouds. The Masses of the Clouds sweep onward in swift *stream*.

COUNTESS.

How?

WALLENSTEIN.

He is gone — is dust.

COUNTESS.

Whom meanest thou, then?

WALLENSTEIN.

He, the more fortunate! yea, he hath finished!
For him there is no longer any future,
His life is bright — bright without spot it was,
And cannot cease to be. No ominous hour
Knocks at his door with tidings of mishap,
Far off is he, above desire and fear;
No more submitted to the change and chance
Of the unsteady planets. Oh, 'tis well
With him! but who knows what the coming hour
Veiled in thick darkness brings us?

COUNTESS.

Thou speakest
Of Piccolomini. What was his death?
The courier had just left thee as I came.
[WALLENSTEIN *by a motion of his hand makes signs to her to be silent.*
Turn not thine eyes upon the backward view,
Let us look forward into sunny days,
Welcome with joyous heart the victory,
Forget what it has cost thee. Not to-day,
For the first time, thy friend was to thee dead;
To thee he died when first he parted from thee.

WALLENSTEIN.

This anguish will be wearied down,* I know;
What pang is permanent with man? From the highest,
As from the vilest thing of every day,

* A very inadequate translation of the original: —

Verschmerzen werd' ich diesen Schlag, das weiss ich,
Denn was verschmerzte nicht der Mensch!

LITERALLY.

I shall *grieve down* this blow, of that I'm conscious:
What does not man grieve down?

He learns to wean himself: for the strong hours
Conquer him. Yet I feel what I have lost
In him. The bloom is vanished from my life,
For oh, he stood beside me, like my youth,
Transformed for me the real to a dream,
Clothing the palpable and the familiar
With golden exhalations of the dawn,
Whatever fortunes wait my future toils,
The beautiful is vanished — and returns not.

COUNTESS.

Oh, be not treacherous to thy own power.
Thy heart is rich enough to vivify
Itself. Thou lovest and prizest virtues in him,
The which thyself didst plant, thyself unfold.

WALLENSTEIN (*stepping to the door*).

Who interrupts us now at this late hour?
It is the governor. He brings the keys
Of the citadel. 'Tis midnight. Leave me, sister!

COUNTESS.

Oh, 'tis so hard to me this night to leave thee;
A boding fear possesses me!

WALLENSTEIN.

Fear! Wherefore?

COUNTESS.

Shouldst thou depart this night, and we at waking
Never more find thee!

WALLENSTEIN.

Fancies!

COUNTESS.

Oh, my soul
Has long been weighed down by these dark forebodings,
And if I combat and repel them waking,
They still crush down upon my heart in dreams,
I saw thee, yesternight with thy first wife
Sit at a banquet, gorgeously attired.

WALLENSTEIN.

This was a dream of favorable omen,
That marriage being the founder of my fortunes.

COUNTESS.

To-day I dreamed that I was seeking thee
In thy own chamber. As I entered, lo!
It was no more a chamber: the Chartreuse
At Gitschin 'twas, which thou thyself hast founded,
And where it is thy will that thou shouldst be
Interred.

WALLENSTEIN.

Thy soul is busy with these thoughts.

COUNTESS.

What! dost thou not believe that oft in dreams
A voice of warning speaks prophetic to us?

WALLENSTEIN.

There is no doubt that there exist such voices,
Yet I would not call them
Voices of warning that announce to us
Only the inevitable. As the sun,
Ere it is risen, sometimes paints its image
In the atmosphere, so often do the spirits
Of great events stride on before the events,
And in to-day already walks to-morrow.
That which we read of the fourth Henry's death
Did ever vex and haunt me like a tale
Of my own future destiny. The king
Felt in his breast the phantom of the knife
Long ere Ravaillac armed himself therewith.
His quiet mind forsook him; the phantasma
Started him in his Louvre, chased him forth
Into the open air; like funeral knells
Sounded that coronation festival;
And still with boding sense he heard the tread
Of those feet that even then were seeking him
Throughout the streets of Paris.

COUNTESS.

And to thee
The voice within thy soul bodes nothing?

WALLENSTEIN.

Nothing.
Be wholly tranquil.

COUNTESS.

And another time
I hastened after thee, and thou rann'st from me
Through a long suite, through many a spacious hall.
There seemed no end of it; doors creaked and clapped;
I followed panting, but could not overtake thee;
When on a sudden did I feel myself
Grasped from behind, — the hand was cold that grasped me;
'Twas thou, and thou didst kiss me, and there seemed
A crimson covering to envelop us.

WALLENSTEIN.

That is the crimson tapestry of my chamber.

COUNTESS (*gazing on him*).

If it should come to that — if I should see thee,
Who standest now before me in the fulness
Of life —— [*She falls on his breast and weeps.*

WALLENSTEIN.

The emperor's proclamation weighs upon thee —
Alphabets wound not — and he finds no hands.

COUNTESS.

If he should find them, my resolve is taken —
I bear about me my support and refuge.

[*Exit* COUNTESS.

SCENE V.

WALLENSTEIN, GORDON.

WALLENSTEIN.

All quiet in the town?

GORDON.

The town is quiet.

WALLENSTEIN.

I hear a boisterous music! and the castle
Is lighted up. Who are the revellers?

GORDON.

There is a banquet given at the castle
To the Count Terzky and Field-Marshal Illo.

WALLENSTEIN.

In honor of the victory — this tribe
Can show their joy in nothing else but feasting.
[*Rings. The* GROOM OF THE CHAMBER *enters.*
Unrobe me. I will lay me down to sleep.
[WALLENSTEIN *takes the keys from* GORDON.
So we are guarded from all enemies,
And shut in with sure friends.
For all must cheat me, or a face like this
[*Fixing his eyes on* GORDON.
Was ne'er a hypocrite's mask.
[*The* GROOM OF THE CHAMBER *takes off his mantle, collar, and scarf.*

WALLENSTEIN.

Take care — what is that?

GROOM OF THE CHAMBER.

The golden chain is snapped in two.

WALLENSTEIN.

Well, it has lasted long enough. Here — give it.
[*He takes and looks at the chain.*
'Twas the first present of the emperor.
He hung it round me in the war of Friule,
He being then archduke; and I have worn it
Till now from habit ——
From superstition, if you will. Belike,
It was to be a talisman to me;
And while I wore it on my neck in faith,
It was to chain to me all my life-long
The volatile fortune, whose first pledge it was.
Well, be it so! Henceforward a new fortune
Must spring up for me; for the potency
Of this charm is dissolved.
[GROOM OF THE CHAMBER *retires with the vestments.* WALLENSTEIN *rises, takes a stride across the room, and stands at last before* GORDON *in a posture of meditation.*

How the old time returns upon me! I
Behold myself once more at Burgau, where
We two were pages of the court together.
We oftentimes disputed: thy intention
Was ever good; but thou were wont to play
The moralist and preacher, and wouldst rail at me—
That I strove after things too high for me,
Giving my faith to bold, unlawful dreams,
And still extol to me the golden mean.
Thy wisdom hath been proved a thriftless friend
To thy own self. See, it has made thee early
A superannuated man, and (but
That my munificent stars will intervene)
Would let thee in some miserable corner
Go out like an untended lamp.

GORDON.

My prince!
With light heart the poor fisher moors his boat,
And watches from the shore the lofty ship
Stranded amid the storm.

WALLENSTEIN.

Art thou already
In harbor, then, old man? Well! I am not.
The unconquered spirit drives me o'er life's billows;
My planks still firm, my canvas swelling proudly.
Hope is my goddess still, and youth my inmate;
And while we stand thus front to front almost,
I might presume to say, that the swift years
Have passed by powerless o'er my unblanched hair.

[*He moves with long strides across the saloon, and remains on the opposite side over against* GORDON.

Who now persists in calling fortune false?
To me she has proved faithful; with fond love
Took me from out the common ranks of men,
And like a mother goddess, with strong arm
Carried me swiftly up the steps of life.
Nothing is common in my destiny,
Nor in the furrows of my hand. Who dares

Interpret then my life for me as 'twere
One of the undistinguishable many?
True, in this present moment I appear
Fallen low indeed; but I shall rise again.
The high flood will soon follow on this ebb;
The fountain of my fortune, which now stops,
Repressed and bound by some malicious star,
Will soon in joy play forth from all its pipes.

GORDON.

And yet remember I the good old proverb,
"Let the night come before we praise the day."
I would be slow from long-continued fortune
To gather hope: for hope is the companion
Given to the unfortunate by pitying heaven.
Fear hovers round the head of prosperous men,
For still unsteady are the scales of fate.

WALLENSTEIN (*smiling*).

I hear the very Gordon that of old
Was wont to preach, now once more preaching;
I know well, that all sublunary things
Are still the vassels of vicissitude.
The unpropitious gods demand their tribute.
This long ago the ancient pagans knew:
And therefore of their own accord they offered
To themselves injuries, so to atone
The jealousy of their divinities:
And human sacrifices bled to Typhon.

(*After a pause, serious, and in a more subdued manner.*

I too have sacrificed to him — for me
There fell the dearest friend, and through my fault
He fell! No joy from favorable fortune
Can overweigh the anguish of this stroke.
The envy of my destiny is glutted:
Life pays for life. On his pure head the lightning
Was drawn off which would else have shattered me.

SCENE V.

To these enter SENI.

WALLENSTEIN.

Is not that Seni! and beside himself,
If one can trust his looks? What brings thee hither
At this late hour, Baptista?

SENI.

Terror, duke!
On thy account.

WALLENSTEIN.

What now?

SENI.

Flee ere the day break!
Trust not thy person to the Swedes!

WALLENSTEIN.

What now
Is in thy thoughts?

SENI (*with louder voice*).

Trust not thy person to the Swedes.

WALLENSTEIN.

What is it, then?

SENI (*still more urgently*).

Oh, wait not the arrival of these Swedes!
An evil near at hand is threatening thee
From false friends. All the signs stand full of horror!
Near, near at hand the net-work of perdition —
Yea, even now 'tis being cast around thee!

WALLENSTEIN.

Baptista, thou art dreaming! — fear befools thee.

SENI.

Believe not that an empty fear deludes me.
Come, read it in the planetary aspects;
Read it thyself, that ruin threatens thee
From false friends.

WALLENSTEIN.

From the falseness of my friends
Has risen the whole of my unprosperous fortunes.

The warning should have come before! At present
I need no revelation from the stars
To know that.

SENI.

Come and see! trust thine own eyes.
A fearful sign stands in the house of life —
An enemy; a fiend lurks close behind
The radiance of thy planet. Oh, be warned!
Deliver not up thyself to these heathens,
To wage a war against our holy church.

WALLENSTEIN (*laughing gently*).

The oracle rails that way! Yes, yes! Now
I recollect. This junction with the Swedes
Did never please thee — lay thyself to sleep,
Baptista! Signs like these I do not fear.

GORDON (*who during the whole of this dialogue has shown marks of extreme agitation, and now turns to* WALLENSTEIN).

My duke and general! May I dare presume?

WALLENSTEIN.

Speak freely.

GORDON.

What if 'twere no mere creation
Of fear, if God's high providence vouchsafed
To interpose its aid for your deliverance,
And made that mouth its organ?

WALLENSTEIN.

Ye're both feverish!
How can mishap come to me from the Swedes?
They sought this junction with me — 'tis their interest.

GORDON (*with difficulty suppressing his emotion*).

But what if the arrival of these Swedes —
What if this were the very thing that winged
The ruin that is flying to your temples?
[*Flings himself at his feet.*
There is yet time, my prince.

SENI.

Oh hear him! hear him!

GORDON (*rises*).

The Rhinegrave's still far off. Give but the orders,
This citadel shall close its gates upon him.
If then he will besiege us, let him try it.
But this I say; he'll find his own destruction,
With his whole force before these ramparts, sooner
Than weary down the valor of our spirit.
He shall experience what a band of heroes,
Inspirited by an heroic leader,
Is able to perform. And if indeed
It be thy serious wish to make amend
For that which thou hast done amiss, — this, this
Will touch and reconcile the emperor,
Who gladly turns his heart to thoughts of mercy;
And Friedland, who returns repentant to him,
Will stand yet higher in his emperor's favor
Then e'er he stood when he had never fallen.

WALLENSTEIN (*contemplates him with surprise, remains silent awhile, betraying strong emotion*).

Gordon — your zeal and fervor lead you far.
Well, well — an old friend has a privilege.
Blood, Gordon, has been flowing. Never, never
Can the emperor pardon me: and if he could,
Yet I — I ne'er could let myself be pardoned.
Had I foreknown what now has taken place,
That he, my dearest friend, would fall for me,
My first death offering; and had the heart
Spoken to me, as now it has done — Gordon,
It may be, I might have bethought myself.
It may be too, I might not. Might or might not
Is now an idle question. All too seriously
Has it begun to end in nothing, Gordon!
Let it then have its course. [*Stepping to the window.*
All dark and silent — at the castle too
All is now hushed. Light me, chamberlain?

[*The* GROOM OF THE CHAMBER, *who had entered during the last dialogue, and had been standing at a distance and listening to it with visible expressions of the deepest interest, advances in extreme agitation and throws himself at the* DUKE'S *feet.*

And thou too! But I know why thou dost wish
My reconcilement with the emperor.
Poor man! he hath a small estate in Carinthia,
And fears it will be forfeited because
He's in my service. Am I then so poor
That I no longer can indemnify
My servants? Well! to no one I employ
Means of compulsion. If 'tis thy belief
That fortune has fled from me, go! forsake me.
This night for the last time mayst thou unrobe me,
And then go over to the emperor.
Gordon, good-night! I think to make a long
Sleep of it: for the struggle and the turmoil
Of this last day or two was great. May't please you!
Take care that they awake me not too early.

[*Exit* WALLENSTEIN, *the* GROOM OF THE CHAMBER *lighting him.* SENI *follows,* GORDON *remains on the darkened stage, following the* DUKE *with his eye, till he disappears at the further end of the gallery: then by his gestures the old man expresses the depth of his anguish, and stands leaning against a pillar.*

SCENE VI.

GORDON, BUTLER (*at first behind the scenes*).

BUTLER (*not yet come into view of the stage*).

Here stand in silence till I give the signal.

GORDON (*starts up*).

'Tis he! he has already brought the murderers.

BUTLER.

The lights are out. All lies in profound sleep.

GORDON.

What shall I do, shall I attempt to save him?
Shall I call up the house? alarm the guards?

BUTLER (*appears, but scarcely on the stage*).

A light gleams hither from the corridor.
It leads directly to the duke's bed-chamber.

GORDON.

But then I break my oath to the emperor;
If he escape and strengthen the enemy,
Do I not hereby call down on my head
All the dread consequences.

BUTLER (*stepping forward*).

Hark! Who speaks there?

GORDON.

'Tis better, I resign it to the hands
Of Providence. For what am I, that I
Should take upon myself so great a deed?
I have not murdered him, if he be murdered;
But all his rescue were my act and deed;
Mine — and whatever be the consequences
I must sustain them.

BUTLER (*advances*).

I should know that voice.

GORDON.

Butler!

BUTLER.

'Tis Gordon. What do you want here?
Was it so late, then, when the duke dismissed you?

GORDON.

Your hand bound up and in a scarf?

BUTLER.

'Tis wounded.
That Illo fought as he were frantic, till
At last we threw him on the ground.

GORDON (*shuddering*).

Both dead?

BUTLER.

Is he in bed?

GORDON.

Ah, Butler!

BUTLER.

Is he? speak.

GORDON.

He shall not perish! Not through you! The heaven
Refuses your arm. See — 'tis wounded!

BUTLER.

There is no need of my arm.

GORDON.

The most guilty
Have perished, and enough is given to justice.

[*The* GROOM OF THE CHAMBER *advances from the gallery with his finger on his mouth commanding silence.*

GORDON.

He sleeps! Oh, murder not the holy sleep!

BUTLER.

No! he shall die awake. [*Is going.*

GORDON.

His heart still cleaves
To earthly things: he's not prepared to step
Into the presence of his God!

BUTLER (*going*).

God's merciful!

GORDON (*holds him*).

Grant him but this night's respite.

BUTLER (*hurrying off*).

The next moment
May ruin all.

GORDON (*holds him still*).

One hour! ——

BUTLER.

Unhold me! What
Can that short respite profit him?

GORDON.

Oh, time
Works miracles. In one hour many thousands
Of grains of sand run out; and quick as they

Thought follows thought within the human soul.
Only one hour! Your heart may change its purpose,
His heart may change its purpose — some new tidings
May come; some fortunate event, decisive,
May fall from heaven and rescue him. Oh, what
May not one hour achieve!

BUTLER.

You but remind me
How precious every minute is!

[*He stamps on the floor.*

SCENE VII.

To these enter MACDONALD *and* DEVEREUX, *with the* HALBERDIERS.

GORDON (*throwing himself between him and them*).

No, monster!
First over my dead body thou shalt tread.
I will not live to see the accursed deed!

BUTLER (*forcing him out of the way*).

Weak-hearted dotard!

[*Trumpets are heard in the distance.*

DEVEREUX *and* MACDONALD.

Hark! The Swedish trumpets!
The Swedes before the ramparts! Let us hasten!

GORDON (*rushes out*).

Oh, God of mercy!

BUTLER (*calling after him*).

Governor, to your post!

GROOM OF THE CHAMBER (*hurries in*).

Who dares make larum here? Hush! The duke sleeps.

DEVEREUX (*with loud, harsh voice*).

Friend, it is time now to make larum.

GROOM OF THE CHAMBER.

Help!
Murder!

BUTLER.

Down with him!

GROOM OF THE CHAMBER (*run through the body by* DEVEREUX, *falls at the entrance of the gallery.*)

Jesus Maria!

BUTLER.

Burst the doors open.

[*They rush over the body into the gallery — two doors are heard to crash one after the other. Voices, deadened by the distance — clash of arms — then all at once a profound silence.*

SCENE VIII.

COUNTESS TERZKY (*with a light*).

Her bedchamber is empty; she herself
Is nowhere to be found! The Neubrunn too,
Who watched by her, is missing, If she should
Be flown —— but whither flown? We must call up
Every soul in the house. How will the duke
Bear up against these worst bad tidings? Oh,
If that my husband now were but returned
Home from the banquet! Hark! I wonder whether
The duke is still awake! I thought I heard
Voices and tread of feet here! I will go
And listen at the door. Hark! what is that?
'Tis hastening up the steps!

SCENE IX.

COUNTESS, GORDON.

GORDON (*rushes in out of breath*).

'Tis a mistake!
'Tis not the Swedes; ye must proceed no further—
Butler! Oh, God! where is he?

GORDON (*observing the* COUNTESS).

Countess! Say——

COUNTESS.

You are come then from the castle? Where's my husband?

GORDON (*in an agony of affright*).

Your husband! Ask not! To the duke——

COUNTESS.

Not till
You have discovered to me——

GORDON.

On this moment
Does the world hang. For God's sake! to the duke.
While we are speaking—— [*Calling loudly.*
Butler! Butler! God!

COUNTESS.

Why, he is at the castle with my husband.
[BUTLER *comes from the gallery.*

GORDON.

'Twas a mistake. 'Tis not the Swedes—it is
The imperialists' lieutenant-general
Has sent me hither—will be here himself
Instantly. You must not proceed.

BUTLER.

He comes
Too late. [GORDON *dashes himself against the wall.*

GORDON.

Oh, God of mercy!

COUNTESS.

What, too late?
Who will be here himself? Octavio
In Egra? Treason! Treason! Where's the duke?
[*She rushes to the gallery.*

SCENE X.

Servants run across the stage full of terror. The whole scene must be spoken entirely without pauses.

SENI (*from the gallery*).

Oh, bloody, frightful deed!

COUNTESS.

What is it, Seni?

PAGE (*from the gallery*).

Oh, piteous sight!

[*Other servants hasten in with torches.*

COUNTESS.

What is it? For God's sake!

SENI.

And do you ask?
Within the duke lies murdered — and your husband
Assassinated at the castle.

[*The* COUNTESS *stands motionless.*

FEMALE SERVANT (*rushing across the stage*).

Help! help! the duchess!

BURGOMASTER (*enters*).

What mean these confused
Loud cries that wake the sleepers of this house?

GORDON.

Your house is cursed to all eternity.
In your house doth the duke lie murdered!

BURGOMASTER (*rushing out*).

Heaven forbid!

FIRST SERVANT.

Fly! fly! they murder us all!

SECOND SERVANT (*carrying silver-plate*).

That way! the lower
Passages are blocked up.

VOICE (*from behind the scene*).

Make room for the lieutenant-general!

[*At these words the* COUNTESS *starts from her stupor, collects herself, and retires suddenly.*

from out the corridor with the Halberdier
STEIN'S *dead body is carried over the bac*
stage, wrapped in a piece of crimson tape

OCTAVIO (*entering abruptly*).

It must not be! It is not possible!
Butler! Gordon!
I'll not believe it. Say no!

[GORDON, *without answering, points wi*
the body of WALLENSTEIN *as it is ca*
back of the stage. OCTAVIO *looks*
stands overpowered with horror.

DEVEREUX (*to* BUTLER).

Here is the golden fleece — the duke's sv

MACDONALD.

Is it your order ——

BUTLER (*pointing to* OCTAVIO)

Here stands he who
Hath the sole power to issue orders.

[DEVEREUX *and* MACDONALD *retire*
obeisance. One drops away after th
BUTLER, OCTAVIO, *and* GORDON
stage.

OCTAVIO (*turning to* BUTLER

Was that my purpose, Butler, when we

OCTAVIO.

Merciless man!
Thus to abuse the orders of thy lord —
And stain thy emperor's holy name with murder,
With bloody, most accursed assassination!

BUTLER (*calmly*).

I've but fulfilled the emperor's own sentence.

OCTAVIO.

Oh, curse of kings,
Infusing a dread life into their words,
And linking to the sudden, transient thought
The unchanging, irrevocable deed.
Was there necessity for such an eager
Despatch? Couldst thou not grant the merciful
A time for mercy? Time is man's good angel.
To leave no interval between the sentence,
And the fulfilment of it, doth beseem
God only, the immutable!

BUTLER.

For what
Rail you against me? What is my offence?
The empire from a fearful enemy
Have I delivered, and expect reward.
The single difference betwixt you and me
Is this: you placed the arrow in the bow;
I pulled the string. You sowed blood, and yet stand
Astonished that blood is come up. I always
Knew what I did, and therefore no result
Hath power to frighten or surprise my spirit.
Have you aught else to order; for this instant
I make my best speed to Vienna; place
My bleeding sword before my emperor's throne,
And hope to gain the applause which undelaying
And punctual obedience may demand
From a just judge. [*Exit* BUTLER.

Scene XII.

To these enter the Countess Terzky, *pale and disordered. Her utterance is slow and feeble, and unimpassioned.*

OCTAVIO (*meeting her*).

Oh, Countess Terzky! These are the results
Of luckless, unblest deeds.

COUNTESS.

They are the fruits
Of your contrivances. The duke is dead,
My husband too is dead, the duchess struggles
In the pangs of death, my niece has disappeared;
This house of splendor, and of princely glory,
Doth now stand desolated: the affrighted servants
Rush forth through all its doors. I am the last
Therein; I shut it up, and here deliver
The keys.

OCTAVIO (*with a deep anguish*).

Oh, countess! my house, too, is desolate.

COUNTESS.

Who next is to be murdered? Who is next
To be maltreated? Lo! the duke is dead.
The emperor's vengeance may be pacified!
Spare the old servants; let not their fidelity
Be imputed to the faithful as a crime —
The evil destiny surprised my brother
Too suddenly: he could not think on them.

OCTAVIO.

Speak not of vengeance! Speak not of maltreatment!
The emperor is appeased; the heavy fault
Hath heavily been expiated — nothing
Descended from the father to the daughter,
Except his glory and his services.
The empress honors your adversity,
Takes part in your afflictions, opens to you
Her motherly arms. Therefore no further fears.
Yield yourself up in hope and confidence
To the imperial grace!

COUNTESS (*with her eye raised to heaven*)

To the grace and mercy of a greater master
Do I yield up myself. Where shall the body
Of the duke have its place of final rest?
In the Chartreuse, which he himself did found
At Gitschin, rests the Countess Wallenstein;
And by her side, to whom he was indebted
For his first fortunes, gratefully he wished
He might sometime repose in death! Oh, let him
Be buried there. And likewise, for my husband's
Remains I ask the like grace. The emperor
Is now the proprieter of all our castles;
This sure may well be granted us — one sepulchre
Beside the sepulchres of our forefathers!

OCTAVIO.

Countess, you tremble, you turn pale!

COUNTESS (*reassembles all her powers, and speaks with energy and dignity*).

You think
More worthily of me than to believe
I would survive the downfall of my house.
We did not hold ourselves too mean to grasp
After a monarch's crown — the crown did fate
Deny, but not the feeling and the spirit
That to the crown belong! We deem a
Courageous death more worthy of our free station
Than a dishonored life. I have taken poison.

OCTAVIO.

Help! Help! Support her!

COUNTESS.

Nay, it is too late.
In a few moments is my fate accomplished.

[*Exit* COUNTESS.

GORDON.

Oh, house of death and horrors!

[*An* OFFICER *enters, and brings a letter with the great seal.* GORDON *steps forward and meets him.*

What is this!

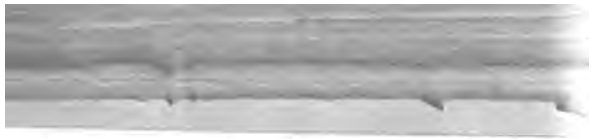
It is the imperial seal.

[*He reads the address, and delivers the letter to* OCTAVIO *with a look of reproach, and with an emphasis on the word.*

To the Prince Piccolomini.

[OCTAVIO, *with his whole frame expressive of sudden anguish, raises his eyes to heaven.*

The Curtain drops.



[redacted]

The borrower must return this item on or before the last date stamped below. If another user places a recall for this item, the borrower will be notified of the need for an earlier return.

*Non-receipt of overdue notices does **not** exempt the borrower from overdue fines.*

Harvard College Widener Library
Cambridge, MA 02138 617-495-2413

WIDENER
SEP 2 0 1999
BOOK DUE
CANCELLED

WIDENER
FEB 1 0 2006
CANCELLED

Please handle with care.
Thank you for helping to preserve library collections at Harvard.